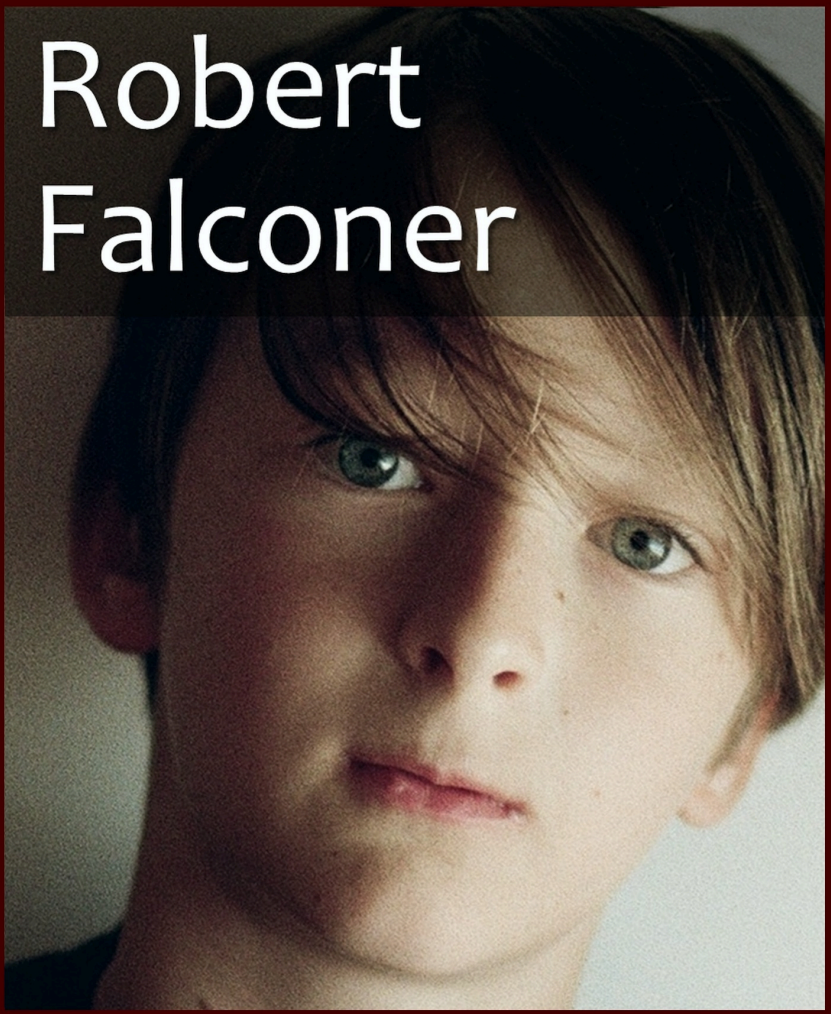
Robert Falconer



George MacDonald

Table of Contents

Note from Editor

Part 1. His Boyhood

Chapter 1 - A Recollection
Chapter 2 - A Visitor
Chapter 3 - The Boar's Head
Chapter 4 - Shargar
Chapter 5 - The Symposium
Chapter 6 - Mrs. Falconer
Chapter 7 - Robert to the Rescue!
Chapter 8 - The Angel Unawares
Chapter 9 - A Discovery
Chapter 10 - Another Discovery in the Garret
Chapter 11 - Private Interviews
Chapter 12 - Robert's Plan of Salvation
Chapter 13 - Robert's Mother
Chapter 14 - Mary St. John
Chapter 15 - Eric Ericson
Chapter 16 - Mr. Lammie's Farm
Chapter 17 - Adventures
Chapter 18 - Nature Puts in a Claim
Chapter 19 - Robert Steals His Own
Chapter 20 - Jessie Hewson
Chapter 21 - The Dragon
Chapter 22 - Dr. Anderson
Chapter 23 - An Auto Da Fé
Chapter 24 - Boot for Bale
Chapter 25 - The Gates of Paradise

Part 2. His Youth

Chapter 1 - Robert Knocks—And the Door Is Not Opened
Chapter 2 - The Stroke
Chapter 3 - "The End Crowns All"

Chapter 4 - The Aberdeen Garret
Chapter 5 - The Competition
Chapter 6 - Dr. Anderson Again
Chapter 7 - Eric Ericson
Chapter 8 - A Human Providence
Chapter 9 - A Human Soul
Chapter 10 - A Father and a Daughter
Chapter 11 - Robert's Vow
Chapter 12 - The Granite Church
Chapter 13 - Shargar's Arm
Chapter 14 - Mysie's Face
Chapter 15 - The Last of the Coals
Chapter 16 - A Strange Night
Chapter 17 - Home Again
Chapter 18 - A Grave Opened
Chapter 19 - Robert Mediates
Chapter 20 - Ericson Loses to Win
Chapter 21 - Shargar Aspires
Chapter 22 - Robert in Action
Chapter 23 - Robert Finds a New Instrument
Chapter 24 - Death
Chapter 25 - In Memoriam

Part 3. His Manhood

Chapter 1 - In the Desert
Chapter 2 - Home Again
Chapter 3 - A Mere Glimpse
Chapter 4 - The Doctor's Death
Chapter 5 - A Talk with Grannie
Chapter 6 - Shargar's Mother
Chapter 7 - The Silk-Weaver
Chapter 8 - My Own Acquaintance
Chapter 9 - The Brothers
Chapter 10 - A Neophyte

Chapter 11 - The Suicide
Chapter 12 - Andrew at Last
Chapter 13 - Andrew Rebels
Chapter 14 - The Brown Letter
Chapter 15 - Father and Son
Chapter 16 - Change of Scene
Chapter 17 - In the Country
Chapter 18 - Three Generations
Chapter 19 - The Whole Story
Chapter 20 - The Vanishing
Chapter 21 - In Expectation
Glossary of Broad Scots Words

Note from Editor

Robert Falconer is the story of a good-hearted, perceptive Scottish boy searching for his father and for a God of love amid the stern religion of his grandmother. Written in 1868 and largely autobiographical, the book gives a vivid description of Scotland and London in that time; plus, like all of MacDonald's works, everything is permeated by a mysterious sense of another reality. We gain much true spiritual and practical insight as we follow Robert's discoveries and friendships, especially with the poor.

Robert Falconer was enormously popular between 1870 and 1890, serialized in magazines and published in many editions. It was one of MacDonald's great Scottish novels (along with *David Elginbrod* in 1863 and *Alec Forbes of Howglen* in 1865) on which his reputation as a literary figure in his day was largely based. The fictional Falconer was among the author's favorite characters: he brought him into other books as well and even named one of his sons Robert Falconer MacDonald. The reader is struck by Falconer's sheer weight as a person; he represents the mature man MacDonald aspired to be. Queen Victoria enthusiastically dispersed the book among her grandsons. An abridged version was published as *The Musician's Quest* by Michael Phillips (Bethany House, 1984).

This novel has frequent dialogue in the broad Scottish dialect (Doric) which can be a challenge. Many words are only a bit different from normal English; some are in shortened form, marked by an apostrophe. Even so, their meaning can be hard to deduce when the context includes multiple Scots words. And some broad Scots seems a completely

different language. So this edition tries to place needed definitions in the text [in blue superscript] — untidy but convenient. (Words occurring frequently soon may no longer have their definition inserted. For a refresher of these words' meanings, readers can consult this book's Glossary of Broad Scots Words, compiled by John Bechard of London, England.)

Instances of abbreviated words:

a' can mean "all"
an' - "and"
'at - "that"
i' - "in"
'll - "will"
o' - "of", "on"
s' - "shall"
's - "us", "his", "as", "is", or "has"
't - "it"

Instances of words only a bit different from normal English:

aboot - about
ae - one, a
auld - old
canna - cannot
cud - could
eneuch - enough
fowk - folk
frae - from
hoo - how
ken - know
lat - let
maist - most, almost
maun - must
nae - no, not
thae - those, these

verra - very
weel - well
whiles - sometimes, at times

I gave the electronic (scanned) text of this book additional proof-reading and tried to make its formatting aesthetic and friendly. Similar "MacDonald-lover editions" of more of George MacDonald's other titles are at my MacDonald page.
—Harold N. Miller, Broadway VA

ROBERT FALCONER.

BY

GEORGE MAC DONALD, LL.D.

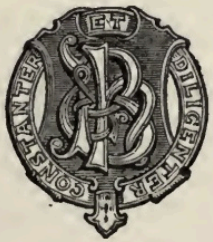
AUTHOR OF

"ALEC FORBES OF HOWGLEN,"

"DAVID ELGINBROD,"

ETC. ETC.

Countrymen,
My heart doth joy that yet, in all my life,
I found no man but he was true to me.
BRUTUS in *Julius Cæsar*.



LONDON:
HURST AND BLACKETT, PUBLISHERS,
13, GREAT MARLBOROUGH STREET.

Part 1. His Boyhood

Chapter 1 - A Recollection

Robert Falconer, school-boy, aged fourteen, thought he had never seen his father; that is, thought he had no recollection of having ever seen him. But the moment when my story begins, he had begun to doubt whether his belief in the matter was correct. And, as he went on thinking, he became more and more assured that he had seen his father somewhere about six years before, as near as a thoughtful boy of his age could judge of the lapse of a period that would form half of that portion of his existence which was bound into one by the reticulations of memory.

For there dawned upon his mind the vision of one Sunday afternoon. Betty had gone to church, and he was alone with his grandmother, reading *The Pilgrim's Progress* to her, when, just as Christian knocked at the wicket-gate, a tap came to the street door, and he went to open it. There he saw a tall, somewhat haggard-looking man, in a shabby black coat (the vision gradually dawned upon him till it reached the minuteness of all these particulars), his hat pulled down on to his projecting eyebrows, and his shoes very dusty, as with a long journey on foot—it was a hot Sunday, he remembered that—who looked at him very strangely, and without a word pushed him aside, and went straight into his grandmother's parlour, shutting the door behind him. He followed, not doubting that the man must have a right to go there, but questioning very much his right to shut him out. When he reached the door, however, he found it bolted; and outside he had to stay all alone, in the desolate remainder of the house, till Betty came home from church.

He could even recall, as he thought about it, how drearily the afternoon had passed. First he had opened the street door, and stood in

it. There was nothing alive to be seen, except a sparrow picking up crumbs, and he would not stop till he was tired of him. The Royal Oak, down the street to the right, had not even a horseless gig or cart standing before it; and King Charles, grinning awfully in its branches on the signboard, was invisible from the distance at which he stood. In at the other end of the empty street, looked the distant uplands, whose waving corn and grass were likewise invisible, and beyond them rose one blue truncated peak in the distance, all of them wearily at rest this weary Sabbath day. However, there was one thing than which this was better, and that was being at church, which, to this boy at least, was the very fifth essence of dreariness.

He closed the door and went into the kitchen. That was nearly as bad. The kettle was on the fire, to be sure, in anticipation of tea; but the coals under it were black on the top, and it made only faint efforts, after immeasurable intervals of silence, to break into a song, giving a hum like that of a bee a mile off, and then relapsing into hopeless inactivity. Having just had his dinner, he was not hungry enough to find any resource in the drawer where the oatcakes lay, and, unfortunately, the old wooden clock in the corner was going, else there would have been some amusement in trying to torment it into demonstrations of life, as he had often done in less desperate circumstances than the present. At last he went up-stairs to the very room in which he now was, and sat down upon the floor, just as he was sitting now. He had not even brought his *Pilgrim's Progress* with him from his grandmother's room. But, searching about in all holes and corners, he at length found Klopstock's *Messiah* translated into English, and took refuge there till Betty came home. Nor did he go down till she called him to tea, when, expecting to join his grandmother and the stranger, he found, on the contrary, that he

was to have his tea with Betty in the kitchen, after which he again took refuge with Klopstock in the garret, and remained there till it grew dark, when Betty came in search of him, and put him to bed in the gable-room, and not in his usual chamber. In the morning, every trace of the visitor had vanished, even to the thorn stick which he had set down behind the door as he entered.

All this Robert Falconer saw slowly revive on the palimpsest of his memory, as he washed it with the vivifying waters of recollection.

Chapter 2 - A Visitor

It was a very bare little room in which the boy sat, but it was his favourite retreat. Behind the door, in a recess, stood an empty bedstead, without even a mattress upon it. This was the only piece of furniture in the room, unless some shelves crowded with papers tied up in bundles, and a cupboard in the wall, likewise filled with papers, could be called furniture. There was no carpet on the floor, no windows in the walls. The only light came from the door, and from a small skylight in the sloping roof, which showed that it was a garret-room. Nor did much light come from the open door, for there was no window on the walled stair to which it opened; only opposite the door a few steps led up into another garret, larger, but with a lower roof, unceiled, and perforated with two or three holes, the panes of glass filling which were no larger than the small blue slates which covered the roof: from these panes a little dim brown light tumbled into the room where the boy sat on the floor, with his head almost between his knees, thinking.

But there was less light than usual in the room now, though it was only half-past two o'clock, and the sun would not set for more than half-an-hour yet; for if Robert had lifted his head and looked up, it would have been at, not through, the skylight. No sky was to be seen. A thick covering of snow lay over the glass. A partial thaw, followed by frost, had fixed it there—a mass of imperfect cells and confused crystals. It was a cold place to sit in, but the boy had some faculty for enduring cold when it was the price to be paid for solitude. And besides, when he fell into one of his thinking moods, he forgot, for a season, cold and everything else but what he was thinking about—a faculty for which he was to be envied.

If he had gone down the stair, which described half the turn of a screw in its descent, and had crossed the landing to which it brought him, he could have entered another bedroom, called the gable or rather *ga'le* room, equally at his service for retirement; but, though carpeted and comfortably furnished, and having two windows at right angles, commanding two streets, for it was a corner house, the boy preferred the garret-room—he could not tell why. Possibly, windows to the streets were not congenial to the meditations in which, even now, as I have said, the boy indulged.

These meditations, however, though sometimes as abstruse, if not so continuous, as those of a metaphysician—for boys are not unfrequently more given to metaphysics than older people are able or, perhaps, willing to believe—were not by any means confined to such subjects: castle-building had its full share in the occupation of those lonely hours; and for this exercise of the constructive faculty, what he knew, or rather what he did not know, of his own history gave him scope enough, nor was his brain slow in supplying him with material corresponding in quantity to the space afforded. His mother had been dead for so many years that he had only the vaguest recollections of her tenderness, and none of her person. All he was told of his father was that he had gone abroad. His grandmother would never talk about him, although he was her own son. When the boy ventured to ask a question about where he was, or when he would return, she always replied—"Bairns suld[should] haud[hold] their tongues." Nor would she vouchsafe another answer to any question that seemed to her from the farthest distance to bear down upon that subject. "Bairns maun[must] learn to haud their tongues," was the sole variation of which the response admitted. And the boy did learn to hold his tongue. Perhaps he would have thought less about his father

if he had had brothers or sisters, or even if the nature of his grandmother had been such as to admit of their relationship being drawn closer—into personal confidence, or some measure of familiarity. How they stood with regard to each other will soon appear.

Whether the visions vanished from his brain because of the thickening of his blood with cold, or he merely acted from one of those undefined and inexplicable impulses which occasion not a few of our actions, I cannot tell, but all at once Robert started to his feet and hurried from the room. At the foot of the garret stair, between it and the door of the gable-room already mentioned, stood another door at right angles to both, of the existence of which the boy was scarcely aware, simply because he had seen it all his life and had never seen it open. Turning his back on this last door, which he took for a blind one, he went down a short broad stair, at the foot of which was a window. He then turned to the left into a long flagged passage or *transe*, passed the kitchen door on the one hand, and the double-leaved street door on the other; but, instead of going into the parlour, the door of which closed the transe, he stopped at the passage-window on the right, and there stood looking out.

What might be seen from this window certainly could not be called a very pleasant prospect. A broad street with low houses of cold gray stone is perhaps as uninteresting a form of street as any to be found in the world, and such was the street Robert looked out upon. Not a single member of the animal creation was to be seen in it, not a pair of eyes to be discovered looking out at any of the windows opposite. The sole motion was the occasional drift of a vapour-like film of white powder, which the wind would lift like dust from the snowy carpet that covered the street, and wafting it along for a few yards, drop again to its repose, till another stronger gust, prelusive of the wind about to rise at sun-

down,—a wind cold and bitter as death—would rush over the street, and raise a denser cloud of the white water-dust to sting the face of any improbable person who might meet it in its passage. It was a keen, knife-edged frost, even in the house, and what Robert saw to make him stand at the desolate window, I do not know, and I believe he could not himself have told. There he did stand, however, for the space of five minutes or so, with nothing better filling his outer eyes at least than a bald spot on the crown of the street, whence the wind had swept away the snow, leaving it brown and bare, a spot of March in the middle of January.

He heard the town drummer in the distance, and let the sound invade his passive ears, till it crossed the opening of the street, and vanished "down the town."

"There's Dooble[double] Sanny[Sandy]," he said to himself—"wi' siccan[such a] cauld[cold] han's[hands], 'at he's playin' upo' the drum-heid[drum head] as gin[if] he was loupin' in a bowie[leaping in a cask]."

Then he stood silent once more, with a look as if anything would be welcome to break the monotony.

While he stood a gentle timorous tap came to the door, so gentle indeed that Betty in the kitchen did not hear it, or she, tall and Roman-nosed as she was, would have answered it before the long-legged dreamer could have reached the door, though he was not above three yards from it. In lack of anything better to do, Robert stalked to the summons. As he opened the door, these words greeted him:

"Is Robert at—eh! it's Bob himsel'! Bob, I'm byous[exceedingly] cauld[cold]."

"What for dinna ye gang[go] hame[home], than?"

"What for wasna ye at the schuil the day?"

"I spier[ask about, enquire] ae queston at you, and ye answer me wi' anither."

“Weel, I hae nae[no, not] hame[home] to gang[go] till.”

“Weel, and I had a sair heid[headache]. But whaur’s yer hame[home] gane[gone] till than?”

“The hoose[house] is there a’ richt, but whaur my mither is I dinna ken. The door’s lockit, an’ Jeames Jaup, they tell me ’s tane[taken] awa’[away] the key. I doobt[suspect] my mither’s awa’ upo’ the tramp again, and what’s to come o’ me, the Lord kens.”

“What’s this o’ ’t?” interposed a severe but not unmelodious voice, breaking into the conversation between the two boys; for the parlour door had opened without Robert’s hearing it, and Mrs. Falconer, his grandmother, had drawn near to the speakers.

“What’s this o’ ’t?” she asked again. “Wha’s[who is] that ye’re conversin’ wi’ at the door, Robert? Gin[if] it be ony[any] decent laddie, tell him to come in, and no stan’[stand] at the door in sic[such] a day ’s this.”

As Robert hesitated with his reply, she looked round the open half of the door, but no sooner saw with whom he was talking than her tone changed. By this time Betty, wiping her hands in her apron, had completed the group by taking her stand in the kitchen door.

“Na, na,” said Mrs. Falconer. “We want nane[none] sic-like[suchlike] here. What does he want wi’ you, Robert? Gie[give] him a piece[slice of bread], Betty, and lat[let, allow] him gang[go].—Eh, sirs! the callant[stripling, lad (term of affection)] hasna a stockin’-fit upo’ ’im—and in sic[such] weather!”

For, before she had finished her speech, the visitor, as if in terror of her nearer approach, had turned his back, and literally showed her, if not a clean pair of heels, yet a pair of naked heels from between the soles and uppers of his shoes: if he had any stockings at all, they ceased before they reached his ankles.

“What ails him at me?” continued Mrs. Falconer, “that he rins[runs] as gin[if] I war[were] a boodie[ghost, hobgoblin]? But it’s nae[no, not] wonner[wonder, marvel] he canna bide the sicht o’ a decent body, for he’s no used till ’t. What does he want wi’ you, Robert?”

But Robert had a reason for not telling his grandmother what the boy had told him: he thought the news about his mother would only make her disapprove of him the more. In this he judged wrong. He did not know his grandmother yet.

“He’s in my class at the schuil,” said Robert, evasively.

“Him? What class, noo[now]?”

Robert hesitated one moment, but, compelled to give some answer, said, with confidence,

“The Bible-class.”

“I thocht[thought] as muckle[much]! What gars[causes, compels] ye play at hide and seek wi’ me? Do ye think I dinna ken weel eneuch[enough] there’s no a lad or a lass at the schuil but ’s i’[in, into] the Bible-class? What wants he here?”

“Ye hardly gae[gave] him time to tell me, grannie. Ye frichtit him.”

“Me fricht him! What for suld[should] I fricht him, laddie? I’m no sic[such] ferlie[wonder] that onybody needs be frichtit at me.”

The old lady turned with visible, though by no means profound offence upon her calm forehead, and walking back into her parlour, where Robert could see the fire burning right cheerily, shut the door, and left him and Betty standing together in the transe[passage in a house]. The latter returned to the kitchen, to resume the washing of the dinner-dishes; and the former returned to his post at the window. He had not stood more than half a minute, thinking what was to be done with his school-fellow

deserted of his mother, when the sound of a coach-horn drew his attention to the right, down the street, where he could see part of the other street which crossed it at right angles, and in which the gable of the house stood. A minute after, the mail came in sight—scarlet, spotted with snow—and disappeared, going up the hill towards the chief hostelry of the town, as fast as four horses, tired with the bad footing they had had through the whole of the stage, could draw it after them. By this time the twilight was falling; for though the sun had not yet set, miles of frozen vapour came between him and this part of the world, and his light was never very powerful so far north at this season of the year.

Robert turned into the kitchen, and began to put on his shoes. He had made up his mind what to do.

"Ye're never gaein' oot[out], Robert?" said Betty, in a hoarse tone of expostulation.

"'Deed am I, Betty. What for no?"

"You 'at's been in a' day wi' a sair heid[headache]! I'll jist gang[go] benn the hoose[in/into the parlour (best room of house)] and tell the mistress, and syne[then] we'll see what she'll please to say till 't."

"Ye'll do naething o' the kin'[kind], Betty. Are ye gaein' to turn clash-pyet[tell-tale] at *your* age?"

"What ken ye aboot my age? There's never a man-body[full grown man] i'[in, into] the toon[town, village] kens aught aboot my age."

"It's ower[over] muckle[much] for onybody to min' upo'[remember], is 't, Betty?"

"Dinna be ill-tongued, Robert, or I'll jist gang[go] benn the hoose to the mistress."

"Betty, wha began wi' bein' ill-tongued? Gin[If] ye tell my grandmither that I gaed[went] oot[out] the nicht[tonight], I'll gang[go] to the schuilmaister o'

Muckledrum, and get a sicht o' the kirstenin'[christening] buik[book]; an' gin[if] yer name binna[be not] there, I'll tell ilkabody[everybody, everyone] I meet 'at oor Betty was never kirstened[christened]; and that'll be a sair[sore] affront, Betty."

"Hoot[pshaw]! Was there ever sic[such] a laddie!" said Betty, attempting to laugh it off. "Be sure ye be back afore tay-time[tea time, supper], 'cause yer grannie 'ill[will] be speirin'[asking about] efter[after] ye, and ye wadna hae me lee aboot ye?"

"I wad[would] hae naebody lee about me. Ye jist needna lat[let, allow] on 'at ye hear her. Ye can be deif eneuch[enough] when ye like, Betty. But I s' be back afore tay-time[tea time, supper], or come on the waur[worse]."

Betty, who was in far greater fear of her age being discovered than of being unchristianized in the search, though the fact was that she knew nothing certain about the matter, and had no desire to be enlightened, feeling as if she was thus left at liberty to hint what she pleased,—Betty, I say, never had any intention of going "benn the hoose to the mistress." For the threat was merely the rod of terror which she thought it convenient to hold over the back of the boy, whom she always supposed to be about some mischief except he were in her own presence and visibly reading a book: if he were reading aloud, so much the better. But Robert likewise kept a rod for his defence, and that was Betty's age, which he had discovered to be such a precious secret that one would have thought her virtue depended in some cabalistic manner upon the concealment of it. And, certainly, nature herself seemed to favour Betty's weakness, casting such a mist about the number of her years as the goddesses of old were wont to cast about a wounded favourite; for some said Betty was forty, others said she was sixty-five, and, in fact, almost everybody who knew her had a different belief on the matter.

By this time Robert had conquered the difficulty of induing boots as hard as a thorough wetting and as thorough a drying could make them, and now stood prepared to go. His object in setting out was to find the boy whom his grandmother had driven from the door with a hastier and more abject flight than she had in the least intended. But, if his grandmother should miss him, as Betty suggested, and inquire where he had been, what was he to say? He did not mind misleading his grannie, but he had a great objection to telling her a lie. His grandmother herself delivered him from this difficulty.

"Robert, come here," she called from the parlour door. And Robert obeyed.

"Is 't dingin'[snowing heavily] on, Robert?" she asked.

"No, grannie; it's only a starnie[very small quantity] o' drift."

The meaning of this was that there was no fresh snow falling, or *beating on*, only a little surface snow blowing about.

"Weel, jist pit[put, make] yer shune[shoes] on, man, and rin[run] up to Miss Naper's upo' the Squaur[square], and say to Miss Naper, wi' my compliments, that I wad[would] be sair[sorely] obleeged till her gin[if] she wad[would] len'[lend, give] me that fine receipt[recipe] o' hers for crappit heids[stuffed head of cod or haddock], and I'll sen' 't back safe the morn's[tomorrow's] mornin'. Rin[run], noo[now]."

This commission fell in admirably with Robert's plans, and he started at once.

Chapter 3 - The Boar's Head

Miss Napier was the eldest of three maiden sisters who kept the principal hostelry of Rothieden, called The Boar's Head; from which, as Robert reached the square in the dusk, the mail-coach was moving away with a fresh quaternion of horses. He found a good many boxes standing upon the pavement close by the archway that led to the inn-yard, and around them had gathered a group of loungers, not too cold to be interested. These were looking towards the windows of the inn, where the owner of the boxes had evidently disappeared.

"Saw ye ever sic[such] a sicht in oor toon[town, village] afore!" said *Dooble Sanny*, as people generally called him, his name being Alexander Alexander, pronounced, by those who chose to speak of him with the ordinary respect due from one mortal to another, Sandy Elshender. Double Sandy was a soutar[cobbler], or shoemaker, remarkable for his love of sweet sounds and whisky. He was, besides, the town-crier, who went about with a drum at certain hours of the morning and evening, like a perambulating clock, and also made public announcements of sales, losses, &c.; for the rest—a fierce, fighting fellow when in anger or in drink, which latter included the former.

"What's the sicht, Sandy?" asked Robert, coming up with his hands in the pockets of his trowsers.

"Sic[such] a sicht as ye never saw, man," returned Sandy; "the bonniest leddy[lady] ever man set his ee[eye] upo'. I culd[could] na hae thocht[thought] there had been sic[such] a woman i'[in, into] this warl'[world]."

"Hoot[pshaw], Sandy!" said Robert, "a body wad[would] think she was tint[lost, got lost] and ye had the cryin' o' her. Speyk laicher[lower], man; she'll maybe

hear ye. Is she i'[in, into] the inn there?"

"Ay[yes, indeed] is she," answered Sandy. "See sic[such] a warl'[world; a large number] o' kists[chests, boxes, luggage] as she's brocht[brought] wi' her," he continued, pointing towards the pile of luggage. "Saw ye ever sic[such] a bourach[heap]? It jist blecks[perplexes, beats] me to think what ae body can du[do] wi' sae mony[many] kists. For I mayna doobt[doubt] but there's something or ither[other] in ilka[every] ane[one] o' them. Naebody wad[would] carry aboot toom[empty, unload] kists wi' them. I can*not* mak'[make, do] it oot[out]."

The boxes might well surprise Sandy, if we may draw any conclusions from the fact that the sole implement of personal adornment which he possessed was two inches of a broken comb, for which he had to search when he happened to want it, in the drawer of his stool, among awls, lumps of rosin for his violin, masses of the same substance wrought into shoemaker's wax for his ends, and packets of boar's bristles, commonly called *birse*[*bristle, plume of hair*], for the same.

"Are thae[those, these] a' ae body's?" asked Robert.

"Troth[truth, indeed] are they. They're a' hers, I wat[know, assure]. Ye wad[would] hae thocht[thought] she had been gaein' to The Bothie; but gin[if] she had been that, there wad[would] hae been a cairriage to meet her," said Crookit Caumill, the ostler.

The Bothie was the name facetiously given by Alexander, Baron Rothie, son of the Marquis of Boarshead, to a house he had built in the neighbourhood, chiefly for the accommodation of his bachelor friends from London during the shooting-season.

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, Caumill," said the shoemaker. "She's nae[no, not] sic[such] cattle[persons of contempt], yon."

"Haud[hold, keep] up the bit bowat[stable-lantern], man, and lat[let, allow] Robert here see the direction upo' them. Maybe he'll mak'[make, do] something o't[of]

it. He's a fine scholar, ye ken," said another of the bystanders.

The ostler held the lantern to the card upon one of the boxes, but Robert found only an M., followed by something not very definite, and a J., which might have been an I., Rothieden, Driftshire, Scotland.

As he was not immediate with his answer, Peter Lumley, one of the group, a lazy ne'er-do-weel, who had known better days, but never better manners, and was seldom quite drunk, and seldomer still quite sober, struck in with,

"Ye dinna ken a' thing everything, anything yet, ye see, Robbie."

From Sandy this would have been nothing but a good-humoured attempt at facetiousness. From Lumley it meant spite, because Robert's praise was in his ears.

"I dinna preten' to ken ae hair mair more than ye do yersel', Mr. Lumley; and that's nae no, not sayin' muckle much, surely," returned Robert, irritated at his tone more than at his words.

The bystanders laughed, and Lumley flew into a rage.

"Haud hold, keep yer ill tongue, ye brat," he said. "Wha' who are ye to mak' make, do sic such remarks upo' yer betters? A'body everybody kens yer gran'father was naething but the blin' blind piper o' Portcloddie."

This was news to Robert—probably false, considering the quarter whence it came. But his mother-wit did not forsake him.

"Weel, Mr. Lumley," he answered, "didna he pipe weel? Daur dare ye tell me 'at he didna pipe weel?—as weel's well as ye cud could hae dune done 't yersel', noo now, Mr. Lumley?"

The laugh again rose at Lumley's expense, who was well known to have tried his hand at most things, and succeeded in nothing. Dooble Sanny was especially delighted.

"De'il[devil] hae ye for a de'il's[devil's]brat! 'At I suld[should] sweer!" was all Lumley's reply, as he sought to conceal his mortification by attempting to join in the laugh against himself. Robert seized the opportunity of turning away and entering the house.

"That ane's[one's] no to be droont[drowned] or brunt[burned] aither[either]," said Lumley, as he disappeared.

"He'll no be hang't for closin' *your* mou'[mouth], Mr. Lumley," said the shoemaker.

Thereupon Lumley turned and followed Robert into the inn.

Robert had delivered his message to Miss Napier, who sat in an arm-chair by the fire, in a little comfortable parlour, held sacred by all about the house. She was paralytic, and unable to attend to her guests further than by giving orders when anything especial was referred to her decision. She was an old lady—nearly as old as Mrs. Falconer—and wore glasses, but they could not conceal the kindness of her kindly eyes. Probably from giving less heed to a systematic theology, she had nothing of that sternness which first struck a stranger on seeing Robert's grandmother. But then she did not know what it was to be contradicted; and if she had been married, and had had sons, perhaps a sternness not dissimilar might have shown itself in her nature.

"Noo[now] ye maunna[must not, may not] gang[go] awa'[away] till ye get something," she said, after taking the receipt[recipe] in request from a drawer within her reach, and laying it upon the table. But ere she could ring the bell which stood by her side, one of her servants came in.

"Please, mem[Ma'am, Miss]," she said, "Miss Letty and Miss Lizzy's seein' efter[after] the bonny leddy[lady]; and sae I maun[must, have to] come to you."

"Is she a' that bonny, Meg?" asked her mistress.

“Na, na, she’s nae[no, not] sae fearsome bonny; but Miss Letty’s unco[very] ta’en[taken, seized] wi’ her, ye ken. An’ we a’ say as Miss Letty says i’[in, into] this hoose[house]. But that’s no the pint[point]. Mr. Lumley’s here, seekin’ a gill[tipple, drink]: is he to hae ’t?”

“Has he had eneuch[enough] already, do ye think, Meg?”

“I dinna ken aboot eneuch[enough], mem[Ma’am, Miss]; that’s ill to mizzer[measure]; but I dinna think he’s had ower[over] muckle[much].”

“Weel, lat[let, allow] him tak’ it. But dinna lat[let, allow] him sit doon.”

“Verra[very] weel, mem,” said Meg, and departed.

“What gars[causes, compels] Mr. Lumley say ’at my gran’father was the blin’[blind] piper o’ Portcloddie? Can ye tell me, Miss Naper?” asked Robert.

“Whan[when] said he that, Robert?”

“Jist as I cam in.”

Miss Napier rang the bell. Another maid appeared.

“Sen’ Meg here direckly.”

Meg came, her eyes full of interrogation.

“Dinna gie[give] Lumley a drap[drop]. Set him up to insult a young gentleman at my door-cheek[door-post, doorway]! He s’ no hae a drap here the nicht[tonight]. He ’s *had* ower[over] muckle[much], Meg, already, an’ ye oucht[ought] to hae seen that.”

“’Deed, mem[Ma’am, Miss], he ’s had mair[more] than ower[over] muckle[much], than; for there’s anither gill[tipple, drink] ower[over] the thrapple[windpipe, throat] o’ ’m[him]. I div[do] my best, mem, but, never tastin’ mysel’, I canna aye tell hoo[how] muckle[much] ’s i’[in, into] the wame[belly] o’ a’ body ’at comes in.”

“Ye’re no fit for the place, Meg; that’s a fac’[fact, reality].”

At this charge Meg took no offence, for she had been in the place for twenty years. And both mistress and maid laughed the moment they parted company.

"Wha's[who is] this 'at's come the nicht[tonight], Miss Naper, 'at they're sae ta'en[taken, seized] wi'?" asked Robert.

"Atweel[truely, of course], I dinna ken yet. She's ower[over] bonnie by a' accoonts to be gaein' about her lane[on her own]. It's a mercy the baron's no at hame[home]. I wad[would] hae to lock her up wi' the forks and spunes[spoons]."

"What for that?" asked Robert.

But Miss Napier vouchsafed no further explanation. She stuffed his pockets with sweet biscuits instead, dismissed him in haste, and rang the bell.

"Meg, whaur hae they putten[put] the stranger-leddy?"

"She's no gaein' to bide at our hoose[house], mem."

"*What* say ye, lass? She's never gaein' ower[over] to lucky[old woman] Happit's, is she?"

"Ow[oh] na, mem. She's a leddy[lady], ilka[every] inch o' her. But she's some sib[relation, akin] to the auld captain, and she's gaein' doon the street as sune[soon, early] 's Caumill's ready to tak her bit boxes i'[in, into] the barrow. But I doobt[suspect] there'll be maist[most, almost] three barrowfu's o' them."

"Atweel[truely, of course]. Ye can gang[go]."

Chapter 4 - Shargar

Robert went out into the thin drift, and again crossing the wide desolate-looking square, turned down an entry leading to a kind of court, which had once been inhabited by a well-to-do class of the townspeople, but had now fallen in estimation. Upon a stone at the door of what seemed an outhouse he discovered the object of his search.

"What are ye sittin' there for, Shargar?"

Shargar is a word of Gaelic origin, applied, with some sense of the ridiculous, to a thin, wasted, dried-up creature. In the present case it was the nickname by which the boy was known at school; and, indeed, where he was known at all.

"What are ye sittin' there for, Shargar? Did naebody offer to tak ye in?"

"Na, nane[none] o' them. I think they maun[must, have to] be a' i'[in, into] their beds. I'm most dreidfu' cauld[cold]."

The fact was, that Shargar's character, whether by imputation from his mother, or derived from his own actions, was none of the best. The consequence was, that, although scarcely one of the neighbours would have allowed him to sit there all night, each was willing to wait yet a while, in the hope that somebody else's humanity would give in first, and save her from the necessity of offering him a seat by the fireside, and a share of the oatmeal porridge which probably would be scanty enough for her own household. For it must be borne in mind that all the houses in the place were occupied by poor people, with whom the one virtue, Charity, was, in a measure, at home, and amidst many sins, cardinal and other, managed to live in even some degree of comfort.

“Get up, than, Shargar, ye lazy beggar! Or are ye frozen to the door-stane[stone at threshold of door]? I s’ awa’[away] for a kettle o’ bilin’[boiling] water to lowse[loose] ye.”

“Na, na, Bob. I’m no stucken[stuck]. I’m only some stiff wi’ the cauld[cold]; for wow, but I *am* cauld[cold]!” said Shargar, rising with difficulty. “Gie[give] ’s a haud[hold, keep] o’ yer han’, Bob.”

Robert gave him his hand, and Shargar was straightway upon his feet.

“Come awa’[away] noo[now], as fest[fast] and as quaiet ’s ye can.”

“What are ye gaein’ to du[do] wi’ me, Bob?”

“What’s that to you, Shargar?”

“Naything. Only I wad[would] like to ken.”

“Hae[Have] patience, and ye will ken. Only mind ye do as I tell ye, and dinna speik a word.”

Shargar followed in silence.

On the way Robert remembered that Miss Napier had not, after all, given him the receipt[recipe] for which his grandmother had sent him. So he returned to The Boar’s Head, and, while he went in, left Shargar in the archway, to shiver, and try in vain to warm his hands by the alternate plans of slapping them on the opposite arms, and hiding them under them.

When Robert came out, he saw a man talking to him under the lamp. The moment his eyes fell upon the two, he was struck by a resemblance between them. Shargar was right under the lamp, the man to the side of it, so that Shargar was shadowed by its frame, and the man was in its full light. The latter turned away, and passing Robert, went into the inn.

“Wha’s[who is] that?” asked Robert.

“I dinna ken,” answered Shargar. “He spak to me or[before] ever I kent[known, knew] he was there, and garred[caused, compelled] my hert[heart] gie[give] sic[such] a loup[leap, jump] ’at it maist[most, almost] fell into my breeks[breeches].”

“And what said he to ye?”

“He said was the deevil at my lug[ear], that I did naething but caw[drive, hammer] my han’s[hands] to bits upo’ my shoothers[shoulders].”

“And what said ye to that?”

“I said I wissed[wished] he was, for he wad[would] aiblins[perhaps, possibly] hae some spare heat aboot him, an’ I hadna freely[quite] eneuch[enough].”

“Weel dune[done], Shargar! What said he to that?”

“He leuch[laughed], and speirt[asked about, enquired] gin[if] I wad[would] list[enlist as soldier], and gae[gave] me a shillin’.”

“Ye didna tak it, Shargar?” asked Robert in some alarm.

“Ay[yes, indeed] did I. Catch me no taking a shillin’!”

“But they’ll haud[hold, keep] ye till ’t.”

“Na, na. I’m ower[over] shochlin’[in-kneed, waddling] for a sodger[soldier]. But that man was nae[no, not] sodger[soldier].”

“And what mair[more] said he?”

“He speirt[asked about, enquired] what I wad[would] do wi’ the shillin’.”

“And what said ye?”

“Ow[oh]! Syne[then] ye cam’[came] oot[out], and he gaed[went] awa’[away].”

“And ye dinna ken wha it was?” repeated Robert.

“It was some like my brither[brother], Lord Sandy; but I dinna ken,” said Shargar.

By this time they had arrived at Yule the baker’s shop.

“Bide ye here,” said Robert, who happened to possess a few coppers, “till I gang[go] into Eel’s.”

Shargar stood again and shivered at the door, till Robert came out with a penny loaf in one hand, and a twopenny loaf in the other.

“Gie[give] ’s a bit, Bob,” said Shargar. “I’m as hungry as I am cauld[cold].”

“Bide ye still,” returned Robert. “There’s a time for a’ thing[everything, anything], and your time ’s no come to forgather[assemble, encounter] wi’ this loaf yet. Does na it smell fine? It’s new frae[from] the bakehoose no ten minutes ago. I ken by the fin’[feel] o’ ’t.”

“Lat[let, allow] me fin’ ’t,” said Shargar, stretching out one hand, and feeling his shilling with the other.

“Na. Yer han’s[hands] canna be clean. And fowk[folk] suld[should] aye eat clean, whether they gang[go] clean or no.”

“I’ll awa’[away] in an’ buy ane[one] oot[out] o’ my ain[own] shillin’,” said Shargar, in a tone of resolute eagerness.

“Ye’ll do naething o’ the kin’[kind],’ returned Robert, darting his hand at his collar. “Gie[give] *me* the shillin’. Ye’ll want it a’ or[before] lang[long].”

Shargar yielded the coin and slunk behind, while Robert again led the way till they came to his grandmother’s door.

“Gang[go] to the ga’le[gable] o’ the hoose[house] there, Shargar, and jist keek[peep, pry] roon’[around, round] the neuk[nook, corner] at me; and gin[if] I whustle[whistle] upo’ ye, come up as quaiet ’s ye can. Gin[if] I dinna, bide till I come to ye.”

Robert opened the door cautiously. It was never locked except at night, or when Betty had gone to the well for water, or to the butcher’s or baker’s, or the prayer-meeting, upon which occasions she put the key in her pocket, and left her mistress a prisoner. He looked first to the right,

along the passage, and saw that his grandmother's door was shut; then across the passage to the left, and saw that the kitchen door was likewise shut, because of the cold, for its normal position was against the wall. Thereupon, closing the door, but keeping the handle in his hand, and the bolt drawn back, he turned to the street and whistled soft and low. Shargar had, in a moment, dragged his heavy feet, ready to part company with their shoes at any instant, to Robert's side. He bent his ear to Robert's whisper.

"Gang[go] in there, and creep like a moose[mouse] to the fit[foot] o' the stair. I maun[must, have to] close the door ahin' 's," said he, opening the door as he spoke.

"I'm fleyt[frightened], Robert."

"Dinna be a fule[fool]. Grannie winna[will not] bite aff[off] yer heid[head]. She had ane[one] till her denner[dinner], the day, an' it was ill sung."

"What ane[one] o'?"

"A sheep's heid[head], ye gowk[fool, blockhead]. Gang[go] in direckly."

Shargar persisted no longer, but, taking about four steps a minute, slunk past the kitchen like a thief—not so carefully, however, but that one of his soles yet looser than the other gave one clap upon the flagged passage, when Betty straightway stood in the kitchen door, a fierce picture in a deal frame. By this time Robert had closed the outer door, and was following at Shargar's heels.

"What's this?" she cried, but not so loud as to reach the ears of Mrs. Falconer; for, with true Scotch foresight, she would not willingly call in another power before the situation clearly demanded it. "Whaur's Shargar gaein' that gait[way]?"

"Wi' me. Dinna ye see me wi' him? I'm nae[no, not] a thief, nor yet's Shargar."

"There may be twa opingons upo' that, Robert. I s' jist awa'[away] benn[inside] to the mistress. I s' hae nae[no, not] sic[such] doin's i'[in, into] *my* hoose[house]."

"It's nae[no, not] your hoose[house], Betty. Dinna lee[don't lie]."

"Weel, I s' hae nae[no, not] sic[such] things gang[go] by my kitchie[kitchen] door. There, Robert! what 'll[will] ye mak'[make, do] o' that? There's nae[no, not] offence, there, I houp[hope], gin[if] it suldna be a'thegither[all together] my ain[own] hoose[house]. Tak Shargar oot[out] o' that, or I s' awa'[away] benn the hoose[in/into the parlour (best room of house)], as I tell ye."

Meantime Shargar was standing on the stones, looking like a terrified white rabbit, and shaking from head to foot with cold and fright combined.

"I'll tak him oot[out] o' this, but it's up the stair, Betty. An' gin[if] ye gang[go] benn the hoose[in/into the parlour (best room of house)] aboot it, I sweir to ye, as sure 's death, I'll gang[go] doon to Muckledrum upo' Setterday i'[in, into] the efternune[afternoon]."

"Gang[go] awa'[away] wi' yer havers[nonsense, foolish talk]. Only gin[if] the mistress speirs[asks about, enquires] onything aboot it, what am I to say?"

"Bide till she speirs[asks about, enquires]. Auld Spunkie says, "Ready-made answers are aye to seek." And I say, Betty, hae ye a cauld[cold] pitawta[potato]?"

"I'll luik[look] and see. Wadna ye like it het[hot] up?"

"Ow[oh] ay[yes, indeed], gin[if] ye binna[be not] lang[long] aboot it."

Suddenly a bell rang, shrill and peremptory, right above Shargar's head, causing in him a responsive increase of trembling.

"Haud[hold, keep] oot[out] o' my gait[way]. There's the mistress's bell," said Betty.

"Jist bide till we're roon'[around, round] the neuk[nook, corner] and on to the stair," said Robert, now leading the way.

Betty watched them safe round the corner before she made for the parlour, little thinking to what she had become an unwilling accomplice, for she never imagined that more than an evening's visit was intended by Shargar, which in itself seemed to her strange and improper enough even for such an eccentric boy as Robert to encourage.

Shargar followed in mortal terror, for, like Christian in *The Pilgrim's Progress*, he had no armour to his back. Once round the corner, two strides of three steps each took them to the top of the first stair, Shargar knocking his head in the darkness against the never-opened door. Again three strides brought them to the top of the second flight; and turning once more, still to the right, Robert led Shargar up the few steps into the higher of the two garrets.

Here there was just glimmer enough from the sky to discover the hollow of a close bedstead, built in under the sloping roof, which served it for a tester, while the two ends and most of the front were boarded up to the roof. This bedstead fortunately was not so bare as the one in the other room, although it had not been used for many years, for an old mattress covered the boards with which it was bottomed.

"Gang[go] in there, Shargar. Ye'll be warmer there than upo' the door-step ony[any] gait[way]. Pit[put, make] aff[off, away, past] yer shune[shoes]."

Shargar obeyed, full of delight at finding himself in such good quarters. Robert went to a forsaken press[wall-cupboard] in the room, and brought out an ancient cloak of tartan, of the same form as what is now called an Inverness cape, a blue dress-coat, with plain gilt buttons, which

shone even now in the all but darkness, and several other garments, amongst them a kilt, and heaped them over Shargar as he lay on the mattress. He then handed him the twopenny and the penny loaves, which were all his stock had reached to the purchase of, and left him, saying,—

"I maun[must, have to] awa'[away] to my tay[tea, supper], Shargar. I'll fess[fetch, bring] ye a cauld[cold] tawtie[potato] het[hot] again, gin[if] Betty has ony[any]. Lie still, and whatever ye do, dinna come oot[out] o' that."

The last injunction was entirely unnecessary.

"Eh, Bob, I'm jist in haven[heaven]!" said the poor creature, for his skin began to feel the precious possibility of reviving warmth in the distance.

Now that he had gained a new burrow, the human animal soon recovered from his fears as well. It seemed to him, in the novelty of the place, that he had made so many doublings to reach it, that there could be no danger of even the mistress of the house finding him out, for she could hardly be supposed to look after such a remote corner of her dominions. And then he was boxed in with the bed, and covered with no end of warm garments, while the friendly darkness closed him and his shelter all round. Except the faintest blue gleam from one of the panes in the roof, there was soon no hint of light anywhere; and this was only sufficient to make the darkness visible, and thus add artistic effect to the operation of it upon Shargar's imagination—a faculty certainly uneducated in Shargar, but far, very far from being therefore non-existent. It was, indeed, actively operative, although, like that of many a fine lady and gentleman, only in relation to such primary questions as: "What shall we eat? And what shall we drink? And wherewithal shall we be clothed?" But as he lay and devoured the new "white breid[bread]," his satisfaction—the bare delight of his animal existence—reached a pitch

such as even this imagination, stinted with poverty, and frost-bitten with maternal oppression, had never conceived possible. The power of enjoying the present without anticipation of the future or regard of the past, is the especial privilege of the animal nature, and of the human nature in proportion as it has not been developed beyond the animal. Herein lies the happiness of cab horses and of tramps: to them the gift of forgetfulness is of worth inestimable. Shargar's heaven was for the present gained.

Chapter 5 - The Symposium

Robert had scarcely turned out of the square on his way to find Shargar, when a horseman entered it. His horse and he were both apparently black on one side and gray on the other, from the snow-drift settling to windward. The animal looked tired, but the rider sat as easy as if he were riding to cover. The reins hung loose, and the horse went in a straight line for The Boar's Head, stopping under the archway only when his master drew bridle at the door of the inn.

At that moment Miss Letty was standing at the back of Miss Napier's chair, leaning her arms upon it as she talked to her. This was her way of resting as often as occasion arose for a chat with her elder sister. Miss Letty's hair was gathered in a great knot at the top of her head, and little ringlets hung like tendrils down the sides of her face, the benevolence of which was less immediately striking than that of her sister's, because of the constant play of humour upon it, especially about the mouth. If a spirit of satire could be supposed converted into something Christian by an infusion of the tenderest loving-kindness and humanity, remaining still recognizable notwithstanding that all its bitterness was gone, such was the expression of Miss Letty's mouth, It was always half puckered as if in resistance to a comic smile, which showed itself at the windows of the keen gray eyes, however the mouth might be able to keep it within doors. She was neatly dressed in black silk, with a lace collar. Her hands were small and white.

The moment the traveller stopped at the door, Miss Napier started.

"Letty," she said, "wha's[who is] that? I could amaist[almost] sweir to Black Geordie's fit[foot]."

“A’ four o’ them, I think,” returned Miss Letty, as the horse, notwithstanding, or perhaps in consequence of his fatigue, began to paw and move about on the stones impatiently.

The rider had not yet spoken.

“He’ll be efter[after] some o’ ’s deevil-ma’-care[devil-may-care] sculduddery[grossness, obscenity]. But jist rin[run] to the door, Letty, or Lizzy ’ll be there afore ye, and maybe she wadna be ower[over] ceevil[civil]. What can he be efter[after] noo[now]?”

“What wad[would] the grew[greyhound] be efter[after] but maukin[the hare]?” returned Miss Letty.

“Hoot[pshaw]! nonsense! He kens naething aboot her. Gang[go] to the door, lassie.”

Miss Letty obeyed.

“Wha’s[who is] there?” she asked, somewhat sharply, as she opened it, “that neither chaps[strikes, raps] nor ca’s?—Preserve ’s a’! is ’t you, my lord?”

“Hoo[how] ken ye me, Miss Letty withoot seein’ my face?”

“A’body[everybody] at The Boar’s Heid kens Black Geordie as weel ’s yer lordship’s ain[own] sel’. But whaur comes yer lordship frae[from] in sic[such] a nicht as this?”

“From Russia. Never dismounted between Moscow and Aberdeen. The ice is bearing to-night.”

And the baron laughed inside the upturned collar of his cloak, for he knew that strangely-exaggerated stories were current about his feats in the saddle.

“That’s a lang[long] ride, my lord, and a sliddery[slippery]. And what’s yer lordship’s wull[will]?”

“Muckle[much] ye care aboot my lordship to stand jawin’ there in a night like this! Is nobody going to take my horse?”

“I beg yer lordship’s pardon. Caumill!—Yer lordship never said ye wanted yer lordship’s horse ta’en[taken, seized]. I thocht[thought] ye micht be gaein’ on to The Bothie.—Tak’ Black Geordie here, Caumill.—Come in to the parlour, my lord.”

“How d’ye do, Miss Naper?” said Lord Rothie, as he entered the room. “Here’s this jade of a sister of yours asking me why I don’t go home to The Bothie, when I choose to stop and water here.”

“What’ll ye tak’, my lord?—Letty, fess[fetch, bring] the brandy.”

“Oh! damn your brandy! Bring me a gill[tipple, drink] of good Glendronach[brand of whisky].”

“Rin[run], Letty. His lordship’s cauld[cold].—I canna rise to offer ye the airm-cheir[armchair], my lord.”

“I can get one for myself, thank heaven!”

“Lang[long] may yer lordship return sic[such] thanks.”

“For I’m only new begun, ye think, Miss Naper. Well, I don’t often trouble heaven with my affairs. By Jove! I ought to be heard when I do.”

“Nae[no, not] doobt[suspect] ye will, my lord, whan[when] ye seek onything that’s fit to be gien[given] ye.”

“True. Heaven’s gifts are seldom much worth the asking.”

“Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, my lord, and dinna bring doon a judgment upo’ my hoose[house], for it wad[would] be missed oot[out] o’ Rothieden,”

“You’re right there, Miss Naper. And here comes the whisky to stop my mouth.”

The Baron of Rothie sat for a few minutes with his feet on the fender before Miss Letty’s blazing fire, without speaking, while he sipped the

whisky neat from a wine-glass. He was a man about the middle height, rather full-figured, muscular and active, with a small head, and an eye whose brightness had not yet been dimmed by the sensuality which might be read in the condition rather than frame of his countenance. But while he spoke so pleasantly to the Miss Napiers, and his forehead spread broad and smooth over the twinkle of his hazel eye, there was a sharp curve on each side of his upper lip, half-way between the corner and the middle, which reminded one of the same curves in the lip of his ancestral boar's head, where it was lifted up by the protruding tusks. These curves disappeared, of course, when he smiled, and his smile, being a lord's, was generally pronounced irresistible. He was good-natured, and nowise inclined to stand upon his rank, so long as he had his own way.

"Any customers by the mail to-night, Miss Naper?" he asked, in a careless tone.

"Naebody partic'lar, my lord."

"I thought ye never let anybody in that wasn't particularly particular. No foot-passengers—eh?"

"Hoot[pshaw], my lord! that's twa year ago. Gin[if] I had jaloosed[suspected, guessed] him to be a fren'[friend] o' yer lordship's, forby[as well as] bein' a lord himsel', ye ken as weel 's I du[do] that I wadna hae sent him ower[over] the gait[way] to Luckie Happit's, whaur he wadna even be ower[over] sure o' gettin' clean sheets. But gin[if] lords an' lords' sons will walk afit[afoot] like ither[other] fowk[folk], wha's[who is] to ken them frae[from] ither fowk?"

"Well, Miss Naper, he was no lord at all. He was nothing but a factor-body doon frae[from] Glenbucket."

"There was sma'[small, little] hairm dune[done] than, my lord. I'm glaid to hear 't. But what'll yer lordship hae to yer supper?"

“I would like a dish o’ your chits[sweetbreads] and nears[kidneys].”

“Noo[now], think o’ that!” returned the landlady, laughing. “You great fowk[folk] wad[would] hae the verra[very] coorse o’ natur’ turned upside doon to shuit[suit] yersels. Wha ever heard o’ caure[calves] at this time o’ the year?”

“Well, anything you like. Who was it came by the mail, did you say?”

“I said naebody partic’lar, my lord.”

“Well, I’ll just go and have a look at Black Geordie.”

“Verra[very] weel, my lord.—Letty, rin[run] an’ luik[look] efter[after] him; and as sune[soon, early] ’s he’s roon’[around, round] the neuk[nook, corner], tell Lizzie no to say a word aboot the leddy[lady]. As sure ’s deith he’s efter[after] her. Whaur cud[could] he hae heard tell o’ her?”

Lord Rothie came, a moment after, sauntering into the bar-parlour, where Lizzie, the third Miss Napier, a red-haired, round-eyed, white-toothed woman of forty, was making entries in a book.

“She’s a bonnie lassie that, that came in the coach to-night, they say, Miss Lizzie.”

“As ugly ’s sin, my lord,” answered Lizzie.

“I hae seen some sin ’at was nane[none] sae ugly, Miss Lizzie.”

“She wad[would] hae clean[entirely] scunnert[disgusted, loathed] ye, my lord. It’s a mercy ye didna see her.”

“If she be as ugly as all that, I would just like to see her.”

Miss Lizzie saw she had gone too far.

“Ow[oh], deed! Gin[if] yer lordship wants to see her, ye may see her at yer wull[will]. I s’ gang[go] and tell her.”

And she rose as if to go.

"No, no. Nothing of the sort, Miss Lizzie. Only I heard that she was bonnie, and I wanted to see her. You know I like to look at a pretty girl."

"That's ower[over] weel kent[known, knew], my lord."

"Well, there's no harm in *that*, Miss Lizzie."

"There's no harm in *that*, my lord, though yer lordship says 't."

The facts were that his lordship had been to the county-town, some forty miles off, and Black Geordie had been sent to Hillknow to meet him; for in any weather that would let him sit, he preferred horseback to every other mode of travelling, though he seldom would be followed by a groom. He had posted to Hillknow, and had dined with a friend at the inn. The coach stopping to change horses, he had caught a glimpse of a pretty face, as he thought, from its window, and had hoped to overtake the coach before it reached Rothieden. But stopping to drink another bottle, he had failed; and it was on the merest chance of seeing that pretty face that he stopped at The Boar's Head. In all probability, had the Marquis seen the lady, he would not have thought her at all such a beauty as she appeared in the eyes of Dooble Sanny; nor, I venture to think, had he thought as the shoemaker did, would he yet have dared to address her in other than the words of such respect as he could still feel in the presence of that which was more noble than himself.

Whether or not on his visit to the stable he found anything amiss with Black Geordie, I cannot tell, but he now begged Miss Lizzie to have a bedroom prepared for him.

It happened to be the evening of Friday, one devoted by some of the townspeople to a symposium. To this, knowing that the talk will throw a glimmer on several matters, I will now introduce my reader, as a spectator through the reversed telescope of my history.

A few of the more influential of the inhabitants had grown, rather than formed themselves, into a kind of club, which met weekly at The Boar's Head. Although they had no exclusive right to the room in which they sat, they generally managed to retain exclusive possession of it; for if any supposed objectionable person entered, they always got rid of him, sometimes without his being aware of how they had contrived to make him so uncomfortable. They began to gather about seven o'clock, when it was expected that boiling water would be in readiness for the compound generally called *toddy*, sometimes *punch*. As soon as six were assembled, one was always voted into the chair.

On the present occasion, Mr. Innes, the school-master, was unanimously elected to that honour. He was a hard-featured, sententious, snuffy individual, of some learning, and great respectability.

I omit the political talk with which their intercommunications began; for however interesting at the time is the scaffolding by which existing institutions arise, the poles and beams when gathered again in the builder's yard are scarcely a subject for the artist.

The first to lead the way towards matters of nearer personality was William MacGregor, the linen manufacturer, a man who possessed a score of hand-looms or so—half of which, from the advance of cotton and the decline of linen-wear, now stood idle—but who had already a sufficient deposit in the hands of Mr. Thomson the banker—agent, that is, for the county-bank—to secure him against any necessity for taking to cotton shirts himself, which were an abomination and offence unpardonable in his eyes.

"Can ye tell me, Mr. Cocker," he said, "what mak's[makes] Sandy, Lord Rothie, or Wrathy, or what suld[should] he be ca'd[called]?—tak' to The Bothie at a time like this, whan[when] there's neither huntin', nor fishin', nor

shutin'[shooting], nor onything o' the kin'[kind] aboot han' to be playacks[playthings, toys] till him, the bonnie bairn—'cep'[except, but] it be otters an' sic[such] like?"

William was a shrunken old man, with white whiskers and a black wig, a keen black eye, always in search of the ludicrous in other people, and a mouth ever on the move, as if masticating something comical.

"You know just as well as I do," answered Mr. Cocker, the Marquis of Boarshead's factor[manager of a landed property] for the surrounding estate. "He never was in the way of giving a reason for anything, least of all for his own movements."

"Somebody was sayin' to me," resumed MacGregor, who, in all probability, invented the story at the moment, "that the prince took him kissin' ane[one] o' his servan' lasses, and kickit him oot[out] o' Carlton hoose[house] into the street, and he canna win'[reach, get, go, come] ower[over] the disgrace o' 't."

"'Deed for the kissin'," said Mr. Thomson, a portly, comfortable-looking man, "that's neither here nor there, though it micht hae been a duchess or twa; but for the kickin', my word! but Lord Sandy was mair[more] likly[likely] to kick oot[out] the prince. Do ye min'[mind, remember] hoo[how] he did whan[when] the Markis taxed[scolded] him wi'—?"

"Haud[hold, keep] a quaiet sough[quiet tongue]," interposed Mr. Cruickshank, the solicitor; "there's a drap i' the hoose[presence of someone unknown]."

This was a phrase well understood by the company, indicating the presence of some one unknown, or unfit to be trusted.

As he spoke he looked towards the farther end of the room, which lay in obscurity; for it was a large room, lighted only by the four candles on the table at which the company sat.

“Whaur, Mr. Cruickshank?” asked the dominie[minister, schoolmaster] in a whisper.

“There,” answered Sampson Peddie, the bookseller, who seized the opportunity of saying something, and pointed furtively where the solicitor had only looked.

A dim figure was descried at a table in the farthest corner of the room, and they proceeded to carry out the plan they generally adopted to get rid of a stranger.

“Ye made use o’ a curious auld Scots phrase this moment, Mr. Curshank: can ye explain hoo[how] it comes to beir[bear] the meanin’ that it’s weel kent[known, knew] to beir[bear]?” said the manufacturer.

“Not I, Mr. MacGregor,” answered the solicitor. “I’m no philologist or antiquarian. Ask the chairman.”

“Gentlemen,” responded Mr. Innes, taking a huge pinch of snuff after the word, and then, passing the box to Mr. Cocker, a sip from his glass before he went on: “the phrase, gentlemen, ‘a drap[drop] i’[in, into] the hoose[house],’ no doobt[suspect] refers to an undesirable presence, for ye’re weel awaur[aware] that it’s a most unpleasin’ discovery, in winter especially, to find a drop o’ water hangin’ from yer ceiling; a something, in short, whaur it has no business to be, and is not accordingly looked for, or prepared against.”

“It seems to me, Mr. Innes,” said MacGregor, “that ye hae hit the nail, but no upo’ the heid[head]. What mak’[make, do] ye o’ the phrase, no confined to the Scots tongue, I believe, o’ an *eaves-drapper?* The whilk[which], no doobt[suspect], represents a body that hings[hangs] aboot yer winnock[window], like a drap[drop] hangin’ ower[over] abune[above, over] it frae[from] the eaves—therefore called an eaves drapper. But the sort of whilk[which] we noo[now] speak, are a waur[worse] sort a’thegither[all together]; for they come to the

inside o' yer hoose[house], o' yer verra[very] chaumer[chamber, bedroom], an' hing[hang] oot[out] their lang[long] lugs[ears] to hear what ye carena[do not care] to be hard save by a dooce[gentle, sensible] frien' or twa ower[over] a het[hot] tum'ler[tumbler, glass (whisky)]."

At the same moment the door opened, and a man entered, who was received with unusual welcome.

"Bless my sowl[soul]!" said the president, rising; "it's Mr. Lammie!—Come awa'[away], Mr. Lammie. Sit doon; sit doon. Whaur hae ye been this mony a day[for some time], like a pelican o' the wilderness?"

Mr. Lammie was a large, mild man, with florid cheeks, no whiskers, and a prominent black eye. He was characterized by a certain simple alacrity, a gentle, but outspeaking readiness, which made him a favourite.

"I dinna richtly mak'[make, do] oot[out] wha ye are,' he answered. "Ye hae unco[very] little licht here! Hoo[how] are ye a', gentlemen? I s' discover ye by degrees, and pay my respecks accordin'."

And he drew a chair to the table.

"'Deed I wuss[wish] ye wad[would]," returned MacGregor, in a voice pretentiously hushed, but none the less audible. "There's a drap[drop] in yon en' o' the hoose[house], Mr. Lammie."

"Hoot[pshaw]! never min'[mind] the man," said Lammie, looking round in the direction indicated. "I s' warran' he cares as little aboot hiz[us (emphatic)] as we care aboot him. There's nae[no, not] treason noo[now] a-days. I carena[do not care] wha hears what I say."

"For my pairt[part]," said Mr. Peddie, "I canna help wonnerin' gin[if] it cud[could] be oor auld frien' Mr. Faukener."

"Speyk o' the de'il[devil]—" said Mr. Lammie.

"Hoot[pshaw]! Na," returned Peddie, interrupting. "He wasna a'thegither[all together] the de'il."

"Haud[hold, keep] the tongue o' ye," retorted Lammie. "Dinna ye ken a proverb whan[when] ye hear 't? De'il[devil] hae ye! ye're as sharpset[keen, sharp-witted] as a missionar'. I was only gaun[going] to say that I'm doobtin'[doubting] Andrew's deid."

"Ay[yes, indeed]! Ay[yes, indeed]!" commenced a chorus of questioning.

"Mhm!"

"Aaay!"

"What gars[causes, compels] ye think that?"

"And sae he's deid!"

"He was a great favourite, Anerew[Andrew]!"

"Whaur dee'd[died] he?"

"Aye some upsettin'[forward, stuck-up, proud] though!"

"Ay[yes, indeed]. He was aye to be somebody wi' his tale."

"A gude-hertit crater[creature], but ye cudna lippen[trust, depend on] till him."

"Speyk nae[no, not] ill o' the deid. Maybe they'll hear ye, and turn roon'[around, round] i'[in, into] their coffins, and that'll whumle[whelm, overwhelm] you i' your beds," said MacGregor, with a twinkle in his eye.

"Ring the bell for anither tum'ler[tumbler, glass (whisky)], Sampson," said the chairman.

"What'll be dune[done] wi' that factory place, noo[now]? It'll be i'[in, into] the market?"

"It's been i' the market for mony[many] a year. But it's no his ava[at all]. It belangs to the auld leddy[lady], his mither," said the weaver.

“Why don’t you buy it, Mr. MacGregor, and set up a cotton mill? There’s not much doing with the linen now,” said Mr. Cocker.

“Me!” returned MacGregor, with indignation. “The Lord forgie[forgive] ye for mintin’[insinuating, hinting] at sic[such] a thing, Mr. Cocker! Me tak’ to coaton[cotton]! I wad[would] as sune[soon, early] spin the hair frae[from] Sawtan’s[Satan’s] hurdies[buttocks]. Short fushionless[tasteless, feeble] dirt, that canna grow straucht[straight] oot[out] o’ the halesome[wholesome] yird[earth], like the bonnie lint-bells[flowers of the flax], but maun[must, have to] stick itsel’ upo’ a buss[bush]!—set it up! Coorse vulgar stuff, ’at naebody wad[would] weir[wear] but loup-coonter lads[shopkeepers, salesmen] that wad[would] fain luik[look] like gentlemen by means o’ the collars and ruffles—an’ a’ comin’ frae[from] the auld loom! They may weel affoord se’enteen hunner linen to set it aff[off, away, past] wi’ ’at has naething but coaton[cotton] inside the breeks[breeches] o’ them.”

“But Dr. Wagstaff says it’s healthier,” interposed Peddie.

“I’ll wag a staff till him. De’ il a bit[Not a bit] o’ ’t ’s healthier! an’ that he kens. It’s nae[no, not] sae healthy, an’ sae it mak’s[makes] him mair[more] wark[work] wi’ ’s poothers[powders] an’ his drauchts[draughts, doses of medicine], an’ ither[other] stinkin’ stuff. Healthier! What neist[next, nearest]?”

“Somebody tellt me,” said the bookseller, inwardly conscious of offence, “’at hoo[how] Lord Sandy himsel’ weirs[wears] cotton.”

“Ow[oh] ’deed[indeed], maybe. And he sets mony[many] a worthy example furbye[as well]. Hoo[how] mony[many], can ye tell me, Mr. Peddie, has he pulled doon frae[from] honest, if no frae[from] high estate, and sent oot[out] to seek their livin’ as he taucht them? Hoo[how] mony[many]—?”

“Hoot[pshaw], hoot, Mr. MacGregor, his lordship hasn’t a cotton shirt in his possession, I’ll be bound,’ said Mr. Cocker. “And, besides, you have not to wash his dirty linen—or cotton either.”

"That's as muckle[much] as to say, accordin' to Cocker, that I'm no to speik a word against him. But I'll say what I like. He's no *my* maister," said MacGregor, who could drink very little without suffering in his temper and manners; and who, besides, had a certain shrewd suspicion as to the person who still sat in the dark end of the room, possibly because the entrance of Mr. Lammie had interrupted the exorcism.

The chairman interposed with soothing words; and the whole company, Cocker included, did its best to pacify the manufacturer; for they all knew what would be the penalty if they failed.

A good deal of talk followed, and a good deal of whisky was drunk. They were waited upon by Meg, who, without their being aware of it, cast a keen parting glance at them every time she left the room. At length the conversation had turned again to Andrew Falconer's death.

"Whaur said ye he dee'd[died], Mr. Lammie?"

"I never said he was deid. I said I was feared 'at he was deid."

"An' what gars[causes, compels] ye say that? It micht be o' consequence to hae 't correck," said the solicitor.

"I had a letter frae[from] my auld frien' and his, Dr. Anderson. Ye min' upo'[remember] him, Mr. Innes, dunna ye? He's heid[head] o' the medical boord[board] at Calcutta noo[now]. He says naething but that he doobts[suspects; doubts] he's gane[gone]. He gaed[went] up the country, and he hasna hard[heard] o' him for sae lang[long]. We hae keepit[kept] up a correspondence for mony[many] a year noo[now], Dr. Anderson an' me. He was a relation o' Anerew's[Andrew's], ye ken—a second cousin, or something. He'll be hame[home] or[before] lang[long], I'm thinkin', wi' a fine pension."

"He winna[will not] weir[wear] a cotton sark[shirt], I'll be boon'[bound]," said MacGregor.

“What’s the auld leddy[lady] gaein’ to du[do] wi’ that lang-leggit oye[grandson, nephew] o’ hers, Anerew’s[Andrew’s] son?” asked Sampson.

“Ow[oh]! he’ll be gaein’ to the college, I’m thinkin’. He’s a fine lad, and a clever, they tell me,” said Mr. Thomson.

“Indeed, he’s all that, and more too,” said the school-master.

“There’s naething ’ull[will] du[do] but the college noo[now]!” said MacGregor, whom nobody heeded, for fear of again rousing his anger.

“Hoo[how] ’ill[will] she manage that, honest woman? She maun[must, have to] hae but little to spare frae[from] the cleedin’[clothing, sheltering] o’ ’m[him].”

“She’s a gude manager, Mistress Faukner. And, ye see, she has the bleachgreen yet.”

”*She* doesna weir[wear] cotton sarks[shirts],” growled MacGregor. “Mony’s[many’s] the wob[web, woven material] o’ mine she’s bleached and boucht[bought] tu[too, also]!”

Nobody heeding him yet, he began to feel insulted, and broke in upon the conversation with intent.

“Ye haena telt[told] ’s yet, Cocker,” he said, “what that maister o’ yours is duin’ here at this time o’ the year. I wad[would] ken that, gin[if] ye please.”

“How should I know, Mr. MacGregor?” returned the factor[manager of a landed property], taking no notice of the offensive manner in which the question was put.

“He’s no a hair better nor[than] ane[one] o’ thae[those, these] Algerine[Algerian] pirates ’at Lord Exmooth’s het[hot] the hips[borders of a district] o’—and that’s my opingon.”

“He’s nae[no, not] amo’[among] your feet, MacGregor,” said the banker. “Ye micht jist lat[let, allow] him lie.”

"Gin[if] I had him doon, faith gin[if] I wadna lat[let, allow] him lie! I'll jist tell ye ae thing, gentlemen, that cam'[came] to my knowledge no a hunner year ago. An' it's a' as true 's gospel, though I hae aye held my tongue aboot it till this verra[very] nicht. Ay[yes, indeed]! ye'll a' hearken noo[now]; but it's no lauchin'[laughing], though there was sculduddery[grossness, obscenity] eneuch[enough], nae[no, not] doobt[suspect], afore it cam'[came] that len'th. And mony[many] a het[hot] drap[drop] did the puir[poor] lassie greet[cry, weep], I can tell ye. Faith! it was no lauchin'[laughing] to her. She was a servan' o' oors, an' a ticht bonnie lass she was. They ca'd[called] her the weyver's[weaver] bonny Mary—that's the name she gaed[went] by. Weel, ye see—"

MacGregor was interrupted by a sound from the further end of the room. The stranger, whom most of them had by this time forgotten, had risen, and was approaching the table where they sat.

"Guid guide us!" interrupted several under their breaths, as all rose, "it's Lord Sandy himsel'!"

"I thank you, gentleman," he said, with a mixture of irony and contempt, "for the interest you take in my private history. I should have thought it had been as little to the taste as it is to the honour of *some* of you to listen to such a farrago of lies."

"Lees[lies]! my lord," said MacGregor, starting to his feet. Mr. Cocker looked dismayed, and Mr. Lammie sheepish—all of them dazed and dumbfoundered, except the old weaver, who, as his lordship turned to leave the room, added:

"Lang[long] lugs[ears] suld[should] be made o' leather, my lord, for fear they grow het[hot] wi' what they hear."

Lord Rothie turned in a rage. He too had been drinking.

"Kick that toad into the street, or, by heaven! it's the last drop any of you drink in this house!" he cried.

“The taed[toad] may tell the poddock[frog] what the rottan[rat] did i’[in, into] the taed’s[toad’s] hole, my lord,” said MacGregor, whom independence, honesty, bile, and drink combined to render fearless.

Lord Sandy left the room without another word. His factor[manager of a landed property] took his hat and followed him. The rest dropped into their seats in silence. Mr. Lammie was the first to speak.

“There’s a pliskie[trick, prank]!” he said.

“I cud[could] jist say the word efter[after] auld Simeon,” said MacGregor.

“I never thocht[thought] to be sae favoured! Eh! but I hae langed[longed], and noo[now] I hae spoken!” with which words he sat down, contented.

When Mr. Cocker overtook his master, as MacGregor had not unfitly styled him, he only got a damning for his pains, and went home considerably crestfallen.

Lord Rothie returned to the landlady in her parlour.

“What’s the maitter[matter] wi’ ye, my lord? What’s vexed ye?” asked Miss Napier, with a twinkle in her eyes, for she thought, from the baron’s mortification, he must have received some rebuff, and now that the *bonnie leddy*[*lady*] was safe at Captain Forsyth’s, enjoyed the idea of it.

“Ye keep an ill-tongued hoose[house], Miss Naper,” answered his lordship.

Miss Napier guessed at the truth at once—that he had overheard some free remarks on his well-known licence of behaviour.

“Weel, my lord, I do my best. A body canna keep an inn and speir[ask about, enquire] the carritchis[catechism] at the door o’ ’t. But I believe ye’re i’[in, into] the richt, my lord, for I heard an awfu’ aff-gang[outlet] o’ sweirin’ i’[in, into] the yard, jist afore yer lordship cam’[came] in. An’ noo’[now] ’at I think o’ ’t, it wasna that onlike yer lordship’s ain[own] word.”

Lord Sandy broke into a loud laugh. He could enjoy a joke against himself when it came from a woman, and was founded on such a trifle as a personal vice.

"I think I'll go to bed," he said when his laugh was over. "I believe it's the only safe place from your tongue, Miss Naper."

"Letty," cried Miss Napier, "fess[fetch, bring] a can'le[candle], and show his lordship to the reid[red] room."

Till Miss Letty appeared, the baron sat and stretched himself. He then rose and followed her into the archway, and up an outside stair to a door which opened immediately upon a handsome old-fashioned room, where a blazing fire lighted up the red hangings. Miss Letty set down the candle, and bidding his lordship good night, turned and left the room, shutting the door, and locking it behind her—a proceeding of which his lordship took no notice, for, however especially suitable it might be in his case, it was only, from whatever ancient source derived, the custom of the house in regard to this particular room and a corresponding chamber on the opposite side of the archway.

Meantime the consternation amongst the members of the club was not so great as not to be talked over, or to prevent the call for more whisky and hot water. All but MacGregor, however, regretted what had occurred. He was so elevated with his victory and a sense of courage and prowess, that he became more and more facetious and overbearing.

"It's all very well for you, Mr. MacGregor," said the dominie[minister, schoolmaster], with dignity: "you have nothing to lose."

"Troth[truth, indeed]! he canna brak[break] the bank—eh, Mr. Tamson?"

"He may give me a hint to make you withdraw your money, though, Mr. MacGregor."

“De’il care[I don’t care] gin[if] I do!” returned the weaver. “I can mak’[make, do] better o’ ’t ony[any] day.”

“But there’s yer hoose[house] an’ kailyard[kitchen garden],” suggested Peddie.

“They’re ma[my] ain[own]!—a’[all] ma ain! He canna lay ’s finger on onything o’ mine but my servan’ lass,” cried the weaver, slapping his thigh-bone—for there was little else to slap.

Meg, at the moment, was taking her exit-glance. She went straight to Miss Napier.

“Willie MacGregor’s had eneuch[enough], mem[Ma’am, Miss], an’ a drappy[little drop, a little (liquor)] ower[over].”

“Sen’ Caumill doon to Mrs. MacGregor to say wi’ my compliments that she wad[would] do weel to sen’ for him,” was the response.

Meantime he grew more than troublesome. Ever on the outlook, when sober, after the foibles of others, he laid himself open to endless ridicule when in drink, which, to tell the truth, was a rare occurrence. He was in the midst of a prophetic denunciation of the vices of the nobility, and especially of Lord Rothie, when Meg, entering the room, went quietly behind his chair and whispered:

“Maister MacGregor, there’s a lassie come for ye.”

“I’m nae[no, not] in,” he answered, magnificently.

“But it’s the mistress ’at’s sent for ye. Somebody’s wantin’ ye.”

“Somebody maun[must, have to] want me, than.—As I was sayin’, Mr. Cheerman and gentlemen—”

“Mistress MacGregor ’ll be efter[after] ye hersel’, gin[if] ye dinna gang[go],” said Meg.

“Let her come. Duv[do] ye think I’m fleyt[frightened] at her? De’il[Not] a step ’ll I gang[go] till I please. Tell her that, Meg.”

Meg left the room, with a broad grin on her good-humoured face.

"What's the bitch lauchin'[laughing] at?" exclaimed MacGregor, starting to his feet.

The whole company rose likewise, using their endeavour to persuade him to go home.

"Duv[do] ye think I'm drunk, sirs? I'll lat[let, allow] ye ken I'm no drunk. I hae a wull[will] o' mine ain[own] yet. Am I to gang[go] hame[home] wi' a lassie to haud[hold, keep] me oot[out] o' the gutters? Gin[if] ye daur[dare] to alloo that I'm drunk, ye ken hoo[how] ye'll fare, for de'il[not] a fit[foot] 'll[will] I gang[go] oot[out] o' this till I hae anither tum'ler[tumbler, glass (whisky)]."

"I'm thinkin' there's mair[more] o' 's jist want ane[one] mair[more]," said Peddie.

A confirmatory murmur arose as each looked into the bottom of his tumbler, and the bell was instantly rung. But it only brought Meg back with the message that it was time for them all to go home. Every eye turned upon MacGregor reproachfully.

"Ye needna luik[look] at me that gait[way], sirs. I'm no fou[full, well-fed]," said he.

"'Deed no. Naebody taks ye to be," answered the chairman. "Meggie, there's naebody's had ower[over] muckle[much] yet, and twa or three o' 's hasna had freely[quite] eneuch[enough]. Jist gang[go] an' fess[fetch, bring] a mutchkin[liquid measure (a pint)] mair[more]. An' there'll be a shillin' to yersel', lass."

Meg retired, but straightway returned.

"Miss Naper says there's no a drap[drop] mair[more] drink to be had i' this hoose[house] the nicht[tonight]."

“Here, Meggie,” said the chairman, “there’s yer shillin’; and ye jist gang[go] to Miss Lettie, and gie[give] her my compliments, and say that Mr. Lammie’s here, and we haena seen him for a lang[long] time. And’—the rest was spoken in a whisper—‘I’ll sweir to ye, Meggie, the weyver[weaver; spider] body sanna[shall not] hae ae drap[drop] o’ ’t.”

Meg withdrew once more, and returned.

“Miss Letty’s compliments, sir, and Miss Naper has the keys, and she’s gane[gone] till her bed, and we maunna[must not, may not] disturb her. And it’s time ’at a’ honest fowk[folk] was in their beds tu[too, also]. And gin[if] Mr. Lammie wants a bed i’ this hoose[house], he maun[must, have to] gang[go] till ’t. An’ here’s his can’le[candle]. Gude nicht to ye a’, gentlemen.”

So saying, Meg set the lighted candle on the sideboard, and finally vanished. The good-tempered, who formed the greater part of the company, smiled to each other, and emptied the last drops of their toddy first into their glasses, and thence into their mouths. The ill-tempered, numbering but one more than MacGregor, growled and swore a little, the weaver declaring that he would not go home. But the rest walked out and left him, and at last, appalled by the silence, he rose with his wig awry, and trotted—he always trotted when he was tipsy—home to his wife.

Chapter 6 - Mrs. Falconer

Meantime Robert was seated in the parlour at the little dark mahogany table, in which the lamp, shaded towards his grandmother's side, shone brilliantly reflected. Her face being thus hidden both by the light and the shadow, he could not observe the keen look of stern benevolence with which, knowing that he could not see her, she regarded him as he ate his thick oat-cake of Betty's skilled manufacture, well loaded with the sweetest butter, and drank the tea which she had poured out and sugared for him with liberal hand. It was a comfortable little room, though its inlaid mahogany chairs and ancient sofa, covered with horsehair, had a certain look of hardness, no doubt. A shepherdess and lamb, worked in silks whose brilliance had now faded half-way to neutrality, hung in a black frame, with brass rosettes at the corners, over the chimney-piece—the sole approach to the luxury of art in the homely little place. Besides the muslin stretched across the lower part of the window, it was undefended by curtains. There was no cat in the room, nor was there one in the kitchen even; for Mrs. Falconer had such a respect for humanity that she grudged every morsel consumed by the lower creation. She sat in one of the arm-chairs belonging to the hairy set, leaning back in contemplation of her grandson, as she took her tea.

She was a handsome old lady—little, but had once been taller, for she was more than seventy now. She wore a plain cap of muslin, lying close to her face, and bordered a little way from the edge with a broad black ribbon, which went round her face, and then, turning at right angles, went round the back of her neck. Her gray hair peeped a little way from under this cap. A clear but short-sighted eye of a light hazel shone under a smooth thoughtful forehead; a straight and well-elevated, but rather

short nose, which left the firm upper lip long and capable of expressing a world of dignified offence, rose over a well-formed mouth, revealing more moral than temperamental sweetness; while the chin was rather deficient than otherwise, and took little share in indicating the remarkable character possessed by the old lady.

After gazing at Robert for some time, she took a piece of oat-cake from a plate by her side, the only luxury in which she indulged, for it was made with cream instead of water—it was very little she ate of anything—and held it out to Robert in a hand white, soft, and smooth, but with square finger tips, and squat though pearly nails. "Ha'e[here], Robert," she said; and Robert received it with a "Thank you, grannie"; but when he thought she did not see him, slipped it under the table and into his pocket. She saw him well enough, however, and although she would not condescend to ask him why he put it away instead of eating it, the endeavour to discover what could have been his reason for so doing cost her two hours of sleep that night. She would always be at the bottom of a thing if reflection could reach it, but she generally declined taking the most ordinary measures to expedite the process.

When Robert had finished his tea, instead of rising to get his books and betake himself to his lessons, in regard to which his grandmother had seldom any cause to complain, although she would have considered herself guilty of high treason against the boy's future if she had allowed herself once to acknowledge as much, he drew his chair towards the fire, and said:

"Grandmamma!"

"He's gaein' to tell me something," said Mrs. Falconer to herself. "Will 't be aboot the puir[poor] barfut crater[creature] they ca'[call] Shargar, or will 't be aboot the piece[apiece] he pat[put, made] intil[into, within] 's pooch[pocket, pouch]?"

"Weel, laddie?" she said aloud, willing to encourage him.

"Is 't true that my gran'father was the blin'[blind] piper o' Portcloddie?"

"Ay[yes, indeed], laddie; true eneuch[enough]. Hoots[pshaw], na! Nae[no, not] yer grandfather, but yer father's grandfather, laddie—my husband's father."

"Hoo[how] cam that aboot?"

"Weel, ye see, he was oot[out] i' the Forty-five; and efter[after] the battle o' Culloden, he had to rin[run] for 't. He wasna wi' his ain[own] clan at the battle, for his father had broucht him to the Lawlands[Lowlands] whan[when] he was a lad; but he played the pipes till a reg'ment raised by the Laird o' Portcloddie. And for ooks[weeks] he had to hide amo'[among] the rocks. And they tuik[took] a' his property frae[from] him. It wasna muckle[much]—a wheen[little, few] hooses[houses], and a kailyard[kitchen garden] or twa, wi' a bit fairmy[little farm] on the tap[top, tip, head] o' a cauld[cold] hill near the sea-shore; but it was eneuch[enough] and to spare; and whan[when] they tuik[took] it frae[from] him, he had naething left i' the i' warl'[world] but his sons. Yer grandfather was born the verra[very] day o' the battle, and the verra[very] day 'at the news cam, the mother deed[died]. But yer great grandfather wasna lang[long] or[before] he merried[married] anither wife. He was sic[such] a man as ony[any] woman micht hae been prood to merry. She was the dother[daughter] o' an episcopalian minister, and she keepit[kept] a school in Portcloddie. I saw him first mysel' whan[when] I was aboot twenty—that was jist the year afore I was merried[married]. He was a gey[fairly, considerably] auld man than, but as straucht[straight] as an ellwand[ell-wand, ruler, yardstick; (1 ell = 37 inches)], and jist pooerfu' beyon' belief. His shackle-bane[wrist, wrist-bone] was as thick as baith[both] mine; and years and years efter[after] that, whan[when] he tuik[took] his son, my husband, and his grandson, my Anerew—"

"What ails ye, grannie? What for dinna ye gang[go] on wi' the story?"

After a somewhat lengthened pause, Mrs. Falconer resumed as if she had not stopped at all.

"Ane[one] in ilka[every] han', jist for the fun o' 't, he kneipit[knocked] their heids[heads] thegither[together], as gin[if] they hed[had] been twa carldoddies[Charlie-Georgie's (term of endearment]. But maybe it was the lauchin'[laughing] o' the twa lads, for they thocht[thought] it unco[very] fun. They were maist[most, almost] killed wi' lauchin'[laughing]. But the last time he did it, the puir[poor] auld man hostit[coughed] sair[sorely] efterhin[after], and had to gang[go] and lie doon. He didna live lang[long] efter[after] that. But it wasna that 'at killed him, ye ken."

"But hoo[how] cam he to play the pipes?"

"He likit the pipes. And yer grandfather, he tuik[took] to the fiddle."

"But what for did they ca'[call] him the blin'[blind] piper o' Portcloddie?"

"Because he turned blin'[blind] lang[long] afore his en' cam, and there was naething ither[other; further] he cud[could] do. And he wad[would] aye mak[make, do] an honest baubee[halfpenny] whan[when] he cud[could]; for siller[silver, money] was fell scarce at that time o' day amo'[among] the Falconers. Sae he gaed[went] throu the toon[town, village] at five o'clock ilka[every] mornin' playin' his pipes, to lat[let, allow] them 'at war[were] up ken they war[were] up in time, and them 'at warna, that it was time to rise. And syne[then] he played them again aboot aucht[eight] o'clock at nicht, to lat[let, allow] them ken 'at it was time for dacent fowk[folk] to gang[go] to their beds. Ye see, there wasna sae mony[many] clocks and watches by half than as there is noo[now]."

"Was he a guid piper, grannie?"

"What for speir[ask about, enquire] ye that?"

"Because I tauld that sunk[sack (corpulent)], Lumley—"

"Ca'[call] naebody names, Robert. But what richt had ye to be speikin' to a man like that?"

“He spak to me first.”

“Whaur saw ye him?”

“At The Boar’s Heid.”

“And what richt had ye to gang[go] stan’in’ aboot? Ye oucht[ought] to ha’[have”] gane[gone] in at ance[once].”

“There was a half-dizzen o’ fowk[folk] stan’in’ aboot, and I bude[had to] to speik whan[when] I was spoken till.”

“But ye budena[must not, could not] stop an’ mak’[make, do] ae fule[fool] mair[more].”

“Isna that ca’in’[calling] names, grannie?”

“’Deed, laddie, I doobt[suspect] ye hae me there. But what said the fallow[fellow, chap] Lumley to ye?”

“He cast up[taunt, reproach] to me that my grandfather was naething but a blin’[blind] piper.”

“And what said ye?”

“I daured[dared] him to say ’at he didna pipe weel.”

“Weel dune[done], laddie! And ye micht say ’t wi’ a gude conscience, for he wadna hae been piper till ’s regiment at the battle o’ Culloden gin[if] he hadna pipit[piped, played bagpipes] weel. Yon’s[that (thing) there is] his kilt hingin’[hanging] up i’ the press[wall-cupboard] i’ the garret. Ye’ll hae to grow, Robert, my man, afore ye fill that.”

“And whase[whose] was that blue coat wi’ the bonny gowd[gold] buttons upo’ ’t?” asked Robert, who thought he had discovered a new approach to an impregnable hold, which he would gladly storm if he could.

“Lat[let, allow] the coat sit. What has that to do wi’ the kilt? A blue coat and a tartan kilt gang[go] na weel thegither[together].”

“Excep’ in an auld press[wall-cupboard] whaur naebody sees them. Ye wadna care, grannie, wad[would] ye, gin[if] I was to cut aff[off, away, past] the bonnie buttons?”

“Dinna lay a finger upo’ them. Ye wad[would] be gaein’ playin’ at pitch and toss or ither[other] sic[such] ploys[amusements, sports] wi’ them. Na, na, lat[let, allow] them sit.”

“I wad[would] only niffer them for bools[exchange them for marbles].”

“I daur[dare (implying a threat)] ye to touch the coat or onything ’ither[other; further] that’s i’ that press[wall-cupboard].”

“Weel, weel, grannie. I s’ gang[go] and get my lessons for the morn[tomorrow].”

“It’s time, laddie. Ye hae been jabberin’ ower[over] muckle[much]. Tell Betty to come and tak’ awa’[away] the tay-things.”

Robert went to the kitchen, got a couple of hot potatoes and a candle, and carried them up-stairs to Shargar, who was fast asleep. But the moment the light shone upon his face, he started up, with his eyes, if not his senses, wide awake.

“It wasna me, mither! I tell ye it wasna me!”

And he covered his head with both arms, as if to defend it from a shower of blows.

“Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, Shargar. It’s me.”

But before Shargar could come to his senses, the light of the candle falling upon the blue coat made the buttons flash confused suspicions into his mind.

“Mither, mither,” he said, “ye hae gane[gone] ower[over] far this time. There’s ower[over] mony[many] o’ them, and they’re no the safe colour. We’ll be baith[both] hangt, as sure’s there’s a deevil in hell.”

As he said thus, he went on trying to pick the buttons from the coat, taking them for sovereigns, though how he could have seen a sovereign at that time in Scotland I can only conjecture. But Robert caught him by the shoulders, and shook him awake with no gentle hands, upon which he began to rub his eyes, and mutter sleepily:

"Is that you, Bob? I hae been dreamin', I doobt[suspect]."

"Gin[if] ye dinna learn to dream quaieter, ye'll get you and me tu[too, also] into mair[more] trouble nor[than] I care to hae aboot ye, ye rascal. Haud[hold, keep] the tongue o' ye, and eat this tawtie[potato], gin[if] ye want onything mair[more]. And here's a bit o' reamy[creamy] cakes tu[too, also] ye. Ye winna[will not] get that in ilka[every] hoose[house] i' the toon[town, village]. It's my grannie's especial."

Robert felt relieved after this, for he had eaten all the cakes Miss Napier had given him, and had had a pain in his conscience ever since.

"Hoo[how] got ye a haud[hold, keep] o' 't?" asked Shargar, evidently supposing he had stolen it.

"She gies[gives] me a bit noo[now] and than."

"And ye didna eat it yersel'? Eh, Bob!"

Shargar was somewhat overpowered at this fresh proof of Robert's friendship. But Robert was still more ashamed of what he had not done.

He took the blue coat carefully from the bed, and hung it in its place again, satisfied now, from the way his grannie had spoken, or, rather, declined to speak, about it, that it had belonged to his father.

"Am I to rise?" asked Shargar, not understanding the action.

"Na, na, lie still. Ye'll be warm eneuch[enough] wantin' thae[those, these] sovereigns. I'll lat[let, allow] ye oot[out] i' the mornin' afore grannie's up. And ye maun[must, have to] mak'[make, do] the best o't[of it] efter[after] that till it's dark

again. We'll sattle[settle] a' aboot it at the schuil the morn[tomorrow]. Only we maun[must, have to] be circumspec', ye ken."

"Ye cudna lay yer han's[hands] upo' a drap[drop] o' whusky, cud[could] ye, Bob?"

Robert stared in horror. A boy like that asking for whisky! and in his grandmother's house, too!

"Shargar," he said solemnly, "there's no a drap o' whusky i' this hoose[house]. It's awfu' to hear ye mention sic[such] a thing. My grannie wad[would] smell the verra[very] name o' 't a mile awa'[away]. I doobt[suspect] that's her fit[foot] upo' the stair a'ready."

Robert crept to the door, and Shargar sat staring with horror, his eyes looking from the gloom of the bed like those of a half-strangled dog. But it was a false alarm, as Robert presently returned to announce.

"Gin[if] ever ye sae muckle[much] as mention whusky again, no to say drink ae drap[one drop] o' 't, you and me pairt[part] company, and that I tell *you*, Shargar," said he, emphatically.

"I'll never luik[look] at it; I'll never mint[aim] at dreamin' o' 't," answered Shargar, coweringly. "Gin[if] she pits[puts, makes] 't intil[into, within] my moo'[mouth], I'll spit it oot[out]. But gin[if] *ye* strive wi' me, Bob, I'll cut my throat—I will; an' that'll be seen and heard tell o'."

All this time, save during the alarm of Mrs. Falconer's approach, when he sat with a mouthful of hot potato, unable to move his jaws for terror, and the remnant arrested half-way in its progress from his mouth after the bite—all this time Shargar had been devouring the provisions Robert had brought him, as if he had not seen food that day. As soon as they were finished, he begged for a drink of water, which Robert managed to procure for him. He then left him for the night, for his longer absence might have brought his grandmother after him, who had perhaps only

too good reasons for being doubtful, if not suspicious, about boys in general, though certainly not about Robert in particular. He carried with him his books from the other garret-room where he kept them, and sat down at the table by his grandmother, preparing his Latin and geography by her lamp, while she sat knitting a white stocking with fingers as rapid as thought, never looking at her work, but staring into the fire, and seeing visions there which Robert would have given everything he could call his own to see, and then would have given his life to blot out of the world if he had seen them. Quietly the evening passed, by the peaceful lamp and the cheerful fire, with the Latin on the one side of the table, and the stocking on the other, as if ripe and purified old age and hopeful unstained youth had been the only extremes of humanity known to the world. But the bitter wind was howling by fits in the chimney, and the offspring of a nobleman and a gipsy lay asleep in the garret, covered with the cloak of an old Highland rebel.

At nine o'clock, Mrs. Falconer rang the bell for Betty, and they had *worship*. Robert read a chapter, and his grandmother prayed an extempore prayer, in which they that looked at the wine when it was red in the cup, and they that worshipped the woman clothed in scarlet and seated upon the seven hills, came in for a strange mixture, in which the vengeance yielded only to the pity.

"Lord, lead them to see the error of their ways," she cried. "Let the rod of thy wrath awake the worm of their conscience that they may know verily that there is a God that ruleth in the earth. Dinna lat[let, allow] them gang[go] to hell, O Lord, we beseech thee."

As soon as prayers were over, Robert had a tumbler of milk and some more oat-cake, and was sent to bed; after which it was impossible for him to hold any further communication with Shargar. For his

grandmother, little as one might suspect it who entered the parlour in the daytime, always slept in that same room, in a bed closed in with doors like those of a large press[wall-cupboard] in the wall, while Robert slept in a little closet, looking into a garden at the back of the house, the door of which opened from the parlour close to the head of his grandmother's bed. It was just large enough to hold a good-sized bed with curtains, a chest of drawers, a bureau, a large eight-day clock, and one chair, leaving in the centre about five feet square for him to move about in. There was more room as well as more comfort in the bed. He was never allowed a candle, for light enough came through from the parlour, his grandmother thought; so he was soon extended between the whitest of cold sheets, with his knees up to his chin, and his thoughts following his lost father over all spaces of the earth with which his geography-book had made him acquainted.

He was in the habit of leaving his closet and creeping through his grandmother's room before she was awake—or at least before she had given any signs to the small household that she was restored to consciousness, and that the life of the house must proceed. He therefore found no difficulty in liberating Shargar from his prison, except what arose from the boy's own unwillingness to forsake his comfortable quarters for the fierce encounter of the January blast which awaited him. But Robert did not turn him out before the last moment of safety had arrived; for, by the aid of signs known to himself, he watched the progress of his grandmother's dressing—an operation which did not consume much of the morning, scrupulous as she was with regard to neatness and cleanliness—until Betty was called in to give her careful assistance to the final disposition of the *mutch*[*woman's cap with frill; worn under*

bonnet, when Shargar's exit could be delayed no longer. Then he mounted to the foot of the second stair, and called in a keen whisper,

"Noo[now], Shargar, cut for the life o' ye."

And down came the poor fellow, with long gliding steps, ragged and reluctant, and, without a word or a look, launched himself out into the cold, and sped away he knew not whither. As he left the door, the only suspicion of light was the dull and doubtful shimmer of the snow that covered the street, keen particles of which were blown in his face by the wind, which, having been up all night, had grown very cold, and seemed delighted to find one unprotected human being whom it might badger at its own bitter will. Outcast Shargar! Where he spent the interval between Mrs. Falconer's door and that of the school, I do not know. There was a report amongst his school-fellows that he had been found by Scroggie, the fish-cadger, lying at full length upon the back of his old horse, which, either from compassion or indifference, had not cared to rise up under the burden. They said likewise that, when accused by Scroggie of housebreaking, though nothing had to be broken to get in, only a string with a peculiar knot, on the invention of which the cadger[carrier, pedlar] prided himself, to be undone, all that Shargar had to say in his self-defence was, that he had a terrible sair[sore] wame[belly], and that the horse was warmer nor[than] the stanes[stones] i' the yard; and he had dune[done] him nae[no, not] ill, nae[no, not] even drawn a hair frae[from] his tail—which would have been a difficult feat, seeing the horse's tail was as bare as his hoof.

Chapter 7 - Robert to the Rescue!

That Shargar was a parish scholar—which means that the parish paid his fees, although, indeed, they were hardly worth paying—made very little difference to his position amongst his school-fellows. Nor did the fact of his being ragged and dirty affect his social reception to his discomfort. But the accumulated facts of the oddity of his personal appearance, his supposed imbecility, and the bad character borne by his mother, placed him in a very unenviable relation to the tyrannical and vulgar-minded amongst them. Concerning his person, he was long, and, as his name implied, lean, with pale-red hair, reddish eyes, no visible eyebrows or eyelashes, and very pale face—in fact, he was half-way to an Albino. His arms and legs seemed of equal length, both exceedingly long. The handsomeness of his mother appeared only in his nose and mouth, which were regular and good, though expressionless; and the birth of his father only in his small delicate hands and feet, of which any girl who cared only for smallness, and heeded neither character nor strength, might have been proud. His feet, however, were supposed to be enormous, from the difficulty with which he dragged after him the huge shoes in which in winter they were generally encased.

The imbecility, like the large feet, was only imputed. He certainly was not brilliant, but neither did he make a fool of himself in any of the few branches of learning of which the parish-scholar came in for a share. That which gained him the imputation was the fact that his nature was without a particle of the aggressive, and all its defensive of as purely negative a character as was possible. Had he been a dog, he would never have thought of doing anything for his own protection beyond turning up his four legs in silent appeal to the mercy of the heavens. He was an

absolute sepulchre in the swallowing of oppression and ill-usage. It vanished in him. There was no echo of complaint, no murmur of resentment from the hollows of that soul. The blows that fell upon him resounded not, and no one but God remembered them.

His mother made her living as she herself best knew, with occasional well-begrudged assistance from the parish. Her chief resource was no doubt begging from house to house for the handful of oatmeal which was the recognized, and, in the court of custom-taught conscience, the legalized dole upon which every beggar had a claim; and if she picked up at the same time a chicken, or a boy's rabbit, or any other stray luxury, she was only following the general rule of society, that your first duty is to take care of yourself. She was generally regarded as a gipsy, but I doubt if she had any gipsy blood in her veins. She was simply a tramper, with occasional fits of localization. Her worst fault was the way she treated her son, whom she starved apparently that she might continue able to beat him.

The particular occasion which led to the recognition of the growing relation between Robert and Shargar was the following. Upon a certain Saturday—some sidereal power inimical to boys must have been in the ascendant—a Saturday of brilliant but intermittent sunshine, the white clouds seen from the school windows indicating by their rapid transit across those fields of vision that fresh breezes friendly to kites, or *draigons*, as they were called at Rothieden, were frolicking in the upper regions—nearly a dozen boys were *kept in* for not being able to pay down from memory the usual instalment of Shorter Catechism always due at the close of the week. Amongst these boys were Robert and Shargar. Sky-revealing windows and locked door were too painful; and in proportion as the feeling of having nothing to do increased, the more uneasy did the

active element in the boys become, and the more ready to break out into some abnormal manifestation. Everything—sun, wind, clouds—was busy out of doors, and calling to them to come and join the fun; and activity at the same moment excited and restrained naturally turns to mischief. Most of them had already learned the obnoxious task—one quarter of an hour was enough for that—and now what should they do next? The eyes of three or four of the eldest of them fell simultaneously upon Shargar.

Robert was sitting plunged in one of his day-dreams, for he, too, had learned his catechism, when he was roused from his reverie by a question from a pale-faced little boy, who looked up to him as a great authority.

"What for 's 't ca'd[called] the *Shorter* carritchis[catechism], Bob?"

"'Cause it's no fully sae lang[long] 's the Bible," answered Robert, without giving the question the consideration due to it, and was proceeding to turn the matter over in his mind, when the mental process was arrested by a shout of laughter. The other boys had tied Shargar's feet to the desk at which he sat—likewise his hands, at full stretch; then, having attached about a dozen strings to as many elf-locks of his pale-red hair, which was never cut or trimmed, had tied them to various pegs in the wall behind him, so that the poor fellow could not stir. They were now crushing up pieces of waste-paper, not a few leaves of stray school-books being regarded in that light, into bullets, dipping them in ink and aiming then at Shargar's face.

For some time Shargar did not utter a word; and Robert, although somewhat indignant at the treatment he was receiving, felt as yet no impulse to interfere, for success was doubtful. But, indeed, he was not very easily roused to action of any kind; for he was as yet mostly in the larva-condition of character, when everything is transacted inside. But

the fun grew more furious, and spot after spot of ink gloomed upon Shargar's white face. Still Robert took no notice, for they did not seem to be hurting him much. But when he saw the tears stealing down his patient cheeks, making channels through the ink which now nearly covered them, he could bear it no longer. He took out his knife, and under pretence of joining in the sport, drew near to Shargar, and with rapid hand cut the cords—all but those that bound his feet, which were less easy to reach without exposing himself defenceless.

The boys of course turned upon Robert. But ere they came to more than abusive words a diversion took place.

Mrs. Innes, the school-master's wife—a stout, kind-hearted woman, the fine condition of whose temperament was clearly the result of her physical prosperity—appeared at the door which led to the dwelling-house above, bearing in her hands a huge tureen of potato-soup, for her motherly heart could not longer endure the thought of dinnerless boys. Her husband being engaged at a parish meeting, she had a chance of interfering with success.

But ere Nancy, the servant, could follow with the spoons and plates, Wattie Morrison had taken the tureen, and out of spite at Robert, had emptied its contents on the head of Shargar, who was still tied by the feet, with the words: "Shargar, I anoint thee king over us, and here is thy crown," giving the tureen, as he said so, a push on to his head, where it remained.

Shargar did not move, and for one moment could not speak, but the next he gave a shriek that made Robert think he was far worse scalded than turned out to be the case. He darted to him in rage, took the tureen from his head, and, his blood being fairly up now, flung it with all his force at Morrison, and felled him to the earth. At the same moment the

master entered by the street door and his wife by the house door, which was directly opposite. In the middle of the room the prisoners surrounded the fallen tyrant—Robert, with the red face of wrath, and Shargar, with a complexion the mingled result of tears, ink, and soup, which latter clothed him from head to foot besides, standing on the outskirts of the group. I need not follow the story farther. Both Robert and Morrison *got a lickin'*; and if Mr. Innes had been like some school-masters of those times, Shargar would not have escaped his share of the evil things going.

From that day Robert assumed the acknowledged position of Shargar's defender. And if there was pride and a sense of propriety mingled with his advocacy of Shargar's rights, nay, even if the relation was not altogether free from some amount of show-off on Robert's part, I cannot yet help thinking that it had its share in that development of the character of Falconer which has chiefly attracted me to the office of his biographer. There may have been in it the exercise of some patronage; probably it was not pure from the pride of beneficence; but at least it was a loving patronage and a vigorous beneficence; and, under the reaction of these, the good which in Robert's nature was as yet only in a state of solution, began to crystallize into character.

But the effect of the new relation was far more remarkable on Shargar. As incapable of self-defence as ever, he was yet in a moment roused to fury by any attack upon the person or the dignity of Robert: so that, indeed, it became a new and favourite mode of teasing Shargar to heap abuse, real or pretended, upon his friend. From the day when Robert thus espoused his part, Shargar was Robert's dog. That very evening, when she went to take a parting peep at the external before locking the door for the night, Betty found him sitting upon the door-step, only,

however, to send him off, as she described it, “wi’ a flech in ’s lug[a flea in his ear].” For the character of the mother was always associated with the boy, and avenged upon him. I must, however, allow that those delicate, dirty fingers of his could not with safety be warranted from occasional picking and stealing.

At this period of my story, Robert himself was rather a grotesque-looking animal, very tall and lanky, with especially long arms, which excess of length they retained after he was full-grown. In this respect Shargar and he were alike; but the long legs of Shargar were unmatched in Robert, for at this time his body was peculiarly long. He had large black eyes, deep sunk even then, and a Roman nose, the size of which in a boy of his years looked portentous. For the rest, he was dark-complexioned, with dark hair, destined to grow darker still, with hands and feet well modelled, but which would have made four feet and four hands such as Shargar’s.

When his mind was not oppressed with the consideration of any important metaphysical question, he learned his lessons well; when such was present, the Latin grammar, with all its attendant servilities, was driven from the presence of the lordly need. That once satisfied in spite of pandies[strokes on the palm with a cane] and imprisonments, he returned with fresh zest, and, indeed, with some ephemeral ardour, to the rules of syntax or prosody, though the latter, in the mode in which it was then and there taught, was almost as useless as the task set himself by a worthy lay-preacher in the neighbourhood—of learning the first nine chapters of the first Book of the Chronicles, in atonement for having, in an evil hour of freedom of spirit, ventured to suggest that such lists of names, even although forming a portion of Holy Writ, could scarcely be

reckoned of equally divine authority with St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans.

Chapter 8 - The Angel Unawares

Although Betty seemed to hold little communication with the outer world, she yet contrived somehow or other to bring home what gossip was going to the ears of her mistress, who had very few visitors; for, while her neighbours held Mrs. Falconer in great and evident respect, she was not the sort of person to sit down and have a *news* with. There was a certain sedate self-contained dignity about her which the common mind felt to be chilling and repellant; and from any gossip of a personal nature—what Betty brought her always excepted—she would turn away, generally with the words, "Hoots[pshaw]! I canna bide clashes[slaps; gossip]."

On the evening following that of Shargar's introduction to Mrs. Falconer's house, Betty came home from the butcher's—for it was Saturday night, and she had gone to fetch the beef for their Sunday's broth—with the news that the people next door, that is, round the corner in the next street, had a visitor.

The house in question had been built by Robert's father, and was, compared with Mrs. Falconer's one-storey house, large and handsome. Robert had been born, and had spent a few years of his life in it, but could recall nothing of the facts of those early days. Some time before the period at which my history commences it had passed into other hands, and it was now quite strange to him. It had been bought by a retired naval officer, who lived in it with his wife—the only Englishwoman in the place, until the arrival, at The Boar's Head, of the lady so much admired by Dooble Sanny.

Robert was up-stairs when Betty emptied her news-bag, and so heard nothing of this bit of gossip. He had just assured Shargar that as soon as

his grandmother was asleep he would look about for what he could find, and carry it up to him in the garret. As yet he had confined the expenditure out of Shargar's shilling to twopence.

The household always retired early—earlier on Saturday night in preparation for the Sabbath—and by ten o'clock grannie and Betty were in bed. Robert, indeed, was in bed too; but he had lain down in his clothes, waiting for such time as might afford reasonable hope of his grandmother being asleep, when he might both ease Shargar's hunger and get to sleep himself. Several times he got up, resolved to make his attempt; but as often his courage failed and he lay down again, sure that grannie could not be asleep yet. When the clock beside him struck eleven, he could bear it no longer, and finally rose to do his endeavour.

Opening the door of the closet slowly and softly, he crept upon his hands and knees into the middle of the parlour, feeling very much like a thief, as, indeed, in a measure he was, though from a blameless motive. But just as he had accomplished half the distance to the door, he was arrested and fixed with terror; for a deep sigh came from grannie's bed, followed by the voice of words. He thought at first that she had heard him, but he soon found that he was mistaken. Still, the fear of discovery held him there on all fours, like a chained animal. A dull red gleam, faint and dull, from the embers of the fire, was the sole light in the room. Everything so common to his eyes in the daylight seemed now strange and *eerie* in the dying coals, and at what was to the boy the unearthly hour of the night.

He felt that he ought not to listen to grannie, but terror made him unable to move.

"Och hone[alas]! Och hone[alas]!" said grannie from the bed. "I've a sair[sore], sair hert[heart]. I've a sair hert i' my breist[breast], O Lord! thoo[thou, you (God)

knowest. My ain[own] Anerew[Andrew]! To think o' my bairnie[little child] that I cairriet[carried] i' my ain[own] body, that sookit[sucked] my breists[breasts], and leuch[laughed] i' my face—to think o' 'im bein' a reprobate! O Lord! cudna he be eleckit[elected; chosen by God for salvation (Calvinism)] yet? Is there nae[no, not] turnin' o' thy decrees? Na, na; that wadna do at a'. But while there's life there's houp[hope]. But wha kens whether he be alive or no? Naebody can tell. Glaidly wad[would] I luik[look] upon 's deid face gin[if] I cud[could] believe that his sowl[soul] wasna amang[among] the lost. But eh! the torments o' that place! and the reik[smoke, vapour] that gangs[goes, walks] up for ever an' ever, smorin'[smothering, suffocating] the stars! And my Anerew doon i' the hert[heart] o' 't cryin'! And me no able to win[get, go] till him! O Lord! I *canna* say thy will be done. But dinna lay 't to my chairge; for gin[if] ye was a mither yersel' ye wadna pit[put, make] him there. O Lord! I'm verra[very] ill-fashioned[ill-mannered]. I beg yer pardon. I'm near oot[out] o' my min'[mind]. Forgie[forgive] me, O Lord! for I hardly ken what I'm sayin'. He was my ain[own] babe, my ain[own] Anerew, and ye gae[gave] him to me yersel'. And noo[now] he's for the finger o' scorn to pint[point] at; an ootcast an' a wan'erer frae[from] his ain[own] country, an' daurna[dare not] come within sicht o' 't for them 'at wad[would] tak' the law o' 'm[him]. An' it's a' drink—drink an' ill company! He wad[would] hae dune[done] weel eneuch[enough] gin[if] they wad[would] only hae latten[let, allowed] him be. What for maun[must, have to] men be aye drink-drinkin' at something or ither[other]? *I* never want it. Eh! gin[if] I war[were] as young as whan[when] he was born, I wad[would] be up an' awa'[away] this verra[very] nicht to luik[look] for him. But it's no use me tryin' 't. O God! ance[once] mair[more] I pray thee to turn him frae[from] the error o' 's ways afore he goes hence an' isna more. And O dinna lat[let, allow] Robert gang[go] efter[after] him, as he's like eneuch[enough] to do. Gie[give] me grace to haud[hold, keep] him ticht, that he may be to the praise o' thy glory for ever an' ever. Amen."

Whether it was that the weary woman here fell asleep, or that she was too exhausted for further speech, Robert heard no more, though he remained there frozen with horror for some minutes after his grandmother had ceased. This, then, was the reason why she would never speak about his father! She kept all her thoughts about him for the silence of the night, and loneliness with the God who never sleeps, but watches the wicked all through the dark. And his father was one of the wicked! And God was against him! And when he died he would go to hell! But he was not dead yet: Robert was sure of that. And when he grew a man, he would go and seek him, and beg him on his knees to repent and come back to God, who would forgive him then, and take him to heaven when he died. And there he would be good, and good people would love him.

Something like this passed through the boy's mind ere he moved to creep from the room, for his was one of those natures which are active in the generation of hope. He had almost forgotten what he came there for; and had it not been that he had promised Shargar, he would have crept back to his bed and left him to bear his hunger as best he could. But now, first his right hand, then his left knee, like any other quadruped, he crawled to the door, rose only to his knees to open it, took almost a minute to the operation, then dropped and crawled again, till he had passed out, turned, and drawn the door to, leaving it slightly ajar. Then it struck him awfully that the same terrible passage must be gone through again. But he rose to his feet, for he had no shoes on, and there was little danger of making any noise, although it was pitch dark—he knew the house so well. With gathering courage, he felt his way to the kitchen, and there groped about; but he could find nothing beyond a few *quarters* of

oat-cake, which, with a mug of water, he proceeded to carry up to Shargar in the garret.

When he reached the kitchen door, he was struck with amazement and for a moment with fresh fear. A light was shining into the *transe*[passage in a house] from the stair which went up at right angles from the end of it. He knew it could not be grannie, and he heard Betty snoring in her own den, which opened from the kitchen. He thought it must be Shargar who had grown impatient; but how he had got hold of a light he could not think. As soon as he turned the corner, however, the doubt was changed into mystery. At the top of the broad low stair stood a woman-form with a candle in her hand, gazing about her as if wondering which way to go. The light fell full upon her face, the beauty of which was such that, with her dress, which was white—being, in fact, a nightgown—and her hair, which was hanging loose about her shoulders and down to her waist, it led Robert at once to the conclusion (his reasoning faculties already shaken by the events of the night) that she was an angel come down to comfort his grannie; and he kneeled involuntarily at the foot of the stair, and gazed up at her, with the cakes in one hand, and the mug of water in the other, like a meat-and-drink offering. Whether he had closed his eyes or bowed his head, he could not say; but he became suddenly aware that the angel had vanished—he knew not when, how, or whither. This for a time confirmed his assurance that it was an angel. And although he was undeceived before long, the impression made upon him that night was never effaced. But, indeed, whatever Falconer heard or saw was something more to him than it would have been to anybody else.

Elated, though awed, by the vision, he felt his way up the stair in the new darkness, as if walking in a holy dream, trod as if upon sacred ground as he crossed the landing where the angel had stood—went up

and up, and found Shargar wide awake with expectant hunger. He, too, had caught a glimmer of the light. But Robert did not tell him what he had seen. That was too sacred a subject to enter upon with Shargar, and he was intent enough upon his supper not to be inquisitive.

Robert left him to finish it at his leisure, and returned to cross his grandmother's room once more, half expecting to find the angel standing by her bedside. But all was dark and still. Creeping back as he had come, he heard her quiet, though deep, breathing, and his mind was at ease about her for the night. What if the angel he had surprised had only come to appear to grannie in her sleep? Why not? There were such stories in the Bible, and grannie was certainly as good as some of the people in the Bible that saw angels—Sarah, for instance. And if the angels came to see grannie, why should they not have some care over his father as well? It might be—who could tell?

It is perhaps necessary to explain Robert's vision. The angel was the owner of the boxes he had seen at The Bear's Head. Looking around her room before going to bed, she had seen a trap in the floor near the wall, and raising it, had discovered a few steps of a stair leading down to a door. Curiosity naturally led her to examine it. The key was in the lock. It opened outwards, and there she found herself, to her surprise, in the heart of another dwelling, of lowlier aspect. She never saw Robert; for while he approached with shoeless feet, she had been glancing through the open door of the gable-room, and when he knelt, the light which she held in her hand had, I presume, hidden him from her. He, on his part, had not observed that the moveless door stood open at last.

I have already said that the house adjoining had been built by Robert's father. The lady's room was that which he had occupied with his wife, and in it Robert had been born. The door, with its trap-stair, was a

natural invention for uniting the levels of the two houses, and a desirable one in not a few of the forms which the weather assumed in that region. When the larger house passed into other hands, it had never entered the minds of the simple people who occupied the contiguous dwellings, to build up the doorway between.

Chapter 9 - A Discovery

The friendship of Robert had gained Shargar the favourable notice of others of the school-public. These were chiefly of those who came from the country, ready to follow an example set them by a town boy. When his desertion was known, moved both by their compassion for him, and their respect for Robert, they began to give him some portion of the dinner they brought with them; and never in his life had Shargar fared so well as for the first week after he had been cast upon the world. But in proportion as their interest faded with the novelty, so their appetites reasserted former claims of use and wont, and Shargar began once more to feel the pangs of hunger. For all that Robert could manage to procure for him without attracting the attention he was so anxious to avoid, was little more than sufficient to keep his hunger alive, Shargar being gifted with a great appetite, and Robert having no allowance of pocket-money from his grandmother. The threepence he had been able to spend on him were what remained of sixpence Mr. Innes had given him for an exercise which he wrote in blank verse instead of in prose—an achievement of which the school-master was proud, both from his reverence for Milton, and from his inability to compose a metrical line himself. And how and when he should ever possess another penny was even unimaginable. Shargar's shilling was likewise spent. So Robert could but go on pocketing instead of eating all that he dared, watching anxiously for opportunity of evading the eyes of his grandmother. On her dimness of sight, however, he depended too confidently after all; for either she was not so blind as he thought she was, or she made up for the defect of her vision by the keenness of her observation. She saw enough to cause her considerable annoyance, though it suggested nothing inconsistent with

rectitude on the part of the boy, further than that there was something underhand going on. One supposition after another arose in the old lady's brain, and one after another was dismissed as improbable. First, she tried to persuade herself that he wanted to take the provisions to school with him, and eat them there—a proceeding of which she certainly did not approve, but for the reproof of which she was unwilling to betray the loopholes of her eyes. Next she concluded, for half a day, that he must have a pair of rabbits hidden away in some nook or other—possibly in the little strip of garden belonging to the house. And so conjecture followed conjecture for a whole week, during which, strange to say, not even Betty knew that Shargar slept in the house. For so careful and watchful were the two boys, that although she could not help suspecting something from the expression and behaviour of Robert, what that something might be she could not imagine; nor had she and her mistress as yet exchanged confidences on the subject. Her observation coincided with that of her mistress as to the disappearance of odds[consequence, change] and ends of eatables—potatoes, cold porridge, bits of oat-cake; and even, on one occasion, when Shargar happened to be especially ravenous, a yellow, or cured and half-dried, haddock, which the lad devoured raw, vanished from her domain. He went to school in the morning smelling so strong in consequence, that they told him he must have been passing the night in Scroggie's cart, and not on his horse's back this time.

The boys kept their secret well.

One evening, towards the end of the week, Robert, after seeing Shargar disposed of for the night, proceeded to carry out a project which had grown in his brain within the last two days in consequence of an

occurrence with which his relation to Shargar had had something to do. It was this:

The housing of Shargar in the garret had led Robert to make a close acquaintance with the place. He was familiar with all the outs and ins of the little room which he considered his own, for that was a civilized, being a plastered, ceiled, and comparatively well-lighted little room, but not with the other, which was three times its size, very badly lighted, and showing the naked couples[rafters] from roof-tree[beam forming angle of roof] to floor. Besides, it contained no end of dark corners, with which his childish imagination had associated undefined horrors, assuming now one shape, now another. Also there were several closets in it, constructed in the angles of the place, and several chests—two of which he had ventured to peep into. But although he had found them filled, not with bones, as he had expected, but one with papers, and one with garments, he had yet dared to carry his researches no further. One evening, however, when Betty was out, and he had got hold of her candle, and gone up to keep Shargar company for a few minutes, a sudden impulse seized him to have a peep into all the closets. One of them he knew a little about, as containing, amongst other things, his father's coat with the gilt buttons, and his great-grandfather's kilt, as well as other garments useful to Shargar: now he would see what was in the rest. He did not find anything very interesting, however, till he arrived at the last. Out of it he drew a long queer-shaped box into the light of Betty's dip.

"Luik[look] here, Shargar!" he said under his breath, for they never dared to speak aloud in these precincts—"Luik here! What can there be in this box? Is't a bairnie's[little child's] coffin, duv[do] ye think? Luik[look] at it."

In this case Shargar, having roamed the country a good deal more than Robert, and having been present at some merry-makings with his

mother, of which there were comparatively few in that country-side, was better informed than his friend.

"Eh! Bob, duvna[do not] ye ken what that is? I thocht[thought] ye kent[known, knew] a' thing[everything, anything]. That's a fiddle."

"That's buff an' styte[stuff and nonsense], Shargar. Do ye think I dinna ken a fiddle whan[when] I see ane[one], wi' its guts ootside o' 'ts[its] wame[belly], an' the thoomacks[violin-pegs] to screw them up wi' an' gar't[cause, compel] skirl[scream, sing shrilly]?"

"Buff[nonsense] an' styte[nonsense] yersel'!" cried Shargar, in indignation, from the bed. "Gie[give] 's a haud[hold] o' 't."

Robert handed him the case. Shargar undid the hooks in a moment, and revealed the creature lying in its shell like a boiled bivalve.

"I tellt ye sae!' he exclaimed triumphantly. "Maybe ye'll lippen to me[trust me] neist[next, nearest] time."

"An' I tellt *you*," retorted Robert, with an equivocation altogether unworthy of his growing honesty. "I was cocksure that cudna be a fiddle. There's the fiddle i' the hert[heart] o' 't! Losh! I min'[mind, remember] noo[now]. It maun[must, have to] be my grandfather's fiddle 'at I hae heard tell o'."

"No to ken[know] a fiddle-case!" reflected Shargar, with as much of contempt as it was possible for him to show.

"I tell ye what, Shargar," returned Robert, indignantly; "ye may ken the box o' a fiddle better nor[than] I do, but de'il[devil] hae me gin[if] I dinna ken the fiddle itsel' raither better nor[than] ye do in a fortnicht frae[from] this time. I s' tak' it to Dooble Sanny; he can play the fiddle fine. An' I'll play 't too, or the de'il[devil] s' be in't."

"Eh, man, that 'll[will] be gran'!" cried Shargar, incapable of jealousy. "We can gang[go] to a' the markets thegither[together] and gaither

baubees[halfpennies]."

To this anticipation Robert returned no reply, for, hearing Betty come in, he judged it time to restore the violin to its case, and Betty's candle to the kitchen, lest she should invade the upper regions in search of it. But that very night he managed to have an interview with *Dooble Sanny*, the shoemaker, and it was arranged between them that Robert should bring his violin on the evening at which my story has now arrived.

Whatever motive he had for seeking to commence the study of music, it holds even in more important matters that, if the thing pursued be good, there is a hope of the pursuit purifying the motive. And Robert no sooner heard the fiddle utter a few mournful sounds in the hands of the soutar[cobbler], who was no contemptible performer, than he longed to establish such a relation between himself and the strange instrument, that, dumb and deaf as it had been to him hitherto, it would respond to his touch also, and tell him the secrets of its queerly-twisted skull, full of sweet sounds instead of brains. From that moment he would be a musician for music's own sake, and forgot utterly what had appeared to him, though I doubt if it was, the sole motive of his desire to learn—namely, the necessity of retaining his superiority over Shargar.

What added considerably to the excitement of his feelings on the occasion, was the expression of reverence, almost of awe, with which the shoemaker took the instrument from its case, and the tenderness with which he handled it. The fact was that he had not had a violin in his hands for nearly a year, having been compelled to pawn his own in order to alleviate the sickness brought on his wife by his own ill-treatment of her, once that he came home drunk from a wedding. It was strange to think that such dirty hands should be able to bring such sounds out of the instrument the moment he got it safely cuddled under his cheek. So

dirty were they, that it was said Dooble Sanny never required to carry any rosin with him for fiddler's need, his own fingers having always enough upon them for one bow at least. Yet the points of those fingers never lost the delicacy of their touch. Some people thought this was in virtue of their being washed only once a week—a custom Alexander justified on the ground that, in a trade like his, it was of no use to wash oftener, for he would be just as dirty again before night.

The moment he began to play, the face of the soutar[cobbler] grew ecstatic. He stopped at the very first note, notwithstanding, let fall his arms, the one with the bow, the other with the violin, at his sides, and said, with a deep-drawn respiration and lengthened utterance:

"Eh!"

Then after a pause, during which he stood motionless:

"The crater[creature] maun[must, have to] be a Cry Moany[Cremona (area in Italy known for violin makers like Stradivari)]! Hear till her!" he added, drawing another long note.

Then, after another pause:

"She's a Straddle Vawrious at least! Hear till her. I never had sic[such] a combination o' timmer[timber, wood] and catgut atween my cleuks[claws, hands, paws] afore."

As to its being a Stradivarius, or even a Cremona at all, the testimony of Dooble Sanny was not worth much on the point. But the shoemaker's admiration roused in the boy's mind a reverence for the individual instrument which he never lost.

From that day the two were friends.

Suddenly the soutar[cobbler] started off at full speed in a strathspey[Highland dance], which was soon lost in the wail of a Highland psalm-tune, giving

place in its turn to "Sic[such] a wife as Willie had!" And on he went without pause, till Robert dared not stop any longer. The fiddle had bewitched the fiddler.

"Come as aften[often] 's ye like, Robert, gin[if] ye fess[fetch, bring] this leddy[lady] wi' ye," said the soutar[cobbler].

And he stroked the back of the violin tenderly with his open palm.

"But wad[would] ye hae ony[any] objection to lat[let, allow] it lie aside ye, and lat[let, allow] me come whan[when] I can?"

"Objection, laddie? I wad[would] as sune[soon, early] objeck to lattin'[letting, allowing] my ain[own] wife lie aside me."

"Ay[yes, indeed]," said Robert, seized with some anxiety about the violin as he remembered the fate of the wife, "but ye ken Elspet comes aff[off] a' the waur[worse] sometimes."

Softened by the proximity of the wonderful violin, and stung afresh by the boy's words as his conscience had often stung him before, for he loved his wife dearly save when the demon of drink possessed him, the tears rose in Elshender's eyes. He held out the violin to Robert, saying, with unsteady voice:

"Hae[here], tak her awa'[away]. I dinna deserve to hae sic[such] a thing i' *my* hoose[house]. But hear me, Robert, and lat[let, allow] hearin' be believin'. I never was sae drunk but I cud[could] tune my fiddle. Mair[more] by token, ance[once] they fand[found] me lyin' o' my back i' the Corrie, an' the watter[water], they say, was ower[over] a' but the mou'[mouth] o' me; but I was haudin'[holding, keeping] my fiddle up abune[above, over] my heid[head], and de'il[not] a spark[speck, spot] o' watter[water] was upo' *her*."

"It's a pity yer wife wasna yer fiddle, than, Sanny," said Robert, with more presumption than wit.

"'Deed ye're i' the richt, there, Robert. Hae, tak' yer fiddle."

"'Deed no," returned Robert. "I maun[must, have to] jist lippen[trust, depend on] to ye, Sanders. I canna bide langer[longer] the nicht[tonight]; but maybe ye'll tell me hoo[how] to haud[hold, keep] her the neist[next, nearest] time 'at I come—will ye?"

"That I *wull*[*will*], Robert, come whan[when] ye like. An' gin[if] ye come o' ane[one] 'at cud[could] play this fiddle as this fiddle deserves to be playt, ye'll do me credit."

"Ye min'[mind, remember] what that sumph[soft blunt fellow, simpleton] Lumley said to me the ither[other] nicht, Sanders, aboot my grandfather?"

"Ay[yes, indeed], weel eneuch[enough]. A dish o' drucken[drunken] havers[nonsense, foolish talk]!"

"It was true eneuch[enough] aboot my great-grandfather, though."

"No! Was't railly[really]?"

"Ay[yes, indeed]. He was the best piper in 's regiment at Culloden. Gin[if] they had a' fouchten[fought] as he pipit[piped, played bagpipes], there wad[would] hae been anither tale to tell. And he was toon-piper[town piper] forby[as well], jist like you, Sanders, efter[after] they took frae[from] him a' 'at he had."

"Na! heard ye ever the like o' that! Weel, wha wad[would] hae thocht[thought] it? Faith! we maun[must, have to] hae you fiddle as weel as yer lucky-daiddy[grandfather] pipit[piped, played bagpipes].—But here's the King o' Bashan comin' efter[after] his butes[boots], an' them no half dune[done] yet!' exclaimed Dooble Sanny, settling in haste to his awl and his lingel[shoemaker's thread]. "He'll be roarin' mair[more] like a bull o' the country than the king o' 't."

As Robert departed, Peter Ogg came in, and as he passed the window, he heard the shoemaker averring:

“I haena risen frae[from] my stule sin’ ane[one] o’clock; but there’s a sicht to be dune[done] to them, Mr. Ogg.”

Indeed, *Alexander ab Alexandro*, as Mr. Innes facetiously styled him[Alexander ab Alexandro (1461–1523) was a Neapolitan lawyer of great learning], was in more ways than one worthy of the name of *dooble*[*double*]. There seemed to be two natures in the man, which all his music had not yet been able to blend.

Chapter 10 - Another Discovery in the Garret

Little did Robert dream of the reception that awaited him at home. Almost as soon as he had left the house, the following events began to take place.

The mistress's bell rang, and Betty "gaed[went] benn the hoose[in/into the parlour (best room of house)] to see what she cud[could] be wantin'," whereupon a conversation ensued.

"Wha was that at the door, Betty?" asked Mrs. Falconer; for Robert had not shut the door so carefully as he ought, seeing that the deafness of his grandmother was of much the same faculty as her blindness.

Had Robert not had a hold of Betty by the forelock of her years, he would have been unable to steal any liberty at all. Still Betty had a conscience, and although she would not offend Robert if she could help it, yet she would not lie.

"'Deed, mem, I canna jist distinckly say 'at I heard the door," she answered.

"Whaur's Robert?" was her next question.

"He's generally up the stair aboot this hoor[hour], mem—that is, whan[when] he's no i' the parlour at 's lessons."

"What gangs[goes, walks] he sae muckle[much] up the stair for, Betty, do ye ken? It's something by ordinar'[out of the ordinary] wi' 'm[him]."

"'Deed I dinna ken, mem. I never tuik[took] it into my heid[head] to gang[go] considerin' aboot it. He'll hae some ploy[amusement, sport] o' 's ain[own], nae[no, not] doobt[suspect]. Laddies will be laddies, ye ken, mem."

“I doobt[suspect], Betty, ye’ll be aidin’ an’ abettin’. An’ it disna[does not] become yer years, Betty.”

“My years are no to fin’ faut[fault, blame] wi’, mem. They’re weel eneuch[enough].”

“That’s naething to the pint[point], Betty. What’s the laddie aboot?”

“Do ye mean whan[when] he gangs[goes, walks] up the stair, mem?”

“Ay[yes, indeed]. Ye ken weel eneuch[enough] what I mean.”

“Weel, mem, I tell ye I dinna ken. An’ ye never heard me tell ye a lee[lie] sin’ ever I was i’ yer service, mem.”

“Na, nae[no, not] doonricht. Ye gang[go] aboot it an’ aboot it[all about], an’ at last ye come sae near leein’[lying] that gin[if] ye spak anither word, ye wad[would] be at it; and it jist fleys[frightens] me frae[from] speirin’[asking about] ae ither[other] question at ye. An’ that’s hoo[how] ye win[get, go] oot[out] o’ ’t. But noo[now] ’at it’s aboot my ain[own] oye[grandson, nephew], I’m no gaein’ to tyne[lose, get lost] him to save a woman o’ your years, wha oucht[ought] to ken better; an sae I’ll speir[ask about, enquire] at ye, though ye suld[should] be driven to lee like Sawtan[Satan] himsel’.—What’s he aboot whan[when] he gangs[goes, walks] up the stair? Noo[now]!”

“Weel, as sure’s deith, I dinna ken. Ye drive me to sweirin’, mem, an’ no to leein’[lying].”

“I carena[do not care]. Hae[Have] ye no idea aboot it, than, Betty?”

“Weel, mem, I think sometimes he canna be weel, and maun[must, have to] hae a tod[fox] in ’s stamack[stomach], or something o’ that nater[nature]. For what he eats is awfu’. An’ I think whiles[sometimes, at times] he jist gangs[goes, walks] up the stair to eat at ’s ain[own] wull[will].”

“That jumps[tallies, coincides] wi’ my ain[own] observations, Betty. Do ye think he micht hae a rabbit, or maybe a pair o’ them, in some boxie[little box] i’ the

garret, noo[now]?”

“And what for no, gin[if] he had, mem?”

“What for no? Nesty[nasty] stinkin’ things! But that’s no the pint[point]. I aye hae to haud[hold, keep] ye to the pint[point], Betty. The pint[point] is, whether he has rabbits or no?”

“Or guinea-pigs,” suggested Betty.

“Weel.”

“Or maybe a pup or twa. Or I kent[known, knew] a laddie ance[once] ’at keepit[kept] a haill[whole] faimily o’ kittlins[kittens]. Or maybe he micht hae a bit lammie[little lamb (term of endearment)]. There was an uncle o’ min’ ain[mine own]—”

“Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, Betty! Ye hae ower[over] muckle[much] to say for a’ the sense there’s intil[into, within] ’t.”

“Weel, mem, ye speirt[asked about, enquired] questions at me.”

“Weel, I hae had eneuch[enough] o’ yer answers, Betty. Gang[go] and tell Robert to come here direckly.”

Betty went, knowing perfectly that Robert had gone out, and returned with the information. Her mistress searched her face with a keen eye.

“That maun[must, have to] hae been himsel’ efter[after] a’ whan[when] ye thocht[thought] ye hard[heard] the door gang[go],” said Betty.

“It’s a strange thing that I suld[should] hear him benn[inside, in the inner room] here wi’ the door steekit[shut, closed, clenched], an’ your door open at the verra[very] door-cheek[door-post, doorway] o’ the ither[other], an’ you no hear him, Betty. And me sae deif as weel!”

“’Deed, mem,” retorted Betty, losing her temper a little, “I can be as deif ’s ither fowk[folk] mysel’ whiles[sometimes, at times].”

When Betty grew angry, Mrs. Falconer invariably grew calm, or, at least, put her temper out of sight. She was silent now, and continued

silent till Betty moved to return to her kitchen, when she said, in a tone of one who had just arrived at an important resolution:

"Betty, we'll jist awa'[away] up the stair an' luik[look]."

"Weel, mem, I hae nae[no, not] objections."

"Nae[no, not] objections! What for suld[should] you or ony[any] ither[other] body hae ony[any] objections to me gaein' whaur I like i' my ain[own] hoose[house]? Umph!" exclaimed Mrs. Falconer, turning and facing her maid.

"In coorse, mem. I only meant I had nae[no, not] objections to gang[go] wi' ye."

"And what for suld[should] you or ony[any] ither[other] woman that I paid twa pun'[pound (sterling)] five i' the half-year till, daur[dare] to hae objections to gaein' whaur I wantit ye to gang[go] i' my ain[own] hoose[house]?"

"Hoot[pshaw], mem! it was but a slip o' the tongue—naething mair[more]."

"Slip me nae[no, not] sic[such] slips[tricks], or ye'll come by a fa'[fall, befall] at last, I doobt[suspect], Betty," concluded Mrs. Falconer, in a mollified tone, as she turned and led the way from the room.

They got a candle in the kitchen and proceeded up-stairs, Mrs. Falconer still leading, and Betty following. They did not even look into the ga'le-room, not doubting that the dignity of the best bed-room was in no danger of being violated even by Robert, but took their way upwards to the room in which he kept his school-books—almost the only articles of property which the boy possessed. Here they found nothing suspicious. All was even in the best possible order—not a very wonderful fact, seeing a few books and a slate were the only things there besides the papers on the shelves.

What the feelings of Shargar must have been when he heard the steps and voices, and saw the light approaching his place of refuge, we will not

change our point of view to inquire. He certainly was as little to be envied at that moment as at any moment during the whole of his existence.

The first sense Mrs. Falconer made use of in the search after possible animals lay in her nose. She kept snuffing constantly, but, beyond the usual musty smell of neglected apartments, had as yet discovered nothing. The moment she entered the upper garret, however—

"There's an ill-faured[unbecoming, unpleasant] smell here, Betty," she said, believing that they had at last found the trail of the mystery; "but it's no like the smell o' rabbits. Jist luik[look] i' the nuik[nook, corner] there ahin' the door."

"There's naething here," responded Betty.

"Roon[around, round] the en' o' that kist[chest, coffer, box, chest of drawers] there. I s' luik[look] into the press[wall-cupboard]."

As Betty rose from her search behind the chest and turned towards her mistress, her eyes crossed the cavernous opening of the bed. There, to her horror, she beheld a face like that of a galvanised corpse staring at her from the darkness. Shargar was in a sitting posture, paralysed with terror, waiting, like a fascinated bird, till Mrs. Falconer and Betty should make the final spring upon him, and do whatever was equivalent to devouring him upon the spot. He had sat up to listen to the noise of their ascending footsteps, and fear had so overmastered him, that he either could not, or forgot that he could lie down and cover his head with some of the many garments scattered around him.

"I didna say *whusky*, did I?" he kept repeating to himself, in utter imbecility of fear.

"The Lord preserve 's!" exclaimed Betty, the moment she could speak; for during the first few seconds, having caught the infection of Shargar's

expression, she stood equally paralysed. “The Lord preserve ’s!” she repeated.

“Ance[once] is eneuch[enough],” said Mrs. Falconer, sharply, turning round to see what the cause of Betty’s ejaculation might be.

I have said that she was dim-sighted. The candle they had was little better than a penny dip. The bed was darker than the rest of the room. Shargar’s face had none of the more distinctive characteristics of manhood upon it.

“Gude preserve ’s!” exclaimed Mrs. Falconer in her turn: “it’s a wumman.”

Poor deluded Shargar, thinking himself safer under any form than that which he actually bore, attempted no protest against the mistake. But, indeed, he was incapable of speech. The two women flew upon him to drag him out of bed. Then first recovering his powers of motion, he sprung up in an agony of terror, and darted out between them, overturning Betty in his course.

“Ye rouch[rough] limmer[loose woman]!” cried Betty, from the floor. “Ye lang-leggit jaud[lass, girl]!” she added, as she rose—and at the same moment Shargar banged the street-door behind him in his terror—“I wat[know, assure] ye dinna carry yer coats ower syde[too long]!”

For Shargar, having discovered that the way to get the most warmth from Robert’s great-grandfather’s kilt was to wear it in the manner for which it had been fabricated, was in the habit of fastening it round his waist before he got into bed; and the eye of Betty, as she fell, had caught the swing of this portion of his attire.

But poor Mrs. Falconer, with sunken head, walked out of the garret in the silence of despair. She went slowly down the steep stair, supporting herself against the wall, her round-toed shoes creaking solemnly as she

went, took refuge in the ga'le-room, and burst into a violent fit of weeping. For such depravity she was not prepared. What a terrible curse hung over her family! Surely they were all reprobate from the womb, not one elected for salvation from the guilt of Adam's fall, and therefore abandoned to Satan as his natural prey, to be led captive of him at his will. She threw herself on her knees at the side of the bed, and prayed heart-brokenly. Betty heard her as she limped past the door on her way back to her kitchen.

Meantime Shargar had rushed across the next street on his bare feet into the Crookit wynd[narrow lane or street], terrifying poor old Kirstan Peerie, the divisions betwixt the compartments of whose memory had broken down, into the exclamation to her next neighbour, Tam Rhin, with whom she was trying to gossip:

"Eh, Tammas! that'll be ane[one] o' the slauchtert[slaughtered] at Culloden."

He never stopped till he reached his mother's deserted abode—strange instinct! There he ran to earth like a hunted fox. Rushing at the door, forgetful of everything but refuge, he found it unlocked, and closing it behind him, stood panting like the hart that has found the water-brooks. The owner had looked in one day to see whether the place was worth repairing, for it was a mere outhouse, and had forgotten to turn the key when he left it. Poor Shargar! Was it more or less of a refuge that the mother that bore him was not there either to curse or welcome his return? Less—if we may judge from a remark he once made in my hearing many long years after:

"For, ye see," he said, "a mither's a mither, be she the verra[very] de'il[devil]."

Searching about in the dark, he found the one article unsold by the landlord, a stool, with but two of its natural three legs. On this he

balanced himself and waited—simply for what Robert would do; for his faith in Robert was unbounded, and he had no other hope on earth. But Shargar was not miserable. In that wretched hovel, his bare feet clasping the clay floor in constant search of a wavering equilibrium, with pitch darkness around him, and incapable of the simplest philosophical or religious reflection, he yet found life good. *For it had interest*. Nay, more, it had hope. I doubt, however, whether there is any interest at all without hope.

While he sat there, Robert, thinking him snug in the garret, was walking quietly home from the shoemaker's; and his first impulse on entering was to run up and recount the particulars of his interview with Alexander. Arrived in the dark garret, he called Shargar, as usual, in a whisper—received no reply—thought he was asleep—called louder (for he had had a penny from his grandmother that day for bringing home two pails of water for Betty, and had just spent it upon a loaf for him)—but no Shargar replied. Thereupon he went to the bed to lay hold of him and shake him. But his searching hands found no Shargar. Becoming alarmed, he ran down-stairs to beg a light from Betty.

When he reached the kitchen, he found Betty's nose as much in the air as its construction would permit. For a hook-nosed animal, she certainly was the most harmless and ovine creature in the world, but this was a case in which feminine modesty was both concerned and aggrieved. She showed her resentment no further, however, than by simply returning no answer in syllable, or sound, or motion, to Robert's request. She was washing up the tea-things, and went on with her work as if she had been in absolute solitude, saving that her countenance could hardly have kept up that expression of injured dignity had such been the case. Robert plainly saw, to his great concern, that his secret had been discovered in

his absence, and that Shargar had been expelled with contumely. But, with an instinct of facing the worst at once which accompanied him through life, he went straight to his grandmother's parlour.

"Well, grandmamma," he said, trying to speak as cheerfully as he could.

Grannie's prayers had softened her a little, else she would have been as silent as Betty; for it was from her mistress that Betty had learned this mode of torturing a criminal. So she was just able to return his greeting in the words, "Weel, Robert," pronounced in a finality of tone that indicated she had done her utmost, and had nothing to add.

"Here's a browst[consequence of one's acts]!" thought Robert to himself; and, still on the principle of flying at the first of mischief he saw—the best mode of meeting it, no doubt—addressed his grandmother at once. The effort necessary gave a tone of defiance to his words.

"What for willna ye speik to me, grannie?" he said. "I'm no a haithen, nor yet a papist."

"Ye're waur[worse] nor[than] baith[both] in ane[one], Robert."

"Hoots[pshaw]! ye winna[will not] say baith[both], grannie," returned Robert, who, even at the age of fourteen, when once compelled to assert himself, assumed a modest superiority.

"Nane[none] o' sic[such] impidence!" retorted Mrs. Falconer. "I wonner[wonder, marvel] whaur ye learn that. But it's nae[no, not] wonner[wonder, marvel]. Evil communications corrupt gude mainners[manners]. Ye're a lost prodigal, Robert, like yer father afore ye. I hae jist been sittin' here thinkin' wi' mysel' whether it wadna be better for baith[both] o' 's to lat[let, allow] ye gang[go] an' reap the fruit o' yer doin's at ance[once]; for the hard ways is the best road for transgressors. *I*'m no bund[bound] to keep ye."

“Weel, weel, I s’ awa’[I’ll go away] to Shargar. Him and me ’ill[will] haud[hold, keep] on thegither[together] better nor[than] you an’ me, grannie. He’s a puir[poor] cratur, but he can stick till a body.”

“What are ye haverin’[talking incoherently] aboot Shargar for, ye heepocreet loon[rascal]? Ye’ll no gang[go] to Shargar, I s’ warran’! Ye’ll be efter[after] that vile limmer that’s turnt my honest hoose[house] intil[into] a sty this last fortnicht.”

“Grannie, I dinna ken what ye mean.”

“*She* kens, than. I sent her aff[off, away, past] like ane[one] o’ Samson’s foxes, wi’ a firebrand at her tail. It’s a pity it wasna tied atween the twa o’ ye.”

“Preserve ’s, grannie! Is’t possible ye hae ta’en[taken, seized] Shargar for ane[one] o’ wumman-kin’?”

“I ken naething aboot Shargar, I tell ye. I ken that Betty an’ me tuik[took] an ill-faured[ill-favored] dame[damsel] i’ the bed i’ the garret.”

“Cud[could] it be his mither?” thought Robert in bewilderment; but he recovered himself in a moment, and answered,

“Shargar *may* be a quean[queen, young girl, hussy] efter[after] a’, for onything ’at I ken to the contrairy; but I aye tuik[took] him for a loon[rascal]. Faith, sic[such] a quean[queen, young girl, hussy] as he’d mak[make, do]!”

And careless to resist the ludicrousness of the idea, he burst into a loud fit of laughter, which did more to reassure his grannie than any amount of protestation could have done, however she pretended to take offence at his ill-timed merriment.

Seeing his grandmother staggered, Robert gathered courage to assume the offensive.

“But, granny! hoo[how] ever Betty, no to say you, cud[could] hae driven oot[out] a puir[poor] half-stervit cratur like Shargar, even supposin’ he

oucht[ought] to hae been in coaties[children's coats, petticoats], and no in troosers—and the mither o' him run awa'[away] an' left him—it's mair[more] nor[than] I can unnerstan.' I misdoobt[doubt, disbelieve] me sair[sore] but he's gane[gone] and droont[drowned] himsel'."

Robert knew well enough that Shargar would not drown himself without at least bidding him good-bye; but he knew too that his grandmother could be wrought upon. Her conscience was more tender than her feelings; and this peculiarity occasioned part of the mutual non-understanding rather than misunderstanding between her grandson and herself. The first relation she bore to most that came near her was one of severity and rebuke; but underneath her cold outside lay a warm heart, to which conscience acted the part of a somewhat capricious stoker, now quenching its heat with the cold water of duty, now stirring it up with the poker of reproach, and ever treating it as an inferior and a slave. But her conscience was, on the whole, a better friend to her race than her heart; and, indeed, the conscience is always a better friend than a heart whose motions are undirected by it. From Falconer's account of her, however, I cannot help thinking that she not unfrequently took refuge in severity of tone and manner from the threatened ebullition of a feeling which she could not otherwise control, and which she was ashamed to manifest. Possibly conscience had spoken more and more gently as its behests were more and more readily obeyed, until the heart began to gather courage, and at last, as in many old people, took the upper hand, which was outwardly inconvenient to one of Mrs. Falconer's temperament. Hence, in doing the kindest thing in the world, she would speak in a tone of command, even of rebuke, as if she were compelling the performance of the most unpleasant duty in the person who received the kindness. But the human heart is hard to analyze, and, indeed, will not submit

quietly to the operation, however gently performed. Nor is the result at all easy to put into words. It is best shown in actions.

Again, it may appear rather strange that Robert should be able to talk in such an easy manner to his grandmother, seeing he had been guilty of concealment, if not of deception. But she had never been so actively severe towards Robert as she had been towards her own children. To him she was wonderfully gentle for her nature, and sought to exercise the saving harshness which she still believed necessary, solely in keeping from him every enjoyment of life which the narrowest theories as to the rule and will of God could set down as worldly. Frivolity, of which there was little in this sober boy, was in her eyes a vice; loud laughter almost a crime; cards, and *novelles*, as she called them, were such in her estimation, as to be beyond my powers of characterization. Her commonest injunction was, "noo[now] be *douce*[*sensible*]"—that is *sober*—uttered to the soberest boy she could ever have known. But Robert was a large-hearted boy, else this life would never have had to be written; and so, through all this, his deepest nature came into unconscious contact with that of his noble old grandmother. There was nothing small about either of them. Hence Robert was not afraid of her. He had got more of her nature in him than of her son's. She and his own mother had more share in him than his father, though from him he inherited good qualities likewise.

He had concealed his doings with Shargar simply because he believed they could not be done if his grandmother knew of his plans. Herein he did her less than justice. But so unpleasant was concealment to his nature, and so much did the dread of discovery press upon him, that the moment he saw the thing had come out into the daylight of her knowledge, such a reaction of relief took place as, operating along with

his deep natural humour and the comical circumstance of the case, gave him an ease and freedom of communication which he had never before enjoyed with her. Likewise there was a certain courage in the boy which, if his own natural disposition had not been so quiet that he felt the negations of her rule the less, might have resulted in underhand doings of a very different kind, possibly, from those of benevolence.

He must have been a strange being to look at, I always think, at this point of his development, with his huge nose, his black eyes, his lanky figure, and his sober countenance, on which a smile was rarely visible, but from which burst occasional *guffaws* of laughter.

At the words "droont[drowned] himsel'," Mrs. Falconer started.

"Rin[run], laddie, rin[run]," she said, "an' fess[fetch, bring] him back direckly! Betty! Betty! gang[go] wi' Robert and help him to luik[look] for Shargar. Ye auld, blin'[blind], doited[foolish, crazy] body, 'at says ye can see, and canna tell a lad frae[from] a lass!"

"Na, na, grannie. I'm no gaein' oot[out] wi' a dame[damsel] like her trailin' at my fut[foot]. She wad[would] be a sair[sore] hinnerance to me. Gin[if] Shargar be to be gotten—that is, gin[if] he be in life—I s' get him wantin'[without] Betty. And gin[if] ye dinna ken him for the crater[creature] ye fand[found] i' the garret, he maun[must, have to] be sair[sore] changed sin'[since] I left him there."

"Weel, weel, Robert, gang yer wa's[go on]. But gin[if] ye be deceivin' me, may the Lord—forgie[forgive] ye, Robert, for sair[sorely] ye'll need it."

"Nae[no, not] fear o' that, grannie," returned Robert, from the street door, and vanished.

Mrs. Falconer stalked—No, I will not use that word of the gait of a woman like my friend's grandmother. "Stately stept she butt the hoose"[into the house (kitchen)] to Betty. She felt strangely soft at the heart,

Robert not being *yet* proved a reprobate; but she was not therefore prepared to drop one atom of the dignity of her relation to her servant.

"Betty," she said, "ye hae made a mistak."

"What's that, mem?" returned Betty.

"It wasna a lass ava[after all]; it was that crater[creature] Shargar."

"Ye said it was a lass yersel' first, mem."

"Ye ken weel eneuch[enough] that I'm short sichtit[sighte], an' hae been frae[from] the day o' my birth."

"I'm no auld eneuch[enough] to min' upo'[remember] that, mem," returned Betty revengefully, but in an undertone, as if she did not intend her mistress to hear, And although she heard well enough, her mistress adopted the subterfuge. "But I'll sweir the crater[creature] *I* saw was in cwytes[petticoats]."

"Sweir not at all, Betty. Ye hae made a mistak ony[any] gait[way]."

"Wha says that, mem?"

"Robert."

"Aweel[ah well], gin[if] he be tellin' the trowth[truth, indeed]—"

"Daur[dare] ye mint[insinuate] to me that a son o' mine wad[would] tell onything but the trowth[truth, indeed]?"

"Na, na, mem. But gin[if] that wasna a quean[queen, young girl, hussy], ye canna deny but she luikit[looked] unco[very] like ane[one], and no a blate[over-modest, bashful] ane[one] eyther[either]."

"Gin[if] he was a loon[rascal; boy], he wadna luik[look] like a *blate* lass, ony[any] gait[way], Betty. And *there* ye're wrang[wrong, injured]."

"Weel, weel, mem, hae 't yer ain[own] gait[way]," muttered Betty.

"I wull[will] hae 't my ain[own] gait[way]," retorted her mistress, "because it's the richt gait[way], Betty. An' noo[now] ye maun[must, have to] jist gang[go] up the stair, an' get the place cleant oot[out] an' put in order."

"I wull[will] do that, mem."

"Ay[yes, indeed] wull[will] ye. An' luik[look] weel aboot, Betty, you that can see sae weel, in case there suld[should] be ony[any] cattle[lice, fleas] aboot; for he's nane[none] o' the cleanest, yon dame!"

"I wull[will] do that, mem."

"An' gang[go] direckly, afore he comes back."

"Wha comes back?"

"Robert, of course."

"What for that?"

"'Cause he's comin' wi' 'im."

"What *he* 's comin' wi' 'im?"

"Ca'[call] 't *she*, gin[if] ye like. It's Shargar."

"Wha says that?" exclaimed Betty, sniffing and starting at once.

"I say that. An' ye gang[go] an' du[do] what I tell ye, this minute."

Betty obeyed instantly; for the tone in which the last words were spoken was one she was not accustomed to dispute. She only muttered as she went, "It 'll a' come upo' me as usual."

Betty's job was long ended before Robert returned. Never dreaming that Shargar could have gone back to the old haunt, he had looked for him everywhere before that occurred to him as a last chance. Nor would he have found him even then, for he would not have thought of his being inside the deserted house, had not Shargar heard his footsteps in the street.

He started up from his stool saying, “That’s Bob!” but was not sure enough to go to the door: he might be mistaken; it might be the landlord! He heard the feet stop and did not move; but when he heard them begin to go away again, he rushed to the door, and bawled on the chance at the top of his voice, “Bob! Bob!”

“Eh! ye crater[creature]!” said Robert, “*ir*[*are*] ye there efter[after] a’?”

“Eh! Bob,” exclaimed Shargar, and burst into tears. “I thocht[thought] ye wad[would] come efter[after] me.”

“Of coorse,” answered Robert, coolly. “Come awa’[away] hame[home].”

“Whaur til?” asked Shargar in dismay.

“Hame[home] to yer ain[own] bed at my grannie’s.”

“Na, na,” said Shargar, hurriedly, retreating within the door of the hovel. “Na, na, Bob, lad, I s’ no du[do] that. She’s an awfu’ wuman[woman], that grannie o’ yours. I canna think hoo[how] ye can bide wi’ her. I’m weel oot[out] o’ her grups[grips, grasp], *I* can tell ye.”

It required a good deal of persuasion, but at last Robert prevailed upon Shargar to return. For was not Robert his tower of strength? And if Robert was not frightened at his grannie, or at Betty, why should he be? At length they entered Mrs. Falconer’s parlour, Robert dragging in Shargar after him, having failed altogether in encouraging him to enter after a more dignified fashion.

It must be remembered that although Shargar was still kilted, he was not the less trowsered, such as the trowsers were. It makes my heart ache to think of those trowsers—not believing trowsers essential to blessedness either, but knowing the superiority of the old Roman costume of the kilt.

No sooner had Mrs. Falconer cast her eyes upon him than she could not but be convinced of the truth of Robert's averment.

"Here he is, grannie; and gin[if] ye bena[be not] saitisfeed yet—"

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, laddie. Ye hae gi'en me nae[no, not] cause to doobt[suspect] yer word."

Indeed, during Robert's absence, his grandmother had had leisure to perceive of what an absurd folly she had been guilty. She had also had time to make up her mind as to her duty with regard to Shargar; and the more she thought about it, the more she admired the conduct of her grandson, and the better she saw that it would be right to follow his example. No doubt she was the more inclined to this benevolence that she had as it were received her grandson back from the jaws of death.

When the two lads entered, from her arm-chair Mrs. Falconer examined Shargar from head to foot with the eye of a queen on her throne, and a countenance immovable in stern gentleness, till Shargar would gladly have sunk into the shelter of the voluminous kilt from the gaze of those quiet hazel eyes.

At length she spoke:

"Robert, tak him awa'[away]."

"Whaur'll I tak him till, grannie?"

"Tak him up to the garret. Betty 'ill[will] ha'[have"] ta'en[taken, seized] a tub o' het[hot] water up there 'gen[by, in time for, whether] this time, and ye maun[must, have to] see that he washes himsel' frae[from] heid[head] to fut, or he s' no bide an 'oor[hour] i' my hoose[house]. Gang[go] awa'[away] an' see till 't this minute."

But she detained them yet awhile with various directions in regard of cleansing, for the carrying out of which Robert was only too glad to give his word. She dismissed them at last, and Shargar by and by found

himself in bed, clean, and, for the first time in his life, between a pair of linen sheets—not altogether to his satisfaction, for mere order and comfort were substituted for adventure and success.

But greater trials awaited him. In the morning he was visited by Brodie, the tailor, and Elshender, the shoemaker, both of whom he held in awe as his superiors in the social scale, and by them handled and measured from head to feet, the latter included; after which he had to lie in bed for three days, till his clothes came home; for Betty had carefully committed every article of his former dress to the kitchen fire, not without a sense of pollution to the bottom of her kettle. Nor would he have got them for double the time, had not Robert haunted the tailor, as well as the soutar[cobbler], like an evil conscience, till they had finished them. Thus grievous was Shargar's introduction to the comforts of respectability. Nor did he like it much better when he was dressed, and able to go about; for not only was he uncomfortable in his new clothes, which, after the very easy fit of the old ones, felt like a suit of plate-armour, but he was liable to be sent for at any moment by the awful sovereignty in whose dominions he found himself, and which, of course, proceeded to instruct him not merely in his own religious duties, but in the religious theories of his ancestors, if, indeed, Shargar's ancestors ever had any. And now the Shorter Catechism seemed likely to be changed into the Longer Catechism; for he had it Sundays as we'll as Saturdays, besides Alleine's *Alarm to the Unconverted*, Baxter's *Saint's Rest*, Erskine's *Gospel Sonnets*, and other books of a like kind. Nor was it any relief to Shargar that the gloom was broken by the incomparable *Pilgrim's Progress* and the *Holy War*, for he cared for none of these things. Indeed, so dreary did he find it all, that his love to Robert was

never put to such a severe test. But for that, he would have run for it. Twenty times a day was he so tempted.

At school, though it was better, yet it was bad. For he was ten times as much laughed at for his new clothes, though they were of the plainest, as he had been for his old rags. Still he bore all the pangs of unwelcome advancement without a grumble, for the sake of his friend alone, whose dog he remained as much as ever. But his past life of cold and neglect, and hunger and blows, and homelessness and rags, began to glimmer as in the distance of a vaporous sunset, and the loveless freedom he had then enjoyed gave it a bloom as of summer-roses.

I wonder whether there may not have been in some unknown corner of the old lady's mind this lingering remnant of paganism, that, in reclaiming the outcast from the error of his ways, she was making an offering acceptable to that God whom her mere prayers could not move to look with favour upon her prodigal son Andrew. Nor from her own acknowledged religious belief as a background would it have stuck so fiery off either. Indeed, it might have been a partial corrective of some yet more dreadful articles of her creed,—which she held, be it remembered, because she could not help it.

Chapter 11 - Private Interviews

The winter passed slowly away. Robert and Shargar went to school together, and learned their lessons together at Mrs. Falconer's table. Shargar soon learned to behave with tolerable propriety; was obedient, as far as eye-service went; looked as queer as ever; did what he pleased, which was nowise very wicked, the moment he was out of the old lady's sight; was well fed and well cared for; and when he was asked how he was, gave the invariable answer: "Middlin'." He was not very happy.

There was little communication in words between the two boys, for the one had not much to say, and the pondering fits of the other grew rather than relaxed in frequency and intensity. Yet amongst chance acquaintances in the town Robert had the character of a wag, of which he was totally unaware himself. Indeed, although he had more than the ordinary share of humour, I suspect it was not so much his fun as his earnest that got him the character; for he would say such altogether unheard-of and strange things, that the only way they were capable of accounting for him was as a humorist.

"Eh!" he said once to Elshender, during a pause common to a thunder-storm and a lesson on the violin, "eh! wadna ye like to be up in that clood wi' a spaud[spade], turnin' ower[over] the divots and catchin' the flashes lyin' aneath them like lang[long] reid[red] fiery worms?"

"Ay[yes, indeed], man, but gin[if] ye luik[look] up to the cloods that gait[way], ye'll never be muckle[much] o' a fiddler."

This was merely an outbreak of that insolence of advice so often shown to the young from no vantage-ground but that of age and faithlessness, reminding one of the "jigging fool" who interfered between Brutus and

Cassius on the sole ground that he had seen more years than they. As if ever a fiddler that did not look up to the clouds would be anything but a catgut-scraper! Even Elshender's fiddle was the one angel that held back the heavy curtain of his gross nature, and let the sky shine through. He ought to have been set fiddling every Sunday morning, and from his fiddling dragged straight to church. It was the only thing man could have done for his conversion, for then his heart was open, But I fear the prayers would have closed it before the sermon came. He should rather have been compelled to take his fiddle to church with him, and have a gentle scrape at it in the pauses of the service; only there are no such pauses in the service, alas! And Dooble Sanny, though not too religious to get drunk occasionally, was a great deal too religious to play his fiddle on the Sabbath: he would not willingly anger the powers above; but it was sometimes a sore temptation, especially after he got possession of old Mr. Falconer's wonderful instrument.

"Hoots[pshaw], man!" he would say to Robert; "dinna han'le[handl], her as gin[if] she war[were] an egg-box. Tak haud[hold, keep] o' her as gin[if] she war[were] a leevin'[living, living being] crater[creature]. Ye maun[must, have to] jist straik[stroke, blow, caress] her canny, an' wile the music oot[out] o' her; for she's like ither[other] women: gin[if] ye be rouch[rough] wi' her, ye winna[will not] get a word oot[out] o' her. An' dinna han'le[handl] her that gait[way]. She canna bide to be contred[contradicted, thwarted] an' pu'd[pulled] this gait[way] and that gait.—Come to me, my bonny leddy[lady]. Ye'll tell me yer story, winna[will not] ye, my dauty[pet]?"

And with every gesture as if he were humouring a shy and invalid girl, he would, as he said, wile the music out of her in sobs and wailing, till the instrument, gathering courage in his embrace, grew gently merry in its confidence, and broke at last into airy laughter. He always spoke, and

apparently thought, of his violin as a woman, just as a sailor does of his craft. But there was nothing about him, except his love for music and its instruments, to suggest other than a most uncivilized nature. That which was fine in him was constantly checked and held down by the gross; the merely animal overpowered the spiritual; and it was only upon occasion that his heavenly companion, the violin, could raise him a few feet above the mire and the clay. She never succeeded in setting his feet on a rock; while, on the contrary, he often dragged her with him into the mire of questionable company and circumstances. Worthy Mr. Falconer would have been horrified to see his umquhile[of old, late] modest companion in such society as that into which she was now introduced at times. But nevertheless the soutar[cobbler] was a good and patient teacher; and although it took Robert *rather* more than a fortnight to redeem his pledge to Shargar, he did make progress. It could not, however, be rapid, seeing that an hour at a time, two evenings in the week, was all that he could give to the violin. Even with this moderation, the risk of his absence exciting his grandmother's suspicion and inquiry was far from small.

And now, were those really faded old memories of his grandfather and his merry kindness, all so different from the solemn benevolence of his grandmother, which seemed to revive in his bosom with the revivification of the violin? The instrument had surely laid up a story in its hollow breast, had been dreaming over it all the time it lay hidden away in the closet, and was now telling out its dreams about the old times in the ear of the listening boy. To him also it began to assume something of that mystery and life which had such a softening, and, for the moment at least, elevating influence on his master.

At length the love of the violin had grown upon him so, that he could not but cast about how he might enjoy more of its company. It would not do, for many reasons, to go oftener to the shoemaker's, especially now that the days were getting longer. Nor was that what he wanted. He wanted opportunity for practice. He wanted to be alone with the creature, to see if she would not say something more to him than she had ever said yet. Wafts and odours of melodies began to steal upon him ere he was aware in the half lights between sleeping and waking: if he could only entice them to creep out of the violin, and once "bless his humble ears" with the bodily hearing of them! Perhaps he might—who could tell? But how? But where?

There was a building in Rothieden not old, yet so deserted that its very history seemed to have come to a standstill, and the dust that filled it to have fallen from the plumes of passing centuries. It was the property of Mrs. Falconer, left her by her husband. Trade had gradually ebbed away from the town till the thread-factory stood unoccupied, with all its machinery rusting and mouldering, just as the work-people had risen and left it one hot, midsummer day, when they were told that their services were no longer required. Some of the thread even remained upon the spools, and in the hollows of some of the sockets the oil had as yet dried only into a paste; although to Robert the desertion of the place appeared immemorial. It stood at a furlong's distance from the house, on the outskirt of the town. There was a large, neglected garden behind it, with some good fruit-trees, and plenty of the bushes which boys love for the sake of their berries. After grannie's jam-pots were properly filled, the remnant of these, a gleaning far greater than the gathering, was at the disposal of Robert, and, philosopher although in some measure he was already, he appreciated the privilege. Haunting this garden in the

previous summer, he had for the first time made acquaintance with the interior of the deserted factory. The door to the road was always kept locked, and the key of it lay in one of grannie's drawers; but he had then discovered a back entrance less securely fastened, and with a strange mingling of fear and curiosity had from time to time extended his rambles over what seemed to him the huge desolation of the place. Half of it was well built of stone and lime, but of the other half the upper part was built of wood, which now showed signs of considerable decay. One room opened into another through the length of the place, revealing a vista of machines, standing with an air of the last folding of the wings of silence over them, and the sense of a deeper and deeper sinking into the soundless abyss. But their activity was not so far vanished but that by degrees Robert came to fancy that he had some time or other seen a woman seated at each of those silent powers, whose single hand set the whole frame in motion, with its numberless spindles and spools rapidly revolving—a vague mystery of endless threads in orderly complication, out of which came some desired, to him unknown, result, so that the whole place was full of a bewildering tumult of work, every little reel contributing its share, as the water-drops clashing together make the roar of a tempest. Now all was still as the church on a week-day, still as the school on a Saturday afternoon. Nay, the silence seemed to have settled down like the dust, and grown old and thick, so dead and old that the ghost of the ancient noise had arisen to haunt the place.

Thither would Robert carry his violin, and there would he woo her.

"I'm thinkin' I maun[must, have to] tak her wi' me the nicht[tonight], Sanders," he said, holding the fiddle lovingly to his bosom, after he had finished his next lesson.

The shoemaker looked blank. "Ye're no gaein' to desert me, are ye?"

“Na, weel I wat[know, assure]!” returned Robert. “But I want to try her at hame[home]. I maun[must, have to] get used till her a bittie[little bit], ye ken, afore I can du[do] onything wi’ her.”

“I wiss[wish] ye had na brought her here ava[of all]. What I *am* to du[do] wantin’ her!”

‘What for dinna ye get yer ain back?’

“I haena the siller[silver, money], man. And, forbye[as well], I doobt[suspect] I wadna be that sair content wi’ her noo[now] gin[if] I had her. I used to think her gran’. But I’m clean[entirely] oot[out] o’ conceit o’ her. That bonnie leddy[lady] ’s ta’en[taken, seized] ’t clean[entirely] oot[out] o’ me.”

“But ye canna hae her aye, ye ken, Sanders. She’s no mine. She’s my grannie’s, ye ken.”

“What’s the use o’ her to *her*? She pits[puts, makes] nae[no, not] vailue upon her. Eh, man, gin[if] she wad[would] gie[give] her to me, I wad[would] haud[hold, keep] her i’ the best o’ shune[shoes] a’ the lave[rest (remainder)] o’ her days.”

“That wadna be muckle[much], Sanders, for she hasna had a new pair sin’[since] ever I mind.”

“But I wad[would] haud[hold, keep] Betty in shune[shoes] as weel.”

“Betty pays for her ain[own] shune[shoes], I reckon.”

“Weel, I wad[would] haud[hold, keep] *you* in shune[shoes], and yer bairns, and yer bairns’ bairns,” cried the soutar[cobbler], with enthusiasm.

“Hoot[pshaw], toot[tut!], man! Lang[long] or[before] that ye’ll be fiddlin’ i’ the new Jeroozlem.”

“Eh, man!” said Alexander, looking up—he had just cracked the *roset-ends*[*waxed thread-ends*] off his hands, for he had the upper leather of a boot in the grasp of the clams[vice or pincers], and his right hand hung arrested on its blind way to the awl—“duv[do] ye think there’ll be fiddles there? I

thocht[thought] they war[were] a' hairps, a thing 'at I never saw, but it canna be up till a fiddle."

"I dinna ken," answered Robert; "but ye suld[should] mak[make, do] a pint[point] o' seein' for yersel'."

"Gin[if] I thoucht there wad[would] be fiddles there, faith I wad[would] hae a try. It wadna be muckle[much] o' a Jeroozlem to me wantin' my fiddle. But gin[if] there be fiddles, I daursay they'll be gran' anes[ones]. I daursay they wad[would] gi'[give] me a new ane[one]—I mean ane[one] as auld as Noah's 'at he played i' the ark whan[when] the de'il[devil] cam'[came] in by to hearken. I wad[would] fain hae a try. Ye ken a' aboot it wi' that grannie o' yours: hoo's[how's] a body to begin?"

"By giein'[giving] up the drink, man."

"Ay[yes, indeed]—ay[yes, indeed]—ay[yes, indeed]—I reckon ye're richt. Weel, I'll think aboot it whan[when] ance[once] I'm throu wi' this job. That'll be neist[next, nearest] ook[week], or thereabouts, or aiblins[perhaps, possibly] twa days efter[after]. I'll hae some leiser[leisure] than."

Before he had finished speaking he had caught up his awl and begun to work vigorously, boring his holes as if the nerves of feeling were continued to the point of the tool, inserting the bristles that served him for needles with a delicacy worthy of soft-skinned fingers, drawing through the rosined threads with a whisk, and untwining them with a crack from the leather that guarded his hands.

"Gude nicht to ye," said Robert, with the fiddle-case under his arm.

The shoemaker looked up, with his hands bound in his threads.

"Ye're no gaein' to tak her frae[from] me the nicht[tonight]?"

"Ay[yes, indeed] am I, but I'll fess[fetch, bring] her back again. I'm no gaein' to Jericho wi' her."

"Gang[go] to Hecklebirnie[Hell] wi' her, and that's three mile ayont[beyond] hell."

"Na; we maun[must, have to] win[get, go] farther nor[than] that. There canna, be muckle[much] fiddlin' there."

"Weel, tak her to the new Jeroozlem. I s' gang[go] doon to lucky[old woman] Leary's, and fill mysel' roarin' fou[full, well-fed], an' it'll be a' your wyte[blame, reproach, fault]."

"I doobt[suspect] *ye*"ll get the straiks[blows] though. Or maybe ye think Bell 'ill[will] tak them for ye."

Dooble Sanny caught up a huge boot, the sole of which was filled with broad-headed nails as thick as they could be driven, and, in a rage, threw it at Robert as he darted out. Through its clang against the *door-cheek*[*door-post, doorway*], the shoemaker heard a cry from the instrument. He cast everything from him and sprang after Robert. But Robert was down the wynd[narrow lane or street] like a long-legged grayhound, and Elshender could only follow like a fierce mastiff. It was love and grief, though, and apprehension and remorse, not vengeance, that winged his heels. He soon saw that pursuit was vain.

"Robert! Robert!" he cried; "I canna win[get, go] up wi' ye. Stop, for God's sake! Is she hurtit?"

Robert stopped at once.

"Ye hae made a bonny leddy[lady] o' her—a lameter[cripple; lame] I doobt[suspect], like yer wife," he answered, with indignation.

"Dinna be aye flingin' a man's fau'ts[faults] in 's face. It jist maks[makes, does] him 'at he canna, bide himsel' or you eyther[either]. Lat's[let's] see the bonny crater[creature]."

Robert complied, for he too was anxious. They were now standing in the space in front of Shargar's old abode, and there was no one to be seen. Elshender took the box, opened it carefully, and peeped in with a face of great apprehension.

"I thocht[thought] that was a'!" he said with some satisfaction. "I kent[known, knew] the string whan[when] I heard it. But we'll sune[soon, early] get a new thairm[fiddle-string] till her," he added, in a tone of sorrowful commiseration and condolence, as he took the violin from the case, tenderly as if it had been a hurt child.

One touch of the bow, drawing out a *goul*[*howl, yell, whine*] of grief, satisfied him that *she* was uninjured. Next a hurried inspection showed him that there was enough of the catgut twisted round the peg to make up for the part that was broken off. In a moment he had fastened it to the tail-piece, tightened and tuned it. Forthwith he took the bow from the case-lid, and in jubilant guise he expatiated upon the wrong he had done his bonny leddy[lady], till the doors and windows around were crowded with heads peering through the dark to see whence the sounds came, and a little child toddled across from one of the lowliest houses with a ha'penny for the fiddler. Gladly would Robert have restored it with interest, but, alas! there was no interest in his bank, for not a ha'penny had he in the world. The incident recalled Sandy to Rothieden and its cares. He restored the violin to its case, and while Robert was fearing he would take it under his arm and walk away with it, handed it back with a humble sigh and a "Praise be thankit;" then, without another word, turned and went to his lonely stool and home "untreasured of its mistress." Robert went home too, and stole like a thief to his room.

The next day was a Saturday, which, indeed, was the real old Sabbath, or at least the half of it, to the schoolboys of Rothieden. Even Robert's

grannie was Jew enough, or rather Christian enough, to respect this remnant of the fourth commandment—divine antidote to the rest of the godless money-making and soul-saving week—and he had the half-day to himself. So as soon as he had had his dinner, he managed to give Shargar the slip, left him to the inroads of a desolate despondency, and stole away to the old factory-garden. The key of that he had managed to purloin from the kitchen where it hung; nor was there much danger of its absence being discovered, seeing that in winter no one thought of the garden. The smuggling of the violin out of the house was the "dearest danger"—the more so that he would not run the risk of carrying her out unprotected, and it was altogether a bulky venture with the case. But by spying and speeding he managed it, and soon found himself safe within the high walls of the garden.

It was early spring. There had been a heavy fall of sleet in the morning, and now the wind blew gustfully about the place. The neglected trees shook showers upon him as he passed under them, trampling down the rank growth of the grass-walks. The long twigs of the wall-trees, which had never been nailed up, or had been torn down by the snow and the blasts of winter, went trailing away in the moan of the fitful wind, and swung back as it sunk to a sigh. The currant and gooseberry bushes, bare and leafless, and "shivering all for cold," neither reminded him of the feasts of the past summer, nor gave him any hope for the next. He strode careless through it all to gain the door at the bottom. It yielded to a push, and the long grass streamed in over the threshold as he entered. He mounted by a broad stair in the main part of the house, passing the silent clock in one of its corners, now expiating in motionlessness the false accusations it had brought against the work-people, and turned into the chaos of machinery.

I fear that my readers will expect, from the minuteness with which I recount these particulars, that, after all, I am going to describe a rendezvous with a lady, or a ghost at least. I will not plead in excuse that I, too, have been infected with Sandy's mode of regarding *her*, but I plead that in the mind of Robert the proceeding was involved in something of that awe and mystery with which a youth approaches the woman he loves. He had not yet arrived at the period when the feminine assumes its paramount influence, combining in itself all that music, colour, form, odour, can suggest, with something infinitely higher and more divine; but he had begun to be haunted with some vague aspirations towards the infinite, of which his attempts on the violin were the outcome. And now that he was to be alone, for the first time, with this wonderful realizer of dreams and awakener of visions, to do with her as he would, to hint by gentle touches at the thoughts that were fluttering in his soul, and listen for her voice that by the echoes in which she strove to respond he might know that she understood him, it was no wonder if he felt an ethereal foretaste of the expectation that haunts the approach of souls.

But I am not even going to describe his first *t* - with his violin. Perhaps he returned from it somewhat disappointed. Probably he found her coy, unready to acknowledge his demands on her attention. But not the less willingly did he return with her to the solitude of the ruinous factory. On every safe occasion, becoming more and more frequent as the days grew longer, he repaired thither, and every time returned more capable of drawing the coherence of melody from that matrix of sweet sounds.

At length the people about began to say that the factory was haunted; that the ghost of old Mr. Falconer, unable to repose while neglect was ruining the precious results of his industry, visited the place night after

night, and solaced his disappointment by renewing on his favourite violin strains not yet forgotten by him in his grave, and remembered well by those who had been in his service, not a few of whom lived in the neighbourhood of the forsaken building.

One gusty afternoon, like the first, but late in the spring, Robert repaired as usual to this his secret haunt. He had played for some time, and now, from a sudden pause of impulse, had ceased, and begun to look around him. The only light came from two long pale cracks in the rain-clouds of the west. The wind was blowing through the broken windows, which stretched away on either hand. A dreary, windy gloom, therefore, pervaded the desolate place; and in the dusk, and their settled order, the machines looked multitudinous. An *eerie* sense of discomfort came over him as he gazed, and he lifted his violin to dispel the strange unpleasant feeling that grew upon him. But at the first long stroke across the strings, an awful sound arose in the further room; a sound that made him all but drop the bow, and cling to his violin. It went on. It was the old, all but forgotten whirr of bobbins, mingled with the gentle groans of the revolving horizontal wheel, but magnified in the silence of the place, and the echoing imagination of the boy, into something preternaturally awful. Yielding for a moment to the growth of goose-skin, and the insurrection of hair, he recovered himself by a violent effort, and walked to the door that connected the two compartments. Was it more or less fearful that the jenny was not going of itself? that the figure of an old woman sat solemnly turning and turning the hand-wheel? Not without calling in the jury of his senses, however, would he yield to the special plea of his imagination, but went nearer, half expecting to find that the *mutch*[*woman's cap with frill; worn under bonnet*], with its big flapping borders, glimmering white in the gloom across many a machine, surrounded the

face of a skull. But he was soon satisfied that it was only a blind woman everybody knew—so old that she had become childish. She had heard the reports of the factory being haunted, and groping about with her half-withered brain full of them, had found the garden and the back door open, and had climbed to the first-floor by a farther stair, well known to her when she used to work that very machine. She had seated herself instinctively, according to ancient wont, and had set it in motion once more.

Yielding to an impulse of experiment, Robert began to play again. Thereupon her disordered ideas broke out in words. And Robert soon began to feel that it could hardly be more ghastly to look upon a ghost than to be taken for one.

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed], sir," said the old woman, in a tone of commiseration, "it maun[must, have to] be sair[sore] to bide. I dinna wonner[wonder, marvel] 'at ye canna lie still. But what gars[causes, compels] ye gang[go] daunerin'[strolling, sauntering] aboot *this* place? It's no yours ony[any] langer[longer]. Ye ken whan[when] fowk's[folk's] deid, they tyne[lose, get lost] the grip. Ye suld[should] gang[go] hame[home] to yer wife. She micht say a word to quaiet yer auld banes[bones], for she's a douce[gentle, sensible] an' a wice[wise] woman—the mistress."

Then followed a pause. There was a horror about the old woman's voice, already half dissolved by death, in the desolate place, that almost took from Robert the power of motion. But his violin sent forth an accidental twang, and that set her going again.

"Ye was aye a douce[gentle, sensible] honest gentleman yersel', an' I dinna wonner[wonder, marvel] ye canna bide it. But I wad[would] hae thoucht glory micht hae hauden[held, kept] ye in. But yer ain[own] son! Eh ay[yes, indeed]! And a braw[beautiful, fine] lad and a bonnie! It's a sod[sad] thing he bude[had to] to gang[go]

the wrang[wrong, injured] gait[way]; and it's no wonner[wonder, marvel], as I say, that ye lea'[leave] the worms to come an' luik[look] efter[after] him. I doobt[suspect]—I doobt[suspect] it winna[will not] be to you he'll gang[go] at the lang[long] last. There winna[will not] be room for him aside ye in Awbrahawm's boasom[bosom]. And syne[then] to behave sae ill to that winsome wife o' his! I dinna wonner[wonder, marvel] 'at ye maun[must, have to] be up! Eh na! But, sir, sin[since] ye are up, I wish ye wad[would] speyk to John Thamson no to tak aff[off, away, past] the day 'at I was awa'[away] last ook[week], for 'deed I was verra[very] unweel, and bude[had to] to keep my bed."

Robert was beginning to feel uneasy as to how he should get rid of her, when she rose, and saying, "ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed], I ken it's sax[six] o'clock," went out as she had come in. Robert followed, and saw her safe out of the garden, but did not return to the factory.

So his father had behaved ill to his mother too!

"But what for hearken to the havers[nonsense, foolish talk] o' a dottled[crazy, in dotage] auld wife?" he said to himself, pondering as he walked home.

Old Janet told a strange story of how she had *seen* the ghost, and had had a long talk with him, and of what he said, and of how he groaned and played the fiddle between. And finding that the report had reached his grandmother's ears, Robert thought it prudent, much to his discontent, to intermit his visits to the factory. Mrs. Falconer, of course, received the rumour with indignant scorn, and peremptorily refused to allow any examination of the premises.

But how have the violin by him and not hear her speak? One evening the longing after her voice grow upon him till he could resist it no longer. He shut the door of his garret-room, and, with Shargar by him, took her out and began to play softly, gently—oh so softly, so gently! Shargar was enraptured. Robert went on playing.

Suddenly the door opened, and his grannie stood awfully revealed before them. Betty had heard the violin, and had flown to the parlour in the belief that, unable to get any one to heed him at the factory, the ghost had taken Janet's advice, and come home. But his wife smiled a smile of contempt, went with Betty to the kitchen—over which Robert's room lay—heard the sounds, put off her creaking shoes, stole up-stairs on her soft white lambswool stockings, and caught the pair. The violin was seized, put in its case, and carried off; and Mrs. Falconer rejoiced to think she had broken a gin set by Satan for the unwary feet of her poor Robert. Little she knew the wonder of that violin—how it had kept the soul of her husband alive! Little she knew how dangerous it is to shut an open door, with ever so narrow a peep into the eternal, in the face of a son of Adam! And little she knew how determinedly and restlessly a nature like Robert's would search for another, to open one possibly which she might consider ten times more dangerous than that which she had closed.

When Alexander heard of the affair, he was at first overwhelmed with the misfortune; but gathering a little heart at last, he set to "working," as he said himself, "like a verra[very] deevil"; and as he was the best shoemaker in the town, and for the time abstained utterly from whisky, and all sorts of drink but well-water, he soon managed to save the money necessary, and redeem the old fiddle. But whether it was from fancy, or habit, or what, even Robert's inexperienced ear could not accommodate itself, save under protest, to the instrument which once his teacher had considered all but perfect; and it needed the master's finest touch to make its tone other than painful to the sense of the neophyte.

No one can estimate too highly the value of such a resource to a man like the shoemaker, or a boy like Robert. Whatever it be that keeps the finer faculties of the mind awake, wonder alive, and the interest above

mere eating and drinking, money-making and money-saving; whatever it be that gives gladness, or sorrow, or hope—this, be it violin, pencil, pen, or, highest of all, the love of woman, is simply a divine gift of holy influence for the salvation of that being to whom it comes, for the lifting of him out of the mire and up on the rock. For it keeps a way open for the entrance of deeper, holier, grander influences, emanating from the same riches of the Godhead. And though many have genius that have no grace, they will only be so much the worse, so much the nearer to the brute, if you take from them that which corresponds to Dooble Sanny's fiddle.

Chapter 12 - Robert's Plan of Salvation

For some time after the loss of his friend, Robert went loitering and mooning about, quite neglecting the lessons to which he had not, it must be confessed, paid much attention for many weeks. Even when seated at his grannie's table, he could do no more than fix his eyes on his book: to learn was impossible; it was even disgusting to him. But his was a nature which, foiled in one direction, must, absolutely helpless against its own vitality, straightway send out its searching roots in another. Of all forces, that of growth is the one irresistible, for it is the creating power of God, the law of life and of being. Therefore no accumulation of refusals, and checks, and turnings, and forbiddings, from all the good old grannies in the world, could have prevented Robert from striking root downward, and bearing fruit upward, though, as in all higher natures, the fruit was a long way off yet. But his soul was only sad and hungry. He was not unhappy, for he had been guilty of nothing that weighed on his conscience. He had been doing many things of late, it is true, without asking leave of his grandmother, but wherever prayer is felt to be of no avail, there cannot be the sense of obligation save on compulsion. Even direct disobedience in such case will generally leave little soreness, except the thing forbidden should be in its own nature wrong, and then, indeed, "Don Worm, the conscience," may begin to bite. But Robert felt nothing immoral in playing upon his grandfather's violin, nor even in taking liberties with a piece of lumber for which nobody cared but possibly the dead; therefore he was not unhappy, only much disappointed, very empty, and somewhat gloomy. There was nothing to look forward to now, no secret full of riches and endless in hope—in short, no violin.

To feel the full force of his loss, my reader must remember that around the childhood of Robert, which he was fast leaving behind him, there had gathered no tenderness—none at least by him recognizable as such. All the women he came in contact with were his grandmother and Betty. He had no recollection of having ever been kissed. From the darkness and negation of such an embryo-existence, his nature had been unconsciously striving to escape—struggling to get from below ground into the sunlit air—sighing after a freedom he could not have defined, the freedom that comes, not of independence, but of love—not of lawlessness, but of the perfection of law. Of this beauty of life, with its wonder and its deepness, this unknown glory, his fiddle had been the type. It had been the ark that held, if not the tables of the covenant, yet the golden pot of angel's food, and the rod that budded in death. And now that it was gone, the gloomier aspect of things began to lay hold upon him; his soul turned itself away from the sun, and entered into the shadow of the under-world. Like the white-horsed twins of lake Regillus, like Phoebe, the queen of skyey plain and earthly forest, every boy and girl, every man and woman, that lives at all, has to divide many a year between Tartarus and Olympus.

For now arose within him, not without ultimate good, the evil phantasms of a theology which would explain all God's doings by low conceptions, low I mean for humanity even, of right, and law, and justice, then only taking refuge in the fact of the incapacity of the human understanding when its own inventions are impugned as undivine. In such a system, hell is invariably the deepest truth, and the love of God is not so deep as hell. Hence, as foundations must be laid in the deepest, the system is founded in hell, and the first article in the creed that Robert Falconer learned was, "I believe in hell." Practically, I mean, it

was so; else how should it be that as often as a thought of religious duty arose in his mind, it appeared in the form of escaping hell, of fleeing from the wrath to come? For his very nature was hell, being not born *in* sin and brought forth in iniquity, but born sin and brought forth iniquity. And yet God made him. He must believe that. And he must believe, too, that God was just, awfully just, punishing with fearful pains those who did not go through a certain process of mind which it was utterly impossible they should go through without a help which he would give to some, and withhold from others, the reason of the difference not being such, to say the least of it, as to come within the reach of the persons concerned. And this God they said was love. It was logically absurd, of course, yet, thank God, they did say that God was love; and many of them succeeded in believing it, too, and in ordering their ways as if the first article of their creed had been "I believe in God"; whence, in truth, we are bound to say it was the first in power and reality, if not in order; for what are we to say a man believes, if not what he acts upon? Still the former article was the one they brought chiefly to bear upon their children. This mortar, probably they thought, threw the shell straighter than any of the other field-pieces of the church-militant. Hence it was even in justification of God himself that a party arose to say that a man could believe without the help of God at all, and after believing only began to receive God's help—a heresy all but as dreary and barren as the former. No one dreamed of saying—at least such a glad word of prophecy never reached Rothieden—that, while nobody can do without the help of the Father any more than a new-born babe could of itself live and grow to a man, yet that in the giving of that help the very fatherhood of the Father finds its one gladsome labour; that for that the Lord came; for that the world was made; for that we were born into it; for that God lives and loves like the most loving man or woman on earth,

only infinitely more, and in other ways and kinds besides, which we cannot understand; and that therefore to be a man is the soul of eternal jubilation.

Robert consequently began to take fits of soul-saving, a most rational exercise, worldly wise and prudent—right too on the principles he had received, but not in the least Christian in its nature, or even God-fearing. His imagination began to busy itself in representing the dire consequences of not entering into the one refuge of faith. He made many frantic efforts to believe that he believed; took to keeping the Sabbath very carefully—that is, by going to church three times, and to Sunday-school as well; by never walking a step save to or from church; by never saying a word upon any subject unconnected with religion, chiefly theoretical; by never reading any but religious books; by never whistling; by never thinking of his lost fiddle, and so on—all the time feeling that God was ready to pounce upon him if he failed once; till again and again the intensity of his efforts utterly defeated their object by destroying for the time the desire to prosecute them with the power to will them. But through the horrible vapours of these vain endeavours, which denied God altogether as the maker of the world, and the former of his soul and heart and brain, and sought to worship him as a capricious demon, there broke a little light, a little soothing, soft twilight, from the dim windows of such literature as came in his way. Besides *The Pilgrim's Progress* there were several books which shone moon-like on his darkness, and lifted something of the weight of that Egyptian gloom off his spirit. One of these, strange to say, was Defoe's *Religious Courtship*, and one, Young's *Night Thoughts*. But there was another which deserves particular notice, inasmuch as it did far more than merely interest or amuse him, raising a deep question in his mind, and one worthy to be

asked. This book was the translation of Klopstock's *Messiah*, to which I have already referred. It was not one of his grandmother's books, but had probably belonged to his father: he had found it in his little garret-room. But as often as she saw him reading it, she seemed rather pleased, he thought. As to the book itself, its florid expatiation could neither offend nor injure a boy like Robert, while its representation of our Lord was to him a wonderful relief from that given in the pulpit, and in all the religious books he knew. But the point for the sake of which I refer to it in particular is this: Amongst the rebel angels who are of the actors in the story, one of the principal is a cherub who repents of making his choice with Satan, mourns over his apostasy, haunts unseen the steps of our Saviour, wheels lamenting about the cross, and would gladly return to his lost duties in heaven, if only he might—a doubt which I believe is left unsolved in the volume, and naturally enough remained unsolved in Robert's mind:—Would poor Abaddon be forgiven and taken home again? For although naturally, that is, to judge by his own instincts, there could be no question of his forgiveness, according to what he had been taught there could be no question of his perdition. Having no one to talk to, he divided himself and went to buffets on the subject, siding, of course, with the better half of himself which supported the merciful view of the matter; for all his efforts at keeping the Sabbath, had in his own honest judgment failed so entirely, that he had no ground for believing himself one of the elect. Had he succeeded in persuading himself that he was, there is no saying to what lengths of indifference about others the chosen prig might have advanced by this time.

He made one attempt to open the subject with Shargar.

"Shargar, what think ye?" he said suddenly, one day. "Gin[if] a de'il[devil] war[were] to repent, wad[would] God forgie[forgive] him?"

“There’s no sayin’ what fowk[folk] wad[would] du[do] till ance[once] they’re tried,” returned Shargar, cautiously.

Robert did not care to resume the question with one who so circumspectly refused to take a metaphysical or *a priori* view of the matter.

He made an attempt with his grandmother.

One Sunday, his thoughts, after trying for a time to revolve in due orbit around the mind of the Rev. Hugh Maccleary, as projected in a sermon which he had botched up out of a commentary, failed at last and flew off into what the said gentleman would have pronounced “very dangerous speculation, seeing no man is to go beyond what is written in the Bible, which contains not only the truth, but the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, for this time and for all future time—both here and in the world to come.” Some such sentence, at least, was in his sermon that day, and the preacher no doubt supposed St. Matthew, not St. Matthew Henry, accountable for its origination. In the Limbo into which Robert’s then spirit flew, it had been sorely exercised about the substitution of the sufferings of Christ for those which humanity must else have endured while ages rolled on—mere ripples on the ocean of eternity.

“Noo[now], be douce[gentle, sensible],” said Mrs. Falconer, solemnly, as Robert, a trifle lighter at heart from the result of his cogitations than usual, sat down to dinner: he had happened to smile across the table to Shargar. And he was douce[gentle, sensible], and smiled no more.

They ate their broth, or, more properly, *supped*[*drank*] it, with horn spoons, in absolute silence; after which Mrs. Falconer put a large piece of meat on the plate of each, with the same formula:

“Hae[here]. Ye s’ get nae[no, not] mair[more].”

The allowance was ample in the extreme, bearing a relation to her words similar to that which her practice bore to her theology. A piece of cheese, because it was the Sabbath, followed, and dinner was over.

When the table had been cleared by Betty, they drew their chairs to the fire, and Robert had to read to his grandmother, while Shargar sat listening. He had not read long, however, before he looked up from his Bible and began the following conversation:—

"Wasna it an ill trick o' Joseph, gran'mither, to put that cup, an' a siller[silver, money] ane[one] tu[too, also], into the mou'[mouth] o' Benjamin's seck[sack]?"

"What for that, laddie? He wanted to gar[cause, compel] them come back again, ye ken."

"But he needna hae gane[gone] aboot it in sic[such] a playactor-like gait[way]. He needna hae latten[let, allowed] them awa'[away] ohn[without] tellt them that he was their brither[brother]."

"They had behaved verra[very] ill till him."

"He used to clype[tell tales, gossip] upo' them, though."

"Laddie, tak ye care what ye say aboot Joseph, for he was a teep[type] o' Christ."

"Hoo[how] was that, gran'mither?"

"They sellt him to the Ishmeleets[Ishmaelites] for siller[silver, money], as Judas did him."

"Did he beir[bear] the sins o' them 'at sellt him?"

"Ye may say, in a mainner[manner], 'at he did; for he was sair[sorely] afflickit afore he wan[reached, gained, got] up to be the King's richt han'; an' syne[then] he keepit[kept] a hantle[much, large quantity] o' ill aff[off, away, past] o' 's brithren[brethren, brother]."

“Sae, gran’mither, ither[other] fowk[folk] nor[than] Christ micht suffer for the sins o’ their neebors?”

“Ay[yes, indeed], laddie, mony[many] a ane[one] has to do that. But no to mak[make, do] atonement, ye ken. Naething but the sufferin’ o’ the spotless cud[could] du[do] that. The Lord wadna be saitisfeet wi’ less nor[than] that. It maun[must, have to] be the innocent to suffer for the guilty.”

“I unnerstan’ that,” said Robert, who had heard it so often that he had not yet thought of trying to understand it. “But gin[if] we gang[go] to the gude place, we’ll be a’ innocent, willna we, grannie?”

“Ay[yes, indeed], that we will—washed spotless, and pure, and clean, and dressed i’ the weddin’ garment, and set doon at the table wi’ him and wi’ his Father. That’s them ’at believes in him, ye ken.”

“Of coorse, grannie.—Weel, ye see, I hae been thinkin’ o’ a plan for maist han’ toomin’[almost emptying] hell.”

“What’s i’ the bairn’s heid[head] noo[now]? Troth[truth, indeed], ye’re no blate[over-modest, bashful], meddlin’ wi’ sic[such] subjecks, laddie!”

“I didna want to say onything to vex ye, grannie. I s’ gang[go] on wi’ the chapter.”

“Ow[oh], say awa’[away]. Ye sanna[shall not] say muckle[much] ’at’s wrang[wrong, injured] afore I cry *haud*[*hold, keep*],” said Mrs. Falconer, curious to know what had been moving in the boy’s mind, but watching him like a cat, ready to spring upon the first visible hair of the old Adam.

And Robert, recalling the outbreak of terrible grief which he had heard on that memorable night, really thought that his project would bring comfort to a mind burdened with such care, and went on with the exposition of his plan.

“A’ them ’at sits doon to the supper o’ the Lamb ’ll[will] sit there because Christ suffert[suffered] the punishment due to their sins—winna[will not] they, grannie?”

“Doobtless, laddie.”

“But it’ll he some sair[sorely] upo’ them to sit there aitin’[eating] an’ drinkin’ an’ talkin’ awa’[away], an’ enjoyin’ themsel’s, whan[when] ilka[every] noo[now] an’ than there’ll come a sough[sigh, sound of wind] o’ wailin’ up frae[from] the ill place, an’ a smell o’ burnin’ ill to bide.”

“What put that i’ yer heid[head], laddie? There’s no rizzon[reason] to think ’at hell’s sae near haven[heaven] as a’ that. The Lord forbid it!”

“Weel, but, grannie, they’ll ken ’t a’ the same, whether they smell ’t or no. An’ I canna help thinkin’ that the farrer[farther] awa’[away] I thoucht they war[were], the waur[worse] I wad[would] like to think upo’ them. “Deed it wad[would] be waur[worse].”

“What are ye drivin’ at, laddie? I canna unnerstan’ ye,’ said Mrs. Falconer, feeling very uncomfortable, and yet curious, almost anxious, to hear what would come next. “I trust we winna[will not] hae to think muckle[much]—”

But here, I presume, the thought of the added desolation of her Andrew if she, too, were to forget him, as well as his Father in heaven, checked the flow of her words. She paused, and Robert took up his parable and went on, first with yet another question.

“Duv[do] ye think, grannie, that a body wad[would] be allooed to speik a word i’ public, like, there—at the lang[long] table, like, I mean?”

“What for no, gin[if] it was dune[done] wi’ moedesty, and for a guid rizzon[reason]? But railly[really], laddie, I doobt[suspect] ye’re haverin’[talking

incoherently a'thegither[all together]. Ye hard[heard] naething like that, I'm sure, the day, frae[from] Mr. Maccleary."

"Na, na; he said naething aboot it. But maybe I'll gang[go] and speir[ask about, enquire] at him, though."

"What aboot?"

"What I'm gaein' to tell ye, grannie."

"Weel, tell awa'[away], and hae dune[done] wi' 't. I'm growin' tired o' 't."

It was something else than tired she was growing.

"Weel, I'm gaein' to try a' that I can to win[get, go] in there."

"I houp[hope] ye will. Strive and pray. Resist the deevil. Walk in the licht. Lippen[trust, depend on] not to yersel', but trust in Christ and his salvation."

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed], grannie.—Weel—"

"Are ye no dune[done] yet?"

"Na. I'm but jist beginnin'."

"Beginnin', are ye? Humph!"

"Weel, gin[if] I win[get, go] in there, the verra[very] first nicht I sit doon wi' the lave[rest (remainder)] o' them, I'm gaein' to rise up an' say—that is, gin[if] the Maister, at the heid[head] o' the table, disna[does not] bid me sit doon—an' say: "brithers[brothers, fellows] an' sisters, the haill[whole] o' ye, hearken to me for ae minute; an', O Lord! Gin[if] I say wrang[wrong, injured], jist tak the speech frae[from] me, and I'll sit doon dumb an' rebukit. We're a' here by grace and no by merit, save his, as ye a' ken better nor[than] I can tell ye, for ye hae been langer[longer] here nor[than] me. But it's jist ruggin' and rivin'[draging forcibly] at my hert[heart] to think o' them 'at's doon there. Maybe ye can hear them. I canna. Noo[now], we hae nae[no, not] merit, an' they hae nae[no, not] merit, an' what for are we here and them there? But we're washed clean and innocent noo[now]; and noo[now], whan[when] there's no wyte[blame, reproach, fault

lying upo' oursel's, it seems to me that we micht beir[bear] some o' the sins o' them 'at hae ower[over] mony[many]. I call upo' ilk[every] ane[one] o' ye 'at has a frien' or a neebor down yonner, to rise up an' taste nor bite nor sup[drink] mair[more] till we gang[go] up a'thegither[all together] to the fut o' the throne, and pray the Lord to lat's[let us] gang[go] and du[do] as the Maister did afore 's, and beir[bear] their griefs, and cairry their sorrows doon in hell there; gin[if] it maybe that they may repent and get remission o' their sins, an' come up here wi' us at the lang[long] last, and sit doon wi' 's at this table, a' throuw the merits o' oor Saviour Jesus Christ, at the heid[head] o' the table there. Amen.""

Half ashamed of his long speech, half overcome by the feelings fighting within him, and altogether bewildered, Robert burst out crying like a baby, and ran out of the room—up to his own place of meditation, where he threw himself on the floor. Shargar, who had made neither head nor tail of it all, as he said afterwards, sat staring at Mrs. Falconer. She rose, and going into Robert's little bedroom, closed the door, and what she did there is not far to seek.

When she came out, she rang the bell for tea, and sent Shargar to look for Robert. When he appeared, she was so gentle to him that it woke quite a new sensation in him. But after tea was over, she said:

"Noo[now], Robert, lat's[let's] hae nae[no, not] mair[more] o' this. Ye ken as weel 's I du[do] that them 'at gangs[goes, walks] *there* their doom is fixed, and noething *can* alter 't. An' we're not to alloo oor ain[own] fancies to cairry 's ayont[beyond] the Scripter. We hae oor ain[own] salvation to work oot[out] wi' fear an' trimlin'[trembling]. We hae naething to do wi' what's hidden. Luik[look] ye till 't 'at ye win[get, go] in yersel'. That's eneuch[enough] for you to min'[mind, remember].—Shargar, ye can gang[go] to the kirk. Robert's to bide wi' me the nicht[tonight]."

Mrs. Falconer very rarely went to church, for she could not hear a word, and found it irksome.

When Robert and she were alone together,

"Laddie," she said, "be ye waure[ware] o' judgin' the Almichty. What luiks[looks] to you a' wrang[wrong, injured] may be a' richt. But it's true eneuch[enough] 'at we dinna ken a'thing[everything, anything]; an' he's no deid yet —I dinna believe 'at he is—and he'll maybe win[get, go] in yet."

Here her voice failed her. And Robert had nothing to say now. He had said all his say before.

"Pray, Robert, pray for yer father, laddie," she resumed; "for we hae muckle[much] rizzon[reason] to be anxious aboot 'im. Pray while there's life an' houp[hope]. Gie[give] the Lord no rist[rest]. Pray till 'im day an' nicht, as I du[do], that he wad[would] lead 'im to see the error o' his ways, an' turn to the Lord, wha's[who is] ready to pardon. Gin[if] yer mother had lived, I wad[would] hae had mair[more] houp[hope], I confess, for she was a braw[beautiful, fine] leddy[lady] and a bonny, and *that* sweet-tongued! She cud[could] hae wiled a maukin[hare] frae[from] its lair wi' her bonnie Hielan'[Highland] speech. I never likit to hear nane[none] o' them speyk the Erse[Irish (Gaelic)], it was aye sae gloggie[insipid, artificial] and baneless[insipid]; and I cudna unnerstan' ae word o' 't. Nae[no, not] mair[more] cud[could] yer father—hoot[pshaw]! yer gran'father, I mean—though his father cud[could] speyk it weel. But to hear yer mother—mamma, as ye used to ca'[call] her aye, efter[after] the new fashion—to hear her speyk English, that was sweet to the ear; for the braid[broad (having a strong accent)] Scotch she kent[known, knew] as little o' as I do o' the Erse[Irish (Gaelic)]. It was hert's[heart's] care aboot him that shortent[shortened] her days. And a' that'll be laid upo' him. He'll hae 't a' to beir[bear] an' accoont for. Och hone[alas]! Och hone[alas]! Eh! Robert, my man, be a guid lad, an' serve the Lord wi' a' yer hert[heart], an' sowl[soul], an' stren'th, an' min'[mind]; for gin[if]

ye gang[go] wrang[wrong, injured], yer ain[own] father 'll[will] hae to beir[bear] naebody kens hoo[how] muckle[much] o' the wyte[blame, reproach, fault] o' 't, for he's dune[done] naething to bring ye up i' the way ye suld[should] gang[go], an' haud[hold, keep] ye oot[out] o' the ill gait[way]. For the sake o' yer puir[poor] father, haud[hold, keep] ye to the richt road. It may spare him a pang or twa i' the ill place. Eh, gin[if] the Lord wad[would] only tak me, and lat[let, allow] him gang[go]!"

Involuntarily and unconsciously the mother's love was adopting the hope which she had denounced in her grandson. And Robert saw it, but he was never the man when I knew him to push a victory. He said nothing. Only a tear or two at the memory of the wayworn man, his recollection of whose visit I have already recorded, rolled down his cheeks. He was at such a distance from him!—such an impassable gulf yawned between them!—that was the grief! Not the gulf of death, nor the gulf that divides hell from heaven, but the gulf of abjuration by the good because of his evil ways. His grandmother, herself weeping fast and silently, with scarce altered countenance, took her neatly-folded handkerchief from her pocket, and wiped her grandson's fresh cheeks, then wiped her own withered face; and from that moment Robert knew that he loved her.

Then followed the Sabbath-evening prayer that she always offered with the boy, whichever he was, who kept her company. They knelt down together, side by side, in a certain corner of the room, the same, I doubt not, in which she knelt at her private devotions, before going to bed. There she uttered a long extempore prayer, rapid in speech, full of divinity and Scripture-phrases, but not the less earnest and simple, for it flowed from a heart of faith. Then Robert had to pray after her, loud in her ear, that she might hear him thoroughly, so that he often felt as if he were praying to her, and not to God at all.

She had begun to teach him to pray so early that the custom reached beyond the confines of his memory. At first he had had to repeat the words after her; but soon she made him construct his own utterances, now and then giving him a suggestion in the form of a petition when he seemed likely to break down, or putting a phrase into what she considered more suitable language. But all such assistance she had given up long ago.

On the present occasion, after she had ended her petitions with those for Jews and pagans, and especially for the "pop"[pope] o' Rom'[Rome],' in whom with a rare liberality she took the kindest interest, always praying God to give him a good wife, though she knew perfectly well the marriage-creed of the priesthood, for her faith in the hearer of prayer scorned every theory but that in which she had herself been born and bred, she turned to Robert with the usual "noo[now], Robert!" and Robert began. But after he had gone on for some time with the ordinary phrases, he turned all at once into a new track, and instead of praying in general terms for "those that would not walk in the right way," said,

"O Lord! save my father," and there paused.

"If it be thy will," suggested his grandmother.

But Robert continued silent. His grandmother repeated the subjunctive clause.

"I'm tryin', grandmother," said Robert, "but I canna say 't. I daurna[dare not] say an *if* aboot it. It wad[would] be like giein'[giving] in till 's damnation. We *maun*[*must, have to*] *hae* him saved, grannie!"

"Laddie! laddie! Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue!" said Mrs. Falconer, in a tone of distressed awe. "O Lord, forgie[forgive] 'im. He's young and disna[does not] ken better yet. He canna unnerstan' thy ways, nor, for that maitter[matter], can I preten' to unnerstan' them mysel'. But thoo[thou, you

(God) art a' licht, and in thee is no darkness at all. And thy licht comes into oor blin'(blind) een(eyes), and mak's(makes) them blinner(blinder) yet. But, O Lord, gin(if) it wad(would) please thee to hear oor prayer...eh! Hoo(how) we wad(would) praise thee! And my Andrew wad(would) praise thee mair(more) nor(than) ninety and nine o' them 'at need nae(no, not) repentance."

A long pause followed. And then the only words that would come were: "For Christ's sake. Amen."

When she said that God was light, instead of concluding therefrom that he could not do the deeds of darkness, she was driven, from a faith in the teaching of Jonathan Edwards as implicit as that of "any lay papist of Loretto," to doubt whether the deeds of darkness were not after all deeds of light, or at least to conclude that their character depended not on their own nature, but on who did them.

They rose from their knees, and Mrs. Falconer sat down by her fire, with her feet on her little wooden stool, and began, as was her wont in that household twilight, ere the lamp was lighted, to review her past life, and follow her lost son through all conditions and circumstances to her imaginable. And when the world to come arose before her, clad in all the glories which her fancy, chilled by education and years, could supply, it was but to vanish in the gloom of the remembrance of him with whom she dared not hope to share its blessedness. This at least was how Falconer afterwards interpreted the sudden changes from gladness to gloom which he saw at such times on her countenance.

But while such a small portion of the universe of thought was enlightened by the glowworm lamp of the theories she had been taught, she was not limited for light to that feeble source. While she walked on her way, the moon, unseen herself behind the clouds, was illuminating the whole landscape so gently and evenly, that the glowworm being the

only visible point of radiance, to it she attributed all the light. But she felt bound to go on believing as she had been taught; for sometimes the most original mind has the strongest sense of law upon it, and will, in default of a better, obey a beggarly one—only till the higher law that swallows it up manifests itself. Obedience was as essential an element of her creed as of that of any purest-minded monk; neither being sufficiently impressed with this: that, while obedience is the law of the kingdom, it is of considerable importance that that which is obeyed should be in very truth the will of God. It is one thing, and a good thing, to do for God's sake that which is not his will: it is another thing, and altogether a better thing—how much better, no words can tell—to do for God's sake that which is his will. Mrs. Falconer's submission and obedience led her to accept as the will of God, lest she should be guilty of opposition to him, that which it was anything but giving him honour to accept as such. Therefore her love to God was too like the love of the slave or the dog; too little like the love of the child, with whose obedience the Father cannot be satisfied until he cares for his reason as the highest form of his will. True, the child who most faithfully desires to know the inward will or reason of the Father, will be the most ready to obey without it; only for this obedience it is essential that the apparent command at least be such as he can suppose attributable to the Father. Of his own self he is bound to judge what is right, as the Lord said. Had Abraham doubted whether it was in any case right to slay his son, he would have been justified in doubting whether God really required it of him, and would have been bound to delay action until the arrival of more light. True, the will of God can never be other than good; but I doubt if any man can ever be sure that a thing is the will of God, save by seeing into its nature and character, and beholding its goodness. Whatever God does must be right,

but are we sure that we know what he does? That which men say he does may be very wrong indeed.

This burden she in her turn laid upon Robert—not unkindly, but as needful for his training towards well-being. Her way with him was shaped after that which she recognized as God's way with her. "Speir[ask about, enquire] nae[no, not] questons, but gang[go] an' du[do] as ye're tellt." And it was anything but a bad lesson for the boy. It was one of the best he could have had—that of authority. It is a grand thing to obey without asking questions, so long as there is nothing evil in what is commanded. Only grannie concealed her reasons without reason; and God *makes* no secrets. Hence she seemed more stern and less sympathetic than she really was.

She sat with her feet on the little wooden stool, and Robert sat beside her staring into the fire, till they heard the outer door open, and Shargar and Betty come in from church.

Chapter 13 - Robert's Mother

Early on the following morning, while Mrs. Falconer, Robert, and Shargar were at breakfast, Mr. Lammie came. He had delayed communicating the intelligence he had received till he should be more certain of its truth. Older than Andrew, he had been a great friend of his father, and likewise of some of Mrs. Falconer's own family. Therefore he was received with a kindly welcome. But there was a cloud on his brow which in a moment revealed that his errand was not a pleasant one.

"I haena seen ye for a lang[long] time, Mr. Lammie. Gae butt the hoose[into the house (kitchen)], lads. Or I'm thinkin' it maun[must, have to] be schule-time. Sit ye doon, Mr. Lammie, and lat's[let's] hear yer news."

"I cam frae[from] Aberdeen last nicht, Mistress Faukner," he began.

"Ye haena been hame[home] sin'[since] syne[then]?" she rejoined.

"Na. I sleepit at The Boar's Heid."

"What for did ye that? What gart[caused, compelled] ye be at that expense, whan[when] ye kent[known, knew] I had a bed i' the ga'le-room[room in the gable of a house]?"

"Weel, ye see, they're auld frien's o' mine, and I like to gang[go] to them whan[when] I'm i' the gait[way] o' 't."

"Weel, they're a fine faimily, the Miss Napers. And, I wat[know, assure], sin'[since] they maun[must, have to] sell drink, they du[do] 't wi' discretion. That's weel kent[known, knew]."

Possibly Mr. Lammie, remembering what then occurred, may have thought the discretion a little in excess of the drink, but he had other matters to occupy him now. For a few moments both were silent.

“There’s been some ill news, they tell me, Mrs. Faukner,” he said at length, when the silence had grown painful.

“Humph!” returned the old lady, her face becoming stony with the effort to suppress all emotion. “Nae[no, not] aboot Anerew[Andrew]?”

“’Deed is ’t, mem. An’ ill news, I’m sorry to say.”

“Is he ta’en[taken, seized]?”

“Ay[yes, indeed] is he—by a jyler[jailer] that winna[will not] tyne[lose, get lost] the grup[grip, grasp].”

“He’s no deid, John Lammie? Dinna say ’t.”

“I maun[must, have to] say ’t, Mrs. Faukner. I had it frae[from] Dr. Anderson, yer ain[own] cousin. He hintit[hinted] at it afore, but his last letter leaves nae[no, not] room to doobt[suspect] upo’ the subjeck. I’m unco[very] sorry to be the beirer[bearer] o’ sic[such] ill news, Mrs. Faukner, but I had nae[no, not] chice[choice].”

“Ohone! Ohone! the day o’ grace is by at last! My puir[poor] Anerew!” exclaimed Mrs. Falconer, and sat dumb thereafter.

Mr. Lammie tried to comfort her with some of the usual comfortless commonplaces. She neither wept nor replied, but sat with stony face staring into her lap, till, seeing that she was as one that heareth not, he rose and left her alone with her grief. A few minutes after he was gone, she rang the bell, and told Betty in her usual voice to send Robert to her.

“He’s gane[gone] to the schule, mem.”

“Rin[run] efter[after] him, an’ tell him to come hame[home].”

When Robert appeared, wondering what his grandmother could want with him, she said:

“Close the door, Robert. I canna lat[let, allow] ye gang[go] to the schule the day. We maun[must, have to] lea’[leave] him oot[out] noo[now].”

"Lea'leave wha ootout, grannie?"

"Him, him—Anerew. Yer father, laddie. I think my hertheart 'llwill brakbreak."

"Lea'leave him ootout o' what, grannie? I dinna unnerstan' ye."

"Lea'leave him ootout o' oor prayers, laddie, and I canna bide it."

"What for that?"

"He's deid."

"Are ye sure?"

"Ayyes, indeed, owerover sure—owerover sure, laddie."

"Weel, I dinna believe 't."

"What for that?"

"'Cause I winnawill not believe 't. I'm no bundbound to believe 't, am I?"

"What's the gude o' that? What for no believe 't? Dr. Anderson's sent hamehome word o' 't to John Lammie. Och honealas! Och honealas!"

"I tell ye I winnawill not believe 't, grannie, 'cep'except, but God himsel' tells me. As langlong 's I dinna believe 'at he's deid, I can keep him i' my prayers. I'm no gaein' to lea'leave him ootout, I tell ye, grannie."

"Weel, laddie, I canna argue wi' ye. I hae naeno, not hertheart til 't. I doobtsuspect I maunmust, have to greitcry, weep! Come awa'away."

She took him by the hand and rose, then let him go again, saying,

"Snecklatch the door, laddie."

Robert bolted the door, and his grandmother again taking his hand, led him to the usual corner. There they knelt down together, and the old woman's prayer was one great and bitter cry for submission to the divine will. She rose a little strengthened, if not comforted, saying,

“Ye maun[must, have to] pray yer lane[on your own], laddie. But oh be a guid lad, for ye’re a’ that I hae left; and gin[if] ye gang[go] wrang[wrong, injured] tu[too, also], ye’ll bring doon my gray hairs wi’ sorrow to the grave. They’re gray eneuch[enough], and they’re near eneuch[enough] to the grave, but gin[if] ye turn oot[out] weel, I’ll maybe haud[hold, keep] up my heid[head] a bit yet. But O Anerew! my son! my son! Would God I had died for thee!”

And the words of her brother in grief, the king of Israel, opened the floodgates of her heart, and she wept. Robert left her weeping, and closed the door quietly as if his dead father had been lying in the room.

He took his way up to his own garret, closed that door too, and sat down upon the floor, with his back against the empty bedstead.

There were no more castles to build now. It was all very well to say that he would not believe the news and would pray for his father, but he did believe them—enough at least to spoil the praying. His favourite employment, seated there, had hitherto been to imagine how he would grow a great man, and set out to seek his father, and find him, and stand by him, and be his son and servant. Oh! to have the man stroke his head and pat his cheek, and love him! One moment he imagined himself his indignant defender, the next he would be climbing on his knee, as if he were still a little child, and laying his head on his shoulder. For he had had no fondling his life long, and his heart yearned for it. But all this was gone now. A dreary time lay before him, with nobody to please, nobody to serve; with nobody to praise him. Grannie never praised him. She must have thought praise something wicked. And his father was in misery, for ever and ever! Only somehow that thought was not quite thinkable. It was more the vanishing of hope from his own life than a sense of his father’s fate that oppressed him.

He cast his eyes, as in a hungry despair, around the empty room—or, rather, I should have said, in that faintness which makes food at once essential and loathsome; for despair has no proper hunger in it. The room seemed as empty as his life. There was nothing for his eyes to rest upon but those bundles and bundles of dust-browned papers on the shelves before him. What were they all about? He understood that they were his father's: now that he was dead, it would be no sacrilege to look at them. Nobody cared about them. He would see at least what they were. It would be something to do in this dreariness.

Bills and receipts, and everything ephemeral—to feel the interest of which, a man must be a poet indeed—was all that met his view. Bundle after bundle he tried, with no better success. But as he drew near the middle of the second shelf, upon which they lay several rows deep, he saw something dark behind, hurriedly displaced the packets between, and drew forth a small workbox. His heart beat like that of the prince in the fairy-tale, when he comes to the door of the Sleeping Beauty. This at least must have been hers. It was a common little thing, probably a childish possession, and kept to hold trifles worth more than they looked to be. He opened it with bated breath. The first thing he saw was a half-finished reel of cotton—a *pirn*[reel, bobbin (of thread)], he called it. Beside it was a gold thimble. He lifted the tray. A lovely face in miniature, with dark hair and blue eyes, lay looking earnestly upward. At the lid of this coffin those eyes had looked for so many years! The picture was set all round with pearls in an oval ring. How Robert knew them to be pearls he could not tell, for he did not know that he had ever seen any pearls before, but he knew they were pearls, and that pearls had something to do with the New Jerusalem. But the sadness of it all at length overpowered him, and

he burst out crying. For it was awfully sad that his mother's portrait should be in his own mother's box.

He took a bit of red tape off a bundle of the papers, put it through the eye of the setting, and hung the picture round his neck, inside his clothes, for grannie must not see it. She would take that away as she had taken his fiddle. He had a nameless something now for which he had been longing for years.

Looking again in the box, he found a little bit of paper, discoloured with antiquity, as it seemed to him, though it was not so old as himself. Unfolding it he found written upon it a well-known hymn, and at the bottom of the hymn, the words: "O Lord! my heart is very sore."—The treasure upon Robert's bosom was no longer the symbol of a mother's love, but of a woman's sadness, which he could not reach to comfort. In that hour, the boy made a great stride towards manhood. Doubtless his mother's grief had been the same as grannie's—the fear that she would lose her husband for ever. The hourly fresh griefs from neglect and wrong did not occur to him; only the *never never more*. He looked no farther, took the portrait from his neck and replaced it with the paper, put the box back, and walled it up in solitude once more with the dusty bundles. Then he went down to his grandmother, sadder and more desolate than ever.

He found her seated in her usual place. Her New Testament, a large-print octavo, lay on the table beside her unopened; for where within those boards could she find comfort for a grief like hers? That it was the will of God might well comfort any suffering of her own, but would it comfort Andrew? and if there was no comfort for Andrew, how was Andrew's mother to be comforted?

Yet God had given his first-born to save his brethren: how could he be pleased that she should dry her tears and be comforted? True, some awful unknown force of a necessity with which God could not cope came in to explain it; but this did not make God more kind, for he knew it all every time he made a man; nor man less sorrowful, for God would have his very mother forget him, or, worse still, remember him and be happy.

"Read a chapter till me, laddie," she said.

Robert opened and read till he came to the words: "I pray not for the world."

"He was o' the world," said the old woman; "and gin[if] Christ wadna pray for him, what for suld[should] I?"

Already, so soon after her son's death, would her theology begin to harden her heart. The strife which results from believing that the higher love demands the suppression of the lower, is the most fearful of all discords, the absolute love slaying love—the house divided against itself; one moment all given up for the will of Him, the next the human tenderness rushing back in a flood. Mrs. Falconer burst into a very agony of weeping. From that day, for many years, the name of her lost Andrew never passed her lips in the hearing of her grandson, and certainly in that of no one else.

But in a few weeks she was more cheerful. It is one of the mysteries of humanity that mothers in her circumstances, and holding her creed, do regain not merely the faculty of going on with the business of life, but, in most cases, even cheerfulness. The infinite Truth, the Love of the universe, supports them beyond their consciousness, coming to them like sleep from the roots of their being, and having nothing to do with their opinions or beliefs. And hence spring those comforting subterfuges of hope to which they all fly. Not being able to trust the Father entirely,

they yet say: “Who can tell what took place at the last moment? Who can tell whether God did not please to grant them saving faith at the eleventh hour?”—that so they might pass from the very gates of hell, the only place for which their life had fitted them, into the bosom of love and purity! This God could do for all: this for the son beloved of his mother perhaps he might do!

O rebellious mother heart! dearer to God than that which beats laboriously solemn under Genevan gown or Lutheran surplice! if thou wouldst read by thine own large light, instead of the glimmer from the phosphorescent brains of theologians, thou mightst even be able to understand such a simple word as that of the Saviour, when, wishing his disciples to know that he had a nearer regard for them as his brethren in holier danger, than those who had not yet partaken of his light, and therefore praying for them not merely as human beings, but as the human beings they were, he said to his Father in their hearing: “I pray not for the world, but for them,”—not for the world now, but for them—a meaningless utterance, if he never prayed for the world; a word of small meaning, if it was not his very wont and custom to pray for the world—for men as men. Lord Christ! not alone from the pains of hell, or of conscience—not alone from the outer darkness of self and all that is mean and poor and low, do we fly to thee; but from the anger that arises within us at the wretched words spoken in thy name, at the degradation of thee and of thy Father in the mouths of those that claim especially to have found thee, do we seek thy feet. Pray thou for them also, for they know not what they do.

Chapter 14 - Mary St. John

After this, day followed day in calm, dull progress. Robert did not care for the games through which his school-fellows forgot the little they had to forget, and had therefore few in any sense his companions. So he passed his time out of school in the society of his grandmother and Shargar, except that spent in the garret, and the few hours a week occupied by the lessons of the shoemaker. For he went on, though half-heartedly, with those lessons, given now upon Sandy's redeemed violin which he called his *old wife*, and made a little progress even, as we sometimes do when we least think it.

He took more and more to brooding in the garret; and as more questions presented themselves for solution, he became more anxious to arrive at the solution, and more uneasy as he failed in satisfying himself that he had arrived at it; so that his brain, which needed quiet for the true formation of its substance, as a cooling liquefaction or an evaporating solution for the just formation of its crystals, became in danger of settling into an abnormal arrangement of the cellular deposits.

I believe that even the new-born infant is, in some of his moods, already grappling with the deepest metaphysical problems, in forms infinitely too rudimental for the understanding of the grown philosopher —as far, in fact, removed from his ken on the one side, that of intelligential beginning, the germinal subjective, as his abstrusest speculations are from the final solutions of absolute entity on the other. If this be the case, it is no wonder that at Robert's age the deepest questions of his coming manhood should be in active operation, although so surrounded with the yoke of common belief and the shell of

accredited authority, that the embryo faith, which in minds like his always takes the form of doubt, could not be defined any more than its existence could be disproved. I have given a hint at the tendency of his mind already, in the fact that one of the most definite inquiries to which he had yet turned his thoughts was, whether God would have mercy upon a repentant devil. An ordinary puzzle had been—if his father were to marry again, and it should turn out after all that his mother was not dead, what was his father to do? But this was over now. A third was, why, when he came out of church, sunshine always made him miserable, and he felt better able to be good when it rained or snowed hard. I might mention the inquiry whether it was not possible somehow to elude the omniscience of God; but that is a common question with thoughtful children, and indicates little that is characteristic of the individual. That he puzzled himself about the perpetual motion may pass for little likewise; but one thing which is worth mentioning, for indeed it caused him considerable distress, was, that in reading the *Paradise Lost* he could not help sympathizing with Satan, and feeling—I do not say thinking—that the Almighty was pompous, scarcely reasonable, and somewhat revengeful.

He was recognized amongst his school-fellows as remarkable for his love of fair-play; so much so, that he was their constant referee. Add to this that, notwithstanding his sympathy with Satan, he almost invariably sided with his master, in regard of any angry reflection or seditious movement, and even when unjustly punished himself, the occasional result of a certain backwardness in self-defence, never showed any resentment—a most improbable statement, I admit, but nevertheless true—and I think the rest of his character may be left to the gradual dawn of its historical manifestation.

He had long ere this discovered who the angel was that had appeared to him at the top of the stair upon that memorable night; but he could hardly yet say that he had seen her; for, except one dim glimpse he had had of her at the window as he passed in the street, she had not appeared to him save in the vision of that night. During the whole winter she scarcely left the house, partly from the state of her health, affected by the sudden change to a northern climate, partly from the attention required by her aunt, to aid in nursing whom she had left the warmer south. Indeed, it was only to return the visits of a few of Mrs. Forsyth's chosen, that she had crossed the threshold at all; and those visits were paid at a time when all such half-grown inhabitants as Robert were gathered under the leathery wing of Mr. Innes.

But long before the winter was over, Rothieden had discovered that the stranger, the English lady, Mary St. John, outlandish, almost heathenish as her lovely name sounded in its ears, had a power as altogether strange and new as her name. For she was not only an admirable performer on the pianoforte, but such a simple enthusiast in music, that the man must have had no music or little heart in him in whom her playing did not move all that there was of the deepest.

Occasionally there would be quite a small crowd gathered at night by the window of Mrs. Forsyth's drawing-room, which was on the ground-floor, listening to music such as had never before been heard in Rothieden. More than once, when Robert had not found Sandy Elshender at home on the lesson-night, and had gone to seek him, he had discovered him lying in wait, like a fowler, to catch the sweet sounds that flew from the opened cage of her instrument. He leaned against the wall with his ear laid over the edge, and as near the window as he dared to put it, his rough face, gnarled and blotched, and hirsute with the

stubble of neglected beard—his whole ursine face transfigured by the passage of the sweet sounds through his chaotic brain, which they swept like the wind of God, when of old it moved on the face of the waters that clothed the void and formless world.

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue!" he would say in a hoarse whisper, when Robert sought to attract his attention; "haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, man, and hearken. Gin[if] yon bonny leddy[lady] 'at yer grannie keeps lockit up i' the aumry[cupboard, pantry] war[were] to tak to the piano, that's jist hoo[how] she wad[would] play. Lord, man! Pit[put, make] yer sowl[soul] i' yer lugs[ears], an' hearken."

The soutar[cobbler] was all wrong in this; for if old Mr. Falconer's violin had taken woman-shape, it would have been that of a slight, worn, swarthy creature, with wild black eyes, great and restless, a voice like a bird's, and thin fingers that clawed the music out of the wires like the quills of the old harpsichord; not that of Mary St. John, who was tall, and could not help being stately, was large and well-fashioned, as full of repose as Handel's music, with a contralto voice to make you weep, and eyes that would have seemed but for their maidenliness to be always ready to fold you in their lucid gray depths.

Robert stared at the soutar[cobbler], doubting at first whether he had not been drinking. But the intoxication of music produces such a different expression from that of drink, that Robert saw at once that if he had indeed been drinking, at least the music had got above the drink. As long as the playing went on, Elshender was not to be moved from the window.

But to many of the people of Rothieden the music did not recommend the musician; for every sort of music, except the most unmusical of psalm-singing, was in their minds of a piece with "dancin' an' play-actin', an' ither[other; further] warldly vainities an' abominations." And Robert,

being as yet more capable of melody than harmony, grudged to lose a lesson on Sandy's "auld wife o' a fiddle" for any amount of Miss St. John's playing.

Chapter 15 - Eric Ericson

One gusty evening—it was of the last day in March—Robert well remembered both the date and the day—a bleak wind was driving up the long street of the town, and Robert was standing looking out of one of the windows in the gable-room. The evening was closing into night. He hardly knew how he came to be there, but when he thought about it he found it was play-Wednesday, and that he had been all the half-holiday trying one thing after another to interest himself withhal, but in vain. He knew nothing about east winds; but not the less did this dreary wind of the dreary March world prove itself upon his soul. For such a wind has a shadow wind along with it, that blows in the minds of men. There was nothing genial, no growth in it. It killed, and killed most dogmatically. But it is an ill wind that blows nobody good. Even an east wind must bear some blessing on its ugly wings. And as Robert looked down from the gable, the wind was blowing up the street before it half-a-dozen footfaring students from Aberdeen, on their way home at the close of the session, probably to the farm-labours of the spring.

This was a glad sight, as that of the returning storks in Denmark. Robert knew where they would put up, sought his cap, and went out. His grandmother never objected to his going to see Miss Napier; it was in her house that the weary men would this night rest.

It was not without reason that Lord Rothie had teased his hostess about receiving foot-passengers, for to such it was her invariable custom to make some civil excuse, sending Meg or Peggy to show them over the way to the hostelry next in rank, a proceeding recognized by the inferior hostess as both just and friendly, for the good woman never thought of

measuring The Star against The Boar's Head. More than one comical story had been the result of this law of The Boar's Head, unalterable almost as that of the Medes and Persians. I say *almost*, for to one class of the footfaring community the official ice about the hearts of the three women did thaw, yielding passage to a full river of hospitality and generosity; and that was the class to which these wayfarers belonged.

Well may Scotland rejoice in her universities, for whatever may be said against their system—I have no complaint to make—they are divine in their freedom: men who follow the plough in the spring and reap the harvest in the autumn, may, and often do, frequent their sacred precincts when the winter comes—so fierce, yet so welcome—so severe, yet so blessed—opening for them the doors to yet harder toil and yet poorer fare. I fear, however, that of such there will be fewer and fewer, seeing one class which supplied a portion of them has almost vanished from the country—that class which was its truest, simplest, and noblest strength—that class which at one time rendered it something far other than ridicule to say that Scotland was pre-eminently a God-fearing nation—I mean the class of cottars[farm tenants, cottagers].

Of this class were some of the footfaring company. But there were others of more means than the men of this lowly origin, who either could not afford to travel by the expensive coaches, or could find none to accommodate them. Possibly some preferred to walk. However this may have been, the various groups which at the beginning and close of the session passed through Rothieden weary and footsore, were sure of a hearty welcome at The Boar's Head. And much the men needed it. Some of them would have walked between one and two hundred miles before completing their journey.

Robert made a circuit, and, fleet of foot, was in Miss Napier's parlour before the travellers made their appearance on the square. When they knocked at the door, Miss Letty herself went and opened it.

"Can ye tak 's in, mem?" was on the lips of their spokesman, but Miss Letty had the first word.

"Come in, come in, gentlemen. This is the first o' ye, and ye're the mair[more] welcome. It's like seein' the first o' the swallows. An' sic[such] a day as ye hae had for yer lang[long] traivel!" she went on, leading the way to her sister's parlour, and followed by all the students, of whom the one that came hindmost was the most remarkable of the group—at the same time the most weary and downcast.

Miss Napier gave them a similar welcome, shaking hands with every one of them. She knew them all but the last. To him she involuntarily showed a more formal respect, partly from his appearance, and partly that she had never seen him before. The whisky-bottle was brought out, and all partook, save still the last. Miss Lizzie went to order their supper.

"Noo[now], gentlemen," said Miss Letty, "wad[would] ony[any] o' ye like to gang[go] an' change yer hose, and pit[put, make] on a pair o' slippers?"

Several declined, saying they would wait until they had had their supper; the roads had been quite dry, &c., &c. One said he would, and another said his feet were blistered.

"Hoot awa!'[Tut! (sympathy)]" exclaimed Miss Letty.—"Here, Peggy!" she cried, going to the door; "tak a pail o' het[hot] watter[water] up to the chackit[checkered] room. Jist ye gang[go] up, Mr. Cameron, and Peggy 'll see to yer feet.—noo[now], sir, will *ye* gang[go] to yer room an' mak[make, do] yersel' comfortable?—jist as gin[if] ye war[were] at hame[home], for sae ye are."

She addressed the stranger thus. He replied in a low indifferent tone,

“No, thank you; I must be off again directly.”

He was from Caithness, and talked no Scotch.

“’Deed, sir, ye’ll do naething o’ the kin’[kind]. Here ye s’ bide, tho’ I suld[should] lock the door.”

“Come, come, Ericson, none o’ your nonsense!” said one of his fellows. “Ye ken yer feet are sae blistered ye can hardly put ane[one] by the ither[other].—It was a’ we cud[could] du[do], mem, to get him alang[along] the last mile.”

“That s’ be my business, than,” concluded Miss Letty.

She left the room, and returning in a few minutes, said, as a matter of course, but with authority,

“Mr. Ericson, ye maun[must, have to] come wi’ me.”

Then she hesitated a little. Was it maidenliness in the waning woman of five-and-forty? It was, I believe; for how can a woman always remember how old she is? If ever there was a young soul in God’s world, it was Letty Napier. And the young man was tall and stately as a Scandinavian chief, with a look of command, tempered with patient endurance, in his eagle face, for he was more like an eagle than any other creature, and in his countenance signs of suffering. Miss Letty seeing this, was moved, and her heart swelled, and she grew conscious and shy, and turning to Robert, said,

“Come up the stair wi’ ’s, Robert; I may want ye.”

Robert jumped to his feet. His heart too had been yearning towards the stranger.

As if yielding to the inevitable, Ericson rose and followed Miss Letty. But when they had reached the room, and the door was shut behind them, and Miss Letty pointed to a chair beside which stood a little

wooden tub full of hot water, saying, “Sit ye doon there, Mr. Ericson,” he drew himself up, all but his graciously-bowed head, and said,

“Ma’am, I must tell you that I followed the rest in here from the very stupidity of weariness. I have not a shilling in my pocket.”

“God bless me!” said Miss Letty—and God did bless her, I am sure —“we maun[must, have to] see to the feet first. What wad[would] ye du[do] wi’ a shillin’ gin[if] ye had it? Wad[would] ye clap ane[one] upo’ ilka[every] blister?”

Ericson burst out laughing, and sat down. But still he hesitated.

“Aff[off, away, past] wi’ yer shune[shoes], sir. Duv[do] ye think I can wash yer feet throu ben’ leather[thick leather for soling boots/shoes]?” said Miss Letty, not disdaining to advance her fingers to a shoe-tie.

“But I’m ashamed. My stockings are all in holes.”

“Weel, ye s’ get a clean pair to put on the morn[tomorrow], an’ I’ll darn them ’at ye hae on, gin[if] they be worth darnin’, afore ye gang[go]—an’ what are ye sae camstairie[unmanageable, wild] for? A body wad[would] think ye had a clo’en[cloven] fit[foot] in ilk[every] ane[one] o’ thae[those, these] bits o’ shune[shoes] o’ yours. I winna[will not] promise to please yer mither wi’ my darnin’ though.”

“I have no mother to find fault with it,” said Ericson.

“Weel, a sister’s waur[worse].”

“I have no sister, either.”

This was too much for Miss Letty. She could keep up the bravado of humour no longer. She fairly burst out crying. In a moment more the shoes and stockings were off, and the blisters in the hot water. Miss Letty’s tears dropped into the tub, and the salt in them did not hurt the feet with which she busied herself, more than was necessary, to hide them.

But no sooner had she recovered herself than she resumed her former tone.

"A shillin'! said ye? An' a' thae[those, these] greedy gleds[kites, buzzards] o' professors to pay, that live upo' the verra[very] blude[blood] and banes[bones] o' sair-vroucht[hard-worked] students! Hoo[how] cud[could] ye hae a shillin' ower[over]? Troth[truth, indeed], it's nae[no, not] wonner[wonder, marvel] ye haena ane[one] left. An' a' the merchan's there jist leevin'[living, living being] upo' ye! Lord hae a care o' 's! Sic[such] bonnie feet!—Wi' blisters I mean. I never saw sic[such] a sicht o' raw puddin's in my life. Ye're no fit to come doon the stair again."

All the time she was tenderly washing and bathing the weary feet. When she had dressed them and tied them up, she took the tub of water and carried it away, but turned at the door.

"Ye'll jist mak[make, do] up yer min'[mind] to bide a twa three[several] days," she said; "for thae[those, these] feet cudna bide to be carried, no to say to carry a weicht like you. There's naebody to luik[look] for ye, ye ken. An' ye're no to come doon the nicht[tonight]. I'll sen' up yer supper. And Robert there 'll bide and keep ye company."

She vanished; and a moment after, Peggy appeared with a *salamander* —that is a huge poker, ending not in a point, but a red-hot ace of spades —which she thrust between the bars of the grate, into the heart of a nest of brushwood. Presently a cheerful fire illuminated the room.

Ericson was seated on one chair, with his feet on another, his head sunk on his bosom, and his eyes thinking. There was something about him almost as powerfully attractive to Robert as it had been to Miss Letty. So he sat gazing at him, and longing for a chance of doing something for him. He had reverence already, and some love, but he had never felt at all as he felt towards this man. Nor was it as the Chinese puzzlers called Scotch metaphysicians, might have represented it—a

combination of love and reverence. It was the recognition of the eternal brotherhood between him and one nobler than himself—hence a lovely eager worship.

Seeing Ericson look about him as if he wanted something, Robert started to his feet.

"Is there onything ye want, Mr. Ericson?" he said, with service standing in his eyes.

"A small bundle I think I brought up with me," replied the youth.

It was not there. Robert rushed down-stairs, and returned with it—a nightshirt and a hairbrush or so, tied up in a blue cotton handkerchief. This was all that Robert was able to do for Ericson that evening.

He went home and dreamed about him. He called at The Boar's Head the next morning before going to school, but Ericson was not yet up. When he called again as soon as morning school was over, he found that they had persuaded him to keep his bed, but Miss Letty took him up to his room. He looked better, was pleased to see Robert, and spoke to him kindly. Twice yet Robert called to inquire after him that day, and once more he saw him, for he took his tea up to him.

The next day Ericson was much better, received Robert with a smile, and went out with him for a stroll, for all his companions were gone, and of some students who had arrived since he did not know any. Robert took him to his grandmother, who received him with stately kindness. Then they went out again, and passed the windows of Captain Forsyth's house. Mary St. John was playing. They stood for a moment, almost involuntarily, to listen. She ceased.

"That's the music of the spheres," said Ericson, in a low voice, as they moved on.

“Will you tell me what that means?” asked Robert. “I’ve come upon ’t ower[over] an’ ower[over] in Milton.”

Thereupon Ericson explained to him what Pythagoras had taught about the stars moving in their great orbits with sounds of awful harmony, too grandly loud for the human organ to vibrate in response to their music—hence unheard of men. And Ericson spoke as if he believed it. But after he had spoken, his face grew sadder than ever; and, as if to change the subject, he said, abruptly,

“What a fine old lady your grandmother is, Robert!”

“Is she?” returned Robert.

“I don’t mean to say she’s like Miss Letty,” said Ericson. *“She’s* an angel!”

A long pause followed. Robert’s thoughts went roaming in their usual haunts.

“Do you think, Mr. Ericson,” he said, at length, taking up the old question still floating unanswered in his mind, “do you think if a devil was to repent God would forgive him?”

Ericson turned and looked at him. Their eyes met. The youth wondered at the boy. He had recognized in him a younger brother, one who had begun to ask questions, calling them out into the deaf and dumb abyss of the universe.

“If God was as good as I would like him to be, the devils themselves would repent,” he said, turning away.

Then he turned again, and looking down upon Robert like a sorrowful eagle from a crag over its *harried* nest, said,

“If I only knew that God was as good as—that woman, I should die content.”

Robert heard words of blasphemy from the mouth of an angel, but his respect for Ericson compelled a reply.

"What woman, Mr. Ericson?" he asked.

"I mean Miss Letty, of course."

"But surely ye dinna think God's nae[no, not] as guid as she is? Surely he's as good as he can be. He *is* good, ye ken."

"Oh, yes. They *say* so. And then they tell you something about him that isn't good, and go on calling him good all the same. But calling anybody good doesn't make him good, you know."

"Then ye dinna believe 'at God *is* good, Mr. Ericson?" said Robert, choking with a strange mingling of horror and hope.

"I didn't say that, my boy. But to know that God was good, and fair, and kind—heartily, I mean, not half-ways, and with *ifs* and *buts*—my boy, there would be nothing left to be miserable about."

In a momentary flash of thought, Robert wondered whether this might not be his old friend, the repentant angel, sent to earth as a man, that he might have a share in the redemption, and work out his own salvation. And from this very moment the thoughts about God that had hitherto been moving in formless solution in his mind began slowly to crystallize.

The next day, Eric Ericson, not without a *piece*[slice of bread] *in ae pouch* and money in another, took his way home, if home it could be called where neither father, mother, brother, nor sister awaited his return. For a season Robert saw him no more.

As often as his name was mentioned, Miss Letty's eyes would grow hazy, and as often she would make some comical remark.

"Puir[poor] fallow[fellow, chap]!" she would say, "he was ower[over] lang-leggit for this warld[world]."

Or again:

“Ay[yes, indeed], he was a braw[beautiful, fine] chield[child, young person]. But he canna live. His feet’s ower[over] sma’[small, little].”

Or yet again:

“Saw ye ever sic[such] a gowk[fool, blockhead], to mak[make, do] sic[such] a wark[work, show] aboot sittin’ doon an’ haein’ his feet washed, as gin[if] that cost a body onything!”

Chapter 16 - Mr. Lammie's Farm

One of the first warm mornings in the beginning of summer, the boy woke early, and lay awake, as was his custom, thinking. The sun, in all the indescribable purity of its morning light, had kindled a spot of brilliance just about where his grannie's head must be lying asleep in its sad thoughts, on the opposite side of the partition.

He lay looking at the light. There came a gentle tapping at his window. A long streamer of honeysuckle, not yet in blossom, but alive with the life of the summer, was blown by the air of the morning against his window-pane, as if calling him to get up and look out. He did get up and look out.

But he started back in such haste that he fell against the side of his bed. Within a few yards of his window, bending over a bush, was the loveliest face he had ever seen—the only face, in fact, he had ever yet felt to be beautiful. For the window looked directly into the garden of the next house: its honeysuckle tapped at his window, its sweet-peas grew against his window-sill. It was the face of the angel of that night; but how different when illuminated by the morning sun from then, when lighted up by a chamber-candle! The first thought that came to him was the half-ludicrous, all-fantastic idea of the shoemaker about his grandfather's violin being a woman. A vaguest dream-vision of her having escaped from his grandmother's aumrie[cupboard, pantry], and wandering free amidst the wind and among the flowers, crossed his mind before he had recovered sufficiently from his surprise to prevent Fancy from cutting any more of those too ridiculous capers in which she indulged at will in sleep, and as often besides as she can get away from the spectacles of old Grannie Judgment.

But the music of her revelation was not that of the violin; and Robert vaguely felt this, though he searched no further for a fitting instrument to represent her. If he had heard the organ indeed!—but he knew no instrument save the violin: the piano he had only heard through the window. For a few moments her face brooded over the bush, and her long, finely-modelled fingers travelled about it as if they were creating a flower upon it—probably they were assisting the birth or blowing of some beauty—and then she raised herself with a lingering look, and vanished from the field of the window.

But ever after this, when the evening grew dark, Robert would steal out of the house, leaving his book open by his grannie's lamp, that its patient expansion might seem to say, "He will come back presently," and dart round the corner with quick quiet step, to hear if Miss St. John was playing. If she was not, he would return to the Sabbath stillness of the parlour, where his grandmother sat meditating or reading, and Shargar sat brooding over the freedom of the old days ere Mrs. Falconer had begun to reclaim him. There he would seat himself once more at his book —to rise again ere another hour had gone by, and hearken yet again at her window whether the stream might not be flowing now. If he found her at her instrument he would stand listening in earnest delight, until the fear of being missed drove him in: this secret too might be discovered, and this enchantress too sent, by the decree of his grandmother, into the limbo of vanities. Thus strangely did his evening life oscillate between the two peaceful negations of grannie's parlour and the vital gladness of the unknown lady's window. And skilfully did he manage his retreats and returns, curtailing his absences with such moderation that, for a long time, they awoke no suspicion in the mind of his grandmother.

I suspect myself that the old lady thought he had gone to his prayers in the garret. And I believe she thought that he was praying for his dead father; with which most papistical, and, therefore, most unchristian observance, she yet dared not interfere, because she expected Robert to defend himself triumphantly with the simple assertion that he did not believe his father was dead. Possibly the mother was not sorry that her poor son should be prayed for, in case he might be alive after all, though she could no longer do so herself—not merely *dared not*, but persuaded herself that she *would not*. Robert, however, was convinced enough, and hopeless enough, by this time, and had even less temptation to break the twentieth commandment by praying for the dead, than his grandmother had; for with all his imaginative outgoings after his father, his love to him was as yet, compared to that father's mother's, "as moonlight unto sunlight, and as water unto wine."

Shargar would glance up at him with a queer look as he came in from these excursions, drop his head over his task again, look busy and miserable, and all would glide on as before.

When the first really summer weather came, Mr. Lammie one day paid Mrs. Falconer a second visit. He had not been able to get over the remembrance of the desolation in which he had left her. But he could do nothing for her, he thought, till it was warm weather. He was accompanied by his daughter, a woman approaching the further verge of youth, bulky and florid, and as full of tenderness as her large frame could hold. After much, and, for a long time, apparently useless persuasion, they at last believed they had prevailed upon her to pay them a visit for a fortnight. But she had only retreated within another of her defences.

"I canna leave thae[those, these] twa laddies alane[alone]. They wad[would] be up to a' mischeef."

“There’s Betty to luik[look] efter[after] them,” suggested Miss Lammie.

“Betty!” returned Mrs. Falconer, with scorn. “Betty’s naething but a bairn hersel’—muckler[bigger, greater] and waur[worse] faured[favoured].”

“But what for shouldna ye fess[fetch, bring] the lads wi’ ye?” suggested Mr. Lammie.

“I hae no richt to burden you wi’ them.”

“Weel, I hae aften[often] wonnert[wondered] what gart[caused, compelled] ye burden yersel’ wi’ that Shargar, as I understan’ they ca’[call] him,” said Mr. Lammie.

“Jist naething but a bit o’ greed,” returned the old lady, with the nearest approach to a smile that had shown itself upon her face since Mr. Lammie’s last visit.

“I dinna understan’ that, Mistress Faukner,” said Miss Lammie.

“I’m sae sure o’ haein’ ’t back again, ye ken,—wi’ interest,” returned Mrs. Falconer.

“Hoo’s[how’s] that? His father winna[will not] con[return] ye ony[any] thanks for haudin’[holding, keeping] him in life.”

“He that giveth to the poor lendeth to the Lord, ye ken, Miss Lammie.”

“Atweel[truely, of course], gin[if] ye like to lippen[trust, depend on] to that bank, nae[no, not] doobt[suspect] ae way or anither it’ll gang[go] to yer accoont,” said Miss Lammie.

“It wad[would] ill become us, ony[any] gait[way],” said her father, “nae[no, not] to gie[give] him shelter for your sake, Mrs. Faukner, no to mention ither[other] names, sin’[since] it’s yer wull[will] to mak[make, do] the puir[poor] lad ane[one] o’ the family.—They say his ain[own] mither’s run awa’[away] an’ left him.”

“’Deed she’s dune[done] that.”

“Can ye mak[make, do] onything o’ ’im?”

"He's douce[gentle, sensible] eneuch[enough]. An' Robert says he does nae[no, not] that ill at the schuil."

"Weel, jist fess[fetch, bring] him wi' ye. We'll hae some place or ither[other] to put him intil[into, within], gin[if] it suld[should] be only a shak'-doon[shakedown, makeshift bed] upo' the flure[floor]."

"Na, na. There's the schuilin'—what's to be dune[done] wi' that?"

"They can gang[go] i' the mornin', and get their denner[dinner] wi' Betty here; and syne[then] come hame[home] to their fower-hoors[four o'clock tea] whan[when] the schule's ower[over] i' the efternune[afternoon]. "Deed, mem, ye maun[must, have to] jist come for the sake o' the auld frien'ship atween the faimilies."

"Weel, gin[if] it maun[must, have to] be sae, it maun[must, have to] be sae," yielded Mrs. Falconer, with a sigh.

She had not left her own house for a single night for ten years. Nor is it likely she would have now given in, for immovableness was one of the most marked of her characteristics, had she not been so broken by mental suffering, that she did not care much about anything, least of all about herself.

Innumerable were the instructions in propriety of behaviour which she gave the boys in prospect of this visit. The probability being that they would behave just as well as at home, these instructions were considerably unnecessary, for Mrs. Falconer was a strict enforcer of all social rules. Scarcely less unnecessary were the directions she gave as to the conduct of Betty, who received them all in erect submission, with her hands under her apron. She ought to have been a young girl instead of an elderly woman, if there was any propriety in the way her mistress spoke to her. It proved at least her own belief in the description she had given of her to Miss Lammie.

"Noo[now], Betty, ye maun[must, have to] be dooce[gentle, sensible]. An' dinna stan'[stand] at the door i' the gloamin'. An' dinna stan'[stand] claikin'[clucking (like a hen); talking much] an' jawin' wi' the ither[other] lasses whan[when] ye gang[go] to the wall[well, spring of water] for watter[water]. An' whan[when] ye gang[go] intil[into, within] a chop[shop, store], dinna hae them sayin' ahint[behind, after] yer back, as sune's[soon as] yer oot[out] again, "She's her ain[own] mistress by way o',' or sic[such] like. An' min'[mind] ye hae worship wi' yersel', whan[when] I'm nae[no, not] here to hae 't wi' ye. Ye can come benn[inside] to the parlour gin[if] ye like. An' there's my muckle[much] Testament. And dinna gie[give] the lads a' thing[everything, anything] they want. Gie[give] them plenty to ait[eat], but no ower[over] muckle[much]. Fowk[folk] suld[should] aye lea'[leave] aff[off, away, past] wi' an eppiteet."

Mr. Lammie brought his gig at last, and took grannie away to Bodyfauld. When the boys returned from school at the dinner-hour, it was to exult in a freedom which Robert had never imagined before. But even he could not know what a relief it was to Shargar to eat without the awfully calm eyes of Mrs. Falconer watching, as it seemed to him, the progress of every mouthful down that capacious throat of his. The old lady would have been shocked to learn how the imagination of the ill-mothered lad interpreted her care over him, but she would not have been surprised to know that the two were merry in her absence. She knew that, in some of her own moods, it would be a relief to think that that awful eye of God was not upon her. But she little thought that even in the lawless proceedings about to follow, her Robert, who now felt such a relief in her absence, would be walking straight on, though blindly, towards a sunrise of faith, in which he would know that for the eye of his God to turn away from him for one moment would be the horror of the outer darkness.

Merriment, however, was not in Robert's thoughts, and still less was mischief. For the latter, whatever his grandmother might think, he had no capacity. The world was already too serious, and was soon to be too beautiful for mischief. After that, it would be too sad, and then, finally, until death, too solemn glad. The moment he heard of his grandmother's intended visit, one wild hope and desire and intent had arisen within him.

When Betty came to the parlour door to lay the cloth for their dinner, she found it locked.

"Open the door!" she cried, but cried in vain. From impatience she passed to passion; but it was of no avail: there came no more response than from the shrine of the deaf Baal. For to the boys it was an opportunity not at any risk to be lost. Dull Betty never suspected what they were about. They were ranging the place like two tiger-cats whose whelps had been carried off in their absence—questing, with nose to earth and tail in air, for the scent of their enemy. My simile has carried me too far: it was only a dead old gentleman's violin that a couple of boys was after—but with what eagerness, and, on the part of Robert, what alternations of hope and fear! And Shargar was always the reflex of Robert, so far as Shargar could reflect Robert. Sometimes Robert would stop, stand still in the middle of the room, cast a mathematical glance of survey over its cubic contents, and then dart off in another inwardly suggested direction of search. Shargar, on the other hand, appeared to rummage blindly without a notion of casting the illumination of thought upon the field of search. Yet to him fell the success. When hope was growing dim, after an hour and a half of vain endeavour, a scream of utter discordance heralded the resurrection of the lady of harmony. Taught by his experience of his wild mother's habits to guess at those of

douce[gentle, sensible] Mrs. Falconer, Shargar had found the instrument in her bed at the foot, between the feathers and the mattress. For one happy moment Shargar was the benefactor, and Robert the grateful recipient of favour. Nor, I do believe, was this thread of the still thickening cable that bound them ever forgotten: broken it could not be.

Robert drew the recovered treasure from its concealment, opened the case with trembling eagerness, and was stooping, with one hand on the neck of the violin, and the other on the bow, to lift them from it, when Shargar stopped him.

His success had given him such dignity, that for once he dared to act from himself.

"Betty 'll hear ye," he said.

"What care I for Betty? She daurna[dare not] tell. I ken hoo[how] to manage her."

"But wadna 't be better 'at she didna ken?"

"She's sure to fin' oot[out] whan[when] she mak's[makes] the bed. She turns 't ower[over] and ower[over] jist like a muckle[much] tyke[dog] worryin' a rottan[rat]."

"De' il a bit[Not a bit] o' her s' be a hair wiser! Ye dinna play tunes upo' the boxie[little box], man."

Robert caught at the idea. He lifted the "bonny leddy" from her coffin; and while he was absorbed in the contemplation of her risen beauty, Shargar laid his hands on Boston's *Four-fold State*, the torment of his life on the Sunday evenings which it was his turn to spend with Mrs. Falconer, and threw it as an offering to the powers of Hades into the case, which he then buried carefully, with the feather-bed for mould[mould, loose earth], the blankets for sod[sad], and the counterpane studiously arranged for stone, over it. He took heed, however, not to let Robert

know of the substitution of Boston for the fiddle, because he knew Robert could not tell a lie. Therefore, when he murmured over the volume some of its own words which he had read the preceding Sunday, it was in a quite inaudible whisper: “Now is it good for nothing but to cumber[encumber] the ground, and furnish fuel for Tophet.”

Robert must now hide the violin better than his grannie had done, while at the same time it was a more delicate necessity, seeing it had lost its shell, and he shrunk from putting her in the power of the shoemaker again. It cost him much trouble to fix on the place that was least unsuitable. First he put it into the well of the clock-case, but instantly bethought him what the awful consequence would be if one of the weights should fall from the gradual decay of its cord. He had heard of such a thing happening. Then he would put it into his own place of dreams and meditations. But what if Betty should take a fancy to change her bed? or some friend of his grannie’s should come to spend the night? How would the bonny leddy[lady] like it? What a risk she would run! If he put her under the bed, the mice would get at her strings—nay, perhaps, knaw a hole right through her beautiful body. On the top of the clock, the brass eagle with outspread wings might scratch her, and there was not space to conceal her. At length he concluded—wrapped her in a piece of paper, and placed her on the top of the chintz tester of his bed, where there was just room between it and the ceiling: that would serve till he bore her to some better sanctuary. In the meantime she was safe, and the boy was the blessedest boy in creation.

These things done, they were just in the humour to have a lark with Betty. So they unbolted the door, rang the bell, and when Betty appeared, red-faced and wrathful, asked her very gravely and politely whether they were not going to have some dinner before they went back

to school: they had now but twenty minutes left. Betty was so *dumfoundered* with their impudence that she could not say a word. She did make haste with the dinner, though, and revealed her indignation only in her manner of putting the things on the table. As the boys left her, Robert contented himself with the single hint:

"Betty, Bodyfauld 's i' the perris[parish] o' Kettledrum. Min'[mind, remember] ye that."

Betty *glowered* and said nothing.

But the delight of the walk of three miles over hill and dale and moor and farm to Mr. Lammie's! The boys, if not as wild as colts—that is, as wild as most boys would have been—were only the more deeply excited. That first summer walk, with a goal before them, in all the freshness of the perfecting year, was something which to remember in after days was to Falconer nothing short of ecstasy. The westering sun threw long shadows before them as they trudged away eastward, lightly laden with the books needful for the morrow's lessons. Once beyond the immediate purlieus of the town and the various plots of land occupied by its inhabitants, they crossed a small river, and entered upon a region of little hills, some covered to the top with trees, chiefly larch, others cultivated, and some bearing only heather, now nursing in secret its purple flame for the outburst of the autumn. The road wound between, now swampy and worn into deep ruts, now sandy and broken with large stones. Down to its edge would come the dwarfed oak, or the mountain ash, or the silver birch, single and small, but lovely and fresh; and now green fields, fenced with walls of earth as green as themselves, or of stones overgrown with moss, would stretch away on both sides, sprinkled with busily-feeding cattle. Now they would pass through a farm-steading, perfumed with the breath of cows, and the odour of

burning peat—so fragrant! though not yet so grateful to the inner sense as it would be when encountered in after years and in foreign lands. For the smell of burning and the smell of earth are the deepest underlying sensuous bonds of the earth's unity, and the common brotherhood of them that dwell thereon. Now the scent of the larches would steal from the hill, or the wind would waft the odour of the white clover, beloved of his grandmother, to Robert's nostrils, and he would turn aside to pull her a handful. Then they clomb[climbed] a high ridge, on the top of which spread a moorland, dreary and desolate, brightened by nothing save "the canna's hoary beard" waving in the wind, and making it look even more desolate from the sympathy they felt with the forsaken grass. This crossed, they descended between young plantations of firs and rowan-trees and birches, till they reached a warm house on the side of the slope, with farm-offices and ricks of corn and hay all about it, the front overgrown with roses and honeysuckle, and a white-flowering plant unseen of their eyes hitherto, and therefore full of mystery. From the open kitchen door came the smell of something good. But beyond all to Robert was the welcome of Miss Lammie, whose small fat hand closed upon his like a very love-pudding, after partaking of which even his grandmother's stately reception, followed immediately by the words "noo[now] be dooce[gentle, sensible]," could not chill the warmth in his bosom.

I know but one writer whose pen would have been able worthily to set forth the delights of the first few days at Bodyfauld—Jean Paul. Nor would he have disdained to make the gladness of a country school-boy the theme of that pen. Indeed, often has he done so. If the writer has any higher purpose than the amusement of other boys, he will find the life of a country boy richer for his ends than that of a town boy. For example, he has a deeper sense of the marvel of Nature, a tenderer feeling of her

feminality. I do not mean that the other cannot develop this sense, but it is generally feeble, and there is consequently less chance of its surviving. As far as my experience goes, town girls and country boys love Nature most. I have known town girls love her as passionately as country boys. Town boys have too many books and pictures. They see Nature in mirrors—invaluable privilege *after they know herself, not before*. They have greater opportunity of observing human nature; but here also *the books* are too many and various. They are cleverer than country boys, but they are less profound; their observation may be quicker; their perception is shallower. They know better what to do on an emergency; they know worse how to order their ways. Of course, in this, as in a thousand other matters, Nature will burst out laughing in the face of the would-be philosopher, and bringing forward her town boy, will say, "Look here!" For the town boys are Nature's boys after all, at least so long as doctrines of self-preservation and ambition have not turned them from children of the kingdom into dirt-worms. But I must stop, for I am getting up to the neck in a bog of discrimination. As if I did not know the nobility of some townspeople, compared with the worldliness of some country folk. I give it up. We are all good and all bad. God mend all. Nothing will do for Jew or Gentile, Frenchman or Englishman, Negro or Circassian, town boy or country boy, but the kingdom of heaven which is within him, and must come thence to the outside of him.

To a boy like Robert the changes of every day, from country to town with the gay morning, from town to country with the sober evening—for country as Rothieden might be to Edinburgh, much more was Bodyfauld country to Rothieden—were a source of boundless delight. Instead of houses, he saw the horizon; instead of streets or walled gardens, he roamed over fields bathed in sunlight and wind. Here it was good to get

up before the sun, for then he could see the sun get up. And of all things those evening shadows lengthening out over the grassy wildernesses—for fields of a very moderate size appeared such to an imagination ever ready at the smallest hint to ascend its solemn throne—were a deepening marvel. Town to country is what a ceiling is to a c-lum.

Chapter 17 - Adventures

Grannie's first action every evening, the moment the boys entered the room, was to glance up at the clock, that she might see whether they had arrived in reasonable time. This was not pleasant, because it admonished Robert how impossible it was for him to have a lesson on his own violin so long as the visit to Bodyfauld lasted. If they had only been allowed to sleep at Rothieden, what a universe of freedom would have been theirs! As it was, he had but two hours to himself, pared at both ends, in the middle of the day. Dooble Sanny might have given him a lesson at that time, but he did not dare to carry his instrument through the streets of Rothieden, for the proceeding would be certain to come to his grandmother's ears. Several days passed indeed before he made up his mind as to how he was to reap any immediate benefit from the recovery of the violin. For after he had made up his mind to run the risk of successive mid-day *solos* in the old factory—he was not prepared to carry the instrument through the streets, or be seen entering the place with it.

But the factory lay at the opposite corner of a quadrangle of gardens, the largest of which belonged to itself; and the corner of this garden touched the corner of Captain Forsyth's, which had formerly belonged to Andrew Falconer: he had had a door made in the walls at the point of junction, so that he could go from his house to his business across his own property: if this door were not locked, and Robert could pass without offence, what a north-west passage it would be for him! The little garden belonging to his grandmother's house had only a slight wooden fence to divide it from the other, and even in this fence there was a little gate: he would only have to run along Captain Forsyth's top walk

to reach the door. The blessed thought came to him as he lay in bed at Bodyfauld: he would attempt the passage the very next day.

With his violin in its paper under his arm, he sped like a hare from gate to door, found it not even latched, only pushed to and rusted into such rest as it was dangerous to the hinges to disturb. He opened it, however, without any accident, and passed through; then closing it behind him, took his way more leisurely through the tangled grass of his grandmother's property. When he reached the factory, he judged it prudent to search out a more secret nook, one more full of silence, that is, whence the sounds would be less certain to reach the ears of the passers by, and came upon a small room, near the top, which had been the manager's bedroom, and which, as he judged from what seemed the signs of ancient occupation, a cloak hanging on the wall, and the ashes of a fire lying in the grate, nobody had entered for years: it was the safest place in the world. He undid his instrument carefully, tuned its strings tenderly, and soon found that his former facility, such as it was, had not ebbed away beyond recovery. Hastening back as he came, he was just in time for his dinner, and narrowly escaped encountering Betty in the transe[passage in a house]. He had been tempted to leave the instrument, but no one could tell what might happen, and to doubt would be to be miserable with anxiety.

He did the same for several days without interruption—not, however, without observation. When, returning from his fourth visit, he opened the door between the gardens, he started back in dismay, for there stood the beautiful lady.

Robert hesitated for a moment whether to fly or speak. He was a Lowland country boy, and therefore rude of speech, but he was three parts a Celt, and those who know the address of the Irish or of the

Highlanders, know how much that involves as to manners and bearing. He advanced the next instant and spoke.

"I beg yer pardon, mem. I thoucht naebody wad[would] see me. I haena dune[done] nae[no, not] ill."

"I had not the least suspicion of it, I assure you," returned Miss St. John. "But, tell me, what makes you go through here always at the same hour with the same parcel under your arm?"

"Ye winna[will not] tell naebody—will ye, mem, gin[if] I tell you?"

Miss St. John, amused, and interested besides in the contrast between the boy's oddly noble face and good bearing on the one hand, and on the other the drawl of his bluntly articulated speech and the coarseness of his tone, both seeming to her in the extreme of provincialism, promised; and Robert, entranced by all the qualities of her voice and speech, and nothing disenchanted by the nearer view of her lovely face, confided in her at once.

"Ye see, mem," he said, "I cam'[came] upo' my grandfather's fiddle. But my grandmither thinks the fiddle's no gude. And sae she tuik[took] and she hed[hid] it. But I faun't[found] it again. An' I daurna[dare not] play i' the hoose[house], though my grannie's i' the country, for Betty hearin' me and tellin' her. And sae I gang[go] to the auld fact'ry there. It belangs to my grannie, and sae does theyaird[garden]. An' this hoose[house] and yaird was ance[once] my father's, and sae he had that door throu, they tell me. An' I thocht[thought] gin[if] it suld[should] be open, it wad[would] be a fine thing for me, to haud[hold, keep] fowk[folk] ohn[without] seen me. But it was verra[very] ill-bred to you, mem, I ken, to come throu your yaird ohn speirt[asked about, enquired] leave. I beg yer pardon, mem, an' I'll jist gang[go] back, and roon'[around, round] by the ro'd[road, way]. This is my fiddle I hae aneath my airm[arm]. We bude[had to] to pit[put, make] back the case o' 't whaur it was afore, i' my

grannie's bed, to haud[hold, keep] her ohn[without] kent[known, knew] 'at she had tint[lost, got lost] the grup[grip, grasp] o' 't."

Certainly Miss St. John could not have understood the half of the words Robert used, but she understood his story notwithstanding. Herself an enthusiast in music, her sympathies were at once engaged for the awkward boy who was thus trying to steal an entrance into the fairy halls of sound. But she forbore any further allusion to the violin for the present, and contented herself with assuring Robert that he was heartily welcome to go through the garden as often as he pleased. She accompanied her words with a smile that made Robert feel not only that she was the most beautiful of all princesses in fairy-tales, but that she had presented him with something beyond price in the most self-denying manner. He took off his cap, thanked her with much heartiness, if not with much polish, and hastened to the gate of his grandmother's little garden. A few years later such an encounter might have spoiled his dinner: I have to record no such evil result of the adventure.

With Miss St. John, music was the highest form of human expression, as must often be the case with those whose feeling is much in advance of their thought, and to whom, therefore, may be called mental sensation is the highest known condition. Music to such is poetry in solution, and generates that infinite atmosphere, common to both musician and poet, which the latter fills with shining worlds.—But if my reader wishes to follow out for himself the idea herein suggested, he must be careful to make no confusion between those who feel musically or think poetically, and the musician or the poet. One who can only play the music of others, however exquisitely, is not a musician, any more than one who can read verse to the satisfaction, or even expound it to the enlightenment of the poet himself, is therefore a poet.—When Miss St. John would worship

God, it was in music that she found the chariot of fire in which to ascend heavenward. Hence music was the divine thing in the world for her; and to find any one loving music humbly and faithfully was to find a brother or sister believer. But she had been so often disappointed in her expectations from those she took to be such, that of late she had become less sanguine. Still there was something about this boy that roused once more her musical hopes; and, however she may have restrained herself from the full indulgence of them, certain it is that the next day, when she saw Robert pass, this time leisurely, along the top of the garden, she put on her bonnet and shawl, and, allowing him time to reach his den, followed him, in the hope of finding out whether or not he could play. I do not know what proficiency the boy had attained, very likely not much, for a man can feel the music of his own bow, or of his own lines, long before any one else can discover it. He had already made a path, not exactly worn one, but trampled one, through the neglected grass, and Miss St. John had no difficulty in finding his entrance to the factory.

She felt a little *eerie*, as Robert would have called it, when she passed into the waste silent place; for besides the wasteness and the silence, motionless machines have a look of death about them, at least when they bear such signs of disuse as those that filled these rooms. Hearing no violin, she waited for a while in the ground-floor of the building; but still hearing nothing, she ascended to the first floor. Here, likewise, all was silence. She hesitated, but at length ventured up the next stair, beginning, however, to feel a little troubled as well as *eerie*, the silence was so obstinately persistent. Was it possible that there was no violin in that brown paper? But that boy could not be a liar. Passing shelves piled-up with stores of old thread, she still went on, led by a curiosity stronger than her gathering fear. At last she came to a little room, the door of

which was open, and there she saw Robert lying on the floor with his head in a pool of blood.

Now Mary St. John was both brave and kind; and, therefore, though not insensible to the fact that she too must be in danger where violence had been used to a boy, she set about assisting him at once. His face was deathlike, but she did not think he was dead. She drew him out into the passage, for the room was close, and did all she could to recover him; but for some time he did not even breathe. At last his lips moved, and he murmured,

"Sandy, Sandy, ye've broken my bonnie leddy[lady]."

Then he opened his eyes, and seeing a face to dream about bending in kind consternation over him, closed them again with a smile and a sigh, as if to prolong his dream.

The blood now came fast into his forsaken cheeks, and began to flow again from the wound in his head. The lady bound it up with her handkerchief. After a little he rose, though with difficulty, and stared wildly about him, saying, with imperfect articulation, "Father! father!" Then he looked at Miss St. John with a kind of dazed inquiry in his eyes, tried several times to speak, and could not.

"Can you walk at all?" asked Miss St. John, supporting him, for she was anxious to leave the place.

"Yes, mem, weel eneuch[enough]," he answered.

"Come along, then. I will help you home."

"Na, na," he said, as if he had just recalled something. "Dinna min'[mind] me. Rin[run] hame[home], mem, or he'll see ye!"

"Who will see me?"

Robert stared more wildly, put his hand to his head, and made no reply. She half led, half supported him down the stair, as far as the first landing, when he cried out in a tone of anguish,

"My bonny leddy[lady]!"

"What is it?" asked Miss St. John, thinking he meant her.

"My fiddle! my fiddle! She 'll be a' in bits," he answered, and turned to go up again.

"Sit down here," said Miss St. John, "and I'll fetch it."

Though not without some tremor, she darted back to the room. Then she turned faint for the first time, but determinedly supporting herself, she looked about, saw a brown-paper parcel on a shelf, took it, and hurried out with a shudder.

Robert stood leaning against the wall. He stretched out his hands eagerly.

"Gie[give] me her. Gie[give] me her."

"You had better let me carry it. You are not able."

"Na, na, mem. Ye dinna ken hoo[how] easy she is to hurt."

"Oh, yes, I do!" returned Miss St. John, smiling, and Robert could not withstand the smile.

"Weel, tak care o' her, as ye wad[would] o' yer ain[own] sel', mem," he said, yielding.

He was now much better, and before he had been two minutes in the open air, insisted that he was quite well. When they reached Captain Forsyth's garden he again held out his hands for his violin.

"No, no," said his new friend. "You wouldn't have Betty see you like that, would you?"

“No, mem; but I’ll put in the fiddle at my ain[own] window, and she sanna[shall not] hae a chance o’ seein’ ’t,” answered Robert, not understanding her; for though he felt a good deal of pain, he had no idea what a dreadful appearance he presented.

“Don’t you know that you have a wound on your head?” asked Miss St. John.

“Na! Hev[have] I?” said Robert, putting up his hand. “But I maun[must, have to] gang[go]—there’s nae[no, not] help for ’t,” he added.—“gin[if] I cud[could] only win[get, go] to my ain[own] room ohn[without] Betty seen me!—Eh! Mem, I hae blaudit[spoiled, soiled] a’ yer bonny goon[gown]. That’s a sair[sore] vex.”

“Never mind it,” returned Miss St. John, smiling. “It is of no consequence. But you must come with me. I must see what I can do for your head. Poor boy!”

“Eh, mem! but ye *are* kin’[kind]! Gin[if] ye speik like that ye’ll gar[cause, compel] me greit[cry, weep]. Naebody ever spak’ to me like that afore. Maybe ye kent[known, knew] my mamma. Ye’re sae like her.”

This word *mamma* was the only remnant of her that lingered in his speech. Had she lived he would have spoken very differently. They were now walking towards the house.

“No, I did not know your mamma. Is she dead?”

“Lang[long] syne[since, at that (good) time], mem. And sae they tell me is yours.”

“Yes; and my father too. Your father is alive, I hope?”

Robert made no answer. Miss St. John turned.

The boy had a strange look, and seemed struggling with something in his throat. She thought he was going to faint again, and hurried him into the drawing-room. Her aunt had not yet left her room, and her uncle was out.

“Sit down,” she said—so kindly—and Robert sat down on the edge of a chair. Then she left the room, but presently returned with a little brandy. “There,” she said, offering the glass, “that will do you good.”

“What is ’t, mem?”

“Brandy. There’s water in it, of course.”

“I daurna[dare not] touch ’t. Grannie cudna bide me to touch ’t,”

So determined was he, that Miss St. John was forced to yield. Perhaps she wondered that the boy who would deceive his grandmother about a violin should be so immovable in regarding her pleasure in the matter of a needful medicine. But in this fact I begin to see the very Falconer of my manhood’s worship.

“Eh, mem! Gin[if] ye wad[would] play something upo’ *her*,” he resumed, pointing to the piano, which, although he had never seen one before, he at once recognized, by some hidden mental operation, as the source of the sweet sounds heard at the window, “it wad[would] du[do] me mair[more] guid than a haill[whole] bottle o’ brandy, or whusky either.”

“How do you know that?” asked Miss St. John, proceeding to sponge the wound.

“’Cause mony’s[many’s] the time I hae stud[stood] oot[out] there i’ the street, hearkenin’. Dooble Sanny says ’at ye play jist as gin[if] ye war[were] my gran’father’s fiddle hersel’, turned into the bonniest cratur ever God made.”

“How did you get such a terrible cut?”

She had removed the hair, and found that the injury was severe.

The boy was silent. She glanced round in his face. He was staring as if he saw nothing, heard nothing. She would try again.

“Did you fall? Or how did you cut your head?”

“Yes, yes, mem, I fell,” he answered, hastily, with an air of relief, and possibly with some tone of gratitude for the suggestion of a true answer.

“What made you fall?”

Utter silence again. She felt a kind of *turn*—I do not know another word to express what I mean: the boy must have fits, and either could not tell, or was ashamed to tell, what had befallen him. Thereafter she too was silent, and Robert thought she was offended. Possibly he felt a change in the touch of her fingers.

“Mem, I *wad*[would] like to tell ye,” he said, “but I daurna[dare not].”

“Oh! never mind,” she returned kindly.

“Wad[would] ye promise nae[no, not] to tell *nae*[no, not]body?”

“I don’t want to know,” she answered, confirmed in her suspicion, and at the same time ashamed of the alteration of feeling which the discovery had occasioned.

An uncomfortable silence followed, broken by Robert.

“Gin[if] ye binna[be not] pleased wi’ me, mem,” he said, “I canna bide ye to gang[go] on wi’ siccan[such a, such an] a job ’s that.”

How Miss St. John could have understood him, I cannot think; but she did.

“Oh! very well,” she answered, smiling. “Just as you please. Perhaps you had better take this piece of plaster to Betty, and ask her to finish the dressing for you.”

Robert took the plaster mechanically, and, sick at heart and speechless, rose to go, forgetting even his *bonny leddy*[lady] in his grief.

“You had better take your violin with you,” said Miss St. John, urged to the cruel experiment by a strong desire to see what the strange boy would do.

He turned. The tears were streaming down his odd face. They went to her heart, and she was bitterly ashamed of herself.

“Come along. Do sit down again. I only wanted to see what you would do. I am very sorry,” she said, in a tone of kindness such as Robert had never imagined.

He sat down instantly, saying,

“Eh, mem! it’s sair[sore] to bide;” meaning, no doubt, the conflict between his inclination to tell her all, and his duty to be silent.

The dressing was soon finished, his hair combed down over it, and Robert looking once more respectable.

“Now, I think that will do,” said his nurse.

“Eh, thank ye, mem!” answered Robert, rising. “Whan[when] I’m able to play upo’ the fiddle as weel ’s ye play upo’ the piana, I’ll come and play at yer window ilka[every] nicht, as lang[long] ’s ye like to hearken.”

She smiled, and he was satisfied. He did not dare again ask her to play to him. But she said of herself, “Now I will play something to you, if you like,” and he resumed his seat devoutly.

When she had finished a lovely little air, which sounded to Robert like the touch of her hands, and her breath on his forehead, she looked round, and was satisfied, from the rapt expression of the boy’s countenance, that at least he had plenty of musical sensibility. As if despoiled of volition, he stood motionless till she said,

“Now you had better go, or Betty will miss you.”

Then he made her a bow in which awkwardness and grace were curiously mingled, and taking up his precious parcel, and holding it to his bosom as if it had been a child for whom he felt an access of tenderness, he slowly left the room and the house.

Not even to Shargar did he communicate his adventure. And he went no more to the deserted factory to play there. Fate had again interposed between him and his bonny leddy[lady].

When he reached Bodyfauld he fancied his grandmother's eyes more watchful of him than usual, and he strove the more to resist the weariness, and even faintness, that urged him to go to bed. Whether he was able to hide as well a certain trouble that clouded his spirit I doubt. His wound he did manage to keep a secret, thanks to the care of Miss St. John, who had dressed it with court-plaster.

When he woke the next morning, it was with the consciousness of having seen something strange the night before, and only when he found that he was not in his own room at his grandmother's, was he convinced that it must have been a dream and no vision. For in the night, he had awaked there as he thought, and the moon was shining with such clearness, that although it did not shine into his room, he could see the face of the clock, and that the hands were both together at the top. Close by the clock stood the bureau, with its end against the partition forming the head of his grannie's bed.

All at once he saw a tall man, in a blue coat and bright buttons, about to open the lid of the bureau. The same moment he saw a little elderly man in a brown coat and a brown wig, by his side, who sought to remove his hand from the lock. Next appeared a huge stalwart figure, in shabby old tartans, and laid his hand on the head of each. But the wonder widened and grew; for now came a stately Highlander with his broadsword by his side, and an eagle's feather in his bonnet[man's cap], who laid his hand on the other Highlander's arm.

When Robert looked in the direction whence this last had appeared, the head of his grannie's bed had vanished, and a wild hill-side, covered

with stones and heather, sloped away into the distance. Over it passed man after man, each with an ancestral air, while on the gray sea to the left, galleys covered with Norsemen tore up the white foam, and dashed one after the other up to the strand. How long he gazed, he did not know, but when he withdrew his eyes from the extended scene, there stood the figure of his father, still trying to open the lid of the bureau, his grandfather resisting him, the blind piper with his hand on the head of both, and the stately chief with his hand on the piper's arm. Then a mist of forgetfulness gathered over the whole, till at last he awoke and found himself in the little wooden chamber at Bodyfauld, and not in the visioned room. Doubtless his loss of blood the day before had something to do with the dream or vision, whichever the reader may choose to consider it. He rose, and after a good breakfast, found himself very little the worse, and forgot all about his dream, till a circumstance which took place not long after recalled it vividly to his mind.

The enchantment of Bodyfauld soon wore off. The boys had no time to enter into the full enjoyment of country ways, because of those weary lessons, over the *getting* of which Mrs. Falconer kept as strict a watch as ever; while to Robert the evening journey, his violin and Miss St. John left at Rothieden, grew more than tame. The return was almost as happy an event to him as the first going. Now he could resume his lessons with the soutar[cobbler].

With Shargar it was otherwise. The freedom for so much longer from Mrs. Falconer's eyes was in itself so much of a positive pleasure, that the walk twice a day, the fresh air, and the scents and sounds of the country, only came in as supplementary. But I do not believe the boy even then had so much happiness as when he was beaten and starved by his own mother. And Robert, growing more and more absorbed in his own

thoughts and pursuits, paid him less and less attention as the weeks went on, till Shargar at length judged it for a time an evil day on which he first had slept under old Ronald Falconer's kilt.

Chapter 18 - Nature Puts in a Claim

Before the day of return arrived, Robert had taken care to remove the violin from his bedroom, and carry it once more to its old retreat in Shargar's garret. The very first evening, however, that grannie again spent in her own arm-chair, he hied from the house as soon as it grew dusk, and made his way with his brown-paper parcel to Sandy Elshender's.

Entering the narrow passage from which his shop door opened, and hearing him hammering away at a sole, he stood and unfolded his treasure, then drew a low sigh from her with his bow, and awaited the result. He heard the lap-stone fall thundering on the floor, and, like a spider from his cavern, Dooble Sanny appeared in the door, with the bend leather[thick leather for soling boots/shoes] in one hand, and the hammer in the other.

"Lordsake, man! Hae[Have] ye gotten her again? Gie's[give] a grup[grip, grasp] o' her!" he cried, dropping leather and hammer.

"Na, na," returned Robert, retreating towards the outer door. "Ye maun[must, have to] sweir upo' *her* that, whan[when] I want her, I sall[shall] hae her ohn[without] demur, or I sanna[shall not] lat[let, allow] ye lay roset[resin, cobbler's wax] upo' her."

"I swear 't, Robert; I sweir 't upo' *her*," said the soutar[cobbler] hurriedly, stretching out both his hands as if to receive some human being into his embrace.

Robert placed the violin in those grimy hands. A look of heavenly delight dawned over the hirsute and dirt-besmeared countenance, which drooped into tenderness as he drew the bow across the instrument, and

wiled from her a thin wail as of sorrow at their long separation. He then retreated into his den, and was soon sunk in a trance, deaf to everything but the violin, from which no entreaties of Robert, who longed for a lesson, could rouse him; so that he had to go home grievously disappointed, and unrewarded for the risk he had run in venturing the stolen visit.

Next time, however, he fared better; and he contrived so well that, from the middle of June to the end of August, he had two lessons a week, mostly upon the afternoons of holidays. For these his master thought himself well paid by the use of the instrument between. And Robert made great progress.

Occasionally he saw Miss St. John in the garden, and once or twice met her in the town; but her desire to find in him a pupil had been greatly quenched by her unfortunate conjecture as to the cause of his accident. She had, however, gone so far as to mention the subject to her aunt, who assured her that old Mrs. Falconer would as soon consent to his being taught gambling as music. The idea, therefore, passed away; and beyond a kind word or two when she met him, there was no further communication between them. But Robert would often dream of waking from a swoon, and finding his head lying on her lap, and her lovely face bending over him full of kindness and concern.

By the way, Robert cared nothing for poetry. Virgil was too troublesome to be enjoyed; and in English he had met with nothing but the dried leaves and gum-flowers of the last century. Miss Letty once lent him *The Lady of the Lake*; but before he had read the first canto through, his grandmother laid her hands upon it, and, without saying a word, dropped it behind a loose skirting-board in the pantry, where the mice soon made it a ruin sad to behold. For Miss Letty, having heard

from the woful Robert of its strange disappearance, and guessing its cause, applied to Mrs. Falconer for the volume; who forthwith, the tongs aiding, extracted it from its hole, and, without shade of embarrassment, held it up like a drowned kitten before the eyes of Miss Letty, intending thereby, no doubt, to impress her with the fate of all seducing spirits that should attempt an entrance into her kingdom: Miss Letty only burst into merry laughter over its fate. So the lode of poetry failed for the present from Robert's life. Nor did it matter much; for had he not his violin?

I have, I think, already indicated that his grandfather had been a linen manufacturer. Although that trade had ceased, his family had still retained the bleachery belonging to it, commonly called the *bleachfield*, devoting it now to the service of those large calico manufactures which had ruined the trade in linen, and to the whitening of such yarn as the country housewives still spun at home, and the webs they got woven of it in private looms. To Robert and Shargar it was a wondrous pleasure when the pile of linen which the week had accumulated at the office under the ga'le-room, was on Saturday heaped high upon the base of a broad-wheeled cart, to get up on it and be carried to the said bleachfield, which lay along the bank of the river. Soft laid and high-borne, gazing into the blue sky, they traversed the streets in a holiday triumph; and although, once arrived, the manager did not fail to get some labour out of them, yet the store of amusement was endless. The great wheel, which drove the whole machinery; the plash-mill[fulling-mill (cloth)], or, more properly, wauk-mill[fulling-mill]—a word Robert derived from the resemblance of the mallets to two huge feet, and of their motion to walking—with the water plashing and squirting from the blows of their heels; the beatles thundering in *arpeggio* upon the huge cylinder round which the white cloth was wound—each was haunted in its turn and

season. The pleasure of the water itself was inexhaustible. Here sweeping in a mass along the race; there divided into branches and hurrying through the walls of the various houses; here sliding through a wooden channel across the floor to fall into the river in a half-concealed cataract, there bubbling up through the bottom of a huge wooden cave or vat, there resting placid in another; here gurgling along a spout; there flowing in a narrow canal through the green expanse of the well-mown bleachfield, or lifted from it in narrow curved wooden scoops, like fairy canoes with long handles, and flung in showers over the outspread yarn —the water was an endless delight.

It is strange how some individual broidery or figure upon Nature's garment will delight a boy long before he has ever looked Nature in the face, or begun to love herself. But Robert was soon to become dimly conscious of a life within these things—a life not the less real that its operations on his mind had been long unrecognized.

On the grassy bank of the gently-flowing river, at the other edge of whose level the little canal squabbled along, and on the grassy brae[hillside] which rose immediately from the canal, were stretched, close beside each other, with scarce a stripe of green betwixt, the long white webs of linen, fastened down to the soft mossy ground with wooden pegs, whose tops were twisted into their edges. Strangely would they billow in the wind sometimes, like sea-waves, frozen and enchanted flat, seeking to rise and wallow in the wind with conscious depth and whelming mass. But generally they lay supine, saturated with light and its cleansing power. Falconer's jubilation in the white and green of a little boat, as we lay, one bright morning, on the banks of the Thames between Richmond and Twickenham, led to such a description of the bleachfield that I can write about it as if I had known it myself.

One Saturday afternoon in the end of July, when the westering sun was hotter than at midday, he went down to the lower end of the field, where the river was confined by a dam, and plunged from the bank into deep water. After a swim of half-an-hour, he ascended the higher part of the field, and lay down upon a broad web to bask in the sun. In his ears was the hush rather than rush of the water over the dam, the occasional murmur of a belt of trees that skirted the border of the field, and the dull continuous sound of the beatles at their work below, like a persistent growl of thunder on the horizon.

Had Robert possessed a copy of *Robinson Crusoe*, or had his grandmother not cast *The Lady of the Lake*, mistaking it for an idol, if not to the moles and the bats, yet to the mice and the black-beetles, he might have been lying reading it, blind and deaf to the face and the voice of Nature, and years might have passed before a response awoke in his heart. It is good that children of faculty, as distinguished from capacity, should not have too many books to read, or too much of early lessoning. The increase of examinations in our country will increase its capacity and diminish its faculty. We shall have more compilers and reducers and fewer thinkers; more modifiers and completers, and fewer inventors.

He lay gazing up into the depth of the sky, rendered deeper and bluer by the masses of white cloud that hung almost motionless below it, until he felt a kind of bodily fear lest he should fall off the face of the round earth into the abyss. A gentle wind, laden with pine odours from the sun-heated trees behind him, flapped its light wing in his face: the humanity of the world smote his heart; the great sky towered up over him, and its divinity entered his soul; a strange longing after something “he knew not nor could name” awoke within him, followed by the pang of a sudden fear that there was no such thing as that which he sought, that it was all a

fancy of his own spirit; and then the voice of Shargar broke the spell, calling to him from afar to come and see a great salmon that lay by a stone in the water. But once aroused, the feeling was never stilled; the desire never left him; sometimes growing even to a passion that was relieved only by a flood of tears.

Strange as it may sound to those who have never thought of such things save in connection with Sundays and Bibles and churches and sermons, that which was now working in Falconer's mind was the first dull and faint movement of the greatest need that the human heart possesses—the need of the God-Man. There must be truth in the scent of that pine-wood: some one must mean it. There must be a glory in those heavens that depends not upon our imagination: some power greater than they must dwell in them. Some spirit must move in that wind that haunts us with a kind of human sorrow; some soul must look up to us from the eye of that starry flower. It must be something human, else not to us divine.

Little did Robert think that such was his need—that his soul was searching after One whose form was constantly presented to him, but as constantly obscured and made unlovely by the words without knowledge spoken in the religious assemblies of the land; that he was longing without knowing it on the Saturday for that from which on the Sunday he would be repelled without knowing it. Years passed before he drew nigh to the knowledge of what he sought.

For weeks the mood broken by the voice of his companion did not return, though the forms of Nature were henceforth full of a pleasure he had never known before. He loved the grass; the water was more gracious to him; he would leave his bed early, that he might gaze on the clouds of the east, with their borders gold-blasted with sunrise; he would

linger in the fields that the amber and purple, and green and red, of the sunset, might not escape after the sun unseen. And as long as he felt the mystery, the revelation of the mystery lay before and not behind him.

And Shargar—had he any soul for such things? Doubtless; but how could he be other than lives behind Robert? For the latter had ancestors—that is, he came of people with a mental and spiritual history; while the former had been born the birth of an animal; of a *noble* sire, whose family had for generations filled the earth with fire, famine, slaughter, and licentiousness; and of a wandering outcast mother, who blindly loved the fields and woods, but retained her affection for her offspring scarcely beyond the period while she suckled them. The love of freedom and of wild animals that she had given him, however, was far more precious than any share his male ancestor had borne in his mental constitution. After his fashion he as well as Robert enjoyed the sun and the wind and the water and the sky; but he had sympathies with the salmon and the rooks and the wild rabbits even stronger than those of Robert.

Chapter 19 - Robert Steals His Own

The period of the *hairst-play*, that is, of the harvest holiday time, drew near, and over the north of Scotland thousands of half-grown hearts were beating with glad anticipation. Of the usual devices of boys to cheat themselves into the half-belief of expediting a blessed approach by marking its rate, Robert knew nothing: even the notching of sticks was unknown at Rothieden; but he had a mode notwithstanding. Although indifferent to the games of his school-fellows, there was one amusement, a solitary one nearly, and *therein* not so good as most amusements, into which he entered with the whole energy of his nature: it was kite-flying. The moment that the *hairst-play*[school holidays during harvest] approached near enough to strike its image through the eyes of his mind, Robert proceeded to make his kite, or *draigon*, as he called it. Of how many pleasures does pocket-money deprive the unfortunate possessor! What is the going into a shop and buying what you want, compared with the gentle delight of hours and days filled with gaining effort after the attainment of your end? Never boy that bought his kite, even if the adornment thereafter lay in his own hands, and the pictures were gorgeous with colour and gilding, could have half the enjoyment of Robert from the moment he went to the cooper's to ask for an old gird[hoop for a barrel] or hoop, to the moment when he said "noo[now], Shargar!" and the kite rose slowly from the depth of the a al flood. The hoop was carefully examined, the best portion cut away from it, that pared to a light strength, its ends confined to the proper curve by a string, and then away went Robert to the *wright's* shop. There a slip of wood, of proper length and thickness, was readily granted to his request, free as the daisies of the field. Oh! those horrid town conditions, where nothing is

given for the asking, but all sold for money! In Robert's kite the only thing that cost money was the string to fly it with, and that the grandmother willingly provided, for not even her ingenuity could discover any evil, direct or implicated, in kite-flying. Indeed, I believe the old lady felt not a little sympathy with the exultation of the boy when he saw his kite far aloft, diminished to a speck in the vast blue; a sympathy, it may be, rooted in the religious aspirations which she did so much at once to rouse and to suppress in the bosom of her grandchild. But I have not yet reached the kite-flying, for I have said nothing of the kite's tail, for the sake of which principally I began to describe the process of its growth.

As soon as the body of the dragon was completed, Robert attached to its spine the string which was to take the place of its caudal elongation, and at a proper distance from the body joined to the string the first of the cross-pieces of folded paper which in this animal represent the continued vertebral processes. Every morning, the moment he issued from his chamber, he proceeded to the garret where the monster lay, to add yet another joint to his tail, until at length the day should arrive when, the lessons over for a blessed eternity of five or six weeks, he would tip the whole with a piece of wood, to which grass, *quantum suff.*, might be added from the happy fields.

Upon this occasion the dragon was a monster one. With a little help from Shargar, he had laid the skeleton of a six-foot specimen, and had carried the body to a satisfactory completion.

The tail was still growing, having as yet only sixteen joints, when Mr. Lammie called with an invitation for the boys to spend their holidays with him. It was fortunate for Robert that he was in the room when Mr. Lammie presented his petition, otherwise he would never have heard of

it till the day of departure arrived, and would thus have lost all the delights of anticipation. In frantic effort to control his ecstasy, he sped to the garret, and with trembling hands tied the second joint of the day to the tail of the dragon—the first time he had ever broken the law of its accretion. Once broken, that law was henceforth an object of scorn, and the tail grew with frightful rapidity. It was indeed a great dragon. And none of the paltry fields about Rothieden should be honoured with its first flight, but from Bodyfauld should the majestic child of earth ascend into the regions of upper air.

My reader may here be tempted to remind me that Robert had been only too glad to return to Rothieden from his former visit. But I must in my turn remind him that the circumstances were changed. In the first place, the fiddle was substituted for grannie; and in the second, the dragon for the school.

The making of this dragon was a happy thing for Shargar, and a yet happier thing for Robert, in that it introduced again for a time some community of interest between them. Shargar was happier than he had been for many a day because Robert used him; and Robert was yet happier than Shargar in that his conscience, which had reproached him for his neglect of him, was now silent. But not even his dragon had turned aside his attentions from his violin; and many were the consultations between the boys as to how best she might be transported to Bodyfauld, where endless opportunities of holding communion with her would not be wanting. The difficulty was only how to get her clear of Rothieden.

The play commenced on a Saturday; but not till the Monday were they to be set at liberty. Wearily the hours of mental labour and bodily torpidity which the Scotch called the Sabbath passed away, and at length

the millennial morning dawned. Robert and Shargar were up before the sun. But strenuous were the efforts they made to suppress all indications of excitement, lest grannie, fearing the immoral influence of gladness, should give orders to delay their departure for an awfully indefinite period, which might be an hour, a day, or even a week. Horrible conception! Their behaviour was so decorous that not even a hinted threat escaped the lips of Mrs. Falconer.

They set out three hours before noon, carrying the great kite, and Robert's school bag, of green baize, full of sundries: a cart from Bodyfauld was to fetch their luggage later in the day. As soon as they were clear of the houses, Shargar lay down behind a dyke with the kite, and Robert set off at full speed for Dooble Sanny's shop, making a half-circuit of the town to avoid the chance of being seen by grannie or Betty. Having given due warning before, he found the brown-paper parcel ready for him, and carried it off in fearful triumph. He joined Shargar in safety, and they set out on their journey as rich and happy a pair of tramps as ever tramped, having six weeks of their own in their pockets to spend and not spare.

A hearty welcome awaited them, and they were soon revelling in the glories of the place, the first instalment of which was in the shape of curds and cream, with oatcake and butter, as much as they liked. After this they would "e'en to it like French falconers" with their kite, for the wind had been blowing bravely all the morning, having business to do with the harvest. The season of stubble not yet arrived, they were limited to the pasturage and moorland, which, however, large as their kite was, were spacious enough. Slowly the great-headed creature arose from the hands of Shargar, and ascended about twenty feet, when, as if seized with a sudden fit of wrath or fierce indignation, it turned right round and

dashed itself with headlong fury to the earth, as if sooner than submit to such influences a moment longer it would beat out its brains at once.

"It hasna half tail eneuch[enough]," cried Robert. "It's queer 'at things winna[will not] gang[go] up ohn[without] hauden[held, kept] them doon. Pu'[pull] a guid han'fu' o' clover, Shargar. She's had her fa'[fall, befall], an' noo[now] she'll gang[go] up a' richt. She's nane[none] the waur[worse] o' 't."

Upon the next attempt, the kite rose triumphantly. But just as it reached the length of the string it shot into a faster current of air, and Robert found himself first dragged along in spite of his efforts, and then lifted from his feet. After carrying him a few yards, the dragon broke its string, dropped him in a ditch, and, drifting away, went fluttering and waggling downwards in the distance.

"Luik[look] whaur she gangs[goes, walks], Shargar," cried Robert, from the ditch.

Experience coming to his aid, Shargar took landmarks of the direction in which it went; and ere long they found it with its tail entangled in the topmost branches of a hawthorn tree, and its head beating the ground at its foot. It was at once agreed that they would not fly it again till they got some stronger string.

Having heard the adventure, Mr. Lammie produced a shilling from the pocket of his corduroys, and gave it to Robert to spend upon the needful string. He resolved to go to the town the next morning and make a grand purchase of the same. During the afternoon he roamed about the farm with his hands in his pockets, revolving if not many memories, yet many questions, while Shargar followed like a pup at the heels of Miss Lammie, to whom, during his former visit, he had become greatly attached.

In the evening, resolved to make a confidant of Mr. Lammie, and indeed to cast himself upon the kindness of the household generally, Robert went up to his room to release his violin from its prison of brown paper. What was his dismay to find—not his bonny leddy[lady], but her poor cousin, the soutar's[cobbler's] auld wife! It was too bad. *Dooble*[*double or duplicitous*] Sanny indeed!

He first stared, then went into a rage, and then came out of it to go into a resolution. He replaced the unwelcome fiddle in the parcel, and came down-stairs gloomy and still wrathful, but silent. The evening passed over, and the inhabitants of the farmhouse went early to bed. Robert tossed about fuming on his. He had not undressed.

About eleven o'clock, after all had been still for more than an hour, he took his shoes in one hand and the brown parcel in the other, and descending the stairs like a thief, undid the quiet wooden bar that secured the door, and let himself out. All was darkness, for the moon was not yet up, and he felt a strange sensation of ghostliness in himself—awake and out of doors, when he ought to be asleep and unconscious in bed. He had never been out so late before, and felt as if walking in the region of the dead, existing when and where he had no business to exist. For it was the time Nature kept for her own quiet, and having once put her children to bed—hidden them away with the world wiped out of them—enclosed them in her ebony box, as George Herbert says—she did not expect to have her hours of undress and meditation intruded upon by a venturesome school-boy. Yet she let him pass. He put on his shoes and hurried to the road. He heard a horse stamp in the stable, and saw a cat dart across the corn-yard as he went through. Those were all the signs of life about the place.

It was a cloudy night and still. Nothing was to be heard but his own footsteps. The cattle in the fields were all asleep. The larch and spruce trees on the top of the hill by the foot of which his road wound were still as clouds. He could just see the sky through their stems. It was washed with the faintest of light, for the moon, far below, was yet climbing towards the horizon. A star or two sparkled where the clouds broke, but so little light was there, that, until he had passed the moorland on the hill, he could not get the horror of moss-holes, and deep springs covered with treacherous green, out of his head. But he never thought of turning. When the fears of the way at length fell back and allowed his own thoughts to rise, the sense of a presence, or of something that might grow to a presence, was the first to awake in him. The stillness seemed to be thinking all around his head. But the way grew so dark, where it lay through a corner of the pine-wood, that he had to feel the edge of the road with his foot to make sure that he was keeping upon it, and the sense of the silence vanished. Then he passed a farm, and the motions of horses came through the dark, and a doubtful crow from a young inexperienced cock, who did not yet know the moon from the sun. Then a sleepy low in his ear startled him, and made him quicken his pace involuntarily.

By the time he reached Rothieden all the lights were out, and this was just what he wanted.

The economy of Dooble Sanny's abode was this: the outer door was always left on the latch at night, because several families lived in the house; the soutar's workshop opened from the passage, close to the outer door, therefore its door was locked; but the key hung on a nail just inside the soutar's bedroom. All this Robert knew.

Arrived at the house, he lifted the latch, closed the door behind him, took off his shoes once more, like a housebreaker, as indeed he was, although a righteous one, and felt his way to and up the stair to the bedroom. There was a sound of snoring within. The door was a little ajar. He reached the key and descended, his heart beating more and more wildly as he approached the realization of his hopes. Gently as he could he turned it in the lock. In a moment more he had his hands on the spot where the shoemaker always laid his violin. But his heart sank within him: there was no violin there. A blank of dismay held him both motionless and thoughtless; nor had he recovered his senses before he heard footsteps, which he well knew, approaching in the street. He slunk at once into a corner. Elshender entered, feeling his way carefully, and muttering at his wife. He was tipsy, most likely, but that had never yet interfered with the safety of his fiddle: Robert heard its faint echo as he laid it gently down. Nor was he too tipsy to lock the door behind him, leaving Robert incarcerated amongst the old boots and leather and rosin.

For one moment only did the boy's heart fail him. The next he was in action, for a happy thought had already struck him. Hastily, that he might forestall sleep in the brain of the soutar[cobbler], he undid his parcel, and after carefully enveloping his own violin in the paper, took the old wife of the soutar[cobbler], and proceeded to perform upon her a trick which in a merry moment his master had taught him, and which, not without some feeling of irreverence, he had occasionally practised upon his own bonny lady.

The shoemaker's room was overhead; its thin floor of planks was the ceiling of the workshop. Ere Dooble Sanny was well laid by the side of his sleeping wife, he heard a frightful sound from below, as of some one tearing his beloved violin to pieces. No sound of rending coffin-planks or

rising dead would have been so horrible in the ears of the soutar[cobbler]. He sprang from his bed with a haste that shook the crazy tenement to its foundation.

The moment Robert heard that, he put the violin in its place, and took his station by the *door-cheek*[*door-post, doorway*]. The soutar[cobbler] came tumbling down the stair, and rushed at the door, but found that he had to go back for the key. When, with uncertain hand, he had opened at length, he went straight to the nest of his treasure, and Robert slipping out noiselessly, was in the next street before Dooble Sanny, having found the fiddle uninjured, and not discovering the substitution, had finished concluding that the whisky and his imagination had played him a very discourteous trick between them, and retired once more to bed. And not till Robert had cut his foot badly with a piece of glass, did he discover that he had left his shoes behind him. He tied it up with his handkerchief, and limped home the three miles, too happy to think of consequences.

Before he had gone far, the moon floated up on the horizon, large, and shaped like the broadside of a barrel. She stared at him in amazement to see him out at such a time of the night. But he grasped his violin and went on. He had no fear now, even when he passed again over the desolate moss, although he saw the stagnant pools glimmering about him in the moonlight. And ever after this he had a fancy for roaming at night. He reached home in safety, found the door as he had left it, and ascended to his bed, triumphant in his fiddle.

In the morning bloody prints were discovered on the stair, and traced to the door of his room. Miss Lammie entered in some alarm, and found him fast asleep on his bed, still dressed, with a brown-paper parcel in his arms, and one of his feet evidently enough the source of the frightful

stain. She was too kind to wake him, and inquiry was postponed till they met at breakfast, to which he descended bare-footed, save for a handkerchief on the injured foot.

"Robert, my lad," said Mr. Lammie, kindly, "hoo[how] cam ye by that bluidy fut?"

Robert began the story, and, guided by a few questions from his host, at length told the tale of the violin from beginning to end, omitting only his adventure in the factory. Many a *guffaw* from Mr. Lammie greeted its progress, and Miss Lammie laughed till the tears rolled unheeded down her cheeks, especially when Shargar, emboldened by the admiration Robert had awakened, imparted his private share in the comedy, namely, the entombment of Boston in a fifth-fold state; for the Lammies were none of the *unco*[very] *guid* to be censorious upon such exploits. The whole business advanced the boys in favour at Bodyfauld; and the entreaties of Robert that nothing, should reach his grandmother's ears were entirely unnecessary.

After breakfast Miss Lammie dressed the wounded foot. But what was to be done for shoes, for Robert's Sunday pair had been left at home? Under ordinary circumstances it would have been no great hardship to him to go barefoot for the rest of the autumn, but the cut was rather a serious one. So his feet were cased in a pair of Mr. Lammie's Sunday boots, which, from their size, made it so difficult for him to get along, that he did not go far from the doors, but revelled in the company of his violin in the corn-yard amongst last year's ricks, in the barn, and in the hayloft, playing all the tunes he knew, and trying over one or two more from a very dirty old book of Scotch airs, which his teacher had lent him.

In the evening, as they sat together after supper, Mr. Lammie said,

"Weel, Robert, hoo's the fiddle?"

“Fine, I thank ye, sir,” answered Robert.

“Lat’s[let us] hear what ye can do wi’ ’t.”

Robert fetched the instrument and complied.

“That’s no that ill,” remarked the farmer. “But eh! man, ye suld[should] hae heard yer gran’father han’le[handle] the bow. That *was* something to hear—ance[once] in a body’s life. Ye wad[would] hae jist thoucht the strings had been drawn frae[from] his ain[own] inside, he kent[known, knew] them sae weel, and han’led[handled, treated] them sae fine. He jist fan’[felt] them like wi’ ’s fingers throu’ the bow an’ the horsehair an’ a’, an’ a’ the time he was drawin’ the soun’ like the sowl[soul] frae[from] them, an’ they jist did onything ’at he likit. Eh! to hear him play the Flooers o’ the Forest wad[would] hae garred[caused, compelled] ye greit[cry, weep].”

“Cud[could] my father play?” asked Robert.

“Ay[yes, indeed], weel eneuch[enough] for *him*. He could do onything he likit to try, better nor[than] middlin’. I never saw sic[such] a man. He played upo’ the bagpipes, an’ the flute, an’ the bugle, an’ I kenna what a’; but a’thegither[all together] they cam’[came] na within sicht o’ his father upo’ the auld fiddle. Lat’s[lets] hae a luik[look] at her.”

He took the instrument in his hands reverently, turned it over and over, and said,

“Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed]; it’s the same auld mill, an’ I wat[know, assure] it grun’[ground] bonny meal.—That sma’[small, little] crater[creature] noo[now] ’ill[will] be worth a hunner poun’[pound (sterling)], I s’ warran’,” he added, as he restored it carefully into Robert’s hands, to whom it was honey and spice to hear his bonny lady paid her due honours. “Can ye play the Flooers o’ the Forest, no?” he added yet again.

"Ay[yes, indeed] can I," answered Robert, with some pride, and laid the bow on the violin, and played the air through without blundering a single note.

"Weel, that's verra[very] weel," said Mr. Lammie. "But it's nae[no, not] mair[more] like as yer gran'father played it, than gin[if] there war[were] twa sawyers at it, ane[one] at ilka[every] lug[handle] o' the bow, wi' the fiddle atween them in a saw-pit."

Robert's heart sank within him; but Mr. Lammie went on:

"To hear the bow croudin'[cooing, croaking, groaning], and wailin', an' greitin'[crying, weeping] ower[over] the strings, wad[would] hae jist garred[caused, compelled] ye see the lands o' braid[broad (having a strong accent)] Scotlan' wi' a' the lasses greitin'[crying, weeping] for the lads that lay upo' reid[red] Flodden side; lasses to cut, and lasses to gether, and lasses to bin'[bind], and lasses to stook[group of sheaves], and lasses to lead, and no a lad amo'[among] them a'. It's just the murnin'[mourning] o' women, doin' men's wark[work] as weel 's their ain[own], for the men that suld[should] hae been there to du[do] 't; and I s' warran' ye, no a word to the orra[extra; idle] lad that didna gang[go] wi' the lave[rest (others)]."

Robert had not hitherto understood it—this wail of a pastoral and ploughing people over those who had left their side to return no more from the field of battle. But Mr. Lammie's description of his grandfather's rendering laid hold of his heart.

"I wad[would] raither be grutten[cried, wept] for nor[than] kissed," said he, simply.

"Haud[hold, keep] ye to that, my lad," returned Mr. Lammie. "Lat[let, allow] the lasses greit[cry, weep] for ye gin[if] they like; but haud[hold, keep] oot[out] ower[over] frae[from] the kissin'. I wadna mell[mix, meddle] wi' 't."

“Hoot[pshaw], father, dinna put sic[such] nonsense i’ the bairns’ heids[heads],” said Miss Lammie.

“Whilk[which] ’s the nonsense, Aggy?” asked her father, slily. “But I doobt[suspect],” he added, “he’ll never play the Flooers o’ the Forest as it suld[should] be playt, till he’s had a taste o’ the kissin’, lass.”

“Weel, it’s a queer instructor o’ yowth, ’at says an’ onsays[unsays] i’ the same breith[breath].”

“Never ye min’[mind]. I haena contradickit mysel’ yet; for I hae *said* naething. But, Robert, my man, ye maun[must, have to] pit[put, make] mair[more] sowl[soul] into yer fiddlin’. Ye canna play the fiddle till ye can gar[cause, compel] ’t greit[cry, weep]. It’s unco[very] ready to that o’ ’ts[its] ain[own] sel’; an’ it’s my opingon that there’s no anither instrument but the fiddle fit to play the Flooers o’ the Forest upo’, for that very rizzon[reason], in a’ his Maijesty’s dominions.—My father playt the fiddle, but no like your gran’father.”

Robert was silent. He spent the whole of the next morning in reiterated attempts to alter his style of playing the air in question, but in vain—as far at least as any satisfaction to himself was the result. He laid the instrument down in despair, and sat for an hour disconsolate upon the bedside. His visit had not as yet been at all so fertile in pleasure as he had anticipated. He could not fly his kite; he could not walk; he had lost his shoes; Mr. Lammie had not approved of his playing; and, although he had his will of the fiddle, he could not get his will out of it. He could never play so as to please Miss St. John. Nothing but manly pride kept him from crying. He was sorely disappointed and dissatisfied; and the world might be dreary even at Bodyfauld.

Few men can wait *upon* the bright day in the midst of the dull one. Nor can many men even wait *for* it.

Chapter 20 - Jessie Hewson

The wound on Robert's foot festered, and had not yet healed when the sickle was first put to the barley. He hobbled out, however, to the reapers, for he could not bear to be left alone with his violin, so dreadfully oppressive was the knowledge that he could not use it after its nature. He began to think whether his incapacity was not a judgment upon him for taking it away from the soutar[cobbler], who could do so much more with it, and to whom, consequently, it was so much more valuable. The pain in his foot, likewise, had been very depressing; and but for the kindness of his friends, especially of Miss Lammie, he would have been altogether "a weary wight[fellow] forlorn."

Shargar was happier than ever he had been in his life. His white face hung on Miss Lammie's looks, and haunted her steps from spence[storeroom, larder], [*as in Devonshire*] to milk-house, and from milk-house to chessel[tub for pressing cheese], surmounted by the glory of his red hair, which a farm-servant declared he had once mistaken for a fun-buss[whin-bush, gorse bush] on fire. This day she had gone to the field to see the first handful of barley cut, and Shargar was there, of course.

It was a glorious day of blue and gold, with just wind enough to set the barley-heads a-talking. But, whether from the heat of the sun, or the pain of his foot operating on the general discouragement under which he laboured, Robert turned faint all at once, and dragged himself away to a cottage on the edge of the field.

It was the dwelling of a cottar[farm tenant, cottager], whose family had been settled upon the farm of Bodyfauld from time immemorial. They were, indeed, like other cottars[farm tenants, cottagers], a kind of feudal dependents,

occupying an acre or two of the land, in return for which they performed certain stipulated labour, called *cottar-wark*. The greater part of the family was employed in the work of the farm, at the regular wages.

Alas for Scotland that such families are now to seek! Would that the parliaments of our country held such a proportion of noble-minded men as was once to be found in the clay huts on a hill-side, or grouped about a central farm, huts whose wretched look would move the pity of many a man as inferior to their occupants as a King Charles's lap-dog is to a shepherd's colley. The utensils of their life were mean enough: the life itself was often *elixir vitae*—a true family life, looking up to the high, divine life. But well for the world that such life has been scattered over it, east and west, the seed of fresh growth in new lands. Out of offence to the individual, God brings good to the whole; for he pets no nation, but trains it for the perfect globular life of all nations—of his world—of his universe. As he makes families mingle, to redeem each from its family selfishness, so will he make nations mingle, and love and correct and reform and develop each other, till the planet-world shall go singing through space one harmony to the God of the whole earth. The excellence must vanish from one portion, that it may be diffused through the whole. The seed ripens on one favoured mound, and is scattered over the plain. We console ourselves with the higher thought, that if Scotland is worse, the world is better. Yea, even they by whom the offence came, and who have first to reap the woe of that offence, because they did the will of God to satisfy their own avarice in laying land to land and house to house, shall not reap their punishment in having their own will, and standing therefore alone in the earth when the good of their evil deeds returns upon it; but the tears of men that ascended to heaven in the heat

of their burning dwellings shall descend in the dew of blessing even on the hearts of them that kindled the fire.—'Something too much of this.'

Robert lifted the latch, and walked into the cottage. It was not quite so strange to him as it would be to most of my readers; still, he had not been in such a place before. A girl who was stooping by the small peat fire on the hearth looked up, and seeing that he was lame, came across the heights and hollows of the clay floor to meet him. Robert spoke so faintly that she could not hear.

"What's yer wull[will]?" she asked; then, changing her tone,—"Eh! ye're no weel," she said. "Come in to the fire. Tak a haud[hold, keep] o' me, and come yer wa's butt.[Come on in.]"

She was a pretty, indeed graceful girl of about eighteen, with the elasticity rather than undulation of movement which distinguishes the peasant from the city girl. She led him to the chimla-lug[fireside], carefully levelled a wooden chair to the inequalities of the floor, and said,

"Sit ye doon. Will I fess[fetch, bring] a drappy[little drop] o' milk?"

"Gie[give] me a drink o' water, gin[if] ye please," said Robert.

She brought it. He drank, and felt better. A baby woke in a cradle on the other side of the fire, and began to cry. The girl went and took him up; and then Robert saw what she was like. Light-brown hair clustered about a delicately-coloured face and hazel eyes. Later in the harvest her cheeks would be ruddy—now they were peach-coloured. A white neck rose above a pink print jacket, called a wrapper; and the rest of her visible dress was a blue petticoat. She ended in pretty, brown bare feet. Robert liked her, and began to talk. If his imagination had not been already filled, he would have fallen in love with her, I dare say, at once; for, except Miss St. John, he had never seen anything he thought so beautiful. The baby cried now and then.

“What ails the bairnie[little child]?” he asked.

“Ow[oh], it’s jist cuttin’ its teeth. Gin[if] it greits[cries, weeps] muckle[much], I maun[must, have to] jist tak it oot[out] to my mither. She’ll sune[soon, early] quaiet it. Are ye haudin’[holding, keeping] better?”

“Hoot[pshaw], ay[yes, indeed]. I’m a’ richt noo[now]. Is yer mither shearin’?”

“Na. She’s gatherin’. The shearin’ ’s some sair[sore] wark[work] for her e’en[even; eyes] noo[now]. I suld[should] hae been shearin’, but my mither wad[would] fain hae a day o’ the hairst[harvest]. She thocht[thought] it wud[would] du[do] her gude. But I s’ warran’ a day o’ ’t ’ll sair[satisfy] her, and I s’ be at it the morn[tomorrow]. She’s been unco[very] dowie[sad, dismal; ailing] a’ the summer; and sae has the bairnie[little child].”

“Ye maun[must, have to] hae had a sair[sore] time o’ ’t, than.”

“Ay[yes, indeed], some. But I aye got some sleep. I jist tuik[took] the towie[string] into the bed wi’ me, and whan[when] the bairnie[little child] grat[cried, wept], I waukit[woke], an’ rockit it till ’t fell asleep again. But whiles[sometimes, at times] naething wad[would] du[do] but tak him till ’s mammie.”

All the time she was hushing and fondling the child, who went on fretting when not actually crying.

“Is he yer brither[brother], than?” asked Robert.

“Ay[yes, indeed], what ither[other]? I maun[must, have to] tak him, I see. But ye can sit there as lang[long] ’s ye like; and gin[if] ye gang[go] afore I come back, jist turn the key ’i the door to lat[let, allow] onybody ken that there’s naebody i’ the hoose[house].”

Robert thanked her, and remained in the shadow by the chimney, which was formed of two smoke-browned planks fastened up the wall, one on each side, and an inverted wooden funnel above to conduct the smoke through the roof. He sat for some time gloomily gazing at a spot

of sunlight which burned on the brown clay floor. All was still as death. And he felt the white-washed w“alls even more desolate than if they had been smoke-begrimed.

Looking about him, he found over his head something which he did not understand. It was as big as the stump of a great tree. Apparently it belonged to the structure of the cottage, but he could not, in the imperfect light, and the dazzling of the sun-spot at which he had been staring, make out what it was, or how it came to be up there—unsupported as far as he could see. He rose to examine it, lifted a bit of tarpaulin which hung before it, and found a rickety box, suspended by a rope from a great nail in the wall. It had two shelves in it full of books.

Now, although there were more books in Mr. Lammie’s house than in his grandmother’s, the only one he had found that in the least enticed him to read, was a translation of George Buchanan’s *History of Scotland*. This he had begun to read faithfully, believing every word of it, but had at last broken down at the fiftieth king or so. Imagine, then, the moon that arose on the boy when, having pulled a ragged and thumb-worn book from among those of James Hewson the cottar[farm tenant, cottager], he, for the first time, found himself in the midst of *The Arabian Nights*. I shrink from all attempt to set forth in words the rainbow-coloured delight that coruscated in his brain. When Jessie Hewson returned, she found him seated where she had left him, so buried in his volume that he did not lift his head when she entered.

“Ye hae gotten a buik[book],” she said.

“Ay[yes, indeed] have I,” answered Robert, decisively.

“It’s a fine buik[book], that. Did ye ever see ’t afore?”

“Na, never.”

“There’s three wolums[volumes] o’ ’t about, here and there,” said Jessie; and with the child on one arm, she proceeded with the other hand to search for them in the *crap o’ the wa’*, that is, on the top of the wall where the rafters rest.

There she found two or three books, which, after examining them, she placed on the dresser beside Robert.

“There’s nane[none] o’ them there,” she said; “but maybe ye wad[would] like to luik[look] at that anes[ones].”

Robert thanked her, but was too busy to feel the least curiosity about any book in the world but the one he was reading. He read on, heart and soul and mind absorbed in the marvels of the eastern skald; the stories told in the streets of Cairo, amidst gorgeous costumes, and camels, and white-veiled women, vibrating here in the heart of a Scotch boy, in the darkest corner of a mud cottage, at the foot of a hill of cold-loving pines, with a barefooted girl and a baby for his companions.

But the pleasure he had been having was of a sort rather to expedite than to delay the subjective arrival of dinner-time. There was, however, happily no occasion to go home in order to appease his hunger; he had but to join the men and women in the barley-field: there was sure to be enough, for Miss Lammie was at the head of the commissariat.

When he had had as much milk-porridge as he could eat, and a good slice of swack[limber, supple] cheese, with a cap[wooden cup or bowl] of ale, all of which he consumed as if the good of them lay in the haste of their appropriation, he hurried back to the cottage, and sat there reading *The Arabian Nights*, till the sun went down in the orange-hued west, and the gloamin’ came, and with it the reapers, John and Elspet Hewson, and their son George, to their supper and early bed.

John was a cheerful, rough, Roman-nosed, black-eyed man, who took snuff largely, and was not careful to remove the traces of the habit. He had a loud voice, and an original way of regarding things, which, with his vivacity, made every remark sound like the proclamation of a discovery.

"Are ye there, Robert?" said he, as he entered. Robert rose, absorbed and silent.

"He's been here a' day, readin' like a colliginer[college student]," said Jessie.

"What are ye readin' sae eident[industrious, diligent], man?" asked John.

"A buik[book] o' stories, here," answered Robert, carelessly, shy of being supposed so much engrossed with them as he really was.

I should never expect much of a young poet who was not rather ashamed of the distinction which yet he chiefly coveted. There is a modesty in all young delight. It is wild and shy, and would hide itself, like a boy's or maiden's first love, from the gaze of the people. Something like this was Robert's feeling over *The Arabian Nights*.

"Ay[yes, indeed]," said John, taking snuff from a small bone spoon, "it's a gran' buik[book] that. But my son Charley, him 'at 's deid an' gane[gone] hame[home], wad[would] hae tell't ye it was idle time readin' that, wi' sic[such] a buik[book] as that ither[other] lyin' at yer elbuck[elbow]."

He pointed to one of the books Jessie had taken from the crap o' the wa'[natural shelf between wall and roof] and laid down beside him on the well-scoured dresser. Robert took up the volume and opened it. There was no title-page.

"The Tempest?" he said. "What is 't? Poetry?"

"Ay[yes, indeed] is 't. It's Shackspear."

"I hae heard o' *him*," said Robert. "What was he?"

"A player kin'[kind] o' a chiel'[child, young person], wi' an unco[very] sicht o' brains," answered John. "He cudna hae had muckle[much] time to gang[go] skelpin'[tramping; striking] and sornin'[taking food or lodging (sponging or by threat)] aboot the country like maist[most, almost] o' thae[those] cattle[persons of contempt], gin[if] he vrote[wrote] a' that, I'm thinkin'."

"Whaur did he bide?"

"Awa'[away] in Englan'—maistly[mostly] aboot Lonnon, I'm thinkin'. That's the place for a' by-ordinar[out of the ordinary] fowk[folk], they tell me."

"Hoo[how] lang[long] is 't sin[since] he deid?"

"I dinna ken. A hunner year or twa, I s' warran'. It's a lang[long] time. But I'm thinkin' fowk[folk] than was jist something like what they are noo[now]. But I ken unco[very] little aboot him, for the prent[print] 's some sma'[small, little], and I'm some ill for losin' my characters, and sae I dinna win[get, go] that far benn[inside] wi' him. Geordie there 'll tell ye mair[more] aboot him."

But George Hewson had not much to communicate, for he had but lately landed in Shakspere's country, and had got but a little way inland yet. Nor did Robert much care, for his head was full of *The Arabian Nights*. This, however, was his first introduction to Shakspere.

Finding himself much at home, he stopped yet a while, shared in the supper, and resumed his seat in the corner when the book was brought out for worship. The iron lamp, with its wick of rush-pith, which hung against the side of the chimney, was lighted, and John sat down to read. But as his eyes and the print, too, had grown a little dim with years, the lamp was not enough, and he asked for a "fir-can'le[a torch (of firwood)]." A splint of fir dug from the peat-bog was handed to him. He lighted it at the lamp, and held it in his hand over the page. Its clear resinous flame enabled him to read a short psalm. Then they sang a most wailful tune, and John prayed. If I were to give the prayer as he uttered it, I might

make my reader laugh, therefore I abstain, assuring him only that, although full of long words—amongst the rest, *aspiration* and *ravishment*—the prayer of the cheerful, joke-loving cottar[farm tenant, cottager] contained evidence of a degree of religious development rare, I doubt, amongst bishops.

When Robert left the cottage, he found the sky partly clouded and the air cold. The nearest way home was across the barley-stubble of the day's reaping, which lay under a little hill covered with various species of the pine. His own soul, after the restful day he had spent, and under the reaction from the new excitement of the stories he had been reading, was like a quiet, moonless night. The thought of his mother came back upon him, and her written words, "O Lord, my heart is very sore"; and the thought of his father followed that, and he limped slowly home, laden with mournfulness. As he reached the middle of the field, the wind was suddenly there with a low *sough*[*sigh, sound of wind*] from out of the north-west. The heads of barley in the sheaves leaned away with a soft rustling from before it; and Robert felt for the first time the sadness of a harvest-field. Then the wind swept away to the pine-covered hill, and raised a rushing and a wailing amongst its thin-clad branches, and to the ear of Robert the trees were singing over again in their night solitudes the air sung by the cottar's[farm tenant, cottager] family. When he looked to the north-west, whence the wind came, he saw nothing but a pale cleft in the sky. The meaning, the music of the night awoke in his soul; he forgot his lame foot, and the weight of Mr. Lammie's great boots, ran home and up the stair to his own room, seized his violin with eager haste, nor laid it down again till he could draw from it, at will, a sound like the moaning of the wind over the stubble-field. Then he knew that he could play the Flowers of the Forest. The Wind that Shakes the Barley cannot have been named

from the barley after it was cut, but while it stood in the field: the Flowers of the Forest was of the gathered harvest.

He tried the air once over in the dark, and then carried his violin down to the room where Mr. and Miss Lammie sat.

"I think I can play 't noo[now], Lammie," he said abruptly.

"Play what, callant[stripling, lad (term of affection)]?" asked his host.

"The Flooers o' the Forest."

"Play awa'[away] than."

And Robert played—not so well as he had hoped. I dare say it was a humble enough performance, but he gave something at least of the expression Lammie desired. For, the moment the tune was over, he exclaimed,

"Weel dune[done], Robert man! ye'll be a fiddler some day yet!"

And Robert was well satisfied with the praise.

"I wish yer mother had been alive," the farmer went on. "She wad[would] hae been rael[real] prood to hear ye play like that. Eh! she likit the fiddle weel. And she culd[could] play bonny upo' the piana hersel'. It was something to hear the twa o' them playing thegither[together], him on the fiddle—that verra[very] fiddle o' 's father's 'at ye hae i' yer han'—and her on the piana. Eh! but she was a bonnie wuman[woman] as ever I saw, an' that quaiet! It's my belief she never thocht[thought] aboot her ain[own] beowty[beauty] frae[from] week's en' to week's en', and that's no sayin' little—is 't, Aggy?"

"I never preten't ony[any] richt to think aboot sic[such]," returned Miss Lammie, with a mild indignation.

"That's richt, lass. Od[form of "God' (minced oath)], ye're aye i' the richt—though I say 't 'at sudna[I say it that should not]."

Miss Lammie must indeed have been good-natured, to answer only with a genuine laugh. Shargar looked explosive with anger. But Robert would fain hear more of his mother.

“What was my mother like, Lammie?” he asked.

“Eh, my man! ye suld[should] hae seen her upon a bonnie bay mere that yer father gae[gave] her. Faith! she sat as straught[straight] as a rash[needle used in weaving], wi’ jist a hing[hang] i’ the heid[head] o’ her, like the heid[head] o’ a halm o’ wild aits[oats].”

“My father wasna that ill till her than?” suggested Robert.

“Wha ever daured[dared] say sic[such] a thing?” returned Lammie, but in a tone so far from satisfactory to Robert, that he inquired no more in that direction.

I need hardly say that from that night Robert was more than ever diligent with his violin.

Chapter 21 - The Dragon

Next day, his foot was so much better that he sent Shargar to Rothieden to buy the string, taking with him Robert's school-bag, in which to carry off his Sunday shoes; for as to those left at Dooble Sanny's, they judged it unsafe to go in quest of them: the soutar[cobbler] could hardly be in a humour fit to be intruded upon.

Having procured the string, Shargar went to Mrs. Falconer's. Anxious not to encounter her, but, if possible, to bag the boots quietly, he opened the door, peeped in, and seeing no one, made his way towards the kitchen. He was arrested, however, as he crossed the passage by the voice of Mrs. Falconer calling, "Wha's[who is] that?" There she was at the parlour door. It paralyzed him. His first impulse was to make a rush and escape. But the boots—he could not go without at least an attempt upon them. So he turned and faced her with inward trembling.

"Wha's[who is] that?" repeated the old lady, regarding him fixedly. "Ow[oh], it's you! What duv[do] *ye* want? Ye camna[did not come] to see *me*, I'm thinkin'! What hae ye i' that bag?"

"I cam to coff[buy] twine for the draigon," answered Shargar.

"Ye had twine eneuch[enough] afore!"

"It bruik. It wasna strang[strong] eneuch[enough]."

"Whaur got ye the siller[silver, money] to buy mair[more]? lat's[let's] see 't?"

Shargar took the string from the bag.

"Sic[such] a sicht o' twine! What paid ye for 't?"

"A shillin'."

"Whaur got ye the shillin'?"

“Lammie gae[gave] ’t to Robert.”

“I winna[will not] hae ye tak siller[silver, money] frae[from] naebody. It’s ill mainners[manners]. Hae[here]!” said the old lady, putting her hand in her pocket, and taking out a shilling. “Hae,” she said. “Gie[give] Lammie back his shillin’, an’ tell ’im ’at I wadna hae ye learn sic[such] ill customs as tak siller[silver, money]. It’s eneuch[enough] to gang[go] sornin’[taking food or lodging (sponging or by threat)] upon ’im as ye du[do], ohn[without] beggit for siller[silver, money]. Are they a’ weel?”

“Ay[yes, indeed], brawly[admirably, very, very much],” answered Shargar, putting the shilling in his pocket.

In another moment Shargar had, without a word of adieu, embezzled the shoes, and escaped from the house without seeing Betty. He went straight to the shop he had just left, and bought another shilling’s worth of string.

When he got home, he concealed nothing from Robert, whom he found seated in the barn, with his fiddle, waiting his return.

Robert started to his feet. He could appropriate his grandfather’s violin, to which, possibly, he might have shown as good a right as his grandmother—certainly his grandfather would have accorded it him—but her money was sacred.

“Shargar, ye vratch[wretch]!” he cried, “fess[fetch, bring] that shillin’ here direckly. Tak the twine wi’ ye, and gar[cause, compel] them gie[give] ye back the shillin’.”

“They winna[will not] brak[break] the bargain,” cried Shargar, beginning almost to whimper, for a savoury smell of dinner was coming across the yard.

"Tell them it's stown[stolen] siller[silver, money], and they'll be in het[hot] watter[water] aboot it gin[if] they dinna gie[give] ye 't back."

"I maun[must, have to] hae my denner[dinner] first," remonstrated Shargar.

But the spirit of his grandmother was strong in Robert, and in a matter of rectitude there must be no temporizing. Therein he could be as tyrannical as the old lady herself.

"De'il[not] a bite or a sup[drink] s' gang[go] ower[over] your thrapple[windpipe, throat] till I see that shillin'."

There was no help for it. Six hungry miles must be trudged by Shargar ere he got a morsel to eat. Two hours and a half passed before he reappeared. But he brought the shilling. As to how he recovered it, Robert questioned him in vain. Shargar, in his turn, was obstinate.

"She's a some camstairy[unmanageable, wild] wife, that grannie o' yours," said Lammie, when Robert returned the shilling with Mrs. Falconer's message, "but I reckon I maun[must, have to] pit[put, make] it i' my pooch[pocket, pouch], for she *will* hae her ain[own] gait[way], an' I dinna want to strive wi' her. But gin[if] ony[any] o' ye be in want o' a shillin' ony[any] day, lads, as lang[long] 's I'm abune[above, over] the yird[earth]—this ane[one] 'll be grown twa, or maybe mair[more], 'gen[by, in time for, whether] that time."

So saying, the farmer put the shilling into his pocket, and buttoned it up.

The dragon flew splendidly now, and its strength was mighty. It was Robert's custom to drive a stake in the ground, slanting against the wind, and thereby tether the animal, as if it were up there grazing in its own natural region. Then he would lie down by the stake and read *The Arabian Nights*, every now and then casting a glance upward at the creature alone in the waste air, yet all in his power by the string at his side. Somehow the high-flown dragon was a bond between him and the

blue; he seemed nearer to the sky while it flew, or at least the heaven seemed less far away and inaccessible. While he lay there gazing, all at once he would find that his soul was up with the dragon, feeling as it felt, tossing about with it in the torrents of the air. Out at his eyes it would go, traverse the dim stairless space, and sport with the wind-blown monster. Sometimes, to aid his aspiration, he would take a bit of paper, make a hole in it, pass the end of the string through the hole, and send the messenger scudding along the line athwart the depth of the wind. If it stuck by the way, he would get a telescope of Lammie's, and therewith watch its struggles till it broke loose, then follow it careering up to the kite. Away with each successive paper his imagination would fly, and a sense of air, and height, and freedom settled from his play into his very soul, a germ to sprout hereafter, and enrich the forms of his aspirations. And all his after-memories of kite-flying were mingled with pictures of eastern magnificence, for from the airy height of the dragon his eyes always came down upon the enchanted pages of John Hewson's book.

Sometimes, again, he would throw down his book, and sitting up with his back against the stake, lift his bonny leddy[lady] from his side, and play as he had never played in Rothieden, playing to the dragon aloft, to keep him strong in his soaring, and fierce in his battling with the winds of heaven. Then he fancied that the monster swooped and swept in arcs, and swayed curving to and fro, in rhythmic response to the music floating up through the wind.

What a full globated symbolism lay then around the heart of the boy in his book, his violin, his kite!

Chapter 22 - Dr. Anderson

One afternoon, as they were sitting at their tea, a footstep in the garden approached the house, and then a figure passed the window. Lammie started to his feet.

"Bless my sowl[soul], Aggy! that's Anderson!" he cried, and hurried to the door.

His daughter followed. The boys kept their seats. A loud and hearty salutation reached their ears; but the voice of the farmer was all they heard. Presently he returned, bringing with him the tallest and slenderest man Robert had ever seen. He was considerably over six feet, with a small head, and delicate, if not fine features, a gentle look in his blue eyes, and a slow clear voice, which sounded as if it were thinking about every word it uttered. The hot sun of India seemed to have burned out everything self-assertive, leaving him quietly and rather sadly contemplative.

"Come in, come in," repeated Lammie, overflowing with glad welcome. "What'll ye hae? There's a frien' o' yer ain[own]," he continued, pointing to Robert, "an' a fine lad." Then lowering his voice, he added: "A son o' poor Anerew's, ye ken, doctor."

The boys rose, and Dr. Anderson, stretching his long arms across the table, shook hands kindly with Robert and Shargar. Then he sat down and began to help himself to the cakes, at which Robert wondered, seeing there was "white breid"[bread] on the table. Miss Lammie presently came in with the teapot and some additional dainties, and the boys took the opportunity of beginning at the beginning again.

Dr. Anderson remained for a few days at Bodyfauld, sending Shargar to Rothieden for some necessaries from The Boar's Head, where he had left his servant and luggage. During this time Lammie was much occupied with his farm affairs, anxious to get his harvest in as quickly as possible, because a change of weather was to be dreaded; so the doctor was left a good deal to himself. He was fond of wandering about, but, thoughtful as he was, did not object to the companionship which Robert implicitly offered him: before many hours were over, the two were friends.

Various things attracted Robert to the doctor. First, he was a relation of his own, older than himself, the first he had known except his father, and Robert's heart was one of the most dutiful. Second, or perhaps I ought to have put this first, he was the only *gentleman*, except Eric Ericson, whose acquaintance he had yet made. Third, he was kind to him, and gentle to him, and, above all, respectful to him; and to be respected was a new sensation to Robert altogether. And lastly, he could tell stories of elephants and tiger hunts, and all *The Arabian Nights* of India. He did not volunteer much talk, but Robert soon found that he could draw him out.

But what attracted the man to the boy?

"Ah! Robert," said the doctor one day, sadly, "it's a sore thing to come home after being thirty years away."

He looked up at the sky, then all around at the hills: the face of Nature alone remained the same. Then his glance fell on Robert, and he saw a pair of black eyes looking up at him, brimful of tears. And thus the man was drawn to the boy.

Robert worshipped Dr. Anderson. As long as he remained their visitor, kite and violin and all were forgotten, and he followed him like a dog. To

have such a gentleman for a relation, was grand indeed. What could he do for him? He ministered to him in all manner of trifles—a little to the amusement of Dr. Anderson, but more to his pleasure, for he saw that the boy was both large-hearted and lowly-minded: Dr. Anderson had learned to read character, else he would never have been the honour to his profession that he was.

But all the time Robert could not get him to speak about his father. He steadily avoided the subject.

When he went away, the two boys walked with him to The Boar's Head, caught a glimpse of his Hindoo attendant, much to their wonderment, received from the doctor a sovereign apiece and a kind good-bye, and returned to Bodyfauld.

Dr. Anderson remained a few days longer at Rothieden, and amongst others visited Mrs. Falconer, who was his first cousin. What passed between them Robert never heard, nor did his grandmother even allude to the visit. He went by the mail-coach from Rothieden to Aberdeen, and whether he should ever see him again Robert did not know.

He flew his kite no more for a while, but betook himself to the work of the harvest-field, in which he was now able for a share. But his violin was no longer neglected.

Day after day passed in the delights of labour, broken for Robert by *The Arabian Nights* and the violin, and for Shargar by attendance upon Miss Lammie, till the fields lay bare of their harvest, and the night-wind of autumn moaned everywhere over the vanished glory of the country, and it was time to go back to school.

Chapter 23 - An Auto Da Fé

The morning at length arrived when Robert and Shargar must return to Rothieden. A keen autumnal wind was blowing far-off feathery clouds across a sky of pale blue; the cold freshened the spirits of the boys, and tightened their nerves and muscles, till they were like bow-strings. No doubt the winter was coming, but the sun, although his day's work was short and slack, was still as clear as ever. So gladsome was the world, that the boys received the day as a fresh holiday, and strenuously forgot to-morrow. The wind blew straight from Rothieden, and between sun and wind a bright thought awoke in Robert. The dragon should not be carried—he should fly home.

After they had said farewell, in which Shargar seemed to suffer more than Robert, and had turned the corner of the stable, they heard the good farmer shouting after them,

"There'll be anither hairst[harvest] neist[next, nearest] year, boys," which wonderfully restored their spirits. When they reached the open road, Robert laid his violin carefully into a broom-bush. Then the tail was unrolled, and the dragon ascended steady as an angel whose work is done. Shargar took the stick at the end of the string, and Robert resumed his violin. But the creature was hard to lead in such a wind; so they made a loop on the string, and passed it round Shargar's chest, and he tugged the dragon home. Robert longed to take his share in the struggle, but he could not trust his violin to Shargar, and so had to walk beside ingloriously. On the way they laid their plans for the accommodation of the dragon. But the violin was the greater difficulty. Robert would not hear of the factory, for reasons best known to himself, and there were

serious objections to taking it to Dooble Sanny. It was resolved that the only way was to seize the right moment, and creep upstairs with it before presenting themselves to Mrs. Falconer. Their intended maneuvres with the kite would favour the concealment of this stroke.

Before they entered the town they drew in the kite a little way, and cut off a dozen yards of the string, which Robert put in his pocket, with a stone tied to the end. When they reached the house, Shargar went into the little garden and tied the string of the kite to the paling between that and Captain Forsyth's. Robert opened the street door, and having turned his head on all sides like a thief, darted with his violin up the stairs. Having laid his treasure in one of the presses in Shargar's garret, he went to his own, and from the skylight threw the stone down into the captain's garden, fastening the other end of the string to the bedstead. Escaping as cautiously as he had entered, he passed hurriedly into their neighbour's garden, found the stone, and joined Shargar. The ends were soon united, and the kite let go. It sunk for a moment, then, arrested by the bedstead, towered again to its former "pride of place," sailing over Rothieden, grand and unconcerned, in the wastes of air.

But the end of its tether was in Robert's garret. And that was to him a sense of power, a thought of glad mystery. There was henceforth, while the dragon flew, a relation between the desolate little chamber, in that lowly house buried among so many more aspiring abodes, and the unmeasured depths and spaces, the stars, and the unknown heavens. And in the next chamber lay the fiddle free once more,—yet another magical power whereby his spirit could forsake the earth and mount heavenwards.

All that night, all the next day, all the next night, the dragon flew.

Not one smile broke over the face of the old lady as she received them. Was it because she did not know what acts of disobedience, what breaches of the moral law, the two children of possible perdition might have committed while they were beyond her care, and she must not run the risk of smiling upon iniquity? I think it was rather that there was no smile in her religion, which, while it developed the power of a darkened conscience, overlaid and half-smothered all the lovelier impulses of her grand nature. How could she smile? Did not the world lie under the wrath and curse of God? Was not her own son in hell for ever? Had not the blood of the Son of God been shed for him in vain? Had not God meant that it should be in vain? For by the gift of his Spirit could he not have enabled him to accept the offered pardon? And for anything she knew, was not Robert going after him to the place of misery? How could she smile?

"Noo[now] be dooce[gentle, sensible]," she said, the moment she had shaken hands with them, with her cold hands, so clean and soft and smooth. With a volcanic heart of love, her outside was always so still and cold!—snow on the mountain sides, hot vein-coursing lava within. For her highest duty was submission to the will of God. Ah! if she had only known the God who claimed her submission! But there is time enough for every heart to know him.

"Noo[now] be dooce[gentle, sensible]," she repeated, "an' sit doon, and tell me aboot the fowk[folk] at Bodyfauld. I houpe ye thankit them, or ye left, for their muckle[much] kindness to ye."

The boys were silent.

"Didna ye thank them?"

"No, grannie; I dinna think 'at we did."

“Weel, that was ill-faured[unbecoming, ill-favored] o’ ye. Eh! but the hert[heart] is deceitfu’ aboon[above, over] a’ thing[everything, anything], and desperately wicked. Who can know it? Come awa’[away]. Come awa’[away]. Robert, festen[fasten, bind] the door.”

And she led them to the corner for prayer, and poured forth a confession of sin for them and for herself, such as left little that could have been added by her own profligate son, had he joined in the prayer. Either there are no degrees in guilt, or the Scotch language was equal only to the confession of children and holy women, and could provide no more awful words for the contrition of the prodigal or the hypocrite. But the words did little harm, for Robert’s mind was full of the kite and the violin, and was probably nearer God thereby than if he had been trying to feel as wicked as his grandmother told God that he was. Shargar was even more divinely employed at the time than either; for though he had not had the manners to thank his benefactor, his heart had all the way home been full of tender thoughts of Miss Lammie’s kindness; and now, instead of confessing sins that were not his, he was loving her over and over, and wishing to be back with her instead of with this awfully good woman, in whose presence there was no peace, for all the atmosphere of silence and calm in which she sat.

Confession over, and the boys at liberty again, a new anxiety seized them. Grannie must find out that Robert’s shoes were missing, and what account was to be given of the misfortune, for Robert would not, or could not lie? In the midst of their discussion a bright idea flashed upon Shargar, which, however, he kept to himself: he would steal them, and bring them home in triumph, emulating thus Robert’s exploit in delivering his bonny leddy[lady].

The shoemaker sat behind his door to be out of the draught: Shargar might see a great part of the workshop without being seen, and he could pick Robert's shoes from among a hundred. Probably they lay just where Robert had laid them, for Dooble Sanny paid attention to any job only in proportion to the persecution accompanying it.

So the next day Shargar contrived to slip out of school just as the writing lesson began, for he had great skill in conveying himself unseen, and, with his book-bag, slunk barefooted into the soutar's entry.

The shop door was a little way open, and the red eyes of Shargar had only the corner next it to go peering about in. But there he saw the shoes. He got down on his hands and knees, and crept nearer. Yes, they were beyond a doubt Robert's shoes. He made a long arm, like a beast of prey, seized them, and, losing his presence of mind upon possession, drew them too hastily towards him. The shoemaker saw them as they vanished through the door, and darted after them. Shargar was off at full speed, and Sandy followed with hue and cry. Every idle person in the street joined in the pursuit, and all who were too busy or too respectable to run crowded to door and windows. Shargar made instinctively for his mother's old lair; but bethinking himself when he reached the door, he turned, and, knowing nowhere else to go, fled in terror to Mrs. Falconer's, still, however, holding fast by the shoes, for they were Robert's.

As Robert came home from school, wondering what could have become of his companion, he saw a crowd about his grandmother's door, and pushing his way through it in some dismay, found Dooble Sanny and Shargar confronting each other before the stern justice of Mrs. Falconer.

"Ye're a leear[lier]," the soutar[cobbler] was panting out. "I haena had a pair o' shune[shoes] o' Robert's i' my han's[hands] this three month. Thae[those, these

shune[shoes]—lat[let, allow] me see them—they're—Here's Robert himsel'. Are thae[those, these] shune[shoes] yours, noo[now], Robert?"

"Ay[yes, indeed] are they. Ye made them yersel'."

"Hoo[how] cam they in my chop[shop, store], than?"

"Speir[ask about, enquire] nae[no, not] mair[more] quest'ons nor's[than is] worth answerin'," said Robert, with a look meant to be significant. "They're my shune[shoes], and I'll keep them. Aiblins[perhaps, possibly] ye dinna aye ken wha's[whose] shune[shoes] ye hae, or whan[when] they cam in to ye."

"What for didna Shargar come an' speir[ask about, enquire] efter[after] them, than, in place o' makin' a thief o' himsel' that gait[way]?"

"Ye may haud[hold, keep] yer tongue," returned Robert, with yet more significance.

"I was aye a gowk[fool, blockhead]," said Shargar, in apologetic reflection, looking awfully white, and afraid to lift an eye to Mrs. Falconer, yet reassured a little by Robert's presence.

Some glimmering seemed now to have dawned upon the soutar[cobbler], for he began to prepare a retreat. Meantime Mrs. Falconer sat silent, allowing no word that passed to escape her. She wanted to be at the bottom of the mysterious affair, and therefore held her peace.

"Weel, I'm sure, Robert, ye never tellt me aboot the shune[shoes]," said Alexander. "I s' jist tak them back wi' me, and du[do] what's wantit to them. And I'm sorry that I hae gien[given] ye this tribble[trouble], Mistress Faukner; but it was a' that fule's wite[blame, fault] there. I didna even ken it was him, till we war[were] near-han' the hoose[house]."

"Lat[let, allow] me see the shune[shoes]," said Mrs. Falconer, speaking almost for the first time. "What's the maitter[matter] wi' them?"

Examining the shoes, she saw they were in a perfectly sound state, and this confirmed her suspicion that there was more in the affair than had yet come out. Had she taken the straightforward measure of examining Robert, she would soon have arrived at the truth. But she had such a dread of causing a lie to be told, that she would adopt any roundabout way rather than ask a plain question of a suspected culprit. So she laid the shoes down beside her, saying to the soutar[cobbler],

"There's naething amiss wi' the shune[shoes]. Ye can lea'[leave] them."

Thereupon Alexander went away, and Robert and Shargar would have given more than their dinner to follow him. Grannie neither asked any questions, however, nor made a single remark on what had passed. Dinner was served and eaten, and the boys returned to their afternoon school.

No sooner was she certain that they were safe under the school-master's eye than the old lady put on her black silk bonnet and her black woollen shawl, took her green cotton umbrella, which served her for a staff, and, refusing Betty's proffered assistance, set out for Dooble Sanny's shop.

As she drew near she heard the sounds of his violin. When she entered, he laid his *auld wife* carefully aside, and stood in an expectant attitude.

"Mr. Elshender, I want to be at the boddom[bottom] o' this," said Mrs. Falconer.

"Weel, mem, gang[go] to the boddom[bottom] o' 't," returned Dooble Sanny, dropping on his stool, and taking his stone upon his lap and stroking it, as if it had been some quadrupedal pet. Full of rough but real politeness to women when in good humour, he lost all his manners along with his temper upon the slightest provocation, and her tone irritated him.

“Hoo[how] cam Robert’s shune[shoes] to be i’ your shop?”

“Somebody bude till hae brocht[had to have brought] them, mem. In a’ my expairience, and that’s no sma’[small, little], I never kent[known, knew] pair o’ shune[shoes] gang[go] ohn[without] a pair o’ feet i’ the wame[belly] o’ them.”

“Hoots[pshaw]! what kin’[kind] o’ gait[way] ’s that to speyk till a body? Whase[whose] feet was inside the shune[shoes]?”

“De’ il a bit[Not a bit] o’ me kens, mem.”

“Dinna sweir, whatever ye du[do].”

‘De’il but I *will* sweir, mem; an’ gin[if] ye anger me, I’ll jist sweir awfu’.’

“I’m sure I hae nae[no, not] wuss[wish] to anger ye, man! Canna ye help a body to win[get, go] at the boddom[bottom] o’ a thing ohn[without] angert[angered, grieved] an’ sworn?”

“Weel, I kenna wha brocht[brought] the shune[shoes], as I tellt ye a’ready.”

“But they wantit nae[no, not] men’in’[mending, healin].”

“I micht hae men’t[mended]them an’ forgotten ’t, mem.”

“Noo[now] ye’re leein’[lying].”

“Gin[if] ye gang[go] on that gait[way], mem, I winna[will not] speyk a word o’ trowth[truth, indeed] frae[from] this moment foret[forward].”

“Jist tell me what ye ken aboot thae[those, these] shune[shoes], an’ I’ll no say anither word.”

“Weel, mem, I’ll tell ye the trowth[truth, indeed]. The de’il[devil] brocht[brought] them in ae day in a lang[long] taings[tongs, prongs]; and says he, ‘Elshender, men’[mend] thae[those, these] shune[shoes] for puir[poor] Robby Faukner; an’ dooble-sole[double-sole] them for the life o’ ye; for that auld luckie-minnie[grandmother] o’ his ’ill[will] sune[soon, early] hae him doon oor gait[way], and the grun’[ground] ’s het[hot] i’ the noo[just now]; an’ I dinna want to be ower[over] sair[sore] upon him,

for he's a fine chield[child, young person], an' 'll mak[make, do] a fine fiddler gin[if] he live lang[long] eneuch[enough].'"

Mrs. Falconer left the shop without another word, but with an awful suspicion which the last heedless words of the shoemaker had aroused in her bosom. She left him bursting with laughter over his lapstone. He caught up his fiddle and played The De'il's[devil is] i' the Women lustily and with expression. But he little thought what he had done.

As soon as she reached her own room, she went straight to her bed and *disinterred* the bonny leddy's coffin. She was gone; and in her stead, horror of horrors! lay in the unhallowed chest that body of divinity known as Boston's *Fourfold State*. Vexation, anger, disappointment, and grief possessed themselves of the old woman's mind. She ranged the house like the "questing beast" of the Round Table, but failed in finding the violin before the return of the boys. Not a word did she say all that evening, and their oppressed hearts foreboded ill. They felt that there was thunder in the clouds, a sleeping storm in the air; but how or when it would break they had no idea.

Robert came home to dinner the next day a few minutes before Shargar. As he entered his grandmother's parlour, a strange odour greeted his sense. A moment more, and he stood rooted with horror, and his hair began to rise on his head. His violin lay on its back on the fire, and a yellow tongue of flame was licking the red lips of a hole in its belly. All its strings were shrivelled up save one, which burst as he gazed. And beside, stern as a Druidess, sat his grandmother in her chair, feeding her eyes with grim satisfaction on the detestable sacrifice. At length the rigidity of Robert's whole being relaxed in an involuntary howl like that of a wild beast, and he turned and rushed from the house in a helpless

agony of horror. Where he was going he knew not, only a blind instinct of modesty drove him to hide his passion from the eyes of men.

From her window Miss St. John saw him tearing like one demented along the top walk of the captain's garden, and watched for his return. He came far sooner than she expected.

Before he arrived at the factory, Robert began to hear strange sounds in the desolate place. When he reached the upper floor, he found men with axe and hammer destroying the old woodwork, breaking the old jennies, pitching the balls of lead into baskets, and throwing the spools into crates. Was there nothing but destruction in the world? There, most horrible! his "bonny leddy" dying of flames, and here, the temple of his refuge torn to pieces by unhallowed hands! What could it mean? Was his grandmother's vengeance here too? But he did not care. He only felt like the dove sent from the ark, that there was no rest for the sole of his foot, that there was no place to hide his head in his agony—that he was naked to the universe; and like a heartless wild thing hunted till its brain is of no more use, he turned and rushed back again upon his track. At one end was the burning idol, at the other the desecrated temple.

No sooner had he entered the captain's garden than Miss St. John met him.

"What is the matter with you, Robert?" she asked, kindly.

"Oh, mem!" gasped Robert, and burst into a very storm of weeping.

It was long before he could speak. He cowered before Miss St. John as if conscious of an unfriendly presence, and seeking to shelter himself by her tall figure from his grandmother's eyes. For who could tell but at the moment she might be gazing upon him from some window, or even from the blue vault above? There was no escaping her. She was the all-seeing eye personified—the eye of the God of the theologians of his country,

always searching out the evil, and refusing to acknowledge the good. Yet so gentle and faithful was the heart of Robert, that he never thought of her as cruel. He took it for granted that somehow or other she must be right. Only what a terrible thing such righteousness was! He stood and wept before the lady.

Her heart was sore for the despairing boy. She drew him to a little summer-seat. He entered with her, and sat down, weeping still. She did her best to soothe him. At last, sorely interrupted by sobs, he managed to let her know the fate of his "bonnie leddy." But when he came to the words, 'She's burnin' in there upo' granny's fire,' he broke out once more with that wild howl of despair, and then, ashamed of himself, ceased weeping altogether, though he could not help the intrusion of certain chokes and sobs upon his otherwise even, though low and sad speech.

Knowing nothing of Mrs. Falconer's character, Miss St. John set her down as a cruel and heartless as well as tyrannical and bigoted old woman, and took the mental position of enmity towards her. In a gush of motherly indignation she kissed Robert on the forehead.

From that chrism he arose a king.

He dried his eyes; not another sob even broke from him; he gave one look, but no word of gratitude, to Miss St. John; bade her good-bye; and walked composedly into his grandmother's parlour, where the neck of the violin yet lay upon the fire only half consumed. The rest had vanished utterly.

"What are they duin' doon at the fact'ry, grannie?" he asked.

"What's wha duin', laddie?" returned his grandmother, curtly.

"They're takin' 't doon."

"Takin' what doon?" she returned, with raised voice.

“Takin’ doon the hoose[house].”

The old woman rose.

“Robert, ye may hae spite in yer hert[heart] for what I hae dune[done] this mornin’, but I cud[could] do no ither[other]. An’ it’s an ill thing to tak sic[such] amen’s[amends] o’ me, as gin[if] I had dune[done] wrang[wrong, injured], by garrin’[causing, compelling] me troo[trust, believe] ’at yer grandfather’s property was to gang[go] the gait[way] o’ ’s auld, useless, ill-mainnert scraich[shriek, bird’s shrill cry] o’ a fiddle.”

“She was the bonniest fiddle i’ the country-side, grannie. And she never gae[gave] a scraich[shriek, bird’s shrill cry] in her life ’cep’[except, but] whan[when] she was han’let[handled] in a mainner[manner] unbecomin’. But we s’ say nae[no, not] mair[more] aboot her, for she’s gane[gone], an’ no by a fair strae-deith[death on one’s own straw (ie, natural death in bed)] either. She had nae[no, not] blude[blood] to cry for vengeance; but the snappin’ o’ her strings an’ the crackin’ o’ her banes[bones] may hae made a cry to gang[go] far eneuch[enough] notwithstandin’.”

The old woman seemed for one moment rebuked under her grandson’s eloquence. He had made a great stride towards manhood since the morning.

“The fiddle’s my ain[own],” she said, in a defensive tone. “And sae is the fact’ry,” she added, as if she had not quite reassured herself concerning it.

“The fiddle’s yours nae[no, not] mair[more], grannie. And for the fact’ry—ye winna[will not] believe me: gang[go] and see yersel’.”

Therewith Robert retreated to his garret.

When he opened the door of it, the first thing he saw was the string of his kite, which, strange to tell, so steady had been the wind, was still up

in the air—still tugging at the bedpost. Whether it was from the stinging thought that the true sky-soarer, the violin, having been devoured by the jaws of the fire-devil, there was no longer any significance in the outward and visible sign of the dragon, or from a dim feeling that the time of kites was gone by and manhood on the threshold, I cannot tell; but he drew his knife from his pocket, and with one down-stroke cut the string in twain. Away went the dragon, free, like a prodigal, to his ruin. And with the dragon, afar into the past, flew the childhood of Robert Falconer. He made one remorseful dart after the string as it swept out of the skylight, but it was gone beyond remeid[remedy, cure]. And never more, save in twilight dreams, did he lay hold on his childhood again. But he knew better and better, as the years rolled on, that he approached a deeper and holier childhood, of which that had been but the feeble and necessarily vanishing type.

As the kite sank in the distance, Mrs. Falconer issued from the house, and went down the street towards the factory.

Before she came back the cloth was laid for dinner, and Robert and Shargar were both in the parlour awaiting her return. She entered heated and dismayed, went into Robert's bedroom, and shut the door hastily. They heard her open the old bureau. In a moment after she came out with a more luminous expression upon her face than Robert had ever seen it bear. It was as still as ever, but there was a strange light in her eyes, which was not confined to her eyes, but shone in a measure from her colourless forehead and cheeks as well. It was long before Robert was able to interpret that change in her look, and that increase of kindness towards himself and Shargar, apparently such a contrast with the holocaust of the morning. Had they both been Benjamins they could not have had more abundant platefuls than she gave them that day. And

when they left her to return to school, instead of the usual "noo[now] be douce[gentle, sensible]," she said, in gentle, almost loving tones, "noo[now], be good lads, baith[both] o' ye."

The conclusion at which Falconer did arrive was that his grandmother had hurried home to see whether the title-deeds of the factory were still in her possession, and had found that they were gone—taken, doubtless, by her son Andrew. At whatever period he had appropriated them, he must have parted with them but recently. And the hope rose luminous that her son had not yet passed into the region "where all life dies, death lives." Terrible consolation! Terrible creed, which made the hope that he was still on this side of the grave working wickedness, light up the face of the mother, and open her hand in kindness. Is it suffering, or is it wickedness, that is the awful thing? "Ah! but they are both combined in the other world." And in this world too, I answer; only, according to Mrs. Falconer's creed, in the other world God, for the sake of the suffering, renders the wickedness eternal!

The old factory was in part pulled down, and out of its remains a granary constructed. Nor did the old lady interpose a word to arrest the alienation of her property.

Chapter 24 - Boot for Bale

Mary St. John was the orphan daughter of an English clergyman, who had left her money enough to make her at least independent. Mrs. Forsyth, hearing that her niece was left alone in the world, had concluded that her society would be a pleasure to herself and a relief to the housekeeping. Even before her father's death, Miss St. John, having met with a disappointment, and concluded herself dead to the world, had been looking about for some way of doing good. The prospect of retirement, therefore, and of being useful to her sick aunt, had drawn her northwards.

She was now about six-and-twenty, filled with two passions—one for justice, the other for music. Her griefs had not made her selfish, nor had her music degenerated into sentiment. The gentle style of the instruction she had received had never begotten a diseased self-consciousness; and if her religion lacked something of the intensity without which a character like hers could not be evenly balanced, its force was not spent on the combating of unholy doubts and selfish fears, but rose on the wings of her music in gentle thanksgiving. Tears had changed her bright-hued hopes into a dove-coloured submission, through which her mind was passing towards a rainbow dawn such as she had never dreamed of. To her as yet the Book of Common Prayer contained all the prayers that human heart had need to offer; what things lay beyond its scope must lie beyond the scope of religion. All such things must be parted with one day, and if they had been taken from her very soon, she was the sooner free from the painful necessity of watching lest earthly love should remove any of the old landmarks dividing what was God's from what was

only man's. She had now retired within the pale of religion, and left the rest of her being, as she thought, "to dull forgetfulness a prey."

She had little comfort in the society of her aunt. Indeed, she felt strongly tempted to return again to England the same month, and seek a divine service elsewhere. But it was not at all so easy then as it is now for a woman to find the opportunity of being helpful in the world of suffering.

Mrs. Forsyth was one of those women who get their own way by the very *vis inertiae* of their silliness. No argument could tell upon her. She was so incapable of seeing anything noble that her perfect satisfaction with everything she herself thought, said, or did, remained unchallenged. She had just illness enough to swell her feeling of importance. She looked down upon Mrs. Falconer from such an immeasurable height that she could not be indignant with her for anything; she only vouchsafed a laugh now and then at her oddities, holding no further communication with her than a condescending bend of the neck when they happened to meet, which was not once a year. But, indeed, she would have patronized the angel Gabriel, if she had had a chance, and no doubt given him a hint or two upon the proper way of praising God. For the rest, she was good-tempered, looked comfortable, and quarrelled with nobody but her rough honest old bear of a husband, whom, in his seventieth year, she was always trying to teach good manners, with the frequent result of a storm of swearing.

But now Mary St. John was thoroughly interested in the strange boy whose growing musical pinions were ever being clipped by the shears of unsympathetic age and crabbed religion, and the idea of doing something for him to make up for the injustice of his grandmother awoke in her a slight glow of that interest in life which she sought only in

doing good. But although ere long she came to love the boy very truly, and although Shargar's life was bound up in the favour of Robert, yet neither stooping angel nor foot-following dog ever loved the lad with the love of that old grandmother, who would for him have given herself to the fire to which she had doomed his greatest delight.

For some days Robert worked hard at his lessons, for he had nothing else to do. Life was very gloomy now. If he could only go to sea, or away to keep sheep on the stormy mountains! If there were only some war going on, that he might *list*[enlist as soldier]! Any fighting with the elements, or with the oppressors of the nations, would make life worth having, a man worth being. But God did not heed. He leaned over the world, a dark care, an immovable fate, bearing down with the weight of his presence all aspiration, all budding delights of children and young persons: all must crouch before him, and uphold his glory with the sacrificial death of every impulse, every admiration, every lightness of heart, every bubble of laughter. Or—which to a mind like Robert's was as bad—if he did not punish for these things, it was because they came not within the sphere of his condescension, were not worth his notice: of sympathy could be no question.

But this gloom did not last long. When souls like Robert's have been ill-taught about God, the true God will not let them gaze too long upon the Moloch which men have set up to represent him. He will turn away their minds from that which men call him, and fill them with some of his own lovely thoughts or works, such as may by degrees prepare the way for a vision of the Father.

One afternoon Robert was passing the soutar's[cobbler's] shop. He had never gone near him since his return. But now, almost mechanically, he went in at the open door.

“Weel, Robert, ye *are* a stranger. But what’s the maitter[matter] wi’ ye? Faith! yon was an ill plisky[trick, prank] ye played me to brak[break] into my chop[shop, store] an’ steal the bonnie leddy.”

“Sandy,” said Robert, solemnly, “ye dinna ken what ye hae dune[done] by that trick ye played me. Dinna ever mention *her* again i’ *my* hearin’.”

“The auld witch hasna gotten a grup[grip, grasp] o’ her again?” cried the shoemaker, starting half up in alarm. “She cam here to me aboot the shune[shoes], but I reckon I sortit[sorted] her!”

“I winna[will not] speir[ask about, enquire] what ye said,” returned Robert. “It’s no maitter[matter] noo[now].”

And the tears rose to his eyes. His bonny lady!

“The Lord guide ’s!” exclaimed the soutar[cobbler]. “What *is* the maitter[matter] wi’ the bonnie leddy?”

“There’s nae[no, not] bonnie leddy ony[any] mair[more]. I saw her brunt[burned] to death afore my verra[very] ain[own] een[eyes].”

The shoemaker sprang to his feet and caught up his paring knife.

“For God’s sake, say ’at yer leein’[lying]!” he cried.

“I wish I war[were] leein’[lying],” returned Robert.

The soutar[cobbler] uttered a terrible oath, and swore—

“I’ll murder the auld—.” The epithet he ended with is too ugly to write.

“Daur[dare] to say sic[such] a word in ae breath wi’ my grannie,” cried Robert, snatching up the lapstone, “an’ I’ll brain ye upo’ yer ain[own] shop-flure.”

Sandy threw the knife on his stool, and sat down beside it. Robert dropped the lapstone. Sandy took it up and burst into tears, which before they were half down his face, turned into tar with the blackness of the same.

“I’m an awfu’ sinner,” he said, “and vengeance has owerta’en me. Gang[go] oot[out] o’ my chop[shop, store]! I wasna worthy o’ her. Gang[go] oot[out], I say, or I’ll kill ye.”

Robert went. Close by the door he met Miss St. John. He pulled off his cap, and would have passed her. But she stopped him.

“I am going for a walk a little way,” she said. “Will you go with me?”

She had come out in the hope of finding him, for she had seen him go up the street.

“That I wull[will],” returned Robert, and they walked on together.

When they were beyond the last house, Miss St. John said,

“Would you like to play on the piano, Robert?”

“Eh, mem!” said Robert, with a deep suspiration. Then, after a pause: “But duv[do] ye think I cud[could]?”

“There’s no fear of that. Let me see your hands.”

“They’re some black, I doobt[suspect], mem,” he remarked, rubbing them hard upon his trowsers before he showed them; “for I was amaist[almost] cawin’[driving, hammering] oot[out] the brains o’ Dooble Sanny wi’ his ain[own] lapstane[stone on which a shoemaker hammers]. He’s an ill-tongued chield[child, young person]. But eh! Mem, ye suld[should] hear him play upo’ the fiddle! He’s greitin’[crying, weeping] his een[eyes] oot[out] e’en[even] noo[now] for the bonnie leddy.”

Not discouraged by her inspection of his hands, black as they were, Miss St. John continued,

“But what would your grandmother say?” she asked.

“She maun[must, have to] ken naething aboot it, mem. I can*not* tell her a’thing[everything, anything]. She wad[would] greit[cry, weep] an’ pray awfu’, an’ lock me up, I daursay. Ye see, she thinks a’ kin’[kind] o’ music ’cep’[except, but psalm-singin’ comes o’ the deevil himsel’. An’ I canna believe that. For

aye whan[when] I see onything by ordinar[out of the ordinary] bonnie, sic[such] like as the mune[moon] was last nicht, it aye gars[causes, compels] me greit[cry, weep] for my brunt[burned] fiddle."

"Well, you must come to me every day for half-an-hour at least, and I will give you a lesson on my piano. But you can't learn by that. And my aunt could never bear to hear you practising. So I'll tell you what you must do. I have a small piano in my own room. Do you know there is a door from your house into my room?"

"Ay[yes, indeed]," said Robert. "That hoose[house] *was* my father's afore your uncle bought it. My father biggit[built] it."

"Is it long since your father died?"

"I dinna ken."

"Where did he die?"

"I dinna ken."

"Do you remember it?"

"No, mem."

"Well, if you will come to my room, you shall practise there. I shall be down-stairs with my aunt. But perhaps I may look up now and then, to see how you are getting on. I will leave the door unlocked, so that you can come in when you like. If I don't want you, I will lock the door. You understand? You mustn't be handling things, you know."

"'Deed, mem, ye may lippen[trust, depend on] to me. But I'm jist feared to lat[let, allow] ye hear me lay a finger upo' the piana, for it's little I cud[could] do wi' my fiddle, an', for the piana! I'm feart I'll jist scunner[disgust, loathing] ye."

"If you really want to learn, there will be no fear of that," returned Miss St. John, guessing at the meaning of the word *scunner*. "I don't

think I am doing anything wrong," she added, half to herself, in a somewhat doubtful tone.

"'Deed no, mem. Ye're jist an angel unawares. For I maist[most, almost] think sometimes that my grannie 'll drive me wud[mad]; for there's naething to read but guid buiks[books], an' naething to sing but psalms; an' there's nae[no, not] fun aboot the hoose[house] but Betty; an' puir[poor] Shargar's nearhan' dementit wi' 't. An' we maun[must, have to] pray till her whether we will or no. An' there's no comfort i' the place but plenty to ate[hate]; an' that canna be guid for onybody. She likes flooers, though, an' wad[would] like me to gar[cause, compel] them grow; but I dinna care aboot it: they tak sic[such] a time afore they come to onything."

Then Miss St. John inquired about Shargar, and began to feel rather differently towards the old lady when she had heard the story. But how she laughed at the tale, and how light-hearted Robert went home, are neither to be told.

The next Sunday, the first time for many years, Dooble Sanny was at church with his wife, though how much good he got by going would be a serious question to discuss.

Chapter 25 - The Gates of Paradise

Robert had his first lesson the next Saturday afternoon. Eager and undismayed by the presence of Mrs, Forsyth, good-natured and contemptuous—for had he not a protecting angel by him?—he hearkened for every word of Miss St. John, combated every fault, and undermined every awkwardness with earnest patience. Nothing delighted Robert so much as to give himself up to one greater. His mistress was thoroughly pleased, and even Mrs. Forsyth gave him two of her soft finger tips to do something or other with—Robert did not know what, and let them go.

About eight o'clock that same evening, his heart beating like a captured bird's, he crept from grannie's parlour, past the kitchen, and up the low stair to the mysterious door. He had been trying for an hour to summon up courage to rise, feeling as if his grandmother must suspect where he was going. Arrived at the barrier, twice his courage failed him; twice he turned and sped back to the parlour. A third time he made the essay, a third time stood at the wondrous door—so long as blank as a wall to his careless eyes, now like the door of the magic *Sesame* that led to the treasure-cave of Ali Baba. He laid his hand on the knob, withdrew it, thought he heard some one in the transe[passage in a house], rushed up the garret stair, and stood listening, hastened down, and with a sudden influx of determination opened the door, saw that the trap was raised, closed the door behind him, and standing with his head on the level of the floor, gazed into the paradise of Miss St. John's room. To have one peep into such a room was a kind of salvation to the half-starved nature of the boy. All before him was elegance, richness, mystery. Womanhood radiated from everything. A fire blazed in the chimney. A rug of long white wool lay before it. A little way off stood the piano. Ornaments

sparkled and shone upon the dressing-table. The door of a wardrobe had swung a little open, and discovered the sombre shimmer of a black silk dress. Something gorgeously red, a China crape shawl, hung glowing beyond it. He dared not gaze any longer. He had already been guilty of an immodesty. He hastened to ascend, and seated himself at the piano.

Let my reader aid me for a moment with his imagination—reflecting what it was to a boy like Robert, and in Robert's misery, to open a door in his own meagre dwelling and gaze into such a room—free to him. If he will aid me so, then let him aid himself by thinking that the house of his own soul has such a door into the infinite beauty, whether he has yet found it or not.

"Just think," Robert said to himself, "o' *me* in sic[such] a place! It's a pailace. It's a fairy pailace. And that angel o' a leddy[lady] bides here, and sleeps there! I wonner[wonder, marvel] gin[if] she ever dreams aboot onything as bonny 's hersel'!"

Then his thoughts took another turn.

"I wonner[wonder, marvel] gin[if] the room was onything like this whan[when] my mamma sleepit in 't? *I* cudna hae been born in sic[such] a gran' place. But my mamma micht hae weel lien[lain] here."

The face of the miniature, and the sad words written below the hymn, came back upon him, and he bowed his head upon his hands. He was sitting thus when Miss St. John came behind him, and heard him murmur the one word *Mamma*! She laid her hand on his shoulder. He started and rose.

"I beg yer pardon, mem. I hae no business to be here, excep' to play. But I cudna help thinkin' aboot my mother; for I was born in this room, mem. Will I gang[go] awa'[away] again?"

He turned towards the door.

“No, no,” said Miss St. John. “I only came to see if you were here. I cannot stop now; but to-morrow you must tell me about your mother. Sit down, and don’t lose any more time. Your grandmother will miss you. And then what would come of it?”

Thus was this rough diamond of a Scotch boy, rude in speech, but full of delicate thought, gathered under the modelling influences of the finished, refined, tender, sweet-tongued, and sweet-thoughted Englishwoman, who, if she had been less of a woman, would have been repelled by his uncouthness; if she had been less of a lady, would have mistaken his commonness for vulgarity. But she was just, like the type of womankind, a virgin-mother. She saw the nobility of his nature through its homely garments, and had been, indeed, sent to carry on the work from which his mother had been too early taken away.

“There’s jist ae thing mem, that vexes me a wee, an’ I dinna ken what to think aboot it,” said Robert, as Miss St. John was leaving the room. “Maybe ye cud[could] bide ae minute till I tell ye.”

“Yes, I can. What is it?”

“I’m nearhan’ sure that whan[when] I lea’[leave] the parlour, grannie ’ill[will] think I’m awa’[away] to my prayers; and sae she’ll think better o’ me nor[than] I deserve. An’ I canna bide that.”

“What should make you suppose that she will think so?”

“Fowk[folk] kens what ane[one] anither’s aboot, ye ken, mem.”

“Then she’ll know you are not at your prayers.”

“Na. For sometimes I div[do] gang[go] to my prayers for a whilie[short time] like, but nae[no, not] for lang[long], for I’m nae[no, not] like ane[one] o’ them ’at he wad[would] care to hear sayin’ a lang[long] screed o’ a prayer till ’im. I hae but ae thing to pray aboot.”

“And what’s that, Robert?”

One of his silences had seized him. He looked confused, and turned away.

“Never mind,” said Miss St. John, anxious to relieve him, and establish a comfortable relation between them; “you will tell me another time.”

“I doobt[suspect] no, mem,” answered Robert, with what most people would think an excess of honesty.

But Miss St. John made a better conjecture as to his apparent closeness.

“At all events,” she said, “don’t mind what your grannie may think, so long as you have no wish to make her think it. Good-night.”

Had she been indeed an angel from heaven, Robert could not have worshipped her more. And why should he? Was she less God’s messenger that she had beautiful arms instead of less beautiful wings?

He practised his scales till his unaccustomed fingers were stiff, then shut the piano with reverence, and departed, carefully peeping into the disenchanted region without the gates to see that no enemy lay in wait for him as he passed beyond them. He closed the door gently; and in one moment the rich lovely room and the beautiful lady were behind him, and before him the bare stair between two white-washed walls, and the long flagged transe[passage in a house] that led to his silent grandmother seated in her arm-chair, gazing into the red coals—for somehow grannie’s fire always glowed, and never blazed—with her round-toed shoes pointed at them from the top of her little wooden stool. He traversed the stair and the transe, entered the parlour, and sat down to his open book as though nothing had happened. But his grandmother saw the light in his face, and did think he had just come from his prayers. And she blessed God that he had put it into her heart to burn the fiddle.

The next night Robert took with him the miniature of his mother, and showed it to Miss St. John, who saw at once that, whatever might be his present surroundings, his mother must have been a lady. A certain fancied resemblance in it to her own mother likewise drew her heart to the boy. Then Robert took from his pocket the gold thimble, and said,

"This thimmel[thimble] was my mamma's. Will ye tak it, mem, for ye ken it's o' nae[no, not] use to me."

Miss St. John hesitated for a moment.

"I will keep it for you, if you like," she said, for she could not bear to refuse it.

"Na, mem; I want ye to keep it to yersel'; for I'm sure my mamma wad[would] hae likit you to hae 't better nor[than] ony[any] ither[other] body."

"Well, I will use it sometimes for your sake. But mind, I will not take it from you; I will only keep it for you."

"Weel, weel, mem; gin[if] ye'll keep it till I speir[ask about, enquire] for 't, that'll du[do] weel eneuch[enough]," answered Robert, with a smile.

He laboured diligently; and his progress corresponded to his labour. It was more than intellect that guided him: Falconer had genius for whatever he cared for.

Meantime the love he bore his teacher, and the influence of her beauty, began to mould[mould, loose earth] him, in his kind and degree, after her likeness, so that he grew nice in his person and dress, and smoothed the roughness and moderated the broadness of his speech with the amenities of the English which she made so sweet upon her tongue. He became still more obedient to his grandmother, and more diligent at school; gathered to himself golden opinions without knowing it, and was gradually developing into a rustic gentleman.

Nor did the piano absorb all his faculties. Every divine influence tends to the rounded perfection of the whole. His love of Nature grew more rapidly. Hitherto it was only in summer that he had felt the presence of a power in her and yet above her: in winter, now, the sky was true and deep, though the world was waste and sad; and the tones of the wind that roared at night about the goddess-haunted house, and moaned in the chimneys of the lowly dwelling that nestled against it, woke harmonies within him which already he tried to spell out falteringly. Miss St. John began to find that he put expressions of his own into the simple things she gave him to play, and even dreamed a little at his own will when alone with the passive instrument. Little did Mrs. Falconer think into what a seventh heaven of accursed music she had driven her boy.

But not yet did he tell his friend, much as he loved and much as he trusted her, the little he knew of his mother's sorrows and his father's sins, or whose the hand that had struck him when she found him lying in the waste factory.

For a time almost all his trouble about God went from him. Nor do I think that this was only because he rarely thought of him at all: God gave him of himself in Miss St. John. But words dropped now and then from off the shelves where his old difficulties lay, and they fell like seeds upon the heart of Miss St. John, took root, and rose in thoughts: in the heart of a true woman the talk of a child even will take life.

One evening Robert rose from the table, not unwatched of his grandmother, and sped swiftly and silently through the dark, as was his custom, to enter the chamber of enchantment. Never before had his hand failed to alight, sure as a lark on its nest, upon the brass handle of the door that admitted him to his paradise. It missed it now, and fell on

something damp, and rough, and repellent instead. Horrible, but true suspicion! While he was at school that day, his grandmother, moved by what doubt or by what certainty she never revealed, had had the doorway walled up. He felt the place all over. It was to his hands the living tomb of his mother's vicar on earth.

He returned to his book, pale as death, but said never a word. The next day the stones were plastered over.

Thus the door of bliss vanished from the earth. And neither the boy nor his grandmother ever said that it had been.

Part 2. His Youth

Chapter 1 - Robert Knocks—And the Door Is Not Opened

The remainder of that winter was dreary indeed. Every time Robert went up the stair to his garret, he passed the door of a tomb. With that gray mortar Mary St. John was walled up, like the nun he had read of in the *Marmion* she had lent him. He might have rung the bell at the street door, and been admitted into the temple of his goddess, but a certain vague terror of his grannie, combined with equally vague qualms of conscience for having deceived her, and the approach in the far distance of a ghastly suspicion that violins, pianos, moonlight, and lovely women were distasteful to the over-ruling Fate, and obnoxious to the vengeance stored in the gray cloud of his providence, drove him from the awful entrance of the temple of his Isis.

Nor did Miss St. John dare to make any advances to the dreadful old lady. She would wait. For Mrs. Forsyth, she cared nothing about the whole affair. It only gave her fresh opportunity for smiling condescensions about “poor Mrs. Falconer.” So Paradise was over and gone.

But though the loss of Miss St. John and the piano was the last blow, his sorrow did not rest there, but returned to brood over his bonny lady. She was scattered to the winds. Would any of her ashes ever rise in the corn, and moan in the ripening wind of autumn? Might not some atoms of the *bonny leddy*[lady] creep into the pines on the hill, whose “soft and soul-like sounds” had taught him to play the Flowers of the Forest on those strings which, like the nerves of an amputated limb, yet thrilled

through his being? Or might not some particle find its way by winds and waters to sycamore forest of Italy, there creep up through the channels of its life to some finely-rounded curve of noble tree, on the side that ever looks sunwards, and be chosen once again by the violin-hunter, to be wrought into a new and fame-gathering instrument?

Could it be that his bonny lady had learned her wondrous music in those forests, from the shine of the sun, and the sighing of the winds through the sycamores and pines? For Robert knew that the broad-leaved sycamore, and the sharp, needle-leaved pine, had each its share in the violin. Only as the wild innocence of human nature, uncorrupted by wrong, untaught by suffering, is to that nature struggling out of darkness into light, such and so different is the living wood, with its sweetest tones of obedient impulse, answering only to the wind which bloweth where it listeth, to that wood, chosen, separated, individualized, tortured into strange, almost vital shape, after a law to us nearly unknown, strung with strings from animal organizations, and put into the hands of man to utter the feelings of a soul that has passed through a like history. This Robert could not yet think, and had to grow able to think it by being himself made an instrument of God's music.

What he could think was that the glorious mystery of his bonny leddy[lady] was gone for ever—and alas! she had no soul. Here was an eternal sorrow. He could never meet her again. His affections, which must live for ever, were set upon that which had passed away. But the child that weeps because his mutilated doll will not rise from the dead, shall yet find relief from his sorrow, a true relief, both human and divine. He shall know that that which in the doll made him love the doll, has not passed away. And Robert must yet be comforted for the loss of his bonny leddy[lady]. If she had had a soul, nothing but her own self could ever

satisfy him. As she had no soul, another body might take her place, nor occasion reproach of inconstancy.

But, in the meantime, the shears of Fate having cut the string of the sky-soaring kite of his imagination, had left him with the stick in his hand. And thus the rest of that winter was dreary enough. The glow was out of his heart; the glow was out of the world. The bleak, kindless wind was hissing through those pines that clothed the hill above Bodyfauld, and over the dead garden, where in the summer time the rose had looked down so lovingly on the heartsease. If he had stood once more at gloaming in that barley-stubble, not even the wail of Flodden-field would have found him there, but a keen sense of personal misery and hopeless cold. Was the summer a lie?

Not so. The winter restrains, that the summer may have the needful time to do its work well; for the winter is but the sleep of summer.

Now in the winter of his discontent, and in Nature finding no help, Robert was driven inwards—into his garret, into his soul. There, the door of his paradise being walled up, he began, vaguely, blindly, to knock against other doors—sometimes against stone-walls and rocks, taking them for doors—as travel-worn, and hence brain-sick men have done in a desert of mountains. A door, out or in, he must find, or perish.

It fell, too, that Miss St. John went to visit some friends who lived in a coast town twenty miles off; and a season of heavy snow followed by frost setting in, she was absent for six weeks, during which time, without a single care to trouble him from without, Robert was in the very desert of desolation. His spirits sank fearfully. He would pass his old music-master in the street with scarce a recognition, as if the bond of their relation had been utterly broken, had vanished in the smoke of the

martyred violin, and all their affection had gone into the dust-heap of the past.

Dooble Sanny's character did not improve. He took more and more whisky, his bouts of drinking alternating as before with fits of hopeless repentance. His work was more neglected than ever, and his wife having no money to spend even upon necessaries, applied in desperation to her husband's bottle for comfort. This comfort, to do him justice, he never grudged her; and sometimes before midday they would both be drunk—a condition expedited by the lack of food. When they began to recover, they would quarrel fiercely; and at last they became a nuisance to the whole street. Little did the whisky-hating old lady know to what god she had really offered up that violin—if the consequences of the holocaust can be admitted as indicating the power which had accepted it.

But now began to appear in Robert the first signs of a practical outcome of such truth as his grandmother had taught him, operating upon the necessities of a simple and earnest nature. Reality, however lapt in vanity, or even in falsehood, cannot lose its power. It *is*—the other is not. She had taught him to look up—that there was a God. He would put it to the test. Not that he doubted it yet: he only doubted whether there was a hearing God. But was not that worse? It was, I think. For it is of far more consequence what kind of a God, than whether a God or no. Let not my reader suppose I think it possible there could be other than a perfect God—perfect—even to the vision of his creatures, the faith that supplies the lack of vision being yet faithful to that vision. I speak from Robert's point of outlook. But, indeed, whether better or worse is no great matter, so long as he would see it or what there was. He had no comfort, and, without reasoning about it, he felt that life ought to have comfort—from which point he began to conclude that the only thing left

was to try whether the God in whom his grandmother believed might not help him. If the God would but hear him, it was all he had yet learned to require of his Godhood. And that must ever be the first thing to require. More demands would come, and greater answers he would find. But now —if God would but hear him! If he spoke to him but one kind word, it would be the very soul of comfort; he could no more be lonely. A fountain of glad imaginations gushed up in his heart at the thought. What if, from the cold winter of his life, he had but to open the door of his garret-room, and, kneeling by the bare bedstead, enter into the summer of God's presence! What if God spoke to him face to face! He had so spoken to Moses. He sought him from no fear of the future, but from present desolation; and if God came near to him, it would not be with storm and tempest, but with the voice of a friend. And surely, if there was a God at all, that is, not a power greater than man, but a power by whose power man was, he must hear the voice of the creature whom he had made, a voice that came crying out of the very need which he had created. Younger people than Robert are capable of such divine metaphysics. Hence he continued to disappear from his grandmother's parlour at much the same hour as before. In the cold, desolate garret, he knelt and cried out into that which lay beyond the thought that cried, the unknowable infinite, after the God that may be known as surely as a little child knows his mysterious mother. And from behind him, the pale-blue, star-crowded sky shone upon his head, through the window that looked upwards only.

Mrs. Falconer saw that he still went away as he had been wont, and instituted observations, the result of which was the knowledge that he went to his own room. Her heart smote her, and she saw that the boy looked sad and troubled. There was scarce room in her heart for increase

of love, but much for increase of kindness, and she did increase it. In truth, he needed the smallest crumb of comfort that might drop from the table of God's "feastful friends."

Night after night he returned to the parlour cold to the very heart. God was not to be found, he said then. He said afterwards that even then "God was with him though he knew it not."

For the very first night, the moment that he knelt and cried, "O Father in heaven, hear me, and let thy face shine upon me"—like a flash of burning fire the words shot from the door of his heart: "I dinna care for him to love me, gin[if] he doesna love ilka[every] body;" and no more prayer went from the desolate boy that night, although he knelt an hour of agony in the freezing dark. Loyal to what he had been taught, he struggled hard to reduce his rebellious will to what he supposed to be the will of God. It was all in vain. Ever a voice within him—surely the voice of that God who he thought was not hearing—told him that what he wanted was the love belonging to his human nature, his human needs—not the preference of a court-favourite. He had a dim consciousness that he would be a traitor to his race if he accepted a love, even from God, given him as an exception from his kind. But he did not care to have such a love. It was not what his heart yearned for. It was not *love*. He could not love such a love. Yet he strove against it all—fought for religion against right as he could; struggled to reduce his rebellious feelings, to love that which was unlovely, to choose that which was abhorrent, until nature almost gave way under the effort. Often would he sink moaning on the floor, or stretch himself like a corpse, save that it was face downwards, on the boards of the bedstead. Night after night he returned to the battle, but with no permanent *success*. What a success that would have been! Night after night he came pale and worn from the conflict,

found his grandmother and Shargar composed, and in the quietness of despair sat down beside them to his Latin version[translation].

He little thought, that every night, at the moment when he stirred to leave the upper room, a pale-faced, red-eyed figure rose from its seat on the top of the stair by the door, and sped with long-legged noiselessness to resume its seat by the grandmother before he should enter. Shargar saw that Robert was unhappy, and the nearest he could come to the sharing of his unhappiness was to take his place outside the door within which he had retreated. Little, too, did Shargar, on his part, think that Robert, without knowing it, was pleading for him inside—pleading for him and for all his race in the weeping that would not be comforted.

Robert had not the vaguest fancy that God was with him—the spirit of the Father groaning with the spirit of the boy in intercession that could not be uttered. If God had come to him then and comforted him with the assurance of individual favour—but the very supposition is a taking of his name in vain—had Robert found comfort in the fancied assurance that God was his friend in especial, that some private favour was granted to his prayers, that, indeed, would have been to be left to his own inventions, to bring forth not fruits meet for repentance, but fruits for which repentance alone is meet. But God *was* with him, and was indeed victorious in the boy when he rose from his knees, for the last time, as he thought, saying, "I cannot yield—I will pray no more."—With a burst of bitter tears he sat down on the bedside till the loudest of the storm was over, then dried his dull eyes, in which the old outlook had withered away, and trod unknowingly in the silent footsteps of Shargar, who was ever one corner in advance of him, down to the dreary lessons and unheeded prayers; but, thank God, not to the sleepless night, for some griefs bring sleep the sooner.

My reader must not mistake my use of the words *especial* and *private*, or suppose that I do not believe in an *individual* relation between every man and God, yes, a *peculiar* relation, differing from the relation between every other man and God! But this very individuality and peculiarity can only be founded on the broadest truths of the Godhood and the manhood.

Mrs. Falconer, ere she went to sleep, gave thanks that the boys had been at their prayers together. And so, in a very deep sense, they had.

And well they might have been; for Shargar was nearly as desolate as Robert, and would certainly, had his mother claimed him now, have gone on the tramp with her again. Wherein could this civilized life show itself to him better than that to which he had been born? For clothing he cared little, and he had always managed to kill his hunger or thirst, if at longer intervals, then with greater satisfaction. Wherein is the life of that man who merely does his eating and drinking and clothing after a civilized fashion better than that of the gipsy or tramp? If the civilized man is honest to boot, and gives good work in return for the bread or turtle on which he dines, and the gipsy, on the other hand, steals his dinner, I recognize the importance of the difference; but if the rich man plunders the community by exorbitant profits, or speculation with other people's money, while the gipsy adds a fowl or two to the produce of his tinkering; or, once again, if the gipsy is as honest as the honest citizen, which is not so rare a case by any means as people imagine, I return to my question: Wherein, I say, is the warm house, the windows hung with purple, and the table covered with fine linen, more divine than the tent or the blue sky, and the dipping in the dish? Why should not Shargar prefer a life with the mother God had given him to a life with Mrs. Falconer? Why should he prefer geography to rambling, or Latin to

Romany? His purposelessness and his love for Robert alone kept him where he was.

The next evening, having given up his praying, Robert sat with his Sallust before him. But the fount of tears began to swell, and the more he tried to keep it down, the more it went on swelling till his throat was filled with a lump of pain. He rose and left the room. But he could not go near the garret. That door too was closed. He opened the house door instead, and went out into the street. There, nothing was to be seen but faint blue air full of moonlight, solid houses, and shining snow. Bareheaded he wandered round the corner of the house to the window whence first he had heard the sweet sounds of the pianoforte. The fire within lighted up the crimson curtains, but no voice of music came forth. The window was as dumb as the pale, faintly befogged moon overhead, itself seeming but a skylight through which shone the sickly light of the passionless world of the dead. Not a form was in the street. The eyes of the houses gleamed here and there upon the snow. He leaned his elbow on the window-sill behind which stood that sealed fountain of lovely sound, looked up at the moon, careless of her or of aught else in heaven or on earth, and sunk into a reverie, in which nothing was consciously present but a stream of fog-smoke that flowed slowly, listlessly across the face of the moon, like the ghost of a dead cataract. All at once a wailful sound arose in his head. He did not think for some time whether it was born in his brain, or entered it from without. At length he recognized the Flowers of the Forest, played as only the soutar[cobbler] could play it. But alas! the cry responsive to his bow came only from the auld wife—no more from the bonny leddy[lady]! Then he remembered that there had been a humble wedding that morning on the opposite side of the way; in the street department of the jollity of which Shargar had

taken a small share by firing a brass cannon, subsequently confiscated by Mrs. Falconer. But this was a strange tune to play at a wedding! The soutar[cobbler] half-way to his goal of drunkenness, had begun to repent for the fiftieth time that year, had with his repentance mingled the memory of the bonny leddy[lady] ruthlessly tortured to death for his wrong, and had glided from a strathspey[Highland dance] into that sorrowful moaning. The lament interpreted itself to his disconsolate pupil as he had never understood it before, not even in the stubble-field; for it now spoke his own feelings of waste misery, forsaken loneliness. Indeed Robert learned more of music in those few minutes of the foggy winter night and open street, shut out of all doors, with the tones of an ancient grief and lamentation floating through the blotted moonlight over his ever-present sorrow, than he could have learned from many lessons even of Miss St. John. He was cold to the heart, yet went in a little comforted.

Things had gone ill with him. Outside of Paradise, deserted of his angel, in the frost and the snow, the voice of the despised violin once more the source of a sad comfort! But there is no better discipline than an occasional descent from what we count well-being, to a former despised or less happy condition. One of the results of this taste of damnation in Robert was, that when he was in bed that night, his heart began to turn gently towards his old master. How much did he not owe him, after all! Had he not acted ill and ungratefully in deserting him? His own vessel filled to the brim with grief, had he not let the waters of its bitterness overflow into the heart of the soutar[cobbler]? The wail of that violin echoed now in Robert's heart, not for Flodden, not for himself, but for the debased nature that drew forth the plaint. Comrades in misery, why should they part? What right had he to forsake an old friend and benefactor because he himself was unhappy? He would go and see him

the very next night. And he would make friends once more with the much “suffering instrument” he had so wrongfully despised.

Chapter 2 - The Stroke

The following night, he left his books on the table, and the house itself behind him, and sped like a grayhound to Dooble Sanny's shop, lifted the latch, and entered.

By the light of a single dip set on a chair, he saw the shoemaker seated on his stool, one hand lying on the lap of his leathern apron, his other hand hanging down by his side, and the fiddle on the ground at his feet. His wife stood behind him, wiping her eyes with her blue apron. Through all its accumulated dirt, the face of the soutar[cobbler] looked ghastly, and they were eyes of despair that he lifted to the face of the youth as he stood holding the latch in his hand. Mrs. Alexander moved towards Robert, drew him in, and gently closed the door behind him, resuming her station like a sculptured mourner behind her motionless husband.

"What on airth's the maitter[matter] wi' ye, Sandy?" said Robert.

"Eh, Robert!" returned the shoemaker, and a tone of affection tinged the mournfulness with which he uttered the strange words—"eh, Robert! the Almichty *will* gang[go] his ain[own] gait[way], and I'm in his grup[grip, grasp] noo[now]."

"He's had a stroke," said his wife, without removing her apron from her eyes.

"I hae gotten my pecks[blows, strikes]," resumed the soutar[cobbler], in a despairing voice, which gave yet more effect to the fantastic eccentricity of conscience which from the midst of so many grave faults chose such a one as especially bringing the divine displeasure upon him: "I hae gotten my pecks[blows, strikes] for cryin' doon[decrying, depreciating] my ain[own] auld wife to

set up your bonny leddy[lady]. The tane's[the one's] gane[gone] a' to aise[ashes] an' stew[dust, vapour, smoke], an' frae[from] the tither[the other]," he went on, looking down on the violin at his feet as if it had been something dead in its youth—'an' frae[from] the tither[the other] I canna draw a cheep[chirp, hint, word], for my richt han' has forgotten her cunnin' Man, Robert, I canna lift it frae[from] my side.'

"Ye maun[must, have to] gang[go] to yer bed," said Robert, greatly concerned.

"Ow[oh], ay[yes, indeed], I maun[must, have to] gang[go] to my bed, and syne[then] to the kirkyaird, and syne[then] to hell, I ken that weel eneuch[enough]. Robert, I lea[leave] my fiddle to you. Be guid to the auld wife, man—better nor[than] I hae been. An auld wife's better nor nae[no, not] fiddle."

He stooped, lifted the violin with his left hand, gave it to Robert, rose, and made for the door. They helped him up the creaking stair, got him half-undressed, and laid him in his bed. Robert put the violin on the top of a press[wall-cupboard] within sight of the sufferer, left him groaning, and ran for the doctor. Having seen him set out for the patient's dwelling, he ran home to his grandmother.

Now while Robert was absent, occasion had arisen to look for him: unusual occurrence, a visitor had appeared, no less a person than Mr. Innes, the school-master. Shargar had been banished in consequence from the parlour, and had seated himself outside Robert's room, never doubting that Robert was inside. Presently he heard the bell ring, and then Betty came up the stair, and said Robert was wanted. Thereupon Shargar knocked at the door, and as there was neither voice nor hearing, opened it, and found, with a well-known horror, that he had been watching an empty room. He made no haste to communicate the fact. Robert might return in a moment, and his absence from the house not be discovered. He sat down on the bedstead and waited. But Betty came up

again, and before Shargar could prevent her, walked into the room with her candle in her hand. In vain did Shargar intreat her to go and say that Robert was coming. Betty would not risk the danger of discovery in connivance, and descended to open afresh the fountain of the old lady's anxiety. She did not, however, betray her disquietude to Mr. Innes.

She had asked the school-master to visit her, in order that she might consult him about Robert's future. Mr. Innes expressed a high opinion of the boy's faculties and attainments, and strongly urged that he should be sent to college. Mrs. Falconer inwardly shuddered at the temptations to which this course would expose him; but he must leave home or be apprentice to some trade. She would have chosen the latter, I believe, but for religion towards the boy's parents, who would never have thought of other than a profession for him. While the school-master was dwelling on the argument that he was pretty sure to gain a good *bursary*, and she would thus be relieved for four years, probably for ever, from further expense on his account, Robert entered.

"Whaur hae ye been, Robert?" asked Mrs. Falconer.

"At Dooble Sanny's," answered the boy.

"What hae ye been at there?"

"Helpin' him till 's bed."

"What's come ower[over] him?"

"A stroke."

"That's what comes o' playin' the fiddle."

"I never heard o' a stroke comin' frae[from] a fiddle, grannie. It comes oot[out] o' a clood whiles[sometimes, at times]. Gin[if] he had hauden[held, kept] till 's fiddle, he wad[would] hae been playin' her the nicht[tonight], in place o' 's airm[arm] lyin' at 's side like a lang[long] lingel[shoemaker's thread]."

“Hm!” said his grandmother, concealing her indignation at this freedom of speech, “ye dinna believe in God’s judgments!”

“Nae[no, not] upo’ fiddles,” returned Robert.

Mr. Innes sat and said nothing, with difficulty concealing his amusement at this passage of arms.

It was but within the last few days that Robert had become capable of speaking thus. His nature had at length arrived at the point of so far casting off the incubus of his grandmother’s authority as to assert some measure of freedom and act openly. His very hopelessness of a hearing in heaven had made him indifferent to things on earth, and therefore bolder. Thus, strange as it may seem, the blessing of God descended on him in the despair which enabled him to speak out and free his soul from the weight of concealment. But it was not despair alone that gave him strength. On his way home from the shoemaker’s he had been thinking what he could do for him; and had resolved, come of it what might, that he would visit him every evening, and try whether he could not comfort him a little by playing upon his violin. So that it was loving-kindness towards man, as well as despair towards God, that gave him strength to resolve that between him and his grandmother all should be above-board from henceforth.

“Nae[no, not] upo’ fiddles,” Robert had said.

“But upo’ them ’at plays them,” returned his grandmother.

“Na; nor upo’ them ’at burns them,” retorted Robert—impudently it must be confessed; for every man is open to commit the fault of which he is least capable.

But Mrs. Falconer had too much regard to her own dignity to indulge her feelings. Possibly too her sense of justice, which Falconer always said was stronger than that of any other woman he had ever known, as well as

some movement of her conscience interfered. She was silent, and Robert rushed into the breach which his last discharge had effected.

"An' I want to tell ye, grannie, that I mean to gang[go] an' play the fiddle to puir[poor] Sanny[Sandy] ilka[every] nicht for the best pairt[part] o' an hoor[hour]; an' excep' ye lock the door an' hide the key, I *will* gang[go]. The puir[poor] sinner sanna[shall not] be desertit by God an' man baith[both]."

He scarcely knew what he was saying before it was out of his mouth; and as if to cover it up, he hurried on.

"An' there's mair[more] in 't.—Dr. Anderson gae[gave] Shargar an' me a sovereign the piece. An' Dooble Sanny s' hae them, to haud[hold, keep] him ohn[without] deid o' hunger an' cauld[cold]."

"What for didna ye tell me 'at Dr. Anderson had gien[given] ye sic[such] a sicht o' siller[silver, money]? It was ill-faured[unbecoming, ill-favored] o' ye—an' him as weel."

"'Cause ye wad[would] hae sent it back till 'im; an' Shargar and me we thocht[thought] we wad[would] raither keep it."

"Considerin' 'at I'm at sae muckle[much] expense wi' ye baith[both], it wadna hae been ill-contrived to hae brocht[brought] the siller[silver, money] to me, an' latten[let, allowed] me du[do] wi' 't as I thocht[thought] fit.—gang[go] na awa'[away], laddie," she added, as she saw Robert about to leave the room.

"I'll be back in a minute, grannie," returned Robert.

"He's a fine lad, that!" said Mr. Innes; "an' guid 'll come o' 'm[him], and that 'll be heard tell o'."

"Gin[if] he had but the grace o' God, there wadna be muckle[much] to compleen o'," acquiesced his grandmother.

"There's time eneuch[enough] for that, Mrs. Faukner. Ye canna get auld heids[heads] upo' young shoothers[shoulders], ye ken."

"'Deed for that maitter[matter], ye may get mony[many] an auld heid[head] upo' auld shoothers[shoulders], and nae[no, not] a spark[speck, spot] o' grace in 't to lat[let, allow] it see hoo[how] to lay itsel' doon i' the grave."

Robert returned before Mr. Innes had made up his mind as to whether the old lady intended a personal rebuke.

"Hae[here], grannie," he said, going up to her, and putting the two sovereigns in her white palm.

He had found some difficulty in making Shargar give up his, else he would have returned sooner.

"What's this o' 't, laddie?" said Mrs. Falconer. "Hoots[pshaw]! I'm nae[no, not] gaein' to tak yer siller[silver, money]. Lat[let, allow] the puir[poor] soutar-craturs hae 't. But dinna gie[give] them mair[more] nor[than] a shillin' or twa at ance[once] —jist to haud[hold, keep] them in life. They deserve nae[no, not] mair[more]. But they maunna[must not, may not] sterve[starve]. And jist ye tell them, laddie, at gin[if] they spen' ae saxpence o' 't upo' whusky, they s' get nae[no, not] mair[more]."

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed], grannie," responded Robert, with a glimmer of gladness in his heart. "And what aboot the fiddlin', grannie?" he added, half playfully, hoping for some kind concession therein as well.

But he had gone too far. She vouchsafed no reply, and her face grew stern with offence. It was one thing to give bread to eat, another to give music and gladness. No music but that which sprung from effectual calling and the perseverance of the saints could be lawful in a world that was under the wrath and curse of God. Robert waited in vain for a reply.

"Gang yer wa's[go on]," she said at length. "Mr. Innes and me has some business to mak[make, do] an en' o', an' we want nae[no, not] assistance."

Robert rejoined Shargar, who was still bemoaning the loss of his sovereign. His face brightened when he saw its well-known yellow shine

once more, but darkened again as soon as Robert told him to what service it was now devoted.

"It's my ain[own]," he said, with a suppressed expostulatory growl.

Robert threw the coin on the floor.

"Tak yer filthy lucre!" he exclaimed with contempt, and turned to leave Shargar alone in the garret with his sovereign.

"Bob!" Shargar almost screamed, "tak it, or I'll cut my throat."

This was his constant threat when he was thoroughly in earnest.

"Cut it, an' hae dune[done] wi' 't," said Robert cruelly.

Shargar burst out crying.

"Len'[lend, give] me yer knife, than, Bob," he sobbed, holding out his hand.

Robert burst into a roar of laughter, caught up the sovereign from the floor, sped with it to the baker's, who refused to change it because he had no knowledge of anything representing the sum of twenty shillings except a pound-note, succeeded in getting silver for it at the bank, and then ran to the soutar's.

After he left the parlour, the discussion of his fate was resumed and finally settled between his grandmother and the school-master. The former, in regard of the boy's determination to befriend the shoemaker in the matter of music as well as of money, would now have sent him at once to the grammar-school in Old Aberdeen, to prepare for the *competition* in the month of November; but the latter persuaded her that if the boy gave his whole attention to Latin till the next summer, and then went to the grammar-school for three months or so, he would have an excellent chance of success. As to the violin, the school-master said, wisely enough:

"He that will to Cupar *maun* to Cupar[A wilful man must have his way]; and gin[if] ye kep[keep, catch] him upo' the shore-road, he'll tak to the hill-road; an' I s' warran' a braw[beautiful, fine] lad like Robert 'll get mony[many] a ane[one] in Ebberdeen 'll be ready eneuch[enough] to gie[give] him a lift wi' the fiddle, and maybe tak him into waur[worse] company nor[than] the puir[poor] bed-ridden soutar[cobbler]; an' wi' you an' me to hing[hang] on to the tail o' 'im like, he canna gang[go] ower[over] the scar[cliff, precipice] afore he learns wit."

"Hm!" was the old lady's comprehensive response.

It was further arranged that Robert should be informed of their conclusion, and so roused to effort in anticipation of the trial upon which his course in life must depend.

Nothing could have been better for Robert than the prospect of a college education. But his first thought at the news was not of the delights of learning nor of the honourable course that would ensue, but of Eric Ericson, the poverty-stricken, friendless descendant of yarls and sea-rovers. He would see *him*—the only man that understood him! Not until the passion of this thought had abated, did he begin to perceive the other advantages before him. But so practical and thorough was he in all his proposals and means, that ere half-an-hour was gone, he had begun to go over his Rudiments again. He now wrote a version, or translation from English into Latin, five times a week, and read Caeser, Virgil, or Tacitus, every day. He gained permission from his grandmother to remove his bed to his own garret, and there, from the bedstead at which he no longer kneeled, he would often rise at four in the morning, even when the snow lay a foot thick on the skylight, kindle his lamp by means of a tinder-box and a splinter of wood dipped in sulphur, and sitting down in the keen cold, turn half a page of Addison into something as near Ciceronian Latin as he could effect. This would take him from an

hour and a half to two hours, when he would tumble again into bed, blue and stiff, and sleep till it was time to get up and go to the morning school before breakfast. His health was excellent, else it could never have stood such treatment.

Chapter 3 - “The End Crowns All”

His sole relaxation almost lay in the visit he paid every evening to the soutar[cobbler] and his wife. Their home was a wretched place; but notwithstanding the poverty in which they were now sunk, Robert soon began to see a change, like the dawning of light, an *alba*, as the Italians call the dawn, in the appearance of something white here and there about the room. Robert’s visits had set the poor woman trying to make the place look decent. It soon became at least clean, and there is a very real sense in which cleanliness is next to godliness. If the people who want to do good among the poor would give up patronizing them, would cease from trying to convert them before they have gained the smallest personal influence with them, would visit them as those who have just as good a right to be here as they have, it would be all the better for both, perhaps chiefly for themselves.

For the first week or so, Alexander, unable either to work or play, and deprived of his usual consolation of drink, was very testy and unmanageable. If Robert, who strove to do his best, in the hope of alleviating the poor fellow’s sufferings—chiefly those of the mind—happened to mistake the time or to draw a false note from the violin, Sandy would swear as if he had been the Grand Turk and Robert one of his slaves. But Robert was too vexed with himself, when he gave occasion to such an outburst, to mind the outburst itself. And invariably when such had taken place, the shoemaker would ask forgiveness before he went. Holding out his left hand, from which nothing could efface the stains of rosin and lamp-black and heel-ball, save the sweet cleansing of mother-earth, he would say,

“Robert, ye’ll jist pit[put, make] the sweirin’ doon wi’ the lave[rest (remainder)], an’ score ’t oot[out] a’thegither[all together]. I’m an ill-tongued vratch[wretch], an’ I’m beginnin’ to see ’t. But, man, ye’re jist behavin’ to me like God himsel’, an’ gin[if] it warna for you, I wad[would] jist lie here roarin’ an’ greitin’[crying, weeping] an’ damnin’ frae[from] mornin’ to nicht.—Ye *will* be in the morn’s[tomorrow’s] night—willna ye?” he would always end by asking with some anxiety.

“Of coorse I will,” Robert would answer.

“Gude nicht, than, gude nicht.—I’ll try and get a sicht o’ my sins ance[once] mair[more],” he added, one evening. “Gin[if] I could only be a wee bit sorry for them, I reckon he wad[would] forgie[forgive] me. Dinna ye think he wad[would], Robert?”

“Nae[no, not] doobt[suspect], nae[no, not] doobt[suspect],” answered Robert hurriedly. “They a’ say ’at gin[if] a man repents the richt gait[way], he’ll forgie[forgive] him.”

He could not say more than “They say,” for his own horizon was all dark, and even in saying this much he felt like a hypocrite. A terrible waste, heaped thick with the potsherds of hope, lay outside that door of prayer which he had, as he thought, nailed up for ever.

“An’ what *is* the richt gait[way]?” asked the soutar[cobbler].

“’Deed, that’s mair[more] nor[than] I ken, Sandy,” answered Robert mournfully.

“Weel, gin[if] *ye* dinna ken, what’s to come o’ *me*?” said Alexander anxiously.

“Ye maun[must, have to] speir[ask about, enquire] at himsel’,” returned Robert, “an’ jist tell him ’at ye dinna ken, but ye’ll do onything ’at he likes.”

With these words he took his leave hurriedly, somewhat amazed to find that he had given the soutar[cobbler] the strange advice to try just what he had tried so unavailingly himself. And stranger still, he found himself, before he reached home, praying once more in his heart—both for Dooble Sanny and for himself. From that hour a faint hope was within him that some day he might try again, though he dared not yet encounter such effort and agony.

All this time he had never doubted that there was God; nor had he ventured to say within himself that perhaps God was not good; he had simply come to the conclusion that for him there was no approach to the fountain of his being.

In the course of a fortnight or so, when his system had covered over its craving after whisky, the irritability of the shoemaker almost vanished. It might have been feared that his conscience would then likewise relax its activity; but it was not so: it grew yet more tender. He now began to give Robert some praise, and make allowances for his faults, and Robert dared more in consequence, and played with more spirit. I do not say that his style could have grown fine under such a master, but at least he learned the difference between slovenliness and accuracy, and between accuracy and expression, which last is all of original that the best mere performer can claim.

One evening he was scraping away at Tullochgorum when Mr. Maccleary walked in. Robert ceased. The minister gave him one searching glance, and sat down by the bedside. Robert would have left the room.

"Dinna gang[go], Robert," said Sandy, and Robert remained.

The clergyman talked very faithfully as far as the shoemaker was concerned; though whether he was equally faithful towards God might

be questioned. He was one of those prudent men, who are afraid of dealing out the truth freely lest it should fall on thorns or stony places. Hence of course the good ground came in for a scanty share too. Believing that a certain precise condition of mind was necessary for its proper reception, he would endeavour to bring about that condition first. He did not know that the truth makes its own nest in the ready heart, and that the heart may be ready for it before the priest can perceive the fact, seeing that the imposition of hands confers, now-a-days at least, neither love nor common-sense. He therefore dwelt upon the sins of the soutar[cobbler], magnifying them and making them hideous, in the idea that thus he magnified the law, and made it honourable, while of the special tenderness of God to the sinner he said not a word. Robert was offended, he scarcely knew why, with the minister's mode of treating his friend; and after Mr. Maccleary had taken a far kinder leave of them than God could approve, if he resembled his representation, Robert sat still, oppressed with darkness.

"It's a' true," said the soutar[cobbler]; "but, man Robert, dinna ye think the minister was some sair[sore] upo' me?"

"I duv[do] think it," answered Robert.

"Something beirs[bears] 't in upo' me 'at he wadna be sae sair[sore] upo' me himsel'. There's something i' the New Testament, some gait[way], 'at's pitten[put, made] 't into my heid[head]; though, faith, I dinna ken whaur to luik[look] for 't. Canna ye help me oot[out] wi' 't, man?"

Robert could think of nothing but the parable of the prodigal son. Mrs. Alexander got him the New Testament, and he read it. She sat at the foot of the bed listening.

"There!" cried the soutar[cobbler], triumphantly, "I telled ye sae! Not ae word aboot the puir[poor] lad's sins! It was a' a hurry an' a scurry to get the

new shune[shoes] upo' 'im, an' win[get, go] at the calfie an' the fiddlin' an' the dancin'.—O Lord,' he broke out, "I'm comin' hame[home] as fest[fast] 's I can; but my sins are jist like muckle[much] bauchles[old pair of shoes] upo' my feet and winna[will not] lat[let, allow] me. I expec' nae[no, not] ring and nae[no, not] robe, but I wad[would] fain hae a fiddle i' my grup[grip, grasp] when the neist[next, nearest] prodigal comes hame[home]; an' gin[if] I dinna fiddle weel, it s' no be my wyte[blame, reproach, fault].—Eh, man! but that is what I ca'[call] gude, an' a' the minister said—honest man—'s jist blether[talk nonsense] till 't.—O Lord, I sweir gin[if] ever I win[get, go] up again, I'll put in ilka[every] steek[stitch (clothing)] as gin[if] the shune[shoes] war[were] for the feet o' the prodigal himsel'. It sall[shall] be gude wark[work], O Lord. An' I'll never lat[let, allow] taste o' whusky intil[into, within] my mou'[mouth]—nor smell o' whusky intil[into, within] my nose, gin[if] sae be 'at I can help it—I sweir 't, O Lord. An' gin[if] I binna[be not] raised up again—"

Here his voice trembled and ceased, and silence endured for a short minute. Then he called his wife.

"Come here, Bell. Gie[give] me a kiss, my bonny lass. I hae been an ill man to you."

"Na, na, Sandy. Ye hae aye been gude to me—better nor[than] I deserved. Ye hae been naebody's enemy but yer ain[own]."

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue. Ye're speykin' waur[worse] blethers[talks nonsense] nor[than] the minister, honest man! I tell ye I hae been a damned scoon'rel to ye. I haena even hauden[held, kept] my han's[hands] aff[off, away, past] o' ye. And eh! ye war[were] a bonny lass whan[when] I merried[married] ye. I hae blaudit[spoiled, injured, soiled] ye a'thegither[all together]. But gin[if] I war[were] up, see gin[if] I wadna gie[give] ye a new goon[gown], an' that wad[would] be something to make ye like yersel' again. I'm affrontet[affronted, ashamed] wi' mysel' 'at I had been sic[such] a brute o' a man to ye. But ye maun[must, have to] forgie[forgive] me

noo[now], for I do believe i' my hert[heart] 'at the Lord's forgien me. Gie[give] me anither kiss, lass. God be praised, and mony[many] thanks to *you!* Ye micht hae run awa'[away] frae[from] me lang[long] or noo[now], an' a'body[everybody] wad[would] hae said ye did richt.—Robert, play a spring[quick lively tun]."

Absorbed in his own thoughts, Robert began to play The Ewie[young ewe] wi' the Crookit Horn.

"Hoots[pshaw]! Hoots[pshaw]!" cried Sandy angrily. "What are ye aboot? Nae[no, not] mair[more] o' that. I hae dune[done] wi' that. What's i' the heid[head] o' ye, man?"

"What'll I play than, Sandy?" asked Robert meekly.

"Play The Lan' o' the Leal[loyal, faithful, true], or My Nannie's Awa[away],', or something o' that kin'[kind]. I'll be leal to ye noo[now], Bell. An' we winna[will not] pree[taste] o' the whusky nae[no, not] mair[more], lass."

"I canna bide the smell o' 't," cried Bell, sobbing.

Robert struck in with The Lan' o' the Leal. When he had played it over two or three times, he laid the fiddle in its place, and departed—able just to see, by the light of the neglected candle, that Bell sat on the bedside stroking the *rosiny* hand of her husband, the rhinoceros-hide of which was yet delicate enough to let the love through to his heart.

After this the soutar[cobbler] never called his fiddle his *auld wife*.

Robert walked home with his head sunk on his breast. Dooble Sanny, the drinking, ranting, swearing soutar[cobbler], was inside the wicket-gate; and he was left outside for all his prayers, with the arrows from the castle of Beelzebub sticking in his back. He would have another try some day—but not yet—he dared not yet.

Henceforth Robert had more to do in reading the New Testament than in the fiddle to the soutar[cobbler], though they never parted without an air

or two. Sandy continued hopeful and generally cheerful, with alternations which the reading generally fixed on the right side for the night. Robert never attempted any comments, but left him to take from the word what nourishment he could. There was no return of strength to the helpless arm, and his constitution was gradually yielding.

The rumour got abroad that he was a "changed character,"—how is not far to seek, for Mr. Maccleary fancied himself the honoured instrument of his conversion, whereas paralysis and the New Testament were the chief agents, and even the violin had more share in it than the minister. For the spirit of God lies all about the spirit of man like a mighty sea, ready to rush in at the smallest chink in the walls that shut him out from his own—walls which even the tone of a violin afloat on the wind of that spirit is sometimes enough to rend from battlement to base, as the blast of the rams' horns rent the walls of Jericho. And now to the day of his death, the shoemaker had need of nothing. Food, wine, and delicacies were sent him by many who, while they considered him outside of the kingdom, would have troubled themselves in no way about him. What with visits of condolence and flattery, inquiries into his experience, and long prayers by his bedside, they now did their best to send him back among the swine. The soutar's humour, however, aided by his violin, was a strong antidote against these evil influences.

"I doobt[suspect] I'm gaein' to dee[die], Robert," he said at length one evening as the lad sat by his bedside.

"Weel, that winna[will not] do ye nae[no, not] ill," answered Robert, adding with just a touch of bitterness—"ye needna care aboot that."

"I do not care aboot the deein'[dying] o' 't. But I jist want to live lang[long] eneuch[enough] to lat[let, allow] the Lord ken 'at I'm in doonricht earnest aboot it. I hae nae[no, not] chance o' drinkin' as lang's[long as] I'm lyin' here."

“Never ye fash[trouble, inconvenience] yer heid[head] aboot that. Ye can lippen[trust; entrust] that to him, for it’s his ain[own] business. He’ll see ’at ye’re a’ richt. Dinna ye think ’at he’ll lat[let, allow] ye aff[off, away, past].”

“The Lord forbid,” responded the soutar[cobbler] earnestly. “It maun[must, have to] be a’ pitten[put, made] richt. It wad[would] be dreidfu’ to be latten[let, allowed] aff[off, away, past]. I wadna hae him content wi’ cobbler’s wark[work].—I hae ’t,” he resumed, after a few minutes’ pause; “the Lord’s easy pleased, but ill to saitisfee. I’m sair[sore] pleased wi’ your playin’, Robert, but it’s naething like the richt thing yet. It does me gude to hear ye, though, for a’ that.”

The very next night he found him evidently sinking fast. Robert took the violin, and was about to play, but the soutar[cobbler] stretched out his one left hand, and took it from him, laid it across his chest and his arm over it, for a few moments, as if he were bidding it farewell, then held it out to Robert, saying,

“Hae[here], Robert. She’s yours.—Death’s a sair[sore] divorce.—Maybe they ’ll hae an orra[extra] fiddle whaur I’m gaein’, though. Think o’ a Rothieden soutar[cobbler] playin’ afore his grace!”

Robert saw that his mind was wandering, and mingled the paltry honours of earth with the grand simplicities of heaven. He began to play The Land o’ the Leal[loyal, faithful, true]. For a little while Sandy seemed to follow and comprehend the tones, but by slow degrees the light departed from his face. At length his jaw fell, and with a sigh, the body parted from Dooble Sanny, and he went to God.

His wife closed mouth and eyes without a word, laid the two arms, equally powerless now, straight by his sides, then seating herself on the edge of the bed, said,

“Dinna bide, Robert. It’s a’ ower[over] noo[now]. He’s gang[go] hame[home]. Gin[if] I war[were] only wi’ ’im wharever he is!”

She burst into tears, but dried her eyes a moment after, and seeing that Robert still lingered, said,

"Gang[go], Robert, an' sen' Mistress Downie to me. Dinna greit[cry, weep]—there's a gude lad; but tak yer fiddle an' gang[go]. Ye can be no more use."

Robert obeyed. With his violin in his hand, he went home; and, with his violin still in his hand, walked into his grandmother's parlour.

"Hoo[how] daur[dare] ye bring sic[such] a thing into my hoose[house]?" she said, roused by the apparent defiance of her grandson. "Hoo[how] daur[dare] ye, efter[after] what's come an' gane[gone]?"

"'Cause Dooble Sanny's come and gane[gone], grannie, and left naething but this ahint[behind, after] him. And this ane's[one's] mine, whase[whose] ever the ither[other] micht be. His wife's left wi'oot[out] a plack[smallest coin (1/3 of penny)], an' I s' warran' the gude fowk[folk] o' Rothieden winna[will not] mak[make, do] sae muckle[much] o' her noo[now] 'at her man's awa'[away]; for she never was sic[such] a randy as he was, an' the triumph o' grace in her 's but sma'[small, little], therefore. Sae I maun[must, have to] mak[make, do] the best 'at I can o' the fiddle for her. An' ye maunna[must not, may not] touch this ane[one], grannie; for though ye may think it richt to burn fiddles, ither[other] fowk[folk] disna[does not]; and this has to do wi' ither[other] fowk[folk], grannie; it's no atween you an' me, ye ken," Robert went on, fearful lest she might consider herself divinely commissioned to extirpate the whole race of stringed instruments,—"for I maun[must, have to] sell 't for her."

"Tak it oot[out] o' my sicht," said Mrs. Falconer, and said no more.

He carried the instrument up to his room, laid it on his bed, locked his door, put the key in his pocket, and descended to the parlour.

"He's deid, is he?" said his grandmother, as he re-entered.

"Ay[yes, indeed] is he, grannie," answered Robert. "He deid a repentant man."

"An' a believin'?" asked Mrs. Falconer.

"Weel, grannie, I canna say 'at he believed a' thing[everything, anything] 'at ever was, for a body michtna ken a' thing[everything, anything]."

"Toots, laddie! Was 't savin' faith?"

"I dinna richtly ken what ye mean by that; but I'm thinkin' it was muckle[much] the same kin'[kind] o' faith 'at the prodigal had; for they baith[both] rase[rose] an' gaed[went] hame[home]."

"'Deed, maybe ye're richt, laddie," returned Mrs. Falconer, after a moment's thought. "We'll houp[hope] the best."

All the remainder of the evening she sat motionless, with her eyes fixed on the rug before her, thinking, no doubt, of the repentance and salvation of the fiddler, and what hope there might yet be for her own lost son.

The next day being Saturday, Robert set out for Bodyfauld, taking the violin with him. He went alone, for he was in no mood for Shargar's company. It was a fine spring day, the woods were budding, and the fragrance of the larches floated across his way. There was a lovely sadness in the sky, and in the motions of the air, and in the scent of the earth—as if they all knew that fine things were at hand which never could be so beautiful as those that had gone away. And Robert wondered how it was that everything should look so different. Even Bodyfauld seemed to have lost its enchantment, though his friends were as kind as ever. Lammie went into a rage at the story of the lost violin, and Miss Lammie cried from sympathy with Robert's distress at the fate of his bonny leddy[lady]. Then he came to the occasion of his visit, which was to beg

Lammie, when next he went to Aberdeen, to take the soutar's fiddle, and get what he could for it, to help his widow.

"Poor Sanny!" said Robert, "it never cam'[came] intil[into, within] 's heid[head] to sell her, nae[no, not] mair[more] nor[than] gin[if] she had been the auld wife 'at he ca'd[called] her."

Lammie undertook the commission; and the next time he saw Robert, handed him ten pounds as the result of the negotiation. It was all Robert could do, however, to get the poor woman to take the money. She looked at it with repugnance, almost as if it had been the price of blood. But Robert having succeeded in overcoming her scruples, she did take it, and therewith provide a store of *sweeties*, and reels of cotton, and tobacco, for sale in Sanny's workshop. She certainly did not make money by her merchandise, for her anxiety to be honest rose to the absurd; but she contrived to live without being reduced to prey upon her own gingerbread and rock.

Chapter 4 - The Aberdeen Garret

Miss St. John had long since returned from her visit, but having heard how much Robert was taken up with his dying friend, she judged it better to leave her intended proposal of renewing her lessons alone for the present. Meeting him, however, soon after Alexander's death, she introduced the subject, and Robert was enraptured at the prospect of the re-opening of the gates of his paradise. If he did not inform his grandmother of the fact, neither did he attempt to conceal it; but she took no notice, thinking probably that the whole affair would be effectually disposed of by his departure. Till that period arrived, he had a lesson almost every evening, and Miss St. John was surprised to find how the boy had grown since the door was built up. Robert's gratitude grew into a kind of worship.

The evening before his departure for Bodyfauld—whence his grandmother had arranged that he should start for Aberdeen, in order that he might have the company of Lammie, whom business drew thither about the same time—as he was having his last lesson, Mrs. Forsyth left the room. Thereupon Robert, who had been dejected all day at the thought of the separation from Miss St. John, found his heart beating so violently that he could hardly breathe. Probably she saw his emotion, for she put her hand on the keys, as if to cover it by showing him how some movement was to be better effected. He seized her hand and lifted it to his lips. But when he found that instead of snatching it away, she yielded it, nay gently pressed it to his face, he burst into tears, and dropped on his knees, as if before a goddess.

“Hush, Robert! Don’t be foolish,” she said, quietly and tenderly. “Here is my aunt coming.”

The same moment he was at the piano again, playing My Bonny Lady Ann, so as to astonish Miss St. John, and himself as well. Then he rose, bade her a hasty good-night, and hurried away.

A strange conflict arose in his mind at the prospect of leaving the old place, on every house of whose streets, on every swell of whose surrounding hills he left the clinging shadows of thought and feeling. A faintly purpled mist arose, and enwrapped all the past, changing even his grayest troubles into tales of fairyland, and his deepest griefs into songs of a sad music. Then he thought of Shargar, and what was to become of him after he was gone. The lad was paler and his eyes were redder than ever, for he had been weeping in secret. He went to his grandmother and begged that Shargar might accompany him to Bodyfauld.

“He maun[must, have to] bide at hame[home] an’ min’[mind, remember] his beuks[books],” she answered; “for he winna[will not] hae them that muckle[much] langer[longer]. He maun[must, have to] be doin’ something for himsel’.”

So the next morning the boys parted—Shargar to school, and Robert to Bodyfauld—Shargar left behind with his desolation, his sun gone down in a west that was not even stormy, only gray and hopeless, and Robert moving towards an east which reflected, like a faint prophecy, the west behind him tinged with love, death, and music, but mingled the colours with its own saffron of coming dawn.

When he reached Bodyfauld he marvelled to find that all its glory had returned. He found Miss Lammie busy among the rich yellow pools in her dairy, and went out into the garden, now in the height of its summer. Great cabbage roses hung heavy-headed splendours towards purple-black heartseases, and thin-filmed silvery pods of honesty; tall white

lilies mingled with the blossoms of currant bushes, and at their feet the narcissi of old classic legend pressed their warm-hearted paleness into the plebeian thicket of the many-striped gardener's garters. It was a lovely type of a commonwealth indeed, of the garden and kingdom of God. His whole mind was flooded with a sense of sunny wealth. The farmer's neglected garden blossomed into higher glory in his soul. The bloom and the richness and the use were all there; but instead of each flower was a delicate ethereal sense or feeling about that flower. Of these how gladly would he have gathered a posy to offer Miss St. John! but, alas! he was no poet; or rather he had but the half of the poet's inheritance—he could see: he could not say. But even if he had been full of poetic speech, he would yet have found that the half of his posy remained ungathered, for although we have speech enough now to be "cousin to the deed," as Chaucer says it must always be, we have not yet enough speech to cousin the tenth part of our feelings. Let him who doubts recall one of his own vain attempts to convey that which made the oddest of dreams entrancing in loveliness—to convey that aroma of thought, the conscious absence of which made him a fool in his own eyes when he spoke such silly words as alone presented themselves for the service. I can no more describe the emotion aroused in my mind by a gray cloud parting over a gray stone, by the smell of a sweetpea, by the sight of one of those long upright pennons of striped grass with the homely name, than I can tell what the glory of God is who made these things. The man whose poetry is like nature in this, that it produces individual, incommunicable moods and conditions of mind—a sense of elevated, tender, marvellous, and evanescent existence, must be a poet indeed. Every dawn of such a feeling is a light-brushed bubble rendering visible for a moment the dark unknown sea of our being which lies beyond the lights of our consciousness, and is the stuff and region of our

eternal growth. But think what language must become before it will tell dreams!—before it will convey the delicate shades of fancy that come and go in the brain of a child!—before it will let a man know wherein one face differeth from another face in glory! I suspect, however, that for such purposes it is rather music than articulation that is needful—that, with a hope of these finer results, the language must rather be turned into music than logically extended.

The next morning he awoke at early dawn, hearing the birds at his window. He rose and went out. The air was clear and fresh as a new-made soul. Bars of mottled cloud were bent across the eastern quarter of the sky, which lay like a great ethereal ocean ready for the launch of the ship of glory that was now gliding towards its edge. Everything was waiting to conduct him across the far horizon to the south, where lay the stored-up wonder of his coming life. The lark sang of something greater than he could tell; the wind got up, whispered at it, and lay down to sleep again; the sun was at hand to bathe the world in the light and gladness alone fit to typify the radiance of Robert's thoughts. The clouds that formed the shore of the upper sea were already burning from saffron into gold. A moment more and the first insupportable sting of light would shoot from behind the edge of that low blue hill, and the first day of his new life would be begun. He watched, and it came. The well-spring of day, fresh and exuberant as if now first from the holy will of the Father of Lights, gushed into the basin of the world, and the world was more glad than tongue or pen can tell. The supernal light alone, dawning upon the human heart, can exceed the marvel of such a sunrise.

And shall life itself be less beautiful than one of its days? Do not believe it, young brother. Men call the shadow, thrown upon the universe where their own dusky souls come between it and the eternal sun, life,

and then mourn that it should be less bright than the hopes of their childhood. Keep thou thy soul translucent, that thou mayest never see its shadow; at least never abuse thyself with the philosophy which calls that shadow life. Or, rather would I say, become thou pure in heart, and thou shalt see God, whose vision alone is life.

Just as the sun rushed across the horizon he heard the tramp of a heavy horse in the yard, passing from the stable to the cart that was to carry his trunk to the turnpike road, three miles off, where the coach would pass. Then Miss Lammie came and called him to breakfast, and there sat the farmer in his Sunday suit of black, already busy. Robert was almost too happy to eat; yet he had not swallowed two mouthfuls before the sun rose unheeded, the lark sang unheeded, and the roses sparkled with the dew that bowed yet lower their heavy heads, all unheeded. By the time they had finished, Lammie's gig was at the door, and they mounted and followed the cart. Not even the recurring doubt and fear that hollowness was at the heart of it all, for that God could not mean such reinless gladness, prevented the truth of the present joy from sinking deep into the lad's heart. In his mind he saw a boat moored to a rock, with no one on board, heaving on the waters of a rising tide, and waiting to bear him out on the sea of the unknown. The picture arose of itself: there was no paradise of the west in his imagination, as in that of a boy of the sixteenth century, to authorize its appearance. It rose again and again; the dew glittered as if the light were its own; the sun shone as he had never seen him shine before; the very mare that sped them along held up her head and stepped out as if she felt it the finest of mornings. Had she also a future, poor old mare? Might there not be a paradise somewhere? and if in the furthest star instead of next-door America,

why, so much the more might the Atlantis of the nineteenth century surpass Manoa the golden of the seventeenth!

The gig and the cart reached the road together. One of the men who had accompanied the cart took the gig; and they were left on the road-side with Robert's trunk and box—the latter a present from Miss Lammie.

Their places had been secured, and the guard knew where he had to take them up. Long before the coach appeared, the notes of his horn, as like the colour of his red coat as the blindest of men could imagine, came echoing from the side of the heathery, stony hill under which they stood, so that Robert turned wondering, as if the chariot of his desires had been coming over the top of Drumsnaig, to carry him into a heaven where all labour was delight. But round the corner in front came the four-in-hand red mail instead. *She* pulled up gallantly; the wheelers lay on their hind quarters, and the leaders parted theirs from the pole; the boxes were hoisted up; Lammie climbed, and Robert scrambled to his seat; the horn blew; the coachman spake oracularly; the horses obeyed; and away went the gorgeous symbol of sovereignty careering through the submissive region. Nor did Robert's delight abate during the journey—certainly not when he saw the blue line of the sea in the distance, a marvel and yet a fact.

Mrs. Falconer had consulted the Misses Napier, who had many acquaintances in Aberdeen, as to a place proper for Robert, and suitable to her means. Upon this point Miss Letty, not without a certain touch of design, as may appear in the course of my story, had been able to satisfy her. In a small house of two floors and a garret, in the old town, Lammie took leave of Robert.

It was from a garret window still, but a storm-window now that Robert looked—eastward across fields and sand-hills, to the blue expanse of waters—not blue like southern seas, but slaty blue, like the eyes of northmen. It was rather dreary; the sun was shining from overhead now, casting short shadows and much heat; the dew was gone up, and the lark had come down; he was alone; the end of his journey was come, and was not anything very remarkable. His landlady interrupted his gaze to know what he would have for dinner, but he declined to use any discretion in the matter. When she left the room he did not return to the window, but sat down upon his box. His eye fell upon the other, a big wooden cube. Of its contents he knew nothing. He would amuse himself by making inquisition. It was nailed up. He borrowed a screwdriver and opened it. At the top lay a linen bag full of oatmeal; underneath that was a thick layer of oat-cake; underneath that two cheeses, a pound of butter, and six pots of jam, which ought to have tasted of roses, for it came from the old garden where the roses lived in such sweet companionship with the currant bushes; underneath that, &c.; and underneath, &c., a box which strangely recalled Shargar's garret, and one of the closets therein. With beating heart he opened it, and lo, to his marvel, and the restoration of all the fair day, there was the violin which Dooble Sanny had left him when he forsook her for—some one or other of the queer instruments of Fra Angelico's angels?

In a flutter of delight he sat down on his trunk again and played the most mournful of tunes. Two white pigeons, which had been talking to each other in the heat on the roof, came one on each side of the window and peeped into the room; and out between them, as he played, Robert saw the sea, and the blue sky above it. Is it any wonder that, instead of turning to the lying pages and contorted sentences of the Livy which he

had already unpacked from his box, he forgot all about school, and college, and bursary, and went on playing till his landlady brought up his dinner, which he swallowed hastily that he might return to the spells of his enchantress!

Chapter 5 - The Competition

I could linger with gladness even over this part of my hero's history. If the school work, was dry it was thorough. If that academy had no sweetly shadowing trees; if it did stand within a parallelogram of low stone walls, containing a roughly-gravelled court; if all the region about suggested hot stones and sand—beyond still was the sea and the sky; and that court, morning and afternoon, was filled with the shouts of eager boys, kicking the football with mad rushings to and fro, and sometimes with wounds and faintings—fit symbol of the equally resultless ambition with which many of them would follow the game of life in the years to come. Shock-headed Highland colts, and rough Lowland steers as many of them were, out of that group, out of the roughest of them, would emerge in time a few gentlemen—not of the type of your trim, self-contained, clerical exquisite—but large-hearted, courteous gentlemen, for whom a man may thank God. And if the master was stern and hard, he was true; if the pupils feared him, they yet cared to please him; if there might be found not a few more widely-read scholars than he, it would be hard to find a better teacher.

Robert leaned to the collar and laboured, not greatly moved by ambition, but much by the hope of the bursary and the college life in the near distance. Not unfrequently he would rush into the thick of the football game, fight like a maniac for one short burst, and then retire and look on. He oftener regarded than mingled. He seldom joined his fellows after school hours, for his work lay both upon his conscience and his hopes; but if he formed no very deep friendships amongst them, at least he made no enemies, for he was not selfish, and in virtue of the Celtic blood in him was invariably courteous. His habits were in some things

altogether irregular. He never went out for a walk; but sometimes, looking up from his Virgil or his Latin version[translation], and seeing the blue expanse in the distance breaking into white under the viewless wing of the summer wind, he would fling down his dictionary or his pen, rush from his garret, and fly in a straight line, like a sea-gull weary of lake and river, down to the waste shore of the great deep. This was all that stood for the Arabian Nights of moon-blossomed marvel; all the rest was Aberdeen days of Latin and labour.

Slowly the hours went, and yet the dreaded, hoped-for day came quickly. The quadrangle of the stone-crowned college grew more awful in its silence and emptiness every time Robert passed it; and the professors' houses looked like the sentry-boxes of the angels of learning, soon to come forth and judge the feeble mortals who dared present a claim to their recognition. October faded softly by, with its keen fresh mornings, and cold memorial green-horizoned evenings, whose stars fell like the stray blossoms of a more heavenly world, from some ghostly wind of space that had caught them up on its awful shoreless sweep. November came, "chill and drear," with its heartless, hopeless nothingness; but as if to mock the poor competitors, rose, after three days of Scotch mist, in a lovely "halcyon day" of "St. Martin's summer," through whose long shadows anxious young faces gathered in the quadrangle, or under the arcade, each with his Ainsworth's Dictionary, the sole book allowed, under his arm. But when the sacrist appeared and unlocked the public school, and the black-gowned professors walked into the room, and the door was left open for the candidates to follow, then indeed a great awe fell upon the assembly, and the lads crept into their seats as if to a trial for life before a bench of the incorruptible. They took their places; a portion of Robertson's *History of Scotland* was given

them to turn into Latin; and soon there was nothing to be heard in the assembly but the turning of the leaves of dictionaries, and the scratching of pens constructing the first rough copy of the Latinized theme.

It was done. Four weary hours, nearly five, one or two of which passed like minutes, the others as if each minute had been an hour, went by, and Robert, in a kind of desperation, after a final reading of the Latin, gave in his paper, and left the room. When he got home, he asked his landlady to get him some tea. Till it was ready he would take his violin. But even the violin had grown dull, and would not speak freely. He returned to the torture—took out his first copy, and went over it once more. Horror of horrors! a *maxie!*—that is a *maximus error*. Mary Queen of Scots had been left so far behind in the beginning of the paper, that she forgot the rights of her sex in the middle of it, and in the accusative of a future participle passive—I do not know if more modern grammarians have a different name for the growth—had submitted to be *dum*, and her rightful *dam* was henceforth and for ever debarred.

He rose, rushed out of the house, down through the garden, across two fields and a wide road, across the links[sandy grass-covered ground (near seashore)], and so to the moaning lip of the sea—for it was moaning that night. From the last bulwark of the sandhills he dropped upon the wet sands, and there he paced up and down—how long, God only, who was watching him, knew—with the low limitless form of the murmuring lip lying out and out into the sinking sky like the life that lay low and hopeless before him, for the want at most of twenty pounds a year (that was the highest bursary then) to lift him into a region of possible well-being. Suddenly a strange phenomenon appeared within him. The subject hitherto became the object to a new birth of consciousness. He began to look at himself. “There’s a sair[sore] bit in there,” he said, as if his

own bosom had been that of another mortal. “What’s to be dune[done] wi’ ’t? I doobt[suspect] it maun[must, have to] bide it. Weel, the crater[creature] had better bide it quaietly, and no cry oot[out]. Lie doon, an’ hand yer tongue. *Soror tua haud meretrix est*[Your sister is not a whore.], ye brute!” He burst out laughing, after a doubtful and ululant fashion, I dare say; but he went home, took up his *auld wife*, and played “Tullochgorum” some fifty times over, with extemporized variations.

The next day he had to translate a passage from Tacitus; after executing which somewhat heartlessly, he did not open a Latin book for a whole week. The very sight of one was disgusting to him. He wandered about the New Town, along Union Street, and up and down the stairs that led to the lower parts, haunted the quay, watched the vessels, learned their forms, their parts and capacities, made friends with a certain Dutch captain whom he heard playing the violin in his cabin, and on the whole, notwithstanding the wretched prospect before him, contrived to spend the week with considerable enjoyment. Nor does an occasional episode of lounging hurt a life with any true claims to the epic form.

The day of decision at length arrived. Again the black-robed powers assembled, and again the hoping, fearing lads—some of them not lads, men, and mere boys—gathered to hear their fate. Name after name was called out;—a twenty pound bursary to the first, one of seventeen to the next, three or four of fifteen and fourteen, and so on, for about twenty, and still no Robert Falconer. At last, lagging wearily in the rear, he heard his name, went up listlessly, and was awarded five pounds. He crept home, wrote to his grandmother, and awaited her reply. It was not long in coming; for although the carrier was generally the medium of communication, Miss Letty had contrived to send the answer by coach. It

was to the effect that his grandmother was sorry that he had not been more successful, but that Mr. Innes thought it would be quite worth while to try again, and he must therefore come home for another year.

This was mortifying enough, though not so bad as it might have been. Robert began to pack his box. But before he had finished it he shut the lid and sat upon it. To meet Miss St. John thus disgraced, was more than he could bear. If he remained, he had a chance of winning prizes at the end of the session, and that would more than repair his honour. The five pound bursars were privileged in paying half fees; and if he could only get some teaching, he could manage. But who would employ a *bejan*[first year student (at a Scottish university)] when a *magistrand*[student about to become M.A. at University] might be had for next to nothing? Besides, who would recommend him? The thought of Dr. Anderson flashed into his mind, and he rushed from the house without even knowing where he lived.

Chapter 6 - Dr. Anderson Again

At the Post-office he procured the desired information at once. Dr. Anderson lived in Union Street, towards the western end of it.

Away went Robert to find the house. That was easy. What a grand house of smooth granite and wide approach it was! The great door was opened by a man-servant, who looked at the country boy from head to foot.

"Is the doctor in?" asked Robert.

"Yes."

"I wad[would] like to see him."

"Wha will I say wants him?"

"Say the laddie he saw at Bodyfauld."

The man left Robert in the hall, which was spread with tiger and leopard skins, and had a bright fire burning in a large stove. Returning presently, he led him through noiseless swing-doors covered with cloth into a large library. Never had Robert conceived such luxury. What with Turkey carpet, crimson curtains, easy-chairs, grandly-bound books and morocco-covered writing-table, it seemed the very ideal of comfort. But Robert liked the grandeur too much to be abashed by it.

"Sit ye doon there," said the servant, "and the doctor 'ill[will] be wi' ye in ae minute."

He was hardly out of the room before a door opened in the middle of the books, and the doctor appeared in a long dressing-gown. He looked inquiringly at Robert for one moment, then made two long strides like a pair of eager compasses, holding out his hand.

“I’m Robert Faukner,” said the boy. “Ye’ll min’[mind, remember], maybe, doctor, ’at ye war[were] verra[very] kin’[kind] to me ance[once], and tellt me lots o’ stories—at Bodyfauld, ye ken.”

“I’m very glad to see you, Robert,” said Dr. Anderson. “Of course I remember you perfectly; but my servant did not bring your name, and I did not know but it might be the other boy—I forget his name.”

“Ye mean Shargar, sir. It’s no him.”

“I can see that,” said the doctor, laughing, “although you are altered. You have grown quite a man! I am very glad to see you,” he repeated, shaking hands with him again. “When did you come to town?”

“I hae been at the grammer school i’ the auld toon[town, village] for the last three months,” said Robert.

“Three months!” exclaimed Dr. Anderson. “And never came to see me till now! That was too bad of you, Robert.”

“Weel, ye see, sir, I didna ken better. An’ I had a heap to do, an’ a’ for naething, efter[after] a’. But gin[if] I had kent[known, knew] ’at ye wad[would] like to see me, I wad[would] hae likit weel to come to ye.”

“I have been away most of the summer,” said the doctor; “but I have been at home for the last month. You haven’t had your dinner, have you?”

“Weel, I dinna exackly ken what to say, sir. Ye see, I wasna that sharp-set[keen, sharp-witted] the day, sae I had jist a mou’fu’ o’ breid[bread] and cheese. I’m turnin’ hungry, noo[now], I maun[must, have to] confess.”

The doctor rang the bell.

“You must stop and dine with me.—Johnston,” he continued, as his servant entered, “tell the cook that I have a gentleman to dinner with me to-day, and she must be liberal.”

“Guidsake, sir!” said Robert, “dinna set the woman agen[against] me.”

He had no intention of saying anything humorous, but Dr. Anderson laughed heartily.

“Come into my room till dinner-time,” he said, opening the door by which he had entered.

To Robert’s astonishment, he found himself in a room bare as that of the poorest cottage. A small square window, small as the window in John Hewson’s, looked out upon a garden neatly kept, but now “having no adorning but cleanliness.” The place was just the *benn end*[inner room] of a cottage. The walls were whitewashed, the ceiling was of bare boards, and the floor was sprinkled with a little white sand. The table and chairs were of common deal, white and clean, save that the former was spotted with ink. A greater contrast to the soft, large, richly-coloured room they had left could hardly be imagined. A few bookshelves on the wall were filled with old books. A fire blazed cheerily in the little grate. A bed with snow-white coverlet stood in a recess.

“This is the nicest room in the house, Robert,” said the doctor. “When I was a student like you—”

Robert shook his head,

“I’m nae[not a] student yet,” he said; but the doctor went on:

“I had the benn end[inner room] of my father’s cottage to study in, for he treated me like a stranger-gentleman when I came home from college. The father respected the son for whose advantage he was working like a slave from morning till night. My heart is sometimes sore with the gratitude I feel to him. Though he’s been dead for thirty years—would you believe it, Robert?—well, I can’t talk more about him now. I made this room as like my father’s benn end as I could, and I am happier here than anywhere in the world.”

By this time Robert was perfectly at home. Before the dinner was ready he had not only told Dr. Anderson his present difficulty, but his whole story as far back as he could remember. The good man listened eagerly, gazed at the boy with more and more of interest, which deepened till his eyes glistened as he gazed, and when a ludicrous passage intervened, welcomed the laughter as an excuse for wiping them. When dinner was announced, he rose without a word and led the way to the dining-room. Robert followed, and they sat down to a meal simple enough for such a house, but which to Robert seemed a feast followed by a banquet. For after they had done eating—on the doctor's part a very meagre performance—they retired to his room again, and then Robert found the table covered with a snowy cloth, and wine and fruits arranged upon it.

It was far into the night before he rose to go home. As he passed through a thick rain of pin-point drops, he felt that although those cold granite houses, with glimmering dead face, stood like rows of sepulchres, he was in reality walking through an avenue of homes. Wet to the skin long before he reached Mrs. Fyvie's in the auld toon[old town], he was notwithstanding as warm as the under side of a bird's wing. For he had to sit down and write to his grandmother informing her that Dr. Anderson had employed him to copy for the printers a book of his upon the Medical Boards of India, and that as he was going to pay him for that and other work at a rate which would secure him ten shillings a week, it would be a pity to lose a year for the chance of getting a bursary next winter.

The doctor did want the manuscript copied; and he knew that the only chance of getting Mrs. Falconer's consent to Robert's receiving any assistance from him, was to make some business arrangement of the

sort. He wrote to her the same night, and after mentioning the unexpected pleasure of Robert's visit, not only explained the advantage to himself of the arrangement he had proposed, but set forth the greater advantage to Robert, inasmuch as he would thus be able in some measure to keep a hold of him. He judged that although Mrs. Falconer had no great opinion of his religion, she would yet consider his influence rather on the side of good than otherwise in the case of a boy else abandoned to his own resources.

The end of it all was that his grandmother yielded, and Robert was straightway a bejan[first year student (at a Scottish university)], or Yellow-beak.

Three days had he been clothed in the red gown of the Aberdeen student, and had attended the Humanity and Greek class-rooms. On the evening of the third day he was seated at his table preparing his Virgil for the next, when he found himself growing very weary, and no wonder, for, except the walk of a few hundred yards to and from the college, he had had no open air for those three days. It was raining in a persistent November fashion, and he thought of the sea, away through the dark and the rain, tossing uneasily. Should he pay it a visit? He sat for a moment,

> This way and that dividing the swift mind,[Tennyson's *Morte d'Arthur*]

when his eye fell on his violin. He had been so full of his new position and its requirements, that he had not touched it since the session opened. Now it was just what he wanted. He caught it up eagerly, and began to play. The power of the music seized upon him, and he went on playing, forgetful of everything else, till a string broke. It was all too short for further use. Regardless of the rain or the depth of darkness to be traversed before he could find a music-shop, he caught up his cap, and went to rush from the house.

His door opened immediately on the top step of the stair, without any landing. There was a door opposite, to which likewise a few steps led immediately up. The stairs from the two doors united a little below. So near were the doors that one might stride across the fork. The opposite door was open, and in it stood Eric Ericson.

Chapter 7 - Eric Ericson

Robert sprang across the dividing chasm, clasped Ericson's hand in both of his, looked up into his face, and stood speechless. Ericson returned the salute with a still kindness—tender and still. His face was like a gray morning sky of summer from whose level cloud-fields rain will fall before noon.

"So it was you," he said, "playing the violin so well?"

"I was doin' my best," answered Robert. "But eh! Mr. Ericson, I wad[would] hae dune[done] better gin[if] I had kent[known, knew] ye was hearkenin'."

"You couldn't do better than your best," returned Eric, smiling.

"Ay[yes, indeed], but yer best micht aye grow better, ye ken," persisted Robert.

"Come into my room," said Ericson. "This is Friday night, and there is nothing but chapel to-morrow. So we'll have talk instead of work."

In another moment they were seated by a tiny coal fire in a room one side of which was the slope of the roof, with a large, low skylight in it looking seawards. The sound of the distant waves, unheard in Robert's room, beat upon the drum of the skylight, through all the world of mist that lay between it and them—dimly, vaguely—but ever and again with a swell of gathered force, that made the distant tumult doubtful no more.

"I am sorry I have nothing to offer you," said Ericson.

"You remind me of Peter and John at the Beautiful Gate of the temple," returned Robert, attempting to speak English like the Northerner, but breaking down as his heart got the better of him. "Eh! Mr. Ericson, gin[if] ye kent[known, knew] what it is to me to see the face o' ye,

ye wadna speyk like that. Jist lat[let, allow] me sit an' leuk[look] at ye. I want nae[no, not] mair[more].”

A smile broke up the cold, sad, gray light of the young eagle-face. Stern at once and gentle when in repose, its smile was as the summer of some lovely land where neither the heat nor the sun shall smite them. The youth laid his hand upon the boy's head, then withdrew it hastily, and the smile vanished like the sun behind a cloud. Robert saw it, and as if he had been David before Saul, rose instinctively and said,

“I'll gang[go] for my fiddle.—hoots[pshaw]! I hae broken ane[one] o' the strings. We maun[must, have to] bide till the morn[tomorrow]. But I want nae[no, not] fiddle mysel' whan[when] I hear the great water oot[out] there.”

“You're young yet, my boy, or you might hear voices in that water—! I've lived in the sound of it all my days. When I can't rest at night, I hear a moaning and crying in the dark, and I lie and listen till I can't tell whether I'm a man or some God-forsaken sea in the sunless north.”

“Sometimes I believe in naething but my fiddle,” answered Robert.

“Yes, yes. But when it comes *into* you, my boy! You won't hear much music in the cry of the sea after that. As long as you've got it at arm's length, it's all very well. It's interesting then, and you can talk to your fiddle about it, and make poetry about it,” said Ericson, with a smile of self-contempt. “But as soon as the real earnest comes that is all over. The sea-moan is the cry of a tortured world then. Its hollow bed is the cup of the world's pain, ever rolling from side to side and dashing over its lip. Of all that might be, ought to be, nothing to be had!—I could get music out of it once. Look here. I could trifle like that once.”

He half rose, then dropped on his chair. But Robert's believing eyes justified confidence, and Ericson had never had any one to talk to. He

rose again, opened a cupboard at his side, took out some papers, threw them on the table, and, taking his hat, walked towards the door.

"Which of your strings is broken?" he asked.

"The third," answered Robert.

"I will get you one," said Ericson; and before Robert could reply he was down the stair. Robert heard him cough, then the door shut, and he was gone in the rain and fog.

Bewildered, unhappy, ready to fly after him, yet irresolute, Robert almost mechanically turned over the papers upon the little deal table. He was soon arrested by the following verses, headed

A NOONDAY MELODY.

Everything goes to its rest;
The hills are asleep in the noon;
And life is as still in its nest
As the moon when she looks on a moon
In the depths of a calm river's breast
As it steals through a midnight in June.

The streams have forgotten the sea
In the dream of their musical sound;
The sunlight is thick on the tree,
And the shadows lie warm on the ground—
So still, you may watch them and see
Every breath that awakens around.

The churchyard lies still in the heat,
With its handful of mouldering bone;
As still as the long stalk of wheat
In the shadow that sits by the stone,
As still as the grass at my feet
When I walk in the meadows alone.

The waves are asleep on the main,

And the ships are asleep on the wave;
And the thoughts are as still in my brain
As the echo that sleeps in the cave;
All rest from their labour and pain—
Then why should not I in my grave?

His heart ready to burst with a sorrow, admiration, and devotion, which no criticism interfered to qualify, Robert rushed out into the darkness, and sped, fleet-footed, along the only path which Ericson could have taken. He could not bear to be left in the house while his friend was out in the rain.

He was sure of joining him before he reached the new town, for he was fleet-footed, and there was a path only on one side of the way, so that there was no danger of passing him in the dark. As he ran he heard the moaning of the sea. There must be a storm somewhere, away in the deep spaces of its dark bosom, and its lips muttered of its far unrest. When the sun rose it would be seen misty and gray, tossing about under the one rain cloud that like a thinner ocean overspread the heavens—tossing like an animal that would fain lie down and be at peace but could not compose its unwieldy strength.

Suddenly Robert slackened his speed, ceased running, stood, gazed through the darkness at a figure a few yards before him.

An old wall, bowed out with age and the weight behind it, flanked the road in this part. Doors in this wall, with a few steps in front of them and more behind, led up into gardens upon a slope, at the top of which stood the houses to which they belonged. Against one of these doors the figure stood with its head bowed upon its hands. When Robert was within a few feet, it descended and went on.

"Mr. Ericson!" exclaimed Robert. "Ye'll get yer deith gin[if] ye stan'[stand] that gait[way] i' the weet[wet, dew, rain]."

“Amen,” said Ericson, turning with a smile that glimmered wan[reached, gained, got] through the misty night. Then changing his tone, he went on: “What are you after, Robert?”

“You,” answered Robert. “I cudna bide to be left my lane[on my own] whan[when] I micht be wi’ ye a’ the time—gin[if] ye wad[would] lat[let, allow] me. Ye war[were] oot[out] o’ the hoose[house] afore I weel kent[known, knew] what ye was aboot. It’s no a fit nicht for ye to be oot[out] at a’, mair[more] by token ’at ye’re no the ablest to stan’[stand] cauld[cold] an’ weet[wet, dew, rain].”

“I’ve stood a great deal of both in my time,” returned Ericson; “but come along. We’ll go and get that fiddle-string.”

“Dinna ye think it wad[would] be fully better to gang[go] hame[home]?” Robert ventured to suggest.

“What would be the use? I’m in no mood for Plato to-night,” he answered, trying hard to keep from shivering.

“Ye hae an ill cauld[cold] upo’ ye,” persisted Robert; “an’ ye maun[must, have to] be as weet[wet, dew, rain] ’s a dishcloot.”

Ericson laughed—a strange, hollow laugh.

“Come along,” he said. “A walk will do me good. We’ll get the string, and then you shall play to me. That will do me more good yet.”

Robert ceased opposing him, and they walked together to the new town. Robert bought the string, and they set out, as he thought, to return.

But not yet did Ericson seem inclined to go home. He took the lead, and they emerged upon the quay.

There were not many vessels. One of them was the Antwerp tub, already known to Robert. He recognized her even in the dull light of the quay lamps. Her captain being a prudent and well-to-do Dutchman,

never slept on shore; he preferred saving his money; and therefore, as the friends passed, Robert caught sight of him walking his own deck and smoking a long clay pipe before turning in.

"A fine nicht, capt'n[captain]," said Robert.

"It does rain," returned the captain. "Will you come on board and have one schnapps before you turn in?"

"I hae a frien' wi' me here," said Robert, feeling his way.

"Let him come and be welcomed."

Ericson making no objection, they went on board, and down into the neat little cabin, which was all the roomier for the straightness of the vessel's quarter. The captain got out a square, coffin-shouldered bottle, and having respect to the condition of their garments, neither of the young men refused his hospitality, though Robert did feel a little compunction at the thought of the horror it would have caused his grandmother. Then the Dutchman got out his violin and asked Robert to play a Scotch air. But in the middle of it his eyes fell on Ericson, and he stopped at once. Ericson was sitting on a locker, leaning back against the side of the vessel: his eyes were open and fixed, and he seemed quite unconscious of what was passing. Robert fancied at first that the hollands he had taken had gone to his head, but he saw at the same moment, from his glass, that he had scarcely tasted the spirit. In great alarm they tried to rouse him, and at length succeeded. He closed his eyes, opened them again, rose up, and was going away.

"What's the maitter[matter] wi' ye, Mr. Ericson?" said Robert, in distress.

"Nothing, nothing," answered Ericson, in a strange voice. "I fell asleep, I believe. It was very bad manners, captain. I beg your pardon. I believe I am overtired."

The Dutchman was as kind as possible, and begged Ericson to stay the night and occupy his berth. But he insisted on going home, although he was clearly unfit for such a walk. They bade the skipper good-night, went on shore, and set out, Ericson leaning rather heavily upon Robert's arm. Robert led him up Marischal Street.

The steep ascent was too much for Ericson. He stood still upon the bridge and leaned over the wall of it. Robert stood beside, almost in despair about getting him home.

"Have patience with me, Robert," said Ericson, in his natural voice. "I shall be better presently. I don't know what's come to me. If I had been a Celt now, I should have said I had a touch of the second sight. But I am, as far as I know, pure Northman."

"What did you see?" asked Robert, with a strange feeling that miles of the spirit world, if one may be allowed such a contradiction in words, lay between him and his friend.

Ericson returned no answer. Robert feared he was going to have a relapse; but in a moment more he lifted himself up and bent again to the *brae*[hillside].

They got on pretty well till they were about the middle of the Gallowgate.

"I can't," said Ericson feebly, and half leaned, half fell against the wall of a house.

"Come into this shop," said Robert. "I ken the man. He'll lat[let, allow] ye sit doon."

He managed to get him in. He was as pale as death. The bookseller got a chair, and he sank into it. Robert was almost at his wit's end. There was no such thing as a cab in Aberdeen for years and years after the date of

my story. He was holding a glass of water to Ericson's lips,—when he heard his name, in a low earnest whisper, from the door. There, round the door-cheek[door-post, doorway], peered the white face and red head of Shargar.

"Robert! Robert!" said Shargar.

"I hear ye," returned Robert coolly: he was too anxious to be surprised at anything. "Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue. I'll come to ye in a minute."

Ericson recovered a little, refused the whisky offered by the bookseller, rose, and staggered out.

"If I were only home!" he said. "But where is home?"

"We'll try to mak[make, do] ane[one]," returned Robert. "Tak a haud[hold, keep] o' me. Lay yer weicht upo' me.—gin[if] it warna for yer len'th, I cud[could] cairry ye weel eneuch[enough]. Whaur's that Shargar?" he muttered to himself, looking up and down the gloomy street.

But no Shargar was to be seen. Robert peered in vain into every dark court they crept past, till at length he all but came to the conclusion that Shargar was only "fantastical."

When they had reached the hollow, and were crossing then canal-bridge by Mount Hooly, Ericson's strength again failed him, and again he leaned upon the bridge. Nor had he leaned long before Robert found that he had fainted. In desperation he began to hoist the tall form upon his back, when he heard the quick step of a runner behind him and the words—

"Gie[give] 'im to me, Robert; gie[give] 'im to me. I can carry 'im fine."

"Haud[hold, keep] awa'[away] wi' ye," returned Robert; and again Shargar fell behind.

For a few hundred yards he trudged along manfully; but his strength, more from the nature of his burden than its weight, soon gave way. He stood still to recover. The same moment Shargar was by his side again.

"Noo[now], Robert," he said, pleadingly.

Robert yielded, and the burden was shifted to Shargar's back.

How they managed it they hardly knew themselves; but after many changes they at last got Ericson home, and up to his own room. He had revived several times, but gone off again. In one of his faints, Robert undressed him and got him into bed. He had so little to cover him, that Robert could not help crying with misery. He himself was well provided, and would gladly have shared with Ericson, but that was hopeless. He could, however, make him warm in bed. Then leaving Shargar in charge, he sped back to the new town to Dr. Anderson. The doctor had his carriage out at once, wrapped Robert in a plaid[plaid used as blanket] and brought him home with him.

Ericson came to himself, and seeing Shargar by his bedside, tried to sit up, asking feebly,

"Where am I?"

"In yer ain[own] bed, Mr. Ericson," answered Shargar.

"And who are you?" asked Ericson again, bewildered.

Shargar's pale face no doubt looked strange under his crown of red hair.

"Ow[oh]! I'm naebody."

"You must be somebody, or else my brain's in a bad state," returned Ericson.

"Na, na, I'm naebody. Naething ava[at all]. Robert 'll be hame[home] in ae meenit[minute].—I'm Robert's tyke[dog]," concluded Shargar, with a sudden

inspiration.

This answer seemed to satisfy Ericson, for he closed his eyes and lay still; nor did he speak again till Robert arrived with the doctor.

Poor food, scanty clothing, undue exertion in travelling to and from the university, hard mental effort against weakness, disquietude of mind, all borne with an endurance unconscious of itself, had reduced Eric Ericson to his present condition. Strength had given way at last, and he was now lying in the low border wash of a dead sea of fever.

The last of an ancient race of poor men, he had no relative but a second cousin, and no means except the little he advanced him, chiefly in kind, to be paid for when Eric had a profession. This cousin was in the herring trade, and the chief assistance he gave him was to send him by sea, from Wick to Aberdeen, a small barrel of his fish every session. One herring, with two or three potatoes, formed his dinner as long as the barrel lasted. But at Aberdeen or elsewhere no one carried his head more erect than Eric Ericson—not from pride, but from simplicity and inborn dignity; and there was not a man during his curriculum more respected than he. An excellent classical scholar—as scholarship went in those days—he was almost the only man in the university who made his knowledge of Latin serve towards an acquaintance with the Romance languages. He had gained a small bursary, and gave lessons when he could.

But having no level channel for the outgoing of the waters of one of the tenderest hearts that ever lived, those waters had sought to break a passage upwards. Herein his experience corresponded in a considerable degree to that of Robert; only Eric's more fastidious and more instructed nature bred a thousand difficulties which he would meet one by one, whereas Robert, less delicate and more robust, would break through all the oppositions of theological science falsely so called, and take the

kingdom of heaven by force. But indeed the ruins of the ever falling temple of theology had accumulated far more heavily over Robert's well of life, than over that of Ericson: the obstructions to his faith were those that rolled from the disintegrating mountains of humanity, rather than the rubbish heaped upon it by the careless masons who take the quarry whence they hew the stones for the temple—built without hands eternal in the heavens.

When Dr. Anderson entered, Ericson opened his eyes wide. The doctor approached, and taking his hand began to feel his pulse. Then first Ericson comprehended his visit.

"I can't," he said, withdrawing his hand. "I am not so ill as to need a doctor."

"My dear sir," said Dr. Anderson, courteously, "there will be no occasion to put you to any pain."

"Sir," said Eric, "I have no money."

The doctor laughed.

"And I have more than I know how to make a good use of."

"I would rather be left alone," persisted Ericson, turning his face away.

"Now, my dear sir," said the doctor, with gentle decision, "that is very wrong. With what face can you offer a kindness when your turn comes, if you won't accept one yourself?"

Ericson held out his wrist. Dr. Anderson questioned, prescribed, and, having given directions, went home, to call again in the morning.

And now Robert was somewhat in the position of the old woman who "had so many children she didn't know what to do." Dr. Anderson ordered nourishment for Ericson, and here was Shargar upon his hands

as well! Shargar and he could share, to be sure, and exist: but for Ericson —?

Not a word did Robert exchange with Shargar till he had gone to the druggist's and got the medicine for Ericson, who, after taking it, fell into a troubled sleep. Then, leaving the two doors open, Robert joined Shargar in his own room. There he made up a good fire, and they sat and dried themselves.

"Noo[now], Shargar," said Robert at length, "hoo[how] cam *ye* here?"

His question was too like one of his grandmother's to be pleasant to Shargar.

"Dinna speyk to me that gait[way], Robert, or I'll cut my throat" he returned.

"Hoots[pshaw]! I maun[must, have to] ken a' aboot it," insisted Robert, but with much modified and partly convicted tone.

"Weel, I never said I wadna tell ye a' aboot it. The fac'[fact, reality] 's this—an' I'm no' up to the leein'[lying] as I used to be, Robert: I hae tried it ower[over] an' ower[over], but a lee comes rouch[rough] throw[through] my thrapple[windpipe, throat] noo[now]. Faith! I cud[could] hae leed[lied] ance[once] wi' onybody, barrin' the de'il[devil]. I winna[will not] lee. I'm nae[no, not] leein'[lying]. The fac's[facts, realities] jist this: I cudna bide ahin' ye ony[any] langer[longer]."

"But what, the muckle[much] lang-tailed[tedious] deevil! am I to do wi' ye?" returned Robert, in real perplexity, though only pretended displeasure.

"Gie[give] me something to ate, an' I'll tell ye what to do wi' me," answered Shargar. "I dinna care a scart[scratch, strike a match] what it is."

Robert rang the bell and ordered some porridge, and while it was preparing, Shargar told his story—how having heard a rumour of apprenticeship to a tailor, he had the same night dropped from the gable

window to the ground, and with three halfpence in his pocket had wandered and begged his way to Aberdeen, arriving with one halfpenny left.

"But what am I to do wi' ye?" said Robert once more, in as much perplexity as ever.

"Bide till I hae tellt ye, as I said I wad[would]," answered Shargar. "Dinna ye think I'm the haveless[careless (therefore helpless)] crater[creature] I used to be. I hae been in Aberdeen three days! Ay[yes, indeed], an' I hae seen you ilka[every] day in yer reid[red] goon[gown], an' richt braw[beautiful, fine] it is. Luik[look] ye here!"

He put his hand in his pocket and pulled out what amounted to two or three shillings, chiefly in coppers, which he exposed with triumph on the table.

"Whaur got ye a' that siller[silver, money], man?" asked Robert.

"Here and there, I kenna whaur; but I hae gien[given] the weicht o' 't for 't a' the same—rinnin'[running] here an' rinnin'[running] there, cairryin' boxes till an' frae[from] the smacks[single-masted sailing boats], an' doin' a'thing[everything, anything] whether they bade[did bide] me or no. Yesterday mornin' I got thrippence by hingin'[hanging] aboot the Royal afore the coches[coaches] startit. I luikit[looked] a' up and doon the street till I saw somebody hine[away, afar] awa[away] wi' a porkmanty[portmanteau]. Till 'im I ran, an' he was an auld man, an' maist[most, almost] at the last gasp wi' the weicht o' 't, an' gae[gave] me 't to carry. An' wha duv[do] ye think gae[gave] me a shillin' the verra[very] first nicht? —Wha but my brither[brother] Sandy?"

"Lord Rothie?"

"Ay[yes, indeed], faith. I kent[known, knew] him weel eneuch[enough], but little he kent[known, knew] me. There he was upo' Black Geordie. He's turnin' auld noo[now]."

"Yer brither[brother]?"

"Na. He's young eneuch[enough] for ony[any] mischeef; but Black Geordie. What on earth gars[causes, compels] him gang[go] stravaguin'[saunter, go about aimlessly] aboot upo' that deevil? I doobt[suspect] he's a kelpie[river-horse], or a hell-horse, or something no canny o' that kin'[kind]; for faith! Brither[brother] Sandy's no ower[over] canny himsel', I'm thinkin'. But Geordie—the aulder[older] the waur[worse] set[inclined]. An' sae I'm thinkin' wi' his maister."

"Did ye iver[ever] see yer father, Shargar?"

"Na. Nor I dinna want to see 'im. I'm upo' my mither's side. But that's naething to the pint[point]. A' that I want o' you 's to lat[let, allow] me come hame[home] at nicht, an' lie upo' the flure[floor] here. I sweir I'll lie i' the street gin[if] ye dinna lat[let, allow] me. I'll sleep as soun' 's Peter MacInnes whan[when] Maccleary's preachin'. An' I winna[will not] ate muckle[much]—I hae a dreidfu' pooer o' aitin'[eating]—an' a' 'at I gether I'll fess[fetch, bring] hame[home] to you, to du[do] wi' 't as ye like.—Man, I cairriet[carried] a heap o' things the day till the skipper o' that boat 'at ye gaed[went] intil[into, within] wi' Maister Ericson the nicht[tonight]. He's a fine chiel'[child, young person] that skipper!"

Robert was astonished at the change that had passed upon Shargar. His departure had cast him upon his own resources, and allowed the individuality repressed by every event of his history, even by his worship of Robert, to begin to develop itself. Miserable for a few weeks, he had revived in the fancy that to work hard at school would give him some chance of rejoining Robert. Thence, too, he had watched to please Mrs. Falconer, and had indeed begun to buy golden opinions from all sorts of people. He had a hope in prospect. But into the midst fell the whisper of the apprenticeship like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky. He fled at once.

"Weel, ye can hae my bed the nicht[tonight]," said Robert, "for I maun[must, have to] sit up wi' Mr. Ericson."

"'Deed I'll hae naething o' the kin'[kind]. I'll sleep upo' the flure[floor], or else upo' the door-stane[stone at threshold of door]. Man, I'm no clean eneuch[enough] efter[after] what I've come throu sin'[since] I drappit[dropped] frae[from] the window-sill i' the ga'le-room[gable room]. But jist len'[lend, give] me yer plaid[plaid used as blanket], an' I'll sleep upo' the rug here as gin[if] I war[were] i' Paradees. An' faith, sae I am, Robert. Ye maun[must, have to] gang[go] to yer bed some time the nicht[tonight] forby[as well], or ye winna[will not] be fit for yer wark[work] the morn[tomorrow]. Ye can jist gie[give] me a kick, an' I'll be up afore ye can gie[give] me anither."

Their supper arrived from below, and, each on one side of the fire, they ate the porridge, conversing all the while about old times—for the youngest life has its old times, its golden age—and old adventures,—Dooble Sanny, Betty, &c., &c. There were but two subjects which Robert avoided—Miss St. John and the bonnie leddy. Shargar was at length deposited upon the little bit of hearthrug which adorned rather than enriched the room, with Robert's plaid[plaid used as blanket] of shepherd tartan around him, and an Ainsworth's dictionary under his head for a pillow.

"Man, I fin' mysel' jist like a muckle[much] colley[sheep-dog]," he said. "Whan[when] I close my een[eyes], I'm no sure 'at I'm no i' the inside o' yer auld luckie-daiddie's[grandfather's] kilt. The Lord preserve me frae[from] ever sic[such] a fricht again as yer grannie an' Betty gae[gave] me the nicht[tonight] they fand[found] me in 't! I dinna believe it's in natur' to hae sic[such] a fricht twise[twice] in ae lifetime. Sae I'll fa'[fall, befall] asleep at ance[once], an' say nae[no, not] mair[more]—but as muckle[much] o' my prayers as I can min' upo'[remember] noo[now] 'at grannie's no at my lug[ear]."

"Haud[hold, keep] yer impidence, an' yer tongue thegither[together]," said Robert. "Min'[mind, remember] 'at my grannie's been the best frien' ye ever had."

"'Cep'except, but my ainown mither," returned Shargar, with a sleepy doggedness in his tone.

During their conference, Ericson had been slumbering. Robert had visited him from time to time, but he had not awaked. As soon as Shargar was disposed of, he took his candle and sat down by him. He grew more uneasy. Robert guessed that the candle was the cause, and put it out. Ericson was quieter. So Robert sat in the dark.

But the rain had now ceased. Some upper wind had swept the clouds from the sky, and the whole world of stars was radiant over the earth and its griefs.

"O God, where art thou?" he said in his heart, and went to his own room to look out.

There was no curtain, and the blind had not been drawn down, therefore the earth looked in at the storm-window. The sea neither glimmered nor shone. It lay across the horizon like a low level cloud, out of which came a moaning. Was this moaning all of the earth, or was there trouble in the starry places too? thought Robert, as if already he had begun to suspect the truth from afar—that save in the secret place of the Most High, and in the heart that is hid with the Son of Man in the bosom of the Father, there is trouble—a sacred unrest—everywhere—the moaning of a tide setting homewards, even towards the bosom of that Father.

Chapter 8 - A Human Providence

Robert kept himself thoroughly awake the whole night, and it was well that he had not to attend classes in the morning. As the gray of the world's reviving consciousness melted in at the window, the things around and within him looked and felt ghastly. Nothing is liker the gray dawn than the soul of one who has been watching by a sick bed all the long hours of the dark, except, indeed, it be the first glimmerings of truth on the mind lost in the dark of a godless life.

Ericson had waked often, and Robert had administered his medicine carefully. But he had been mostly between sleeping and waking, and had murmured strange words, whose passing shadows rather than glimmers roused the imagination of the youth as with messages from regions unknown.

As the light came he found his senses going, and went to his own room again to get a book that he might keep himself awake by reading at the window. To his surprise Shargar was gone, and for a moment he doubted whether he had not been dreaming all that had passed between them the night before. His plaid[plaid used as blanket] was folded up and laid upon a chair, as if it had been there all night, and his Ainsworth was on the table. But beside it was the money Shargar had drawn from his pockets.

About nine o'clock Dr. Anderson arrived, found Ericson not so much worse as he had expected, comforted Robert, and told him he must go to bed.

"But I cannot leave Mr. Ericson," said Robert.

"Let your friend—what's his odd name?—watch him during the day."

“Shargar, you mean, sir. But that’s his nickname. His rale[real, true, very] name they say his mither says, is George Moray—wi’ an *o* an’ no a *u-r*.—Do you see, sir?” concluded Robert significantly.

“No, I don’t,” answered the doctor.

“They say he’s a son o’ the auld Markis’s, that’s it. His mither’s a randy[rough, wild] wife ’at gangs[goes, walks] aboot the country—a gipsy they say. There’s nae[no, not] doobt[suspect] aboot *her*. An’ by a’ accoonts the father’s likly[likely] eneuch[enough].”

“And how on earth did you come to have such a questionable companion?”

“Shargar’s as fine a crater[creature] as ever God made,” said Robert warmly. “Ye’ll alloo ’at God made him, doctor; though his father an’ mither thochtna muckle[much] aboot him or God either whan[when] they got him atween them? An’ Shargar couldna help it. It micht ha’[have”] been you or me for that maitter[matter], doctor.”

“I beg your pardon, Robert,” said Dr. Anderson quietly, although delighted with the fervour of his young kinsman: “I only wanted to know how he came to be your companion.”

“I beg *your* pardon, doctor—but I thoucht ye was some scunnert[disgusted, loathed] at it; an’ I canna bide Shargar to be luikit[looked] doon upo’. Luik[look] here,” he continued, going to his box, and bringing out Shargar’s little heap of coppers, in which two sixpences obscurely shone, “he brocht[brought] a’ that hame[home] last nicht, an’ syne[then] sleepit upo’ the rug i’ my room there. We’ll want a’ ’at he can mak[make, do] an’ me too afore we get Mr. Ericson up again.”

“But ye haena tellt me yet,” said the doctor, so pleased with the lad that he relapsed into the dialect of his youth, “hoo[how] ye cam to forgather[assemble, encounter] wi’ ’im.”

“I tellt ye a’ aboot it, doctor. It was a’ my grannie’s doin’, God bless her —for weel he may, an’ muckle[much] she needs ’t.”

“Oh! yes; I remember now all your grandmother’s part in the story,” returned the doctor. “But I still want to know how he came here.”

“She was gaein’ to mak[make] a taylor o’ ’m[him]: an’ he jist ran awa’[away], an’ cam to me.”

“It was too bad of him that—after all she had done for him.”

“Ow[oh], ’deed no, doctor. Even whan[when] ye boucht[bought] a man an’ paid for him, accordin’ to the Jewish law, ye cudna mak[make, do] a slave o’ ’im for a’thegither[all together], ohn[without] him seekin’ ’t himsel’.—Eh! Gin[if] she could only get my father hame[home]!” sighed Robert, after a pause.

“What should she want him home for?” asked Dr. Anderson, still making conversation.

“I didna mean hame[home] to Rothieden. I believe she cud[could] bide never seein’ ’im again, gin[if] only he wasna i’ the ill place. She has awfu’ notions aboot burnin’ ill sowls[souls] for ever an’ ever. But it’s no hersel’. It’s the wyte[blame, reproach, fault] o’ the ministers. Doctor, I do believe she wad[would] gang[go] an’ be brunt[burned] hersel’ wi’ a great thanksgivin’, gin[if] it wad[would] lat[let, allow] ony[any] puir[poor] crater[creature] oot[out] o’ ’t—no to say my father. An’ I sair[sorely] misdoobt[doubt, disbelieve] gin[if] mony[many] o’ them ’at pat[put, made] it in her heid[head] wad[would] do as muckle[much]. I’m some feared they’re like Paul afore he was convertit: he wadna lift a stane himsel’, but he likit weel to stan’[stand] oot[out] by an’ luik[look] on.”[Paul stood by, approving, as others stoned Stephen in Acts 8:1]

A deep sigh, almost a groan, from the bed, reminded them that they were talking too much and too loud for a sick-room. It was followed by the words, muttered, but articulate,

"What's the good when you don't know whether there's a God at all?"

"'Deed, that's verra[very] true, Mr. Ericson," returned Robert. "I wish ye wad[would] fin' oot[out] an' tell me. I wad[would] be blithe to hear what ye had to say anent[concerning] it—gin[if] it was *ay*[*yes, indeed*], ye ken."

Ericson went on murmuring, but inarticulately now.

"This won't do at all, Robert, my boy," said Dr. Anderson. "You must not talk about such things with him, or indeed about anything. You must keep him as quiet as ever you can."

"I thocht[thought] he was comin' till himsel'," returned Robert. "But I will tak care, I assure ye, doctor. Only I'm feared I may fa'[fall, befall] asleep the nicht[tonight], for I was dooms[exceedingly, very] sleepy this mornin'."

"I will send Johnston as soon as I get home, and you must go to bed when he comes."

"'Deed, doctor, that winna[will not] do at a'. It wad[would] be ower[over] mony[many] strange faces a'thegither[all together]. We'll get Mistress Fyvie to luik[look] till 'im the day, an' Shargar canna work the morn[tomorrow], bein' Sunday. An' I'll gang[go] to my bed for fear o' doin' waur[worse], though I doobt[suspect] I winna[will not] sleep i' the daylicht."

Dr. Anderson was satisfied, and went home—cogitating much. This boy, this cousin of his, made a vortex of good about him into which whoever came near it was drawn. He seemed at the same time quite unaware of anything worthy in his conduct. The good he did sprung from some inward necessity, with just enough in it of the salt of choice to keep it from losing its savour. To these cogitations of Dr. Anderson, I add that there was no conscious exercise of religion in it—for there his mind was all at sea. Of course I believe notwithstanding that religion had much, I ought to say everything, to do with it. Robert had not yet found in God a reason for being true to his fellows; but, if God was leading him to be the

man he became, how could any good results of this leading be other than religion? All good is of God. Robert began where he could. The first table was too high for him; he began with the second. If a man love his brother whom he hath seen, the love of God whom he hath not seen, is not very far off. These results in Robert were the first outcome of divine facts and influences—they were the buds of the fruit hereafter to be gathered in perfect devotion. God be praised by those who know religion to be the truth of humanity—its own truth that sets it free—not binds, and lops, and mutilates it! who see God to be the father of every human soul—the ideal Father, not an inventor of schemes, or the upholder of a court etiquette for whose use he has chosen to desecrate the name of *justice*!

To return to Dr. Anderson. I have had little opportunity of knowing his history in India. He returned from it half-way down the hill of life, sad, gentle, kind, and rich. Whence his sadness came, we need not inquire. Some woman out in that fervid land may have darkened his story—darkened it wronglessly, it may be, with coldness, or only with death. But to return home without wife to accompany him or child to meet him,—to sit by his riches like a man over a fire of straws in a Siberian frost; to know that old faces were gone and old hearts changed, that the pattern of things in the heavens had melted away from the face of the earth, that the chill evenings of autumn were settling down into longer and longer nights, and that no hope lay any more beyond the mountains—surely this was enough to make a gentle-minded man sad, even if the individual sorrows of his history had gathered into gold and purple in the west. I say *west* advisedly. For we are journeying, like our globe, ever towards the east. Death and the west are behind us—ever behind us, and settling into the unchangeable.

It was natural that he should be interested in the fine promise of Robert, in whom he saw revived the hopes of his own youth, but in a nature at once more robust and more ideal. Where the doctor was refined, Robert was strong; where the doctor was firm with a firmness he had cultivated, Robert was imperious with an imperiousness time would mellow; where the doctor was generous and careful at once, Robert gave his mite and forgot it. He was rugged in the simplicity of his truthfulness, and his speech betrayed him as altogether of the people; but the doctor knew the hole of the pit whence he had been himself digged. All that would fall away as the spiky shell from the polished chestnut, and be reabsorbed in the growth of the grand cone-flowering tree, to stand up in the sun and wind of the years a very altar of incense. It is no wonder, I repeat, that he loved the boy, and longed to further his plans. But he was too wise to overwhelm him with a cataract of fortune instead of blessing him with the merciful dew of progress.

"The fellow will bring me in for no end of expense," he said, smiling to himself, as he drove home in his chariot. "The less he means it the more unconscionable he will be. There's that Ericson—but that isn't worth thinking of. I must do something for that queer *protégé* of his, though—that Shargar. The fellow is as good as a dog, and that's saying not a little for him. I wonder if he can learn—or if he takes after his father the marquis, who never could spell. Well, it is a comfort to have something to do worth doing. I did think of endowing a hospital; but I'm not sure that it isn't better to endow a good man than a hospital. I'll think about it. I won't say anything about Shargar either, till I see how he goes on. I might give him a job, though, now and then. But where to fall in with him—prowling about after jobs?"

He threw himself back in his seat, and laughed with a delight he had rarely felt. He was a providence watching over the boys, who expected nothing of him beyond advice for Ericson! Might there not be a Providence that equally transcended the vision of men, shaping to nobler ends the blocked-out designs of their rough-hewn marbles?

His thoughts wandered back to his friend the Brahmin, who died longing for that absorption into deity which had been the dream of his life: might not the Brahmin find the grand idea shaped to yet finer issues than his aspiration had dared contemplate?—might he not inherit in the purification of his will such an absorption as should intensify his personality?

Chapter 9 - A Human Soul

Ericson lay for several weeks, during which time Robert and Shargar were his only nurses. They contrived, by abridging both rest and labour, to give him constant attendance. Shargar went to bed early and got up early, so as to let Robert have a few hours' sleep before his classes began. Robert again slept in the evening, after Shargar came home, and made up for the time by reading while he sat by his friend. Mrs. Fyvie's attendance was in requisition only for the hours when he had to be at lectures. By the greatest economy of means, consisting of what Shargar brought in by jobbing about the quay and the coach-offices, and what Robert had from Dr. Anderson for copying his manuscript, they contrived to procure for Ericson all that he wanted. The shopping of the two boys, in their utter ignorance of such delicacies as the doctor told them to get for him, the blunders they made as to the shops at which they were to be bought, and the consultations they held, especially about the preparing of the prescribed nutriment, afforded them many an amusing retrospect in after years. For the house was so full of lodgers, that Robert begged Mrs. Fyvie to give herself no trouble in the matter. Her conscience, however, was uneasy, and she spoke to Dr. Anderson; but he assured her that she might trust the boys. What cooking they could not manage, she undertook cheerfully, and refused to add anything to the rent on Shargar's account.

Dr. Anderson watched everything, the two boys as much as his patient. He allowed them to work on, sending only the wine that was necessary from his own cellar. The moment the supplies should begin to fail, or the boys to look troubled, he was ready to do more. About Robert's

perseverance he had no doubt: Shargar's faithfulness he wanted to prove.

Robert wrote to his grandmother to tell her that Shargar was with him, working hard. Her reply was somewhat cold and offended, but was inclosed in a parcel containing all Shargar's garments, and ended with the assurance that as long as he did well she was ready to do what she could.

Few English readers will like Mrs. Falconer; but her grandchild considered her one of the noblest women ever God made; and I, from his account, am of the same mind. Her care was fixed

> To fill her odorous lamp with *deeds* of light,
> And hope that reaps not shame.

And if one must choose between the *how* and the *what*, let me have the *what*, come of the *how* what may. I know of a man so sensitive, that he shuts his ears to his sister's griefs, because it spoils his digestion to think of them.

One evening Robert was sitting by the table in Ericson's room. Dr. Anderson had not called that day, and he did not expect to see him now, for he had never come so late. He was quite at his ease, therefore, and busy with two things at once, when the doctor opened the door and walked in. I think it is possible that he came up quietly with some design of surprising him. He found him with a stocking on one hand, a darning needle in the other, and a Greek book open before him. Taking no apparent notice of him, he walked up to the bedside, and Robert put away his work. After his interview with his patient was over, the doctor signed to him to follow him to the next room. There Shargar lay on the

rug already snoring. It was a cold night in December, but he lay in his under-clothing, with a single blanket round him.

"Good training for a soldier," said the doctor; "and so was your work a minute ago, Robert."

"Ay[yes, indeed]," answered Robert, colouring a little; "I was readin' a bit o' the Anabasis."[historical account of 10000 Greek mercenaries by Xenophon]

The doctor smiled a far-off sly smile.

"I think it was rather the Katabasis[descent into the underworld in Greek lore], if one might venture to judge from the direction of your labours."

"Weel," answered Robert, "what wad[would] ye hae me do? Wad[would] ye hae me lat[let, allow] Mr. Ericson gang[go] wi' holes i' the heels o' 's hose, whan[when] I can mak[make, do] them a' snod[smooth, trim, snug], an' learn my Greek at the same time? Hoots[pshaw], doctor! dinna lauch[laugh] at me. I was doin' nae[no, not] ill. A body may please themsel's—whiles[sometimes, at times] surely, ohn[without] sinned."

"But it's such waste of time! Why don't you buy him new ones?"

"'Deed that's easier said than dune[done]. I hae eneuch[enough] ado wi' my siller[silver, money] as 'tis; an' gin[if] it warna for you, doctor, I *do* not ken what wad[would] come o' 's; for ye see I hae no richt to come upo' my grannie for ither[other] fowk[folk]. There wad[would] be nae[no, not] en' to that."

"But I could lend you the money to buy him some stockings."

"An' whan[when] wad[would] I be able to pay ye, do ye think, doctor? In anither warl'[world] maybe, whaur the currency micht be sae different there wad[would] be no possibility o' reckonin' the rate o' exchange. Na, na."

"But I will give you the money if you like."

"Na, na. You hae dune[done] eneuch[enough] already, an' mony[many] thanks. Siller's[silver, money] no sae easy come by to be wastit[wasted], as lang's[long] a

darn 'll do. Forbye[As well], gin[if] ye began wi' *his* claes[clothes], ye wadna ken whaur to haud[hold, keep]; for it wad[would] jist be the new claith[cloth] upo' the auld garment: ye micht as weel new cleed[clothe, shelter] him at ance[once]."

"And why not if I choose, Mr. Falconer?"

"Speir[ask about, enquire] ye that at *him*, an' see what ye'll get—a luik[look] 'at wad[would] fess[fetch, bring] a corbie[crow, raven] frae[from] the lift[sky]. I wadna hae ye try that. Some fowk's[folk's] poverty maun[must, have to] be han'let[handled] jist like a sair[sore] place, doctor. He canna weel compleen o' a bit darnin'.—He canna tak that ill," repeated Robert, in a tone that showed he yet felt some anxiety on the subject; "but new anes[ones]! I wadna like to be by whan[when] he fand[found] that oot[out]. Maybe he micht tak them frae[from] a wuman[woman]; but frae[from] a man body!—na, na; I maun[must, have to] jist darn awa'[away]. But I'll mak[make, do] them dacent eneuch[enough] afore I hae dune[done] wi' them. A fiddler has fingers."

The doctor smiled a pleased smile; but when he got into his carriage, again he laughed heartily.

The evening deepened into night. Robert thought Ericson was asleep. But he spoke.

"Who is that at the street door?" he said.

They were at the top of the house, and there was no window to the street. But Ericson's senses were preternaturally acute, as is often the case in such illnesses.

"I dinna hear onybody," answered Robert.

"There was somebody," returned Ericson.

From that moment he began to be restless, and was more feverish than usual throughout the night.

Up to this time he had spoken little, was depressed with a suffering to which he could give no name—not pain, he said—but such that he could rouse no mental effort to meet it: his endurance was passive altogether. This night his brain was more affected. He did not rave, but often wandered; never spoke nonsense, but many words that would have seemed nonsense to ordinary people: to Robert they seemed inspired. His imagination, which was greater than any other of his fine faculties, was so roused that he talked in verse—probably verse composed before and now recalled. He would even pray sometimes in measured lines, and go on murmuring petitions, till the words of the murmur became undistinguishable, and he fell asleep. But even in his sleep he would speak; and Robert would listen in awe; for such words, falling from such a man, were to him as dim breaks of coloured light from the rainbow walls of the heavenly city.

"If God were *thinking* me," said Ericson, "ah! But if he be only *dreaming* me, I shall go mad."

Ericson's outside was like his own northern clime—dark, gentle, and clear, with gray-blue seas, and a sun that seems to shine out of the past, and know nothing of the future. But within glowed a volcanic angel of aspiration, fluttering his half-grown wings, and ever reaching towards the heights whence all things are visible, and where all passions are safe because true, that is divine. Iceland herself has her Hecla.

Robert listened with keenest ear. A mist of great meaning hung about the words his friend had spoken. He might speak more. For some minutes he listened in vain, and was turning at last towards his book in hopelessness, when he did speak yet again: Robert's ear soon detected the rhythmic motion of his speech.

"Come in the glory of thine excellence;

Rive the dense gloom with wedges of clear light;
And let the shimmer of thy chariot wheels
Burn through the cracks of night.—So slowly, Lord,
To lift myself to thee with hands of toil,
Climbing the slippery cliff of unheard prayer!
Lift up a hand among my idle days—
One beckoning finger. I will cast aside
The clogs of earthly circumstance, and run
Up the broad highways where the countless worlds
Sit ripening in the summer of thy love."

Breathless for fear of losing a word, Robert yet remembered that he had seen something like these words in the papers Ericson had given him to read on the night when his illness began. When he had fallen asleep and silent, he searched and found the poem from which I give the following extracts. He had not looked at the papers since that night.

A PRAYER.

O Lord, my God, how long
Shall my poor heart pant for a boundless joy?
How long, O mighty Spirit, shall I hear
The murmur of Truth's crystal waters slide
From the deep caverns of their endless being,
But my lips taste not, and the grosser air
Choke each pure inspiration of thy will?

I would be a wind,
Whose smallest atom is a viewless wing,
All busy with the pulsing life that throbs
To do thy bidding; yea, or the meanest thing
That has relation to a changeless truth
Could I but be instinct with thee—each thought
The lightning of a pure intelligence,
And every act as the loud thunder-clap
Of currents warring for a vacuum.

Lord, clothe me with thy truth as with a robe.
Purge me with sorrow. I will bend my head,
And let the nations of thy waves pass over,
Bathing me in thy consecrated strength.
And let the many-voiced and silver winds
Pass through my frame with their clear influence.
O save me—I am blind; lo! thwarting shapes
wall up the void before, and thrusting out
Lean arms of unshaped expectation, beckon
Down to the night of all unholy thoughts.

I have seen
Unholy shapes lop off my shining thoughts,
Which I had thought nursed in thine emerald light;
And they have lent me leathern wings of fear,
Of baffled pride and harrowing distrust;
And Godhead with its crown of many stars,
Its pinnacles of flaming holiness,
And voice of leaves in the green summer-time,
Has seemed the shadowed image of a self.
Then my soul blackened; and I rose to find
And grasp my doom, and cleave the arching deeps
Of desolation.

O Lord, my soul is a forgotten well;
Clad round with its own rank luxuriance;
A fountain a kind sunbeam searches for,
Sinking the lustre of its arrowy finger
Through the long grass its own strange virtue

note from MacDonald: "This line is one of many instances in which my reader will see both the carelessness of Ericson and my religion towards his remains."

Hath blinded up its crystal eye withal:
Make me a broad strong river coming down
With shouts from its high hills, whose rocky hearts
Throb forth the joy of their stability
In watery pulses from their inmost deeps,
And I shall be a vein upon thy world,
Circling perpetual from the parent deep.

O First and Last, O glorious all in all,
In vain my faltering human tongue would seek
To shape the vesture of the boundless thought,
Summing all causes in one burning word;
Give me the spirit's living tongue of fire,
Whose only voice is in an attitude
Of keenest tension, bent back on itself
With a strong upward force; even as thy bow
Of bended colour stands against the north,
And, in an attitude to spring to heaven,
Lays hold of the kindled hills.

Most mighty One,
Confirm and multiply my thoughts of good;
Help me to wall each sacred treasure round
With the firm battlements of special action.
Alas my holy, happy thoughts of thee
Make not perpetual nest within my soul,
But like strange birds of dazzling colours stoop
The trailing glories of their sunward speed,
For one glad moment filling my blasted boughs
With the sunshine of their wings.

Make me a forest
Of gladdest life, wherein perpetual spring
Lifts up her leafy tresses in the wind.

Lo! now I see
Thy trembling starlight sit among my pines,
And thy young moon slide down my arching boughs
With a soft sound of restless eloquence.
And I can feel a joy as when thy hosts
Of trampling winds, gathering in maddened bands,
Roar upward through the blue and flashing day
Round my still depths of uncleft solitude.

Hear me, O Lord,
When the black night draws down upon my soul,

And voices of temptation darken down
The misty wind, slamming thy starry doors,
With bitter jests. “Thou fool!” they seem to say
“Thou hast no seed of goodness in thee; all
Thy nature hath been stung right through and through.
Thy sin hath blasted thee, and made thee old.
Thou hadst a will, but thou hast killed it—dead—
And with the fulsome garniture of life
Built out the loathsome corpse. Thou art a child
Of night and death, even lower than a worm.
Gather the skirts up of thy shadowy self,
And with what resolution thou hast left,
Fall on the damned spikes of doom.”

O take me like a child,
If thou hast made me for thyself, my God,
And lead me up thy hills. I shall not fear
So thou wilt make me pure, and beat back sin
With the terrors of thine eye.

Lord hast thou sent
Thy moons to mock us with perpetual hope?
Lighted within our breasts the love of love,
To make us ripen for despair, my God?

Oh, dost thou hold each individual soul
Strung clear upon thy flaming rods of purpose?
Or does thine inextinguishable will
Stand on the steeps of night with lifted hand,
Filling the yawning wells of monstrous space
With mixing thought—drinking up single life
As in a cup? and from the rending folds
Of glimmering purpose, the gloom do all thy navied stars
Slide through the gloom with mystic melody,
Like wishes on a brow? Oh, is my soul,
Hung like a dew-drop in thy grassy ways,
Drawn up again into the rack of change,

Even through the lustre which created it?
O mighty one, thou wilt not smite me through
With scorching wrath, because my spirit stands
Bewildered in thy circling mysteries.

Here came the passage Robert had heard him repeat, and then the following paragraph:

Lord, thy strange mysteries come thickening down
Upon my head like snow-flakes, shutting out
The happy upper fields with chilly vapour.
Shall I content my soul with a weak sense
Of safety? or feed my ravenous hunger with
Sore-purged hopes, that are not hopes, but fears
Clad in white raiment?
I know not but some thin and vaporous fog,
Fed with the rank excesses of the soul,
Mocks the devouring hunger of my life
With satisfaction: lo! the noxious gas
Feeds the lank ribs of gaunt and ghastly death
With double emptiness, like a balloon,
Borne by its lightness o'er[ere, before] the shining lands,
A wonder and a laughter.
The creeds lie in the hollow of men's hearts
Like festering pools glassing their own corruption:
The slimy eyes stare up with dull approval,
And answer not when thy bright starry feet
Move on the watery floors.

O wilt thou hear me when I cry to thee?
I am a child lost in a mighty forest;
The air is thick with voices, and strange hands
Reach through the dusk and pluck me by the skirts.
There is a voice which sounds like words from home,
But, as I stumble on to reach it, seems
To leap from rock to rock. Oh! if it is
Willing obliquity of sense, descend,

Heal all my wanderings, take me by the hand,
And lead me homeward through the shadows.
Let me not by my wilful acts of pride
Block up the windows of thy truth, and grow
A wasted, withered thing, that stumbles on
Down to the grave with folded hands of sloth
And leaden confidence.

There was more of it, as my type indicates. Full of faults, I have given so much to my reader, just as it stood upon Ericson's blotted papers, the utterance of a true soul "crying for the light." But I give also another of his poems, which Robert read at the same time, revealing another of his moods when some one of the clouds of holy doubt and questioning love which so often darkened his sky, did at length

Turn forth her silver lining on the night:

SONG.

They are blind and they are dead:
We will wake them as we go;
There are words have not been said;
There are sounds they do not know.
We will pipe and we will sing—
With the music and the spring,
Set their hearts a wondering.

They are tired of what is old:
We will give it voices new;
For the half hath not been told
Of the Beautiful and True.
Drowsy eyelids shut and sleeping!
Heavy eyes oppressed with weeping!
Flashes through the lashes leaping!

Ye that have a pleasant voice,
Hither come without delay;
Ye will never have a choice

Like to that ye have to-day:
Round the wide world we will go,
Singing through the frost and snow,
Till the daisies are in blow.

Ye that cannot pipe or sing,
Ye must also come with speed;
Ye must come and with you bring
Weighty words and weightier deed:
Helping hands and loving eyes,
These will make them truly wise—
Then will be our Paradise.

As Robert read, the sweetness of the rhythm seized upon him, and, almost unconsciously, he read the last stanza aloud. Looking up from the paper with a sigh of wonder and delight—there was the pale face of Ericson gazing at him from the bed! He had risen on one arm, looking like a dead man called to life against his will, who found the world he had left already stranger to him than the one into which he had but peeped.

"Yes," he murmured; "I could say that once. It's all gone now. Our world is but our moods."

He fell back on his pillow. After a little, he murmured again:

"I might fool myself with faith again. So it is better not. I would not be fooled. To believe the false and be happy is the very belly of misery. To believe the true and be miserable, is to be true—and miserable. If there is no God, let me know it. I will not be fooled. I will not believe in a God that does not exist. Better be miserable because I *am*, and cannot help it. —O God!"

Yet in his misery, he cried upon God.

These words came upon Robert with such a shock of sympathy, that they destroyed his consciousness for the moment, and when he *thought* about them, he almost doubted if he had heard them. He rose and approached the bed. Ericson lay with his eyes closed, and his face contorted as by inward pain. Robert put a spoonful of wine to his lips. He swallowed it, opened his eyes, gazed at the boy as if he did not know him, closed them again, and lay still.

Some people take comfort from the true eyes of a dog—and a precious thing to the loving heart is the love of even a dumb animal. What comfort then must not such a boy as Robert have been to such a man as Ericson! Often and often when he was lying asleep as Robert thought, he was watching the face of his watcher. When the human soul is not yet able to receive the vision of the God-man, God sometimes—might I not say always?—reveals himself, or at least gives himself, in some human being whose face, whose hands are the ministering angels of his unacknowledged presence, to keep alive the fire of love on the altar of the heart, until God hath provided the sacrifice—that is, until the soul is strong enough to draw it from the concealing thicket. Here were two, each thinking that God had forsaken him, or was not to be found by him, and each the very love of God, commissioned to tend the other's heart. In each was he present to the other. The one thought himself the happiest of mortals in waiting upon his big brother, whose least smile was joy enough for one day; the other wondered at the unconscious goodness of the boy, and while he gazed at his ruddy-brown face, believed in God.

For some time after Ericson was taken ill, he was too depressed and miserable to ask how he was cared for. But by slow degrees it dawned upon him that a heart deep and gracious, like that of a woman, watched over him. True, Robert was uncouth, but his uncouthness was that of a

half-fledged angel. The heart of the man and the heart of the boy were drawn close together. Long before Ericson was well he loved Robert enough to be willing to be indebted to him, and would lie pondering—not how to repay him, but how to return his kindness.

How much Robert's ambition to stand well in the eyes of Miss St. John contributed to his progress I can only imagine; but certainly his ministrations to Ericson did not interfere with his Latin and Greek. I venture to think that they advanced them, for difficulty adds to result, as the ramming of the powder sends the bullet the further. I have heard, indeed, that when a carrier wants to help his horse up hill, he sets a boy on his back.

Ericson made little direct acknowledgment to Robert: his tones, his gestures, his looks, all thanked him; but he shrunk from words, with the maidenly shamefacedness that belongs to true feeling. He would even assume the authoritative, and send him away to his studies, but Robert knew how to hold his own. The relation of elder brother and younger was already established between them. Shargar likewise took his share in the love and the fellowship, worshipping in that he believed.

Chapter 10 - A Father and a Daughter

The presence at the street door of which Ericson's over-acute sense had been aware on a past evening, was that of Mr. Lindsay, walking home with bowed back and bowed head from the college library, where he was privileged to sit after hours as long as he pleased over books too big to be comfortably carried home to his cottage. He had called to inquire after Ericson, whose acquaintance he had made in the library, and cultivated until almost any Friday evening Ericson was to be found seated by Mr. Lindsay's parlour fire.

As he entered the room that same evening, a young girl raised herself from a low seat by the fire to meet him. There was a faint rosy flush on her cheek, and she held a volume in her hand as she approached her father. They did not kiss: kisses were not a legal tender in Scotland then: possibly there has been a depreciation in the value of them since they were.

"I've been to ask after Mr. Ericson," said Mr. Lindsay.

"And how is he?" asked the girl.

"Very poorly indeed," answered her father.

"I am sorry. You'll miss him, papa."

"Yes, my dear. Tell Jenny to bring my lamp."

"Won't you have your tea first, papa?"

"Oh yes, if it's ready."

"The kettle has been boiling for a long time, but I wouldn't make the tea till you came in."

Mr. Lindsay was an hour later than usual, but Mysie was quite unaware of that: she had been absorbed in her book, too much absorbed even to ring for better light than the fire afforded. When her father went to put off his long, bifurcated greatcoat, she returned to her seat by the fire, and forgot to make the tea. It was a warm, snug room, full of dark, old-fashioned, spider-legged furniture; low-pitched, with a bay-window, open like an ear to the cries of the German Ocean[English Channel & North Sea] at night, and like an eye during the day to look out upon its wide expanse. This ear or eye was now curtained with dark crimson, and the room, in the firelight, with the young girl for a soul to it, affected one like an ancient book in which he reads his own latest thought.

Mysie was nothing over the middle height—delicately-fashioned, at once slender and round, with extremities neat as buds. Her complexion was fair, and her face pale, except when a flush, like that of a white rose, overspread it. Her cheek was lovelily curved, and her face rather short. But at first one could see nothing for her eyes. They were the largest eyes; and their motion reminded one of those of Sordello in the Purgatorio:

> E nel muover degli occhi onesta e tarda:

they seemed too large to move otherwise than with a slow turning like that of the heavens. At first they looked black, but if one ventured inquiry, which was as dangerous as to gaze from the battlements of Elsinore, he found them a not very dark brown. In her face, however, especially when flushed, they had all the effect of what Milton describes as

> Quel sereno fulgor d'amabil nero.

A wise observer would have been a little troubled in regarding her mouth. The sadness of a morbid sensibility hovered about it—the sign of an imagination wrought upon from the centre of self. Her lips were neither thin nor compressed—they closed lightly, and were richly curved; but there was a mobility almost tremulous about the upper lip that gave sign of the possibility of such an oscillation of feeling as might cause the whole fabric of her nature to rock dangerously.

The moment her father re-entered, she started from her stool on the rug, and proceeded to make the tea. Her father took no notice of her neglect, but drew a chair to the table, helped himself to a piece of oat-cake, hastily loaded it with as much butter as it could well carry, and while eating it forgot it and everything else in the absorption of a volume he had brought in with him from his study, in which he was tracing out some genealogical thread of which he fancied he had got a hold. Mysie was very active now, and lost the expression of *far-off-ness* which had hitherto characterized her countenance; till, having poured out the tea, she too plunged at once into her novel, and, like her father, forgot everything and everybody near her.

Mr. Lindsay was a mild, gentle man, whose face and hair seemed to have grown gray together. He was very tall, and stooped much. He had a mouth of much sensibility, and clear blue eyes, whose light was rarely shed upon any one within reach except his daughter—they were so constantly bent downwards, either on the road as he walked, or on his book as he sat. He had been educated for the church, but had never risen above the position of a parish school-master. He had little or no impulse to utterance, was shy, genial, and, save in reading, indolent. Ten years before this point of my history he had been taken up by an active lawyer in Edinburgh, from information accidentally supplied by Mr. Lindsay

himself, as the next heir to a property to which claim was laid by the head of a county family of wealth. Probabilities were altogether in his favour, when he gave up the contest upon the offer of a comfortable annuity from the disputant. To leave his schooling and his possible estate together, and sit down comfortably by his own fireside, with the means of buying books, and within reach of a good old library—that of King's College by preference—was to him the sum of all that was desirable. The income offered him was such that he had no doubt of laying aside enough for his only child, Mysie; but both were so ill-fitted for saving, he from looking into the past, she from looking into—what shall I call it? I can only think of negatives—what was neither past, present, nor future, neither material nor eternal, neither imaginative in any true sense, nor actual in any sense, that up to the present hour there was nothing in the bank, and only the money for impending needs in the house. He could not be called a man of learning; he was only a great bookworm; for his reading lay all in the nebulous regions of history. Old family records, wherever he could lay hold upon them, were his favourite dishes; old, musty books, that looked as if they knew something everybody else had forgotten, made his eyes gleam, and his white taper-fingered hand tremble with eagerness. With such a book in his grasp he saw something ever beckoning him on, a dimly precious discovery, a wonderful fact just the shape of some missing fragment in the mosaic of one of his pictures of the past. To tell the truth, however, his discoveries seldom rounded themselves into pictures, though many fragments of the minutely dissected map would find their places, whereupon he rejoiced like a mild giant refreshed with soda-water. But I have already said more about him than his place justifies; therefore, although I could gladly linger over the portrait, I will leave it. He had taught his daughter next to nothing. Being his child, he had the vague feeling that she inherited his

wisdom, and that what he knew she knew. So she sat reading novels, generally trashy ones, while he knew no more of what was passing in her mind than of what the Admirable Crichton might, at the moment, be disputing with the angels.

I would not have my reader suppose that Mysie's mind was corrupted. It was so simple and childlike, leaning to what was pure, and looking up to what was noble, that anything directly bad in the books she happened—for it was all haphazard—to read, glided over her as a black cloud may glide over a landscape, leaving it sunny as before.

I cannot therefore say, however, that she was nothing the worse. If the darkening of the sun keep the fruits of the earth from growing, the earth is surely the worse, though it be blackened by no deposit of smoke. And where good things do not grow, the wild and possibly noxious will grow more freely. There may be no harm in the yellow tanzie—there is much beauty in the red poppy; but they are not good for food. The result in Mysie's case would be this—not that she would call evil good and good evil, but that she would take the beautiful for the true and the outer shows of goodness for goodness itself—not the worst result, but bad enough, and involving an awful amount of suffering and possibly of defilement. He who thinks to climb the hill of happiness thus, will find himself floundering in the blackest bog that lies at the foot of its precipices. I say *he*, not *she*, advisedly. All will acknowledge it of the woman: it is as true of the man, though he may get out easier. Will he? I say, checking myself. I doubt it much. In the world's eye, yes; but in God's? Let the question remain unanswered.

When he had eaten his toast, and drunk his tea, apparently without any enjoyment, Mr. Lindsay rose with his book in his hand, and withdrew to his study.

He had not long left the room when Mysie was startled by a loud knock at the back door, which opened on a lane, leading along the top of the hill. But she had almost forgotten it again, when the door of the room opened, and a gentleman entered without any announcement—for Jenny had never heard of the custom. When she saw him, Mysie started from her seat, and stood in visible embarrassment. The colour went and came on her lovely face, and her eyelids grew very heavy. She had never seen the visitor before: whether he had ever seen her before, I cannot certainly say. She felt herself trembling in his presence, while he advanced with perfect composure. He was a man no longer young, but in the full strength and show of manhood—the Baron of Rothie. Since the time of my first description of him, he had grown a moustache, which improved his countenance greatly, by concealing his upper lip with its tusky curves. On a girl like Mysie, with an imagination so cultivated, and with no opportunity of comparing its fancies with reality, such a man would make an instant impression.

"I beg your pardon, Miss—Lindsay, I presume?—for intruding upon you so abruptly. I expected to see your father—not one of the graces."

She blushed all the colour of her blood now. The baron was quite enough like the hero of whom she had just been reading to admit of her imagination jumbling the two. Her book fell. He lifted it and laid it on the table. She could not speak even to thank him. Poor Mysie was scarcely more than sixteen.

"May I wait here till your father is informed of my visit?" he asked.

Her only answer was to drop again upon her low stool.

Now Jenny had left it to Mysie to acquaint her father with the fact of the baron's presence; but before she had time to think of the necessity of doing something, he had managed to draw her into conversation. He was

as great a hypocrite as ever walked the earth, although he flattered himself that he was none, because he never pretended to cultivate that which he despised—namely, religion. But he was a hypocrite nevertheless; for the falser he knew himself, the more honour he judged it to persuade women of his truth.

It is unnecessary to record the slight, graceful, marrowless talk into which he drew Mysie, and by which he both bewildered and bewitched her. But at length she rose, admonished by her inborn divinity, to seek her father. As she passed him, the baron took her hand and kissed it. She might well tremble. Even such contact was terrible. Why? Because there was no love in it. When the sense of beauty which God had given him that he might worship, awoke in Lord Rothie, he did not worship, but devoured, that he might, as he thought, possess! The poison of asps was under those lips. His kiss was as a kiss from the grave's mouth, for his throat was an open sepulchre. This was all in the past, reader. Baron Rothie was a foam-flake of the court of the Prince Regent. There are no such men now-a-days! It is a shame to speak of such, *and therefore they are not!* Decency has gone so far to abolish virtue. Would to God that a writer could be decent *and honest!* St. Paul counted it a shame to speak of some things, and yet he did speak of them—because those to whom he spoke *did* them.

Lord Rothie had, in five minutes, so deeply interested Mr. Lindsay in a question of genealogy, that he begged his lordship to call again in a few days, when he hoped to have some result of research to communicate.

One of the antiquarian's weaknesses, cause and result both of his favourite pursuits, was an excessive reverence for rank. Had its claims been founded on mediated revelation, he could not have honoured it more. Hence when he communicated to his daughter the name of their

visitor, it was “with bated breath and whispering humbleness,” which deepened greatly the impression made upon her by the presence and conversation of the baron. Mysie was in danger.

Shargar was late that evening, for he had a job that detained him. As he handed over his money to Robert, he said,

“I saw Black Geordie the nicht[tonight] again, stan’in’ at a back door, an’ Jock Mitchell, upo’ Reid[red] Rorie, haudin’[holding, keeping] him.”

“Wha’s[who is] Jock Mitchell?” asked Robert.

“My brither[brother] Sandy’s ill-faured[unpleasant] groom,’ answered Shargar. “Whatever mischeef Sandy’s up till, Jock comes i’ the heid[head] or tail o’ ’t.”

“I wonner[wonder, marvel] what he’s up till noo[now].”

“Faith! Nae[no, not] guid. But I aye like waur[worse] to meet Sandy by himsel’ upo’ that reekit[rigged out, well-dressed] deevil o’ his. Man, it’s awfu’ whan[when] Black Geordie turns the white o’ ’s ee[eye], an’ the white o’ ’s teeth upo’ ye. It’s a’ the white ’at there is about ’im.”

“Wasna yer brither[brother] i’ the airmy[army], Shargar?”

“Ow[oh], ’deed ay[yes, indeed]. They tell me he was at Watterloo. He’s a cornel[colonel], or something like that.”

“Wha tellt ye a’ that?”

“My mither whiles[sometimes, at times],” answered Shargar.

Chapter 11 - Robert's Vow

Ericson was recovering slowly. He could sit up in bed the greater part of the day, and talk about getting out of it. He was able to give Robert an occasional help with his Greek, and to listen with pleasure to his violin. The night-watching grew less needful, and Ericson would have dispensed with it willingly, but Robert would not yet consent.

But Ericson had seasons of great depression, during which he could not away with music, or listen to the words of the New Testament. During one of these Robert had begun to read a chapter to him, in the faint hope that he might draw some comfort from it.

"Shut the book," he said. "If it were the word of God to men, it would have brought its own proof with it."

"Are ye sure it hasna?" asked Robert.

"No," answered Ericson. "But why should a fellow that would give his life—that's not much, but it's all *I've* got—to believe in God, not be able? Only I confess *that* God in the New Testament wouldn't satisfy me. There's no help. I must just die, and go and see.—She'll be left without anybody. What does it matter? She would not mind a word I said. And the God they talk about will just let her take her own way. He always does."

He had closed his eyes and forgotten that Robert heard him. He opened them now, and fixed them on him with an expression that seemed to ask, "Have I been saying anything I ought not?"

Robert knelt by the bedside, and said, slowly, with strongly repressed emotion,

“Mr. Ericson, I sweir by God, gin[if] there *be* ane[one], that gin[if] ye dee[die], I’ll tak up what ye lea’[leave] ahin’ ye. Gin[if] there be onybody ye want luikit[looked] efter[after], I’ll luik[look] efter[after] her. I’ll do what I can for her to the best o’ my abeelity, sae help me God—aye savin’ what I maun[must, have to] do for my ain[own] father, gin[if] he be in life, to fess[fetch, bring] him back to the richt gait[way], gin[if] there be a richt gait[way]. Sae ye can think aboot whether there’s onything ye wad[would] like to lippen[trust; entrust] till me.”

A something grew in Ericson’s eyes as Robert spoke. Before he had finished, they beamed on the boy.

“I think there must be a God somewhere after all,” he said, half soliloquizing. “I should be sorry you hadn’t a God, Robert. Why should I wish it for your sake? How could I want one for myself if there never was one? If a God had nothing to do with my making, why should I feel that nobody but God can set things right? Ah! but he must be such a God as I could imagine—altogether, absolutely true and good. If we came out of nothing, we could not invent the idea of a God—could we, Robert? Nothing would be our God. If we come from God, nothing is more natural, nothing *so* natural, as to want him, and when we haven’t got him, to try to find him.—What if he should be in us after all, and working in us this way? just this very way of crying out after him?”

“Mr. Ericson,” cried Robert, “dinna say ony[any] mair[more] ’at ye dinna believe in God. Ye *duv*[do] believe in ’im—mair[more], I’m thinkin’, nor[than] onybody ’at I ken, ’cep’[except, but], maybe, my grannie—only hers is a some queer kin’[kind] o’ a God to believe in. I dinna think I cud[could] ever manage to believe in *him* mysel’.”

Ericson sighed and was silent. Robert remained kneeling by his bedside, happier, clearer-headed, and more hopeful than he had ever been. What if all was right at the heart of things—right, even as a man, if

he could understand, would say was right; right, so that a man who understood in part could believe it to be ten times more right than he did understand! Vaguely, dimly, yet joyfully, Robert saw something like this in the possibility of things. His heart was full, and the tears filled his eyes. Ericson spoke again.

"I have felt like that often for a few moments," he said; "but always something would come and blow it away. I remember one spring morning—but if you will bring me that bundle of papers, I will show you what, if I can find it, will let you understand—"

Robert rose, went to the cupboard, and brought the pile of loose leaves. Ericson turned them over, and, Robert was glad to see, now and then sorted them a little. At length he drew out a sheet, carelessly written, carelessly corrected, and hard to read.

"It is not finished, or likely to be," he said, as he put the paper in Robert's hand.

"Won't you read it to me yourself, Mr. Ericson?" suggested Robert.

"I would sooner put it in the fire," he answered—"it's fate, anyhow. I don't know why I haven't burnt them all long ago. Rubbish, and diseased rubbish! Read it yourself, or leave it."

Eagerly Robert took it, and read. The following was the best he could make of it:

Oh that a wind would call
From the depths of the leafless wood!
Oh that a voice would fall
On the ear of my solitude!
Far away is the sea,
With its sound and its spirit-tone:
Over it white clouds flee,
But I am alone, alone.

Straight and steady and tall
The trees stand on their feet;
Fast by the old stone wall
The moss grows green and sweet;
But my heart is full of fears,
For the sun shines far away;
And they look in my face through tears,
And the light of a dying day.

My heart was glad last night,
As I pressed it with my palm;
Its throb was airy and light
As it sang some spirit-psalm;
But it died away in my breast
As I wandered forth to-day—
As a bird sat dead on its nest,
While others sang on the spray.

O weary heart of mine,
Is there ever a truth for thee?
Will ever a sun outshine
But the sun that shines on me?
Away, away through the air
The clouds and the leaves are blown;
And my heart hath need of prayer,
For it sitteth alone, alone.

And Robert looked with sad reverence at Ericson,—nor ever thought that there was one who, in the face of the fact, and in recognition of it, had dared say, “Not a sparrow shall fall on the ground without your Father.” The sparrow does fall—but he who sees it is yet the Father.

And we know only the fall, and not the sparrow.

Chapter 12 - The Granite Church

The next day was Sunday. Robert sat, after breakfast, by his friend's bed.

"You haven't been to church for a long time, Robert: wouldn't you like to go to-day?" said Ericson.

"I dinna want to lea'[leave] you, Mr. Ericson; I can bide wi' ye a' day the day, an' that's better nor[than] goin' to a' the kirks in Aberdeen."

"I should like you to go to-day, though; and see if, after all, there may not be a message for us. If the church be the house of God, as they call it, there should be, now and then at least, some sign of a pillar of fire about it, some indication of the presence of God whose house it is. I wish you would go and see. I haven't been to church for a long time, except to the college-chapel, and I never saw anything more than a fog there."

"Michtna the fog be the torn-edge like, o' the cloody pillar?" suggested Robert.

"Very likely," assented Ericson; "for, whatever truth there may be in Christianity, I'm pretty sure the mass of our clergy have never got beyond Judaism. They hang on about the skirts of that cloud for ever."

"Ye see, they think as lang[long] 's they see the fog, they hae a grup[grip, grasp] o' something. But they canna get a grup[grip, grasp] o' the glory that excelleth, for *it*"s not to luik[look] at, but to lat[let, allow] ye see a' thing[everything, anything]."

Ericson regarded him with some surprise. Robert hastened to be honest.

"It's no that I ken onything aboot it, Mr. Ericson. I was only bletherin'[talking nonsense]—rizzonin' frae[from] the twa symbols o' the cloud an'

the fire—kennin' nothing aboot the thing itsel'. I'll awa'[away] to the kirk, an' see what it's like. Will I gie[give] ye a buik[book] afore I gang[go]?"

"No, thank you. I'll just lie quiet till you come back—if I can."

Robert instructed Shargar to watch for the slightest sound from the sick-room, and went to church.

As he approached the granite cathedral, the only one in the world, I presume, its stern solidity, so like the country and its men, laid hold of his imagination for the first time. No doubt the necessity imposed by the unyielding material had its share, and that a large one, in the character of the building: whence else that simplest of west windows, seven lofty, narrow slits of light, parted by granite shafts of equal width, filling the space between the corner buttresses of the nave, and reaching from door to roof? whence else the absence of tracery in the windows—except the severely gracious curves into which the mullions divide?—But this cause could not have determined those towers, so strong that they might have borne their granite weight soaring aloft, yet content with the depth of their foundation, and aspiring not. The whole aspect of the building is an outcome, an absolute blossom of the northern nature.

There is but the nave of the church remaining. About 1680, more than a century after the Reformation, the great tower fell, destroying the choir, chancel, and transept, which have never been rebuilt. May the reviving faith of the nation in its own history, and God at the heart of it, lead to the restoration of this grand old monument of the belief of their fathers. Deformed as the interior then was with galleries, and with Gavin Dunbar's flat ceiling, an awe fell upon Robert as he entered it. When in after years he looked down from between the pillars of the gallery, that creeps round the church through the thickness of the wall, like an artery, and recalled the service of this Sunday morning, he felt more strongly

than ever that such a faith had not reared that cathedral. The service was like the church only as a dead body is like a man. There was no fervour in it, no aspiration. The great central tower was gone.

That morning prayers and sermon were philosophically dull, and respectable as any after-dinner speech. Nor could it well be otherwise: one of the favourite sayings of its minister was, that a clergyman is nothing but a moral policeman. As such, however, he more resembled one of Dogberry's watch. He could not even preach hell with any vigour; for as a gentleman he recoiled from the vulgarity of the doctrine, yielding only a few feeble words on the subject as a sop to the Cerberus that watches over the dues of the Bible—quite unaware that his notion of the doctrine had been drawn from the eid, and not from the Bible.

"Well, have you got anything, Robert?" asked Ericson, as he entered his room.

"Nothing," answered Robert.

"What was the sermon about?"

"It was all to prove that God is a benevolent being."

"Not a devil, that is," answered Ericson. "Small consolation that."

"Sma'[small, little] eneuch[enough]," responded Robert. "I cudna help thinkin' I kent[known, knew] mony[many] a tyke[dog] that God had made wi' mair[more] o' what I wad[would] ca'[call] the divine natur' in him nor[than] a' that Dr. Soulis made oot[out] to be in God himsel'. He had no ill intentions wi' us—it amuntit[amounted] to that. He wasna ill-willy[ill-tempered], as the bairns say. But the doctor had some sair[sore] wark[work], I thoucht, to mak[make, do] that oot[out], seein' we war[were] a' the children o' wrath, accordin' to him, born in sin, and inheritin' the guilt o' Adam's first trespass. I dinna think Dr. Soulis cud[could] say that God had dune[done] the best he cud[could] for 's. But he never tried to say onything like that. He jist made oot[out] that he was a verra[very]

respectable kin'[kind] o' a God, though maybe no a'thing[everything, anything] we micht wuss[wish]. We oucht[ought] to be thankfu' that he gae's[gave] a wee blink[glimmer] o' a chance o' no bein' brunt[burned] to a' eternity, wi' nae[no, not] chance ava[at all]. I dinna say that he *said* that, but that's what it a' seemed to me to come till. He said a hantle[much, large quantity] aboot the care o' Providence, but a' the gude that he did seemed to me to be but a haudin'[holding, keeping] aff[off, away, past] o' something ill that he had made as weel. Ye wad[would] hae thocht[thought] the deevil had made the warl'[world], and syne[then] God had pitten[put, made] us intil[into, within] 't, and jist gied[gave] a bit wag o' 's han' whiles[sometimes, at times] to haud[hold, keep] the deevil aff[off, away, past] o' 's whan[when] he was like to destroy the breed a'thegither[all together]. For the grace that he spak aboot, that was less nor[than] the nature an' the providence. I cud[could] see unco[very] little o' grace intil[into, within] 't."

Here Ericson broke in—fearful, apparently, lest his boyfriend should be actually about to deny the God in whom he did not himself believe.

"Robert," he said solemnly, "one thing is certain: if there be a God at all, he is not like that. If there be a God at all, we shall know him by his perfection—his grand perfect truth, fairness, love—a love to make life an absolute good—not a mere accommodation of difficulties, not a mere preponderance of the balance on the side of well-being. Love only could have been able to create. But they don't seem jealous for the glory of God, those men. They don't mind a speck, or even a blot, here and there upon him. The world doesn't make them miserable. They can get over the misery of their fellow-men without being troubled about them, or about the God that could let such things be. They represent a God who does wonderfully well, on the whole, after a middling fashion. I want a God who loves perfectly. He may kill; he may torture even; but if it be for love's sake, Lord, here am I. Do with me as thou wilt."

Had Ericson forgotten that he had no proof of such a God? The next moment the intellectual demon was awake.

"But what's the good of it all?" he said. "I don't even know that there is anything outside of me."

"Ye ken that I'm here, Mr. Ericson," suggested Robert.

"I know nothing of the sort. You may be another phantom—only clearer."

"Ye speik to me as gin[if] ye thocht[thought] me somebody."

"So does the man to his phantoms, and you call him mad. It is but a yielding to the pressure of constant suggestion. I do not know—I cannot know if there is anything outside of me."

"But gin[if] there warna, there wad[would] be naebody for ye to love, Mr. Ericson."

"Of course not."

"Nor naebody to love you, Mr. Ericson."

"Of course not."

"Syne[ago, since, at that (good) time] ye wad[would] be yer ain[own] God, Mr. Ericson."

"Yes. That would follow."

"I canna imagine a waur[worse] hell—closed in amo'[among] naething—wi' naething a' aboot ye, luikin'[looking] something a' the time—kennin' 'at it 's a' a lee, and nae[no, not] able to win[get, go] clear o' 't."

"It is hell, my boy, or anything worse you can call it."

"What for suld[should] ye believe that, than, Mr. Ericson? I wadna believe sic[such] an ill thing as that. I dinna think I cud[could] believe 't, gin[if] ye war[were] to pruv 't to me."

"I don't believe it. Nobody could prove that either, even if it were so. I am only miserable that I can't prove the contrary."

"Suppose there war[were] a God, Mr. Ericson, do ye think ye bude[behoved] to be able to pruv that? Do ye think God cud[could] stan'[stand] to be pruved as gin[if] he war[were] something sma'[small, little] eneuch[enough] to be turned roon'[around, round] and roon'[around, round], and luikit[looked] at upo' ilka[every] side? Gin[if] there war[were] a God, wadna it jist be sae—that we cudna prove him to be, I mean?"

"Perhaps. That is something. I have often thought of that. But then you can't prove *anything* about it."

"I canna help thinkin' o' what Mr. Innes said to me ance[once]. I was but a laddie, but I never forgot it. I plaguit[plagued] him sair[sorely] wi' wantin' to unnerstan' ilka[every] thing afore I wad[would] gang[go] on wi' my questons[sums]. Says he, ae day, 'Robert, my man, gin[if] ye will *aye* unnerstan' afore ye du[do] as ye're tellt, ye'll never unnerstan' onything. But gin[if] ye du[do] the thing I tell ye, ye'll be i' the mids[midst, middle] o' 't afore ye ken 'at ye're gaein' intil[into, within] 't.' I jist thocht[thought] I wad[would] try him. It was at lang[long] division that I boglet[bamboozled, terrified] maist[most, almost]. Weel, I gaed[went] on, and I cud[could] du[do] the thing weel eneuch[enough], ohn[without] made ae mistak. And aye I thocht[thought] the maister was wrang[wrong, injured], for I never kent[known, knew] the rizzon[reason] o' a' that beginnin' at the wrang[wrong, injured] en', an' takin' doon an' substrackin', an' a' that. Ye wad[would] hardly believe me, Mr. Ericson: it was only this verra[very] day, as I was sittin' i' the kirk—it was a lang[long] psalm they war[were] singin'—that ane[one] wi' the foxes i' the tail o' 't—lang[long] division came into my heid[head] again; and first aye bit glimmerin' o' licht cam in, and syne[then] anither, an' afore the psalm was dune[done] I saw throu' the haill[whole] process o' 't. But ye see, gin[if] I hadna dune[done] as I was tauld, and learnt a' aboot

hoo[how] it was dune[done] aforehan', I wad[would] hae had naething to gang[go] rizzonin' aboot, an' wad[would] hae fun'[found] oot[out] naething."

"That's good, Robert. But when a man is dying for food, he can't wait."

"He micht try to get up and luik[look], though. He needna bide in 's bed till somebody comes an' sweirs till him 'at he saw a haddie[haddock] i' the press[wall-cupboard]."

"I have been looking, Robert—for years."

"Maybe, like me, only for the *rizzon*[*reason*] o' 't, Mr. Ericson—gin[if] ye'll forgie[forgive] my impidence."

"But what's to be done in this case, Robert? Where's the work that you can do in order to understand? Where's your long division, man?"

"Ye're ayont[beyond] me noo[now]. I canna tell that, Mr. Ericson. It canna be gaein' to the kirk, surely. Maybe it micht be sayin' yer prayers and readin' yer Bible."

Ericson did not reply, and the conversation dropped. Is it strange that neither of these disciples should have thought of turning to the story of Jesus, finding some word that he had spoken, and beginning to do that as a first step towards a knowledge of the doctrine that Jesus was the incarnate God, come to visit his people—a very unlikely thing to man's wisdom, yet an idea that has notwithstanding ascended above man's horizon, and shown itself the grandest idea in his firmament?

In the evening Ericson asked again for his papers, from which he handed Robert the following poem:—

WORDS IN THE NIGHT.

I woke at midnight, and my heart,
My beating heart said this to me:
Thou seest the moon how calm and bright
The world is fair by day and night,

But what is that to thee?
One touch to me—down dips the light
Over the land and sea.
All is mine, all is my own!
Toss the purple fountain high!
The breast of man is a vat of stone;
I am alive, I, only I!

One little touch and all is dark;
The winter with its sparkling moons
The spring with all her violets,
The crimson dawns and rich sunsets,
The autumn's yellowing noons.
I only toss my purple jets,
And thou art one that swoons
Upon a night of gust and roar,
Shipwrecked among the waves, and seems
Across the purple hills to roam;
Sweet odours touch him from the foam,
And downward sinking still he dreams
He walks the clover field at home,
And hears the rattling teams.
All is mine; all is my own!
Toss the purple fountain high!
The breast of man is a vat of stone;
I am alive, I, only I!

Thou hast beheld a throated fountain spout
Full in the air, and in the downward spray
A hovering Iris span the marble tank,
Which as the wind came, ever rose and sank
Violet and red; so my continual play
Makes beauty for the Gods with many a prank
Of human excellence, while they,
Weary of all the noon, in shadows sweet
Supine and heavy-eyed rest in the boundless heat:
Let the world's fountain play!

Beauty is pleasant in the eyes of Jove;
Betwixt the wavering shadows where he lies
He marks the dancing column with his eyes
Celestial, and amid his inmost grove
Upgathers all his limbs, serenely blest,
Lulled by the mellow noise of the great world's unrest.

One heart beats in all nature, differing
But in the work it works; its doubts and clamours
Are but the waste and brunt[burned] of instruments
Wherewith a work is done; or as the hammers
On forge Cyclopean plied beneath the rents
Of lowest Etna, conquering into shape
The hard and scattered ore:
Choose thou narcotics, and the dizzy grape
Outworking passion, lest with horrid crash
Thy life go from thee in a night of pain.
So tutoring thy vision, shall the flash
Of dove white-breasted be to thee no more
Than a white stone heavy upon the plain.

Hark the cock crows loud!
And without, all ghastly and ill,
Like a man uplift in his shroud,
The white white morn is propped on the hill;
And adown from the eaves, pointed and chill,
The icicles 'gin[if] to glitter;
And the birds with a warble short and shrill,
Pass by the chamber-window still—
With a quick uneasy twitter.
Let me pump warm blood, for the cold is bitter;
And wearily, wearily, one by one,
Men awake with the weary sun.

Life is a phantom shut in thee;
I am the master and keep the key;
So let me toss thee the days of old,

Crimson and orange and green and gold;
So let me fill thee yet again
With a rush of dreams from my spout amain;
For all is mine; all is my own;
Toss the purple fountain high!
The breast of man is a vat of stone;
And I am alive, I, only I.

Robert having read, sat and wept in silence. Ericson saw him, and said tenderly,

"Robert, my boy, I'm not always so bad as that. Read this one—though I never feel like it now. Perhaps it may come again some day, though. I may once more deceive myself and be happy."

"Dinna say that, Mr. Ericson. That's waur[worse] than despair. That's flat unbelief. Ye no more ken that ye're deceivin' yersel' than ye ken that ye're no doin' 't."

Ericson did not reply; and Robert read the following sonnet aloud, feeling his way delicately through its mazes:—

Lie down upon the ground, thou hopeless one!
Press thy face in the grass, and do not speak.
Dost feel the green globe whirl? Seven times a week
Climbeth she out of darkness to the sun,
Which is her god; seven times she doth not shun
Awful eclipse, laying her patient cheek
Upon a pillow ghost-beset with shriek
Of voices utterless which rave and run
Through all the star-penumbra, craving light
And tidings of the dawn from East and West.
Calmly she sleepeth, and her sleep is blest
With heavenly visions, and the joy of Night
Treading aloft with moons. Nor hath she fright
Though cloudy tempests beat upon her breast.

Ericson turned his face to the wall, and Robert withdrew to his own chamber.

Chapter 13 - Shargar's Arm

Not many weeks passed before Shargar knew Aberdeen better than most Aberdonians. From the Pier-head to the Rubislaw Road, he knew, if not every court, yet every thoroughfare and short cut. And Aberdeen began to know him. He was very soon recognized as trustworthy, and had pretty nearly as much to do as he could manage. Shargar, therefore, was all over the city like a cracker, and could have told at almost any hour where Dr. Anderson was to be found—generally in the lower parts of it, for the good man visited much among the poor; giving them almost exclusively the benefit of his large experience. Shargar delighted in keeping an eye upon the doctor, carefully avoiding to show himself.

One day as he was hurrying through the Green (*a non virendo*) on a mission from the Rothieden carrier, he came upon the doctor's chariot standing in one of the narrowest streets, and, as usual, paused to contemplate the equipage and get a peep of the owner. The morning was very sharp. There was no snow, but a cold fog, like vaporized hoar-frost, filled the air. It was weather in which the East Indian could not venture out on foot, else he could have reached the place by a stair from Union Street far sooner than he could drive thither. His horses apparently liked the cold as little as himself. They had been moving about restlessly for some time before the doctor made his appearance. The moment he got in and shut the door, one of them reared, while the other began to haul on his traces, eager for a gallop. Something about the chain gave way, the pole swerved round under the rearing horse, and great confusion and danger would have ensued, had not Shargar rushed from his coign of vantage, sprung at the bit of the rearing horse, and dragged him off the pole, over which he was just casting his near leg. As soon as his feet

touched the ground he too pulled, and away went the chariot and down went Shargar. But in a moment more several men had laid hold of the horses' heads, and stopped them.

"Oh Lord!" cried Shargar, as he rose with his arm dangling by his side, "what will Donal' Joss say? I'm like to swarf[swoon, faint]. Haud[hold, keep] awa'[away] frae[from] that basket, ye wuddyfous[small ill-tempered persons]," he cried, darting towards the hamper he had left in the entry of a court, round which a few ragged urchins had gathered; but just as he reached it he staggered and fell. Nor did he know anything more till he found the carriage stopping with himself and the hamper inside it.

As soon as the coachman had got his harness put to rights, the doctor had driven back to see how the lad had fared, for he had felt the carriage go over something. They had found him lying beside his hamper, had secured both, and as a preliminary measure were proceeding to deliver the latter.

"Whaur am I? whaur the deevil am I?" cried Shargar, jumping up and falling back again.

"Don't you know me, Moray?" said the doctor, for he felt shy of calling the poor boy by his nickname: *he* had no right to do so.

"Na, I dinna ken ye. Lat[let, allow] me awa'[away].—I beg yer pardon, doctor: I thocht[thought] ye was ane[one] o' thae[those, these] wuddyfous[small ill-tempered persons] rinnin'[running] awa'[away] wi' Donal' Joss's basket. Eh me! Sic[such] a stoun'[ache, throb] i' my airm[arm]! But naebody ca's[calls] me Moray. They a' ca'[call] me Shargar. What richt hae *I* to be ca'd[called] *Moray?*" added the poor boy, feeling, I almost believe for the first time, the stain upon his birth. Yet he had as good a right before God to be called *Moray* as any other son of that worthy sire, the Baron of Rothie included. Possibly the trumpet-blowing angels did call him Moray, or some better name.

“The coachman will deliver your parcel, Moray,” said the doctor, this time repeating the name with emphasis.

“De’ il a bit[Not a bit] o’ ’t!” cried Shargar. “He daurna[dare not] lea’[leave] his box wi’ thae[those, these] deevils o’ horses. What gars[causes, compels] he keep sic[such] horses, doctor? They’ll play some mischeef some day.”

“Indeed, they’ve played enough already, my poor boy. They’ve broken your arm.”

“Never min’[mind] that. That’s no muckle[much]. Ye’re welcome, doctor, to my twa airms[arms] for what ye hae dune[done] for Robert an’ that lang-leggit frien’ o’ his—the Lord forgie[forgive] me—Mr. Ericson. But ye maun[must, have to] jist pay him what I canna mak[make, do] for a day or twa, till ’t jines[joins] again—to haud[hold, keep] them gaein’, ye ken.—It winna[will not] be muckle[much] to you, doctor,” added Shargar, beseechingly.

“Trust me for that, Moray,” returned Dr. Anderson. “I owe you a good deal more than that. My brains might have been out by this time.”

“The Lord be praised!” said Shargar, making about his first profession of Christianity. “Robert ’ill[will] think something o’ me noo[now].”

During this conversation the coachman sat expecting some one to appear from the shop, and longing to pitch into the “camstary”[unmanageable, wild] horse, but not daring to lift his whip beyond its natural angle. No one came. All at once Shargar knew where he was.

“Guid be here! we’re at Donal’s door! Guid day to ye, doctor; an’ I’m muckle[much] obleeged to ye. Maybe, gin[if] ye war[were] comin’ oor gait[way], the morn[tomorrow], or the neist[next, nearest] day, to see Maister Ericson, ye wad[would] tie up my airm[arm], for it gangs[goes, walks] wallopin’[dancing, galloping, knocking] aboot, an’ that canna be guid for the stickin’ o’ ’t thegither[together] again.”

“My poor boy! you don’t think I’m going to leave you here, do you?” said the doctor, proceeding to open the carriage-door.

“But whaur’s the hamper?” said Shargar, looking about him in dismay.

“The coachman has got it on the box,” answered the doctor.

“Eh! that’ll never do. Gin[if] thae[those, these] rampaugin’ brutes war[were] to tak a start again, what wad[would] come o’ the bit basket? I maun[must, have to] get it doon direckly.”

“Sit still. I will get it down, and deliver it myself.” As he spoke the doctor got out.

“Tak care o’ ’t, sir; tak care o’ ’t. William Walker said there was a jar o’ drained hinney[honey] i’ the basket; an’ the bairns wad[would] miss ’t sair[sorely] gin[if] ’t war[were] spult[spilt].”

“I will take good care of it,” responded the doctor.

He delivered the basket, returned to the carriage, and told the coachman to drive home.

“Whaur are ye takin’ me till?” exclaimed Shargar. “Willie hasna payed me for the parcel.”

“Never mind Willie. I’ll pay you,” said the doctor.

“But Robert wadna like me to tak siller[silver, money] whaur I did nae[no, not] wark[work] for ’t,” objected Shargar. “He’s some pernickety—Robert. But I’ll jist say ’at ye garred[caused, compelled] me, doctor. Maybe that ’ll saitisfee him. An’ faith! I’m queer aboot my left fin here.”

“We’ll soon set it all right,” said the doctor.

When they reached his house he led the way to his surgery, and there put the broken limb in splints. He then told Johnston to help the patient to bed.

"I maun[must, have to] gang[go] hame[home]," objected Shargar. "What wad[would] Robert think?"

"I will tell him all about it," said the doctor.

"Yersel, sir?" stipulated Shargar.

"Yes, myself."

"Afore nicht?"

"Directly," answered the doctor, and Shargar yielded.

"But what *will* Robert say?" were his last words, as he fell asleep, appreciating, no doubt, the superiority of the bed to his usual lair upon the hearthrug.

Robert was delighted to hear how well Shargar had acquitted himself. Followed a small consultation about him; for the accident had ripened the doctor's intentions concerning the outcast.

"As soon as his arm is sound again, he shall go to the grammar-school," he said.

"An' the college?" asked Robert.

"I hope so," answered the doctor. "Do you think he will do well? He has plenty of courage, at all events, and that is a fine thing."

"Ow[oh] ay[yes, indeed]," answered Robert; "he's no ill aff[off, away, past] for smeddum[spirit, mettle]—that is, gin[if] it be for ony[any] ither[other] body. He wad[would] never lift a han' for himsel'; an' that's what garred[caused, compelled] me tak till him sae muckle[much]. He's a fine crater[creature]. He canna gang[go] him lane[on his own], but he'll gang[go] wi' onybody—and haud[hold, keep] up wi' him."

"What do you think him fit for, then?"

Now Robert had been building castles for Shargar out of the hopes which the doctor's friendliness had given him. Therefore he was ready

with his answer.

"Gin[if] ye cud[could] ensure him no bein' made a general o', he wad[would] mak[make, do] a gran' sojer[soldier]. Set's face foret[forward], and say "quick mairch[march]," an' he'll ca[drive, impel] his bagonet[bayonet] throu auld Hornie. But lay nae[no, not] consequences upo' him, for he cudna stan'[stand] unner them."

Dr. Anderson laughed, but thought none the less, and went home to see how his patient was getting on.

Chapter 14 - Mysie's Face

Meantime Ericson grew better. A space of hard, clear weather, in which everything sparkled with frost and sunshine, did him good. But not yet could he use his brain. He turned with dislike even from his friend Plato. He would sit in bed or on his chair by the fireside for hours, with his hands folded before him, and his eyelids drooping, and let his thoughts flow, for he could not think. And that these thoughts flowed not always with other than sweet sounds over the stones of question, the curves of his lip would testify to the friendly, furtive glance of the watchful Robert. None but the troubled mind knows its own consolations; and I believe the saddest life has its own presence—however it may be unrecognized as such—of the upholding Deity. Doth God care for the hairs that perish from our heads? To a mind like Ericson's the remembered scent, the recurring vision of a flower loved in childhood, is enough to sustain anxiety with beauty, for the lovely is itself healing and hope-giving, because it is the form and presence of the true. To have such a presence is *to be*; and while a mind exists in any high consciousness, the intellectual trouble that springs from the desire to know its own life, to be assured of its rounded law and security, ceases, for the desire itself falls into abeyance.

But although Ericson was so weak, he was always able and ready to help Robert in any difficulty not unfrequently springing from his imperfect preparation in Greek; for while Mr. Innes was an excellent Latin scholar, his knowledge of Greek was too limited either to compel learning or inspire enthusiasm. And with the keen instinct he possessed in everything immediate between man and man, Robert would sometimes search for a difficulty in order to request its solution; for then

Ericson would rouse himself to explain as few men could have explained: where a clear view was to be had of anything, Ericson either had it or knew that he had it not. Hence Robert's progress was good; for one word from a wise helper will clear off a whole atmosphere of obstructions.

At length one day when Robert came home he found him seated at the table, with his slate, working away at the Differential Calculus. After this he recovered more rapidly, and ere another week was over began to attend one class a day. He had been so far in advance before, that though he could not expect prizes, there was no fear of his *passing*.

One morning, Robert, coming out from a lecture, saw Ericson in the quadrangle talking to an elderly gentleman. When they met in the afternoon Ericson told him that that was Mr. Lindsay, and that he had asked them both to spend the evening at his house. Robert would go anywhere to be with his friend.

He got out his Sunday clothes, and dressed himself with anxiety: he had visited scarcely at all, and was shy and doubtful. He then sat down to his books, till Ericson came to his door—dressed, and hence in Robert's eyes ceremonial—a stately, graceful gentleman. Renewed awe came upon him at the sight, and renewed gratitude. There was a flush on Ericson's cheek, and a fire in his eye. Robert had never seen him look so grand. But there was a something about him that rendered him uneasy—a look that made Ericson seem strange, as if his life lay in some far-off region.

"I want you to take your violin with you, Robert," he said.

"Hoots[pshaw]!" returned Robert, "hoo[how] can I do that? To tak her wi' me the first time I gang[go] to a strange hoose[house], as gin[if] I thocht[thought] a'body[everybody] wad[would] think as muckle[much] o' my auld wife as I do mysel'! That wadna be mainners[manners]—wad[would] it noo[now], Mr. Ericson?"

“But I told Mr. Lindsay that you could play well. The old gentleman is fond of Scotch tunes, and you will please him if you take it.”

“That maks[makes, does] a’ the differ,” answered Robert.

“Thank you,” said Ericson, as Robert went towards his instrument; and, turning, would have walked from the house without any additional protection.

“Whaur are ye gaein’ that gait[way], Mr. Ericson? Tak yer plaid[plaid used as blanket], or ye’ll be laid up again, as sure’s ye live.”

“I’m warm enough,” returned Ericson.

“That’s naething. The cauld[cold] ’s jist lyin’ i’ the street like a verra[very] deevil to get a grup[grip, grasp] o’ ye. Gin[if] ye dinna pit[put, make] on yer plaid[plaid used as blanket], I winna[will not] tak my fiddle.”

Ericson yielded; and they set out together.

I will account for Ericson’s request about the violin.

He went to the episcopal church on Sundays, and sat where he could see Mysie—sat longing and thirsting ever till the music returned. Yet the music he never heard; he watched only its transmutation into form, never taking his eyes off Mysie’s face. Reflected thence in a metamorphosed echo, he followed all its changes. Never was one powerless to produce it more strangely responsive to its influence. She had no voice; she had never been taught the use of any instrument. A world of musical feeling was pent up in her, and music raised the suddener storms in her mobile nature, that she was unable to give that feeling utterance. The waves of her soul dashed the more wildly against their shores, inasmuch as those shores were precipitous, and yielded no outlet to the swelling waters. It was that his soul might hover like a bird of Paradise over the lovely changes of her countenance, changes more

lovely and frequent than those of an English May, that Ericson persuaded Robert to take his violin.

The last of the sunlight was departing, and a large full moon was growing through the fog on the horizon. The sky was almost clear of clouds, and the air was cold and penetrating. Robert drew Eric's plaid[plaid used as blanket] closer over his chest. Eric thanked him lightly, but his voice sounded eager; and it was with a long hasty stride that he went up the hill through the gathering of the light frosty mist. He stopped at the stair upon which Robert had found him that memorable night. They went up. The door had been left on the latch for their entrance. They went up more steps between rocky walls. When in after years he read the *Purgatorio*, as often as he came to one of its ascents, Robert saw this stair with his inward eye. At the top of the stair was the garden, still ascending, and at the top of the garden shone the glow of Mr. Lindsay's parlour through the red-curtained window. To Robert it shone a refuge for Ericson from the night air; to Ericson it shone the casket of the richest jewel of the universe. Well might the ruddy glow stream forth to meet him! Only in glowing red could such beauty be rightly closed. With trembling hand he knocked at the door.

They were shown at once into the parlour. Mysie was putting away her book as they entered, and her back was towards them. When she turned, it seemed even to Robert as if all the light in the room came only from her eyes. But that light had been all gathered out of the novel she had just laid down. She held out her hand to Eric, and her sweet voice was yet more gentle than wont, for he had been ill. His face flushed at the tone. But although she spoke kindly, he could hardly have fancied that she showed him special favour.

Robert stood with his violin under his arm, feeling as awkward as if he had never handled anything more delicate than a pitchfork. But Mysie sat down to the table, and began to pour out the tea, and he came to himself again. Presently her father entered. His greeting was warm and mild and sleepy. He had come from poring over Spotiswood, in search of some Will o' the wisp or other, and had grown stupid from want of success. But he revived after a cup of tea, and began to talk about northern genealogies; and Ericson did his best to listen. Robert wondered at the knowledge he displayed: he had been tutor the foregoing summer in one of the oldest and poorest, and therefore proudest families in Caithness. But all the time his host talked Ericson's eyes hovered about Mysie, who sat gazing before her with look distraught, with wide eyes and scarce-moving eyelids, beholding something neither on sea or shore; and Mr. Lindsay would now and then correct Ericson in some egregious blunder; while Mysie would now and then start awake and ask Robert or Ericson to take another cup of tea. Before the sentence was finished, however, she would let it die away, speaking the last words mechanically, as her consciousness relapsed into dreamland. Had not Robert been with Ericson, he would have found it wearisome enough; and except things took a turn, Ericson could hardly be satisfied with the pleasure of the evening. Things did take a turn.

"Robert has brought his fiddle," said Ericson, as the tea was removed.

"I hope he will be kind enough to play something," said Mr. Lindsay.

"I'll do that," answered Robert, with alacrity. "But ye maunna[must not, may not] expec' ower[over] muckle[much], for I'm but a prentice-han'[novice]," he added, as he got the instrument ready.

Before he had drawn the bow once across it, attention awoke in Mysie's eyes; and before he had finished playing, Ericson must have had

quite as much of the “beauty born of murmuring sound” as was good for him. Little did Mysie think of the sky of love, alive with silent thoughts, that arched over her. The earth teems with love that is unloved. The universe itself is one sea of infinite love, from whose consort of harmonies if a stray note steal across the sense, it starts bewildered.

Robert played better than usual. His touch grew intense, and put on all its delicacy, till it was like that of the spider, which, as Pope so admirably says,

> Feels at each thread, and lives along the line.

And while Ericson watched its shadows, the music must have taken hold of him too; for when Robert ceased, he sang a wild ballad of the northern sea, to a tune strange as itself. It was the only time Robert ever heard him sing. Mysie’s eyes grew wider and wider as she listened. When it was over,

“Did ye write that sang yersel’, Mr. Ericson?” asked Robert.

“No,” answered Ericson. “An old shepherd up in our parts used to say it to me when I was a boy.”

“Didna he sing ’t?” Robert questioned further.

“No, he didn’t. But I heard an old woman crooning it to a child in a solitary cottage on the shore of Stroma, near the Swalchie whirlpool, and that was the tune she sang it to, if singing it could be called.”

“I don’t quite understand it, Mr. Ericson,” said Mysie. “What does it mean?”

“There was once a beautiful woman lived there-away,” began Ericson. —But I have not room to give the story as he told it, embellishing it, no doubt, as with such a mere tale was lawful enough, from his own imagination. The substance was that a young man fell in love with a

beautiful witch, who let him go on loving her till he cared for nothing but her, and then began to kill him by laughing at him. For no witch can fall in love herself, however much she may like to be loved. She mocked him till he drowned himself in a pool on the seashore. Now the witch did not know that; but as she walked along the shore, looking for things, she saw his hand lying over the edge of a rocky basin. Nothing is more useful to a witch than the hand of a man, so she went to pick it up. When she found it fast to an arm, she would have chopped it off, but seeing whose it was, she would, for some reason or other best known to a witch, draw off his ring first. For it was an enchanted ring which she had given him to bewitch his love, and now she wanted both it and the hand to draw to herself the lover of a young maiden whom she hated. But the dead hand closed its fingers upon hers, and her power was powerless against the dead. And the tide came rushing up, and the dead hand held her till she was drowned. She lies with her lover to this day at the bottom of the Swalchie whirlpool; and when a storm is at hand, strange moanings rise from the pool, for the youth is praying the witch lady for her love, and she is praying him to let go her hand.

While Ericson told the story the room still glimmered about Robert as if all its light came from Mysie's face, upon which the flickering firelight alone played. Mr. Lindsay sat a little back from the rest, with an amused expression: legends of such sort did not come within the scope of his antiquarian reach, though he was ready enough to believe whatever tempted his own taste, let it be as destitute of likelihood as the story of the dead hand. When Ericson ceased, Mysie gave a deep sigh, and looked full of thought, though I daresay it was only feeling. Mr. Lindsay followed with an old tale of the Sinclairs, of which he said Ericson's reminded him, though the sole association was that the foregoing was a

Caithness story, and the Sinclairs are a Caithness family. As soon as it was over, Mysie, who could not hide all her impatience during its lingering progress, asked Robert to play again. He took up his violin, and with great expression gave the air of Ericson's ballad two or three times over, and then laid down the instrument. He saw indeed that it was too much for Mysie, affecting her more, thus presented after the story, than the singing of the ballad itself. Thereupon Ericson, whose spirits had risen greatly at finding that he could himself secure Mysie's attention, and produce the play of soul in feature which he so much delighted to watch, offered another story; and the distant rush of the sea, borne occasionally into the "grateful gloom" upon the cold sweep of a February wind, mingled with one tale after another, with which he entranced two of his audience, while the third listened mildly content.

The last of the tales Ericson told was as follows:—

"One evening-twilight in spring, a young English student, who had wandered northwards as far as the outlying fragments of Scotland called the Orkney and Shetland islands, found himself on a small island of the latter group, caught in a storm of wind and hail, which had come on suddenly. It was in vain to look about for any shelter; for not only did the storm entirely obscure the landscape, but there was nothing around him save a desert moss.

"At length, however, as he walked on for mere walking's sake, he found himself on the verge of a cliff, and saw, over the brow of it, a few feet below him, a ledge of rock, where he might find some shelter from the blast, which blew from behind. Letting himself down by his hands, he alighted upon something that crunched beneath his tread, and found the bones of many small animals scattered about in front of a little cave in the rock, offering the refuge he sought, He went in, and sat upon a stone.

The storm increased in violence, and as the darkness grew he became uneasy, for he did not relish the thought of spending the night in the cave. He had parted from his companions on the opposite side of the island, and it added to his uneasiness that they must be full of apprehension about him. At last there came a lull in the storm, and the same instant he heard a footfall, stealthy and light as that of a wild beast, upon the bones at the mouth of the cave. He started up in some fear, though the least thought might have satisfied him that there could be no very dangerous animals upon the island. Before he had time to think, however, the face of a woman appeared in the opening. Eagerly the wanderer spoke. She started at the sound of his voice. He could not see her well, because she was turned towards the darkness of the cave.

"'Will you tell me how to find my way across the moor to Shielness?' he asked.

"'You cannot find it to-night,' she answered, in a sweet tone, and with a smile that bewitched him, revealing the whitest of teeth.

"'What am I to do, then?' he asked.

"'My mother will give you shelter, but that is all she has to offer.'

"'And that is far more than I expected a minute ago,' he replied. 'I shall be most grateful.'

"She turned in silence and left the cave. The youth followed.

"She was barefooted, and her pretty brown feet went catlike over the sharp stones, as she led the way down a rocky path to the shore. Her garments were scanty and torn, and her hair blew tangled in the wind. She seemed about five-and-twenty, lithe and small. Her long fingers kept clutching and pulling nervously at her skirts as she went. Her face was very gray in complexion, and very worn, but delicately formed, and smooth-skinned. Her thin nostrils were tremulous as eyelids, and her

lips, whose curves were faultless, had no colour to give sign of indwelling blood. What her eyes were like he could not see, for she had never lifted the delicate films of her eyelids.

"At the foot of the cliff they came upon a little hut leaning against it, and having for its inner apartment a natural hollow within it. Smoke was spreading over the face of the rock, and the grateful odour of food gave hope to the hungry student. His guide opened the door of the cottage; he followed her in, and saw a woman bending over a fire in the middle of the floor. On the fire lay a large fish boiling. The daughter spoke a few words, and the mother turned and welcomed the stranger. She had an old and very wrinkled, but honest face, and looked troubled. She dusted the only chair in the cottage, and placed it for him by the side of the fire, opposite the one window, whence he saw a little patch of yellow sand over which the spent waves spread themselves out listlessly. Under this window was a bench, upon which the daughter threw herself in an unusual posture, resting her chin upon her hand. A moment after the youth caught the first glimpse of her blue eyes. They were fixed upon him with a strange look of greed, amounting to craving, but as if aware that they belied or betrayed her, she dropped them instantly. The moment she veiled them, her face, notwithstanding its colourless complexion, was almost beautiful.

"When the fish was ready the old woman wiped the deal table, steadied it upon the uneven floor, and covered it with a piece of fine table-linen. She then laid the fish on a wooden platter, and invited the guest to help himself. Seeing no other provision, he pulled from his pocket a hunting-knife, and divided a portion from the fish, offering it to the mother first.

"'Come, my lamb,' said the old woman; and the daughter approached the table. But her nostrils and mouth quivered with disgust.

"The next moment she turned and hurried from the hut.

"'She doesn't like fish,' said the old woman, 'and I haven't anything else to give her.'

"'She does not seem in good health,' he rejoined.

"The woman answered only with a sigh, and they ate their fish with the help of a little rye-bread. As they finished their supper, the youth heard the sound as of the pattering of a dog's feet upon the sand close to the door; but ere he had time to look out of the window, the door opened and the young woman entered. She looked better, perhaps from having just washed her face. She drew a stool to the corner of the fire opposite him. But as she sat down, to his bewilderment, and even horror, the student spied a single drop of blood on her white skin within her torn dress. The woman brought out a jar of whisky, put a rusty old kettle on the fire, and took her place in front of it. As soon as the water boiled, she proceeded to make some toddy in a wooden bowl.

"Meantime the youth could not take his eyes off the young woman, so that at length he found himself fascinated, or rather bewitched. She kept her eyes for the most part veiled with the loveliest eyelids fringed with darkest lashes, and he gazed entranced; for the red glow of the little oil-lamp covered all the strangeness of her complexion. But as soon as he met a stolen glance out of those eyes unveiled, his soul shuddered within him. Lovely face and craving eyes alternated fascination and repulsion.

"The mother placed the bowl in his hands. He drank sparingly, and passed it to the girl. She lifted it to her lips, and as she tasted—only tasted it—looked at him. He thought the drink must have been drugged and have affected his brain. Her hair smoothed itself back, and drew her

forehead backwards with it; while the lower part of her face projected towards the bowl, revealing, ere she sipped, her dazzling teeth in strange prominence. But the same moment the vision vanished; she returned the vessel to her mother, and rising, hurried out of the cottage.

"Then, the old woman pointed to a bed of heather in one corner with a murmured apology; and the student, wearied both with the fatigues of the day and the strangeness of the night, threw himself upon it, wrapped in his cloak. The moment he lay down, the storm began afresh, and the wind blew so keenly through the crannies of the hut, that it was only by drawing his cloak over his head that he could protect himself from its currents. Unable to sleep, he lay listening to the uproar which grew in violence, till the spray was dashing against the window. At length the door opened, and the young woman came in, made up the fire, drew the bench before it, and lay down in the same strange posture, with her chin propped on her hand and elbow, and her face turned towards the youth. He moved a little; she dropped her head, and lay on her face, with her arms crossed beneath her forehead. The mother had disappeared.

"Drowsiness crept over him. A movement of the bench roused him, and he fancied he saw some four-footed creature as tall as a large dog trot quietly out of the door. He was sure he felt a rush of cold wind. Gazing fixedly through the darkness, he thought he saw the eyes of the damsel encountering his, but a glow from the falling together of the remnants of the fire, revealed clearly enough that the bench was vacant. Wondering what could have made her go out in such a storm, he fell fast asleep.

"In the middle of the night he felt a pain in his shoulder, came broad awake, and saw the gleaming eyes and grinning teeth of some animal close to his face. Its claws were in his shoulder, and its mouth was in the

act of seeking his throat. Before it had fixed its fangs, however, he had its throat in one hand, and sought his knife with the other. A terrible struggle followed; but regardless of the tearing claws, he found and opened his knife. He had made one futile stab, and was drawing it for a surer, when, with a spring of the whole body, and one wildly-contorted effort, the creature twisted its neck from his hold, and with something betwixt a scream and a howl, darted from him. Again he heard the door open; again the wind blew in upon him, and it continued blowing; a sheet of spray dashed across the floor, and over his face. He sprung from his couch and bounded to the door.

"It was a wild night—dark, but for the flash of whiteness from the waves as they broke within a few yards of the cottage; the wind was raving, and the rain pouring down the air. A gruesome sound as of mingled weeping and howling came from somewhere in the dark. He turned again into the hut and closed the door, but could find no way of securing it.

"The lamp was nearly out, and he could not be certain whether the form of the young woman was upon the bench or not. Overcoming a strong repugnance, he approached it, and put out his hands—there was nothing there. He sat down and waited for the daylight: he dared not sleep any more.

"When the day dawned at length, he went out yet again, and looked around. The morning was dim and gusty and gray. The wind had fallen, but the waves were tossing wildly. He wandered up and down the little strand, longing for more light.

"At length he heard a movement in the cottage. By and by the voice of the old woman called to him from the door.

"'You're up early, sir. I doubt you didn't sleep well.'

"'Not very well,' he answered. 'But where is your daughter?'

"'She's not awake yet,' said the mother. 'I'm afraid I have but a poor breakfast for you. But you'll take a dram[glass of whisky] and a bit of fish. It's all I've got.'

"Unwilling to hurt her, though hardly in good appetite, he sat down at the table. While they were eating the daughter came in, but turned her face away and went to the further end of the hut. When she came forward after a minute or two, the youth saw that her hair was drenched, and her face whiter than before. She looked ill and faint, and when she raised her eyes, all their fierceness had vanished, and sadness had taken its place. Her neck was now covered with a cotton handkerchief. She was modestly attentive to him, and no longer shunned his gaze. He was gradually yielding to the temptation of braving another night in the hut, and seeing what would follow, when the old woman spoke.

"'The weather will be broken all day, sir,' she said. 'You had better be going, or your friends will leave without you.'

"Ere he could answer, he saw such a beseeching glance on the face of the girl, that he hesitated, confused. Glancing at the mother, he saw the flash of wrath in her face. She rose and approached her daughter, with her hand lifted to strike her. The young woman stooped her head with a cry. He darted round the table to interpose between them. But the mother had caught hold of her; the handkerchief had fallen from her neck; and the youth saw five blue bruises on her lovely throat—the marks of the four fingers and the thumb of a left hand. With a cry of horror he rushed from the house, but as he reached the door he turned. His hostess was lying motionless on the floor, and a huge gray wolf came bounding after him.'

An involuntary cry from Mysie interrupted the story-teller. He changed his tone at once.

"I beg your pardon, Miss Lindsay, for telling you such a horrid tale. Do forgive me. I didn't mean to frighten you more than a little.'

"Only a case of lycanthropia,' remarked Mr. Lindsay, as coolly as if that settled everything about it and lycanthropia, horror and all, at once.

"Do tell us the rest,' pleaded Mysie, and Ericson resumed.

"There was no weapon at hand; and if there had been, his inborn chivalry would never have allowed him to harm a woman even under the guise of a wolf. Instinctively, he set himself firm, leaning a little forward, with half outstretched arms, and hands curved ready to clutch again at the throat upon which he had left those pitiful marks. But the creature as she sprang eluded his grasp, and just as he expected to feel her fangs, he found a woman weeping on his bosom, with her arms around his neck. The next instant, the gray wolf broke from him, and bounded howling up the cliff. Recovering himself as he best might, the youth followed, for it was the only way to the moor above, across which he must now make his way to find his companions.

"All at once he heard the sound of a crunching of bones—not as if a creature was eating them, but as if they were ground by the teeth of rage and disappointment: looking up, he saw close above him the mouth of the little cavern in which he had taken refuge the day before. Summoning all his resolution, he passed it slowly and softly. From within came the sounds of a mingled moaning and growling.

"Having reached the top, he ran at full speed for some distance across the moor before venturing to look behind him. When at length he did so he saw, against the sky, the girl standing on the edge of the cliff, wringing her hands. One solitary wail crossed the space between. She

made no attempt to follow him, and he reached the opposite shore in safety.'

Mysie tried to laugh, but succeeded badly. Robert took his violin, and its tones had soon swept all the fear from her face, leaving in its stead a trouble that has no name—the trouble of wanting one knows not what—or how to seek it.

It was now time to go home. Mysie gave each an equally warm good-night and thanks, Mr. Lindsay accompanied them to the door, and the students stepped into the moonlight. Across the links[sandy grass-covered ground (near seashore)] the sound of the sea came with a swell.

As they went down the garden, Ericson stopped. Robert thought he was looking back to the house, and went on. When Ericson joined him, he was pale as death.

"What *is* the maitter[matter] wi' ye, Mr. Ericson?" he asked in terror.

"Look there!" said Ericson, pointing, not to the house, but to the sky.

Robert looked up. Close about the moon were a few white clouds. Upon these white clouds, right over the moon, and near as the eyebrow to an eye, hung part of an opalescent halo, bent into the rude, but unavoidable suggestion of an eyebrow; while, close around the edge of the moon, clung another, a pale storm-halo. To this pale iris and faint-hued eyebrow the full moon itself formed the white pupil: the whole was a perfect eye of ghastly death, staring out of the winter heaven. The vision may never have been before, may never have been again, but this Ericson and Robert saw that night.

Chapter 15 - The Last of the Coals

The next Sunday Robert went with Ericson to the episcopal chapel, and for the first time in his life heard the epic music of the organ. It was a new starting-point in his life. The worshipping instrument flooded his soul with sound, and he stooped beneath it as a bather on the shore stoops beneath the broad wave rushing up the land. But I will not linger over this portion of his history. It is enough to say that he sought the friendship of the organist, was admitted to the instrument; touched, trembled, exulted; grew dissatisfied, fastidious, despairing; gathered hope and tried again, and yet again; till at last, with constantly-recurring fits of self-despite, he could not leave the grand creature alone. It became a rival even to his violin. And once before the end of March, when the organist was ill, and another was not to be had, he ventured to occupy his place both at morning and evening service.

Dr. Anderson kept George Moray in bed for a few days, after which he went about for a while with his arm in a sling. But the season of bearing material burdens was over for him now. Dr. Anderson had an interview with the master of the grammar-school; a class was assigned to Moray, and with a delight, resting chiefly on his social approximation to Robert, which in one week elevated the whole character of his person and countenance and bearing, George Moray bent himself to the task of mental growth. Having good helpers at home, and his late-developed energy turning itself entirely into the new channel, he got on admirably. As there was no other room to be had in Mrs. Fyvie's house, he continued for the rest of the session to sleep upon the rug, for he would not hear of going to another house. The doctor had advised Robert to drop the nickname as much as possible; but the first time he called him

Moray, Shargar threatened to cut his throat, and so between the two the name remained.

I presume that by this time Doctor Anderson had made up his mind to leave his money to Robert, but thought it better to say nothing about it, and let the boy mature his independence. He had him often to his house. Ericson frequently accompanied him; and as there was a good deal of original similarity between the doctor and Ericson, the latter soon felt his obligation no longer a burden. Shargar likewise, though more occasionally, made one of the party, and soon began, in his new circumstances, to develop the manners of a gentleman. I say *develop* advisedly, for Shargar had a deep humanity in him, as abundantly testified by his devotion to Robert, and humanity is the body of which true manners is the skin and ordinary manifestation: true manners are the polish which lets the internal humanity shine through, just as the polish on marble reveals its veined beauty. Many talks did the elderly man hold with the three youths, and his experience of life taught Ericson and Robert much, especially what he told them about his Brahmin friend in India. Moray, on the other hand, was chiefly interested in his tales of adventure when on service in the Indian army, or engaged in the field sports of that region so prolific in monsters. His gipsy blood and lawless childhood, spent in wandering familiarity with houseless nature, rendered him more responsive to these than the others, and his kindled eye and pertinent remarks raised in the doctor's mind an early question whether a commission in India might not be his best start in life.

Between Ericson and Robert, as the former recovered his health, communication from the deeper strata of human need became less frequent. Ericson had to work hard to recover something of his leeway; Robert had to work hard that prizes might witness for him to his

grandmother and Miss St. John. To the latter especially, as I think I have said before, he was anxious to show well, wiping out the blot, as he considered it, of his all but failure in the matter of a bursary. For he looked up to her as to a goddess who just came near enough to the earth to be worshipped by him who dwelt upon it.

The end of the session came nigh. Ericson passed his examinations with honour. Robert gained the first Greek and third Latin prize. The evening of the last day arrived, and on the morrow the students would be gone—some to their homes of comfort and idleness, others to hard labour in the fields; some to steady reading, perhaps to school again to prepare for the next session, and others to be tutors all the summer months, and return to the wintry city as to freedom and life. Shargar was to remain at the grammar-school.

That last evening Robert sat with Ericson in his room. It was a cold night—the night of the last day of March. A bitter wind blew about the house, and dropped spiky hailstones upon the skylight. The friends were to leave on the morrow, but to leave together; for they had already sent their boxes, one by the carrier to Rothieden, the other by a sailing vessel to Wick, and had agreed to walk together as far as Robert's home, where he was in hopes of inducing his friend to remain for a few days if he found his grandmother agreeable to the plan. Shargar was asleep on the rug for the last time, and Robert had brought his coal-scuttle into Ericson's room to combine their scanty remains of well-saved fuel in a common glow, over which they now sat.

"I wonder what my grannie 'ill[will] say to me," said Robert.

"She'll be very glad to see you, whatever she may say," remarked Ericson.

“She’ll say “noo[now], be dooce[gentle, sensible],” the minute I hae shacken hands wi’ her,” said Robert.

“Robert,” returned Ericson solemnly, “if I had a grandmother to go home to, she might box my ears if she liked—I wouldn’t care. You do not know what it is not to have a soul belonging to you on the face of the earth. It is so cold and so lonely!”

“But you have a cousin, haven’t you?” suggested Robert.

Ericson laughed, but good-naturedly.

“Yes,” he answered, “a little man with a fishy smell, in a blue tail-coat with brass buttons, and a red and black nightcap.”

“But,” Robert ventured to hint, “he might go in a kilt and top-boots, like Satan in my grannie’s copy o’ the *Paradise Lost*, for onything I would care.”

“Yes, but he’s just like his looks. The first thing he’ll do the next morning after I go *home*, will be to take me into his office, or shop, as he calls it, and get down his books, and show me how many barrels of herring I owe him, with the price of each. To do him justice, he only charges me wholesale.”

“What’ll he do that for?”

“To urge on me the necessity of diligence, and the choice of a profession,” answered Ericson, with a smile of mingled sadness and irresolution. “He will set forth what a loss the interest of the money is, even if I should pay the principal; and remind me that although he has stood my friend, his duty to his own family imposes limits. And he has at least a couple of thousand pounds in the county bank. I don’t believe he would do anything for me but for the honour it will be to the family to have a professional man in it. And yet my father was the making of him.”

“Tell me about your father. What was he?”

“A gentle-minded man, who thought much and said little. He farmed the property that had been his father’s own, and is now leased by my fishy cousin afore mentioned.”

“And your mother?”

“She died just after I was born, and my father never got over it.”

“And you have no brothers or sisters?”

“No, not one. Thank God for your grandmother, and do all you can to please her.”

A silence followed, during which Robert’s heart swelled and heaved with devotion to Ericson; for notwithstanding his openness, there was a certain sad coldness about him that restrained Robert from letting out all the tide of his love. The silence became painful, and he broke it abruptly.

“What are you going to be, Mr. Ericson?”

“I wish you could tell me, Robert. What would you have me to be? Come now.”

Robert thought for a moment.

“Weel, ye canna be a minister, Mr. Ericson, ’cause ye dinna believe in God, ye ken,” he said simply.

“Don’t say that, Robert,” Ericson returned, in a tone of pain with which no displeasure was mingled. “But you are right. At best I only hope in God; I don’t believe in him.”

“I’m thinkin’ there canna be muckle[much] differ atween houp[hope] an’ faith,” said Robert. “Mony[many] a ane[one] ’at says they believe in God has unco[very] little houp[hope] o’ onything frae[from] ’s han’, I’m thinkin’.”

My reader may have observed a little change for the better in Robert's speech. Dr. Anderson had urged upon him the necessity of being able at least to speak English; and he had been trying to modify the antique Saxon dialect they used at Rothieden with the newer and more refined English. But even when I knew him, he would upon occasion, especially when the subject was religion or music, fall back into the broadest Scotch. It was as if his heart could not issue freely by any other gate than that of his grandmother tongue.

Fearful of having his last remark contradicted—for he had an instinctive desire that it should lie undisturbed where he had cast it in the field of Ericson's mind, he hurried to another question.

"What for shouldna ye be a doctor?"

"Now you'll think me a fool, Robert, if I tell you why."

"Far be it frae[from] me to daur[dare] think sic[such] a word, Mr. Ericson!" said Robert devoutly.

"Well, I'll tell you, whether or not," returned Ericson. "I could, I believe, amputate a living limb with considerable coolness; but put a knife in a dead body I could not."

"I think I know what you mean. Then you must he a lawyer."

"A lawyer! O Lord!" said Ericson.

"Why not?" asked Robert, in some wonderment; for he could not imagine Ericson acting from mere popular prejudice or fancy.

"Just think of spending one's life in an atmosphere of squabbles. It's all very well when one gets to be a judge and dispense justice; but—well, it's not for me. I *could* not do the best for my clients. And a lawyer has nothing to do with the kingdom of heaven—only with his clients. He

must be a party-man. He must secure for one so often at the loss of the rest. My duty and my conscience would always be at strife."

"Then what *will* you be, Mr. Ericson?"

"To tell the truth, I would rather be a watchmaker than anything else I know. I might make one watch that would go right, I suppose, if I lived long enough. But no one would take an apprentice of my age. So I suppose I must be a tutor, knocked about from one house to another, patronized by ex-pupils, and smiled upon as harmless by mammas and sisters to the end of the chapter. And then something of a pauper's burial, I suppose. *Che sara sara*[Que Será, Será (Whatever Will Be, Will Be)]."

Ericson had sunk into one of his worst moods. But when he saw Robert looking unhappy, he changed his tone, and would be—what he could not be—merry.

"But what's the use of talking about it?" he said. "Get your fiddle, man, and play The Wind That Shakes the Barley."

"No, Mr. Ericson," answered Robert; "I have no heart for the fiddle. I would rather have some poetry."

"Oh!—Poetry!" returned Ericson, in a tone of contempt—yet not very hearty contempt.

"We're gaein' awa'[away], Mr. Ericson," said Robert; "an' the Lord 'at we ken naething aboot alane[alone] kens whether we'll ever meet again i' this place. And sae—"

"True enough, my boy," interrupted Ericson. "I have no need to trouble myself about the future. I believe that is the real secret of it after all. I shall never want a profession or anything else."

"What do you mean, Mr. Ericson?" asked Robert, in half-defined terror.

“I mean, my boy, that I shall not live long. I know that—thank God!”

“How do you know it?”

“My father died at thirty, and my mother at six-and-twenty, both of the same disease. But that’s not how I know it.”

“How do you know it then?”

Ericson returned no answer. He only said—

“Death will be better than life. One thing I don’t like about it though,” he added, “is the coming on of unconsciousness. I cannot bear to lose my consciousness even in sleep. It is such a terrible thing!”

“I suppose that’s ane[one] o’ the reasons that we canna be content withoot a God,” responded Robert. “It’s dreidfu’ to think even o’ fa’in’[falling] asleep withoot some ane[one] greater an’ nearer than the *me* watchin’ ower[over] ’t. But I’m jist sayin’ ower[over] again what I hae read in ane[one] o’ your papers, Mr. Ericson. Jist lat[let, allow] me luik[look].”

Venturing more than he had ever yet ventured, Robert rose and went to the cupboard where Ericson’s papers lay. His friend did not check him. On the contrary, he took the papers from his hand, and searched for the poem indicated.

“I’m not in the way of doing this sort of thing, Robert,” he said.

“I know that,” answered Robert.

And Ericson read.

SLEEP.

Oh, is it Death that comes
To have a foretaste of the whole?
  To-night the planets and the stars
  Will glimmer through my window-bars,
But will not shine upon my soul.

For I shall lie as dead,
Though yet I am above the ground;
  All passionless, with scarce a breath,
  With hands of rest and eyes of death,
I shall be carried swiftly round.

Or if my life should break
The idle night with doubtful gleams
  Through mossy arches will I go,
  Through arches ruinous and low,
And chase the true and false in dreams.

Why should I fall asleep?
When I am still upon my bed,
  The moon will shine, the winds will rise,
  And all around and through the skies
The light clouds travel o'er my head.

O, busy, busy things!
Ye mock me with your ceaseless life;
  For all the hidden springs will flow,
  And all the blades of grass will grow,
When I have neither peace nor strife.

And all the long night through,
The restless streams will hurry by;
  And round the lands, with endless roar,
  The white waves fall upon the shore,
And bit by bit devour the dry.

Even thus, but silently,
Eternity, thy tide shall flow—
  And side by side with every star
  Thy long-drawn swell shall bear me far,
An idle boat with none to row.

My senses fail with sleep;
My heart beats thick; the night is noon;
  And faintly through its misty folds

I hear a drowsy clock that holds
Its converse with the waning moon.

Oh, solemn mystery!
That I should be so closely bound
With neither terror nor constraint
Without a murmur of complaint,
And lose myself upon such ground!

"Rubbish!" said Ericson, as he threw down the sheets, disgusted with his own work, which so often disappoints the writer, especially if he is by any chance betrayed into reading it aloud.

"Dinna say that, Mr. Ericson," returned Robert. "Ye maunna[must not, may not] say that. Ye hae nae[no, not] richt to lauch[laugh] at honest wark[work], whether it be yer ain[own] or ony[any] ither[other] body's. The poem noo[now]—"

"Don't call it a poem," interrupted Ericson. "It's not worthy of the name."

"I *will* ca'[call] 't a poem," persisted Robert; "for it's a poem to me, whatever it may be to you. An' hoo[how] I ken 'at it's a poem is jist this: it opens my een[eyes] like music to something I never saw afore."

"What is that?" asked Ericson, not sorry to be persuaded that there might after all be some merit in the productions painfully despised of himself.

"Jist this: it's only whan[when] ye dinna want to fa'[fall, befall] asleep 'at it luiks[looks] fearsome to ye. An' maybe the fear o' death comes i' the same way: we're feared at it 'cause we're no a'thegither[all together] ready for 't; but whan[when] the richt time comes, it'll be as nat'ral as fa'in'[falling] asleep whan[when] we're doonricht sleepy. Gin[if] there be a God to ca'[call] oor Father in heaven, I'm no thinkin' that he wad[would] to sae mony[many] bonny tunes pit[put, make] a scraich[shriek, bird's shrill cry] for the hinder end. I'm thinkin', gin[if]

there be onything in 't ava[at all]—ye ken I'm no sayin', for I dinna ken—we maun[must, have to] jist lippen[trust, depend on] till him to dee[do] dacent an' bonny, an' nae[no, not] sic[such] strange awfu' fash[trouble, inconvenience] aboot it as some fowk[folk] wad[would] mak[make, do] a religion o' expeckin'."

Ericson looked at Robert with admiration mingled with something akin to merriment.

"One would think it was your grandfather holding forth, Robert," he said. "How came you to think of such things at your age?"

"I'm thinkin'," answered Robert, "ye warna muckle[much] aulder[older] nor[than] mysel' whan[when] ye took to sic[such] things, Mr. Ericson. But, 'deed, maybe my luckie-daddie[grandfather] pat[put, made] them i' my heid[head], for I had a heap ado wi' his fiddle for a while. She's deid noo[now]."

Not understanding him, Ericson began to question, and out came the story of the violins. They talked on till the last of their coals was burnt out, and then they went to bed.

Shargar had undertaken to rouse them early, that they might set out on their long walk with a long day before them. But Robert was awake before Shargar. The all but soulless light of the dreary season awoke him, and he rose and looked out. Aurora, as aged now as her loved Tithonus, peered, gray-haired and desolate, over the edge of the tossing sea, with hardly enough of light in her dim eyes to show the broken crests of the waves that rushed shorewards before the wind of her rising. Such an east wind was the right breath to issue from such a pale mouth of hopeless revelation as that which opened with dead lips across the troubled sea on the far horizon. While he gazed, the east darkened; a cloud of hail rushed against the window; and Robert retreated to his bed. But ere he had fallen asleep, Ericson was beside him; and before he was dressed, Ericson appeared again, with his stick in his hand. They left Shargar still

asleep, and descended the stairs, thinking to leave the house undisturbed. But Mrs. Fyvie was watching for them, and insisted on their taking the breakfast she had prepared. They then set out on their journey of forty miles, with half a loaf in their pockets, and money enough to get bread and cheese, and a bottle of the poorest ale, at the far-parted roadside inns.

When Shargar awoke, he wept in desolation, then crept into Robert's bed, and fell fast asleep again.

Chapter 16 - A Strange Night

The youths had not left the city a mile behind, when a thick snowstorm came on. It did not last long, however, and they fought their way through it into a glimpse of sun. To Robert, healthy, powerful, and except at rare times, hopeful, it added to the pleasure of the journey to contend with the storm, and there was a certain steely indifference about Ericson that carried him through. They trudged on steadily for three hours along a good turnpike road, with great black masses of cloud sweeping across the sky, which now sent them a glimmer of sunlight, and now a sharp shower of hail. The country was very dreary—a succession of undulations rising into bleak moorlands, and hills whose heather would in autumn flush the land with glorious purple, but which now looked black and cheerless, as if no sunshine could ever warm them. Now and then the moorland would sweep down to the edge of the road, diversified with dark holes from which peats were dug, and an occasional quarry of gray granite. At one moment endless pools would be shining in the sunlight, and the next the hail would be dancing a mad fantastic dance all about them: they pulled their caps over their brows, bent their heads, and struggled on.

At length they reached their first stage, and after a meal of bread and cheese and an offered glass of whisky, started again on their journey. They did not talk much, for their force was spent on their progress.

After some consultation whether to keep the road or take a certain short cut across the moors, which would lead them into it again with a saving of several miles, the sun shining out with a little stronger promise than he had yet given, they resolved upon the latter. But in the middle of

the moorland the wind and the hail came on with increased violence, and they were glad to tack from one to another of the huge stones that lay about, and take a short breathing time under the lee of each; so that when they recovered the road, they had lost as many miles in time and strength as they had saved in distance. They did not give in, however, but after another rest and a little more refreshment, started again.

The evening was now growing dusk around them, and the fatigue of the day was telling so severely on Ericson, that when in the twilight they heard the blast of a horn behind them, and turning saw the two flaming eyes of a well-known four-horse coach come fluctuating towards them, Robert insisted on their getting up and riding the rest of the way.

"But I can't afford it," said Ericson.

"But I can," said Robert.

"I don't doubt it," returned Ericson. "But I owe you too much already."

"Gin[if] ever we win[get, go] hame[home]—I mean to the heart o' hame[home]—ye can pay me there."

"There will be no need then."

"Whaur's the need than to mak[make, do] sic[such] a wark[work] aboot a saxpence or twa atween this and that? I thocht[thought] ye cared for naething that time or space or sense could grip or measure. Mr. Ericson, ye're no half sic[such] a philosopher as ye wad[would] set up for.—hillo[(a call to attract attention)]!"

Ericson laughed a weary laugh, and as the coach stopped in obedience to Robert's hail, he scrambled up behind.

The guard knew Robert, was pitiful over the condition of the travellers, would have put them inside, but that there was a lady there, and their clothes were wet, got out a great horse-rug and wrapped Robert in it, put

a spare coat of his own, about an inch thick, upon Ericson, drew out a flask, took a pull at it, handed it to his new passengers, and blew a vigorous blast on his long horn, for they were approaching a desolate shed where they had to change their weary horses for four fresh thorough-breds.

Away they went once more, careering through the gathering darkness. It was delightful indeed to have to urge one weary leg past the other no more, but be borne along towards food, fire, and bed. But their adventures were not so nearly over as they imagined. Once more the hail fell furiously—huge hailstones, each made of many, half-melted and welded together into solid lumps of ice. The coachman could scarcely hold his face to the shower, and the blows they received on their faces and legs, drove the thin-skinned, high-spirited horses nearly mad. At length they would face it no longer. At a turn in the road, where it crossed a brook by a bridge with a low stone wall, the wind met them right in the face with redoubled vehemence; the leaders swerved from it, and were just rising to jump over the parapet, when the coachman, whose hands were nearly insensible with cold, threw his leg over the reins, and pulled them up. One of the leaders reared, and fell backwards; one of the wheelers kicked vigorously; a few moments, and in spite of the guard at their heads, all was one struggling mass of bodies and legs, with a broken pole in the midst. The few passengers got down; and Robert, fearing that yet worse might happen and remembering the lady, opened the door. He found her quite composed. As he helped her out,

"What is the matter?" asked the voice dearest to him in the world—the voice of Miss St. John.

He gave a cry of delight. Wrapped in the horse-cloth, Miss St. John did not know him.

“What is the matter?” she repeated.

“Ow[oh], naething, mem—naething. Only I doobt[suspect] we winna[will not] get ye hame[home] the nicht[tonight].”

“Is it you, Robert?” she said, gladly recognizing his voice.

“Ay[yes, indeed], it’s me, and Mr. Ericson. We’ll tak care o’ ye, mem.”

“But surely we shall get home!”

Robert had heard the crack of the breaking pole.

“’Deed, I doobt[suspect] no.”

“What are we to do, then?”

“Come into the lythe[shelter] o’ the bank here, oot[out] o’ the gait[way] o’ thae[those, these] brutes o’ horses,” said Robert, taking off his horse-cloth and wrapping her in it.

The storm hissed and smote all around them. She took Robert’s arm. Followed by Ericson, they left the coach and the struggling horses, and withdrew to a bank that overhung the road. As soon as they were out of the wind, Robert, who had made up his mind, said,

“We canna be mony[many] yairds frae[from] the auld hoose[house] o’ Bogbonnie. We micht win[get, go] throu the nicht[tonight] there weel eneuch[enough]. I’ll speir[ask about, enquire] at the gaird[guard, watch], the minute the horses are clear. We war[were] ’maist[most, almost] ower[over] the brig[bridge], I heard the coachman say.”

“I know quite well where the old house is,” said Ericson. “I went in the last time I walked this way.”

“Was the door open?” asked Robert.

“I don’t know,” answered Ericson. “I found one of the windows open in the basement.”

“We’ll get the len’[lend, give] o’ ane[one] o’ the lanterns, an’ gang[go] direckly. It canna be mair[more] nor[than] the breedth[breadth] o’ a rig[ridge, space between furrows] or twa frae[from] the burn[stream, brook].”

“I can take you by the road,” said Ericson.

“It will be very cold,” said Miss St. John,—already shivering, partly from disquietude.

“There’s timmer[timber, wood] eneuch[enough] there to haud[hold, keep] ’s warm for a twalmonth[twelvemonth, yea],” said Robert.

He went back to the coach. By this time the horses were nearly extricated. Two of them stood steaming in the lamplight, with their sides going at twenty bellows’ speed. The guard would not let him have one of the coach lamps, but gave him a small lantern of his own. When he returned with it, he found Ericson and Miss St. John talking together.

Ericson led the way, and the others followed.

“Whaur are ye gaein’, gentlemen?” asked the guard, as they passed the coach.

“To the auld hoose[house],” answered Robert.

“Ye canna do better. I maun[must, have to] bide wi’ the coch[coach] till the lave[others] gang[go] back to Drumheid wi’ the horses, on’[and; possibly an’] fess[fetch, bring] anither pole. Faith, it’ll be weel into the mornin’ or we win[get, go] oot[out] o’ this. Tak care hoo[how] ye gang[go]. There’s holes i’ the auld hoose[house], I doobt[suspect].”

“We’ll tak gude care, ye may be sure, Hector,” said Robert, as they left the bridge.

The house to which Ericson was leading them was in the midst of a field. There was just light enough to show a huge mass standing in the dark, without a tree or shelter of any sort. When they reached it, all that

Miss St. John could distinguish was a wide broken stair leading up to the door, with glimpses of a large, plain, ugly, square front. The stones of the stair sloped and hung in several directions; but it was plain to a glance that the place was dilapidated through extraordinary neglect, rather than by the usual wear of time. In fact, it belonged only to the beginning of the preceding century, somewhere in Queen Anne's time. There was a heavy door to it, but fortunately for Miss St. John, who would not quite have relished getting in at the window of which Ericson had spoken, it stood a little ajar. The wind roared in the gap and echoed in the empty hall into which they now entered. Certainly Robert was right: there was wood enough to keep them warm; for that hall, and every room into which they went, from top to bottom of the huge house, was lined with pine. No paint-brush had ever passed upon it. Neither was there a spot to be seen upon the grain of the wood: it was clean as the day when the house was finished, only it had grown much browner. A close gallery, with window-frames which had never been glazed, at one story's height, leading across from the one side of the first floor to the other, looked down into the great echoing hall, which rose in the centre of the building to the height of two stories; but this was unrecognizable in the poor light of the guard's lantern. All the rooms on every floor opened each into the other; —but why should I give such a minute description, making my reader expect a ghost story, or at least a nocturnal adventure? I only want him to feel something of what our party felt as they entered this desolate building, which, though some hundred and twenty years old, bore not a single mark upon the smooth floors or spotless walls to indicate that article of furniture had ever stood in it, or human being ever inhabited it. There was a strange and unusual horror about the place—a feeling quite different from that belonging to an ancient house, however haunted it might be. It was like a body that had never had a human soul in it. There

was no sense of a human history about it. Miss St. John's feeling of *eeriness* rose to the height when, in wandering through the many rooms in search of one where the windows were less broken, she came upon one spot in the floor. It was only a hole worn down through floor after floor, from top to bottom, by the drip of the rains from the broken roof: it looked like the disease of the desolate place, and she shuddered.

Here they must pass the night, with the wind roaring awfully through the echoing emptiness, and every now and then the hail clashing against what glass remained in the windows. They found one room with the window well boarded up, for until lately some care had been taken of the place to keep it from the weather. There Robert left his companions, who presently heard the sounds of tearing and breaking below, necessity justifying him in the appropriation of some of the wood-work for their own behoof. He tore a panel or two from the walls, and returning with them, lighted a fire on the empty hearth, where, from the look of the stone and mortar, certainly never fire had blazed before. The wood was dry as a bone, and burnt up gloriously.

Then first Robert bethought himself that they had nothing to eat. He himself was full of merriment, and cared nothing about eating; for had he not Miss St. John and Ericson there? but for them something must be provided. He took his lantern and went back through the storm. The hail had ceased, but the wind blew tremendously. The coach stood upon the bridge like a stranded vessel, its two lamps holding doubtful battle with the wind, now flaring out triumphantly, now almost yielding up the ghost. Inside, the guard was snoring in defiance of the pother o'er[ere, before] his head.

"Hector! Hector!" cried Robert.

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed]," answered Hector. "It's no time to wauken[awake, wake] yet."

"Hae[have] ye nae[no, not] basket, Hector, wi' something to eat in 't—naething gaein' to Rothieden 'at a body micht say *by yer leave* till?"

"Ow[oh]! it's you, is 't?" returned Hector, rousing himself. "Na. Deil[Not] ane[one]. An' gin[if] I had, I daurna[dare not] gie[give] ye 't."

"I wad[would] mak[make, do] free to steal 't, though, an' tak my chance," said Robert. "But ye say ye hae nane[none]?"

"Nane[none], I tell ye. Ye winna[will not] hunger afore the mornin', man."

"I'll stan'[stand] hunger as weel 's you ony[any] day, Hector. It's no for mysel'. There's Miss St. John."

"Hoots[pshaw]!" said Hector, peevishly, for he wanted to go to sleep again, "gang[go] and mak[make, do] luve[love] till her. Nae[no, not] lass 'll think o' meat as lang[long] 's ye do that. That 'll haud[hold, keep] her ohn[without] hungert."

The words were like blasphemy in Robert's ear. He make love to Miss St. John! He turned from the coach-door in disgust. But there was no place he knew of where anything could be had, and he must return empty-handed.

The light of the fire shone through a little hole in the boards that closed the window. His lamp had gone out, but, guided by that, he found the road again, and felt his way up the stairs. When he entered the room he saw Miss St. John sitting on the floor, for there was nowhere else to sit, with the guard's coat under her. She had taken off her bonnet. Her back leaned against the side of the chimney, and her eyes were bent thoughtfully on the ground. In their shine Robert read instinctively that Ericson had said something that had set her thinking. He lay on the floor at some distance, leaning on his elbow, and his eye had the flash in it

that indicates one who has just ceased speaking. They had not found his absence awkward at least.

"I hae been efter[after] something to eat," said Robert; "but I canna fa'[fall, befall] in wi' onything. We maun[must, have to] jist tell stories or sing sangs, as fowk[folk] do in buiks[books], or else Miss St. John 'ill[will] think lang[long]."

They did sing songs, and they did tell stories. I will not trouble my reader with more than the sketch of one which Robert told—the story of the old house wherein they sat—a house without a history, save the story of its no history. It had been built for the jointure-house of a young countess, whose husband was an old man. A lover to whom she had turned a deaf ear had left the country, begging ere he went her acceptance of a lovely Italian grayhound. She was weak enough to receive the animal. Her husband died the same year, and before the end of it the dog went mad, and bit her. According to the awful custom of the time they smothered her between two feather-beds, just as the house of Bogbonnie was ready to receive her furniture, and become her future dwelling. No one had ever occupied it.

If Miss St. John listened to story and song without as much show of feeling as Mysie Lindsay would have manifested, it was not that she entered into them less deeply. It was that she *was* more, not felt less.

Listening at her window once with Robert, Eric Ericson had heard Mary St. John play: this was their first meeting. Full as his mind was of Mysie, he could not fail to feel the charm of a noble, stately womanhood that could give support, instead of rousing sympathy for helplessness. There was in the dignified simplicity of Mary St. John that which made every good man remember his mother; and a good man will think this grand praise, though a fast girl will take it for a doubtful compliment.

Seeing her begin to look weary, the young men spread a couch for her as best they could, made up the fire, and telling her they would be in the hall below, retired, kindled another fire, and sat down to wait for the morning. They held a long talk. At length Robert fell asleep on the floor.

Ericson rose. One of his fits of impatient doubt was upon him. In the dying embers of the fire he strode up and down the waste hall, with the storm raving around it. He was destined to an early death; he would leave no one of his kin to mourn for him; the girl whose fair face had possessed his imagination, would not give one sigh to his memory, wandering on through the regions of fancy all the same; and the death-struggle over, he might awake in a godless void, where, having no creative power in himself, he must be tossed about, a conscious yet helpless atom, to eternity. It was not annihilation he feared, although he did shrink from the thought of unconsciousness; it was life without law that he dreaded, existence without the bonds of a holy necessity, thought without faith, being without God.

For all her fatigue Miss St. John could not sleep. The house quivered in the wind which howled more and more madly through its long passages and empty rooms; and she thought she heard cries in the midst of the howling. In vain she reasoned with herself: she could not rest. She rose and opened the door of her room, with a vague notion of being nearer to the young men.

It opened upon the narrow gallery, already mentioned as leading from one side of the first floor to the other at mid-height along the end of the hall. The fire below shone into this gallery, for it was divided from the hall only by a screen of crossing bars of wood, like unglazed window-frames, possibly intended to hold glass. Of the relation of the passage to the hall Mary St. John knew nothing, till, approaching the light, she

found herself looking down into the red dusk below. She stood riveted; for in the centre of the hall, with his hands clasped over his head like the solitary arch of a ruined Gothic aisle, stood Ericson.

His agony had grown within him—the agony of the silence that brooded immovable throughout the infinite, whose sea would ripple to no breath of the feeble tempest of his prayers. At length it broke from him in low but sharp sounds of words.

"O God," he said, "if thou art, why dost thou not speak? If I am thy handiwork—dost thou forget that which thou hast made?"

He paused, motionless, then cried again:

"There can be no God, or he would hear."

"God has heard *me*!" said a full-toned voice of feminine tenderness somewhere in the air. Looking up, Ericson saw the dim form of Mary St. John half-way up the side of the lofty hall. The same moment she vanished—trembling at the sound of her own voice.

Thus to Ericson as to Robert had she appeared as an angel.

And was she less of a divine messenger because she had a human body, whose path lay not through the air? The storm of misery folded its wings in Eric's bosom, and, at the sound of her voice, there was a great calm. Nor if we inquire into the matter shall we find that such an effect indicated anything derogatory to the depth of his feelings or the strength of his judgment. It is not through the judgment that a troubled heart can be set at rest. It needs a revelation, a vision; a something for the higher nature that breeds and infolds the intellect, to recognize as of its own, and lay hold of by faithful hope. And what fitter messenger of such hope than the harmonious presence of a woman, whose form itself tells of highest law, and concord, and uplifting obedience; such a one whose beauty walks the upper air of noble loveliness; whose voice, even in

speech, is one of the “sphere-born harmonious sisters”? The very presence of such a being gives Unbelief the lie, deep as the throat of her lying. Harmony, which is beauty and law, works necessary faith in the region capable of truth. It needs the intervention of no reasoning. It is beheld. This visible Peace, with that voice of woman’s truth, said, “God has heard *me!*” What better testimony could an angel have brought him? Or why should an angel’s testimony weigh more than such a woman’s? The mere understanding of a man like Ericson would only have demanded of an angel proof that he was an angel, proof that angels knew better than he did in the matter in question, proof that they were not easy-going creatures that took for granted the rumours of heaven. The best that a miracle can do is to give hope; of the objects of faith it can give no proof; one spiritual testimony is worth a thousand of them. For to gain the sole proof of which these truths admit, a man must grow into harmony with them. If there are no such things he cannot become conscious of a harmony that has no existence; he cannot thus deceive himself; if there are, they must yet remain doubtful until the harmony between them and his own willing nature is established. The perception of this harmony is their only and incommunicable proof. For this process time is needful; and therefore we are saved by hope. Hence it is no wonder that before another half-hour was over, Ericson was asleep by Robert’s side.

They were aroused in the cold gray light of the morning by the blast of Hector’s horn. Miss St. John was ready in a moment. The coach was waiting for them at the end of the grassy road that led from the house. Hector put them all inside. Before they reached Rothieden the events of the night began to wear the doubtful aspect of a dream. No allusion was made to what had occurred while Robert slept; but all the journey

Ericson felt towards Miss St. John as Wordsworth felt towards the leech-gatherer, who, he says, was

> like a man from some far region sent,
> To give me human strength, by apt admonishment.

And Robert saw a certain light in her eyes which reminded him of how she looked when, having repented of her momentary hardness towards him, she was ministering to his wounded head.

Chapter 17 - Home Again

When Robert opened the door of his grandmother's parlour, he found the old lady seated at breakfast. She rose, pushed back her chair, and met him in the middle of the room; put her old arms round him, offered her smooth white cheek to him, and wept. Robert wondered that she did not look older; for the time he had been away seemed an age, although in truth only eight months.

"Hoo[how] are ye, laddie?" she said. "I'm richt glaid, for I hae been thinkin' lang[long] to see ye. Sit ye doon."

Betty rushed in, drying her hands on her apron. She had not heard him enter.

"Eh losh!" she cried, and put her wet apron to her eyes. "Sic[such] a man as ye're grown, Robert! A puir[poor] body like me maunna[must not, may not] be speykin to ye noo[now]."

"There's nae[no, not] odds[consequence, change] in me, Betty," returned Robert.

"'Deed but there is. Ye're sax[six] feet an' a hairy ower[over], I s' warran'."

"I said there was nae[no, not] odds[consequence, change] *I*" me, Betty," persisted Robert, laughing.

"I kenna what may be *in* ye," retorted Betty; "but there's an unco'[very great] odds[consequence, change] *upo'* ye."

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue, Betty," said her mistress. "Ye oucht[ought] to ken better nor[than] stan'[stand] jawin' wi' young men. Fess[fetch, bring] mair[more] o' the creamy cakes."

"Maybe Robert wad[would] like a drappy[little drop] o' parritch[oatmeal porridge]."

"Onything, Betty," said Robert. "I'm at deith's door wi' hunger."

"Rin[run], Betty, for the cakes. An' fess[fetch, bring] a loaf o' white breid[bread]; we canna bide for the parritch[oatmeal porridge]."

Robert fell to his breakfast, and while he ate—somewhat ravenously—he told his grandmother the adventures of the night, and introduced the question whether he might not ask Ericson to stay a few days with him.

"Ony[any] frien' o' yours, laddie," she replied, qualifying her words only with the addition—"gin[if] he be a frien'.—Whaur is he noo[now]?"

"He's up at Miss Naper's."

"Hoots[pshaw]! What for didna ye fess[fetch, bring] him in wi' ye?—Betty!"

"Na, na, grannie. The Napers are frien's o' his. We maunna[must not, may not] interfere wi' them. I'll gang[go] up mysel' ance[once] I hae had my brakfast."

"Weel, weel, laddie. Eh! I'm blythe to see ye! Hae[Have] ye gotten ony[any] prizes noo[now]?"

"Ay[yes, indeed] have I. I'm sorry they're nae[no, not] baith[both] o' them the first. But I hae the first o' ane[one] an' the third o' the ither[other]."

"I *am* pleased at that, Robert. Ye'll be a man some day gin[if] ye haud[hold, keep] frae[from] drink an' frae[from]—frae[from] leein'[lying]."

"I never tellt a lee i' my life, grannie."

"Na. I dinna think 'at ever ye did.—An' what's that crater[creature] Shargar aboot?"

"Ow[oh], jist gaein' to be a croon[crown] o' glory to ye, grannie. He vroucht[wrought, worked] like a horse till Dr. Anderson took him by the han', an' sent him to the schuil. An' he's gaein' to mak[make, do] something o' 'im, or a' be dune[done]. He's a fine crater[creature], Shargar."

"He tuik[took] a munelicht flittin' frae[from] here," rejoined the old lady, in a tone of offence. "He micht hae said gude day to me, I think."

"Ye see he was feart at ye, grannie."

"Feart at *me*, laddie! Wha ever was feart at me? I never feart onybody i' my life."

So little did the dear old lady know that she was a terror to her neighbourhood!—simply because, being a law to herself, she would therefore be a law to other people,—a conclusion that cannot be concluded.

Mrs. Falconer's courtesy did not fail. Her grandson had ceased to be a child; her responsibility had in so far ceased; her conscience was relieved at being rid of it; and the humanity of her great heart came out to greet the youth. She received Ericson with perfect hospitality, made him at home as far as the stately respect she showed him would admit of his being so, and confirmed in him the impression of her which Robert had given him. They held many talks together; and such was the circumspection of Ericson that, not saying a word he did not believe, he so said what he did believe, or so avoided the points upon which they would have differed seriously, that although his theology was of course far from satisfying her, she yet affirmed her conviction that the root of the matter was in him. This distressed Ericson, however, for he feared he must have been deceitful, if not hypocritical.

It was with some grumbling that the Napiers, especially Miss Letty, parted with him to Mrs. Falconer. The hearts of all three had so taken to the youth, that he found himself more at home in that hostelry than anywhere else in the world. Miss Letty was the only one that spoke lightly of him—she even went so far as to make good-natured game of him sometimes—all because she loved him more than the others—more indeed than she cared to show, for fear of exposing "an old woman's ridiculous fancy," as she called her predilection.—"A lang-leggit, prood,

landless laird," she would say, with a moist glimmer in her loving eyes, "wi' the maist[most, almost] ridiculous feet ye ever saw—hardly room for the five taes[toe] atween the twa! Losh!"

When Robert went forth into the streets, he was surprised to find how friendly every one was. Even old William MacGregor shook him kindly by the hand, inquired after his health, told him not to study too hard, informed him that he had a copy of a queer old book that he would like to see, &c., &c. Upon reflection Robert discovered the cause: though he had scarcely gained a bursary, he had gained prizes; and in a little place like Rothieden—long may there be such places!—everybody with any brains at all took a share in the distinction he had merited.

Ericson stayed only a few days. He went back to the twilight of the north, his fishy cousin, and his tutorship at Sir Olaf Petersen's. Robert accompanied him ten miles on his journey, and would have gone further, but that he was to play on his violin before Miss St. John the next day for the first time.

When he told his grandmother of the appointment he had made, she only remarked, in a tone of some satisfaction,

"Weel, she's a fine lass, Miss St. John; and gin[if] ye tak to ane[one] anither, ye canna do better."

But Robert's thoughts were so different from Mrs. Falconer's that he did not even suspect what she meant. He no more dreamed of marrying Miss St. John than of marrying his forbidden grandmother. Yet she was no less at this period the ruling influence of his life; and if it had not been for the benediction of her presence and power, this part of his history too would have been torn by inward troubles. It is not good that a man should batter day and night at the gate of heaven. Sometimes he can do nothing else, and then nothing else is worth doing; but the very

noise of the siege will sometimes drown the still small voice that calls from the open postern. There is a door wide to the jewelled wall not far from any one of us, even when he least can find it.

Robert, however, notwithstanding the pedestal upon which Miss St. John stood in his worshipping regard, began to be aware that his feeling towards her was losing something of its placid flow, and I doubt whether Miss St. John did not now and then see that in his face which made her tremble a little, and doubt whether she stood on safe ground with a youth just waking into manhood—tremble a little, not for herself, but for him. Her fear would have found itself more than justified, if she had surprised him kissing her glove, and then replacing it where he had found it, with the air of one consciously guilty of presumption.

Possibly also Miss St. John may have had to confess to herself that had she not had her history already, and been ten years his senior, she might have found no little attraction in the noble bearing and handsome face of young Falconer. The rest of his features had now grown into complete harmony of relation with his premature and therefore portentous nose; his eyes glowed and gleamed with humanity, and his whole countenance bore self-evident witness of being a true face and no mask, a revelation of his individual being, and not a mere inheritance from a fine breed of fathers and mothers. As it was, she could admire and love him without danger of falling in love with him; but not without fear lest he should not assume the correlative position. She saw no way of prevention, however, without running a risk of worse. She shrunk altogether from *putting on* anything; she abhorred tact, and pretence was impracticable with Mary St. John. She resolved that if she saw any definite ground for uneasiness she would return to England, and leave any impression she might have

made to wear out in her absence and silence. Things did not seem to render this necessary yet.

Meantime the violin of the dead shoemaker blended its wails with the rich harmonies of Mary St. John's piano, and the soul of Robert went forth upon the level of the sound and hovered about the beauty of his friend. Oftener than she approved was she drawn by Robert's eagerness into these *consorts*.

But the heart of the king is in the hands of the Lord.

While Robert thus once more for a season stood behind the cherub with the flaming sword, Ericson was teaching two stiff-necked youths in a dreary house in the midst of one of the moors of Caithness. One day he had a slight attack of blood-spitting, and welcomed it as a sign from what heaven there might be beyond the grave.

He had not received the consolation of Miss St. John without, although unconsciously, leaving something in her mind in return. No human being has ever been allowed to occupy the position of a pure benefactor. The receiver has his turn, and becomes the giver. From her talk with Ericson, and even more from the influence of his sad holy doubt, a fresh touch of the actinism of the solar truth fell upon the living seed in her heart, and her life burst forth afresh, began to bud in new questions that needed answers, and new prayers that sought them.

But she never dreamed that Robert was capable of sympathy with such thoughts and feelings: he was but a boy. Nor in power of dealing with truth was he at all on the same level with her, for however poor he might have considered her theories, she had led a life hitherto, had passed through sorrow without bitterness, had done her duty without pride, had hoped without conceit of favour, had, as she believed, heard the voice of God saying, "This is the way." Hence she was not afraid when the mists

of prejudice began to rise from around her path, and reveal a country very different from what she had fancied it. She was soon able to perceive that it was far more lovely and full of righteousness and peace than she had supposed. But this anticipates; only I shall have less occasion to speak of Miss St. John by the time she has come into this purer air of the uphill road.

Robert was happier than he ever could have expected to be in his grandmother's house. She treated him like an honoured guest, let him do as he would, and go where he pleased. Betty kept the gable-room in the best of order for him, and, pattern of housemaids, dusted his table without disturbing his papers. For he began to have papers; nor were they occupied only with the mathematics to which he was now giving his chief attention, preparing, with the occasional help of Mr. Innes, for his second session.

He had fits of wandering, though; visited all the old places; spent a week or two more than once at Bodyfauld; rode Lammie's half-broke filly; revelled in the glories of the summer once more; went out to tea occasionally, or supped[drank] with the school-master; and, except going to church on Sunday, which was a weariness to every inch of flesh upon his bones, enjoyed everything.

Chapter 18 - A Grave Opened

One thing that troubled Robert on this his return home, was the discovery that the surroundings of his childhood had deserted him. There they were, as of yore, but they seemed to have nothing to say to him—no remembrance of him. It was not that everything looked small and narrow; it was not that the streets he saw from his new quarters, the gable-room, were awfully still after the roar of Aberdeen, and a passing cart seemed to shudder at the loneliness of the noise itself made; it was that everything seemed to be conscious only of the past and care nothing for him now. The very chairs with their inlaid backs had an embalmed look, and stood as in a dream. He could pass even the walled-up door without emotion, for all the feeling that had been gathered about the knob that admitted him to Mary St. John, had transferred itself to the brass bell-pull at her street-door.

But one day, after standing for a while at the window, looking down on the street where he had first seen the beloved form of Ericson, a certain old mood began to revive in him. He had been working at quadratic equations all the morning; he had been foiled in the attempt to find the true algebraic statement of a very tough question involving various ratios; and, vexed with himself, he had risen to look out, as the only available *zeitvertreib*[pastime]. It was one of those rainy days of spring which it needs a hopeful mood to distinguish from autumnal ones—dull, depressing, persistent: there might be sunshine in Mercury or Venus—but on the earth could be none, from his right hand round by India and America to his left; and certainly there was none between—a mood to which all sensitive people are liable who have not yet learned by faith in the everlasting to rule their own spirits. Naturally enough his thoughts

turned to the place where he had suffered most—his old room in the garret. Hitherto he had shrunk from visiting it; but now he turned away from the window, went up the steep stairs, with their one sharp corkscrew curve, pushed the door, which clung unwillingly to the floor, and entered. It was a nothing of a place—with a window that looked only to heaven. There was the empty bedstead against the wall, where he had so often kneeled, sending forth vain prayers to a deaf heaven! Had they indeed been vain prayers, and to a deaf heaven? or had they been prayers which a hearing God must answer not according to the haste of the praying child, but according to the calm course of his own infinite law of love?

Here, somehow or other, the things about him did not seem so much absorbed in the past, notwithstanding those untroubled rows of papers bundled in red tape. True, they looked almost awful in their lack of interest and their non-humanity, for there is scarcely anything that absolutely loses interest save the records of money; but his mother's workbox lay behind them. And, strange to say, the side of that bed drew him to kneel down: he did not yet believe that prayer was in vain. If God had not answered him before, that gave no certainty that he would not answer him now. It was, he found, still as rational as it had ever been to hope that God would answer the man that cried to him. This came, I think, from the fact that God had been answering him all the time, although he had not recognized his gifts as answers. Had he not given him Ericson, his intercourse with whom and his familiarity with whose doubts had done anything but quench his thirst after the higher life? For Ericson's, like his own, were true and good and reverent doubts, not merely consistent with but in a great measure springing from devoutness

and aspiration. Surely such doubts are far more precious in the sight of God than many beliefs?

He kneeled and sent forth one cry after the Father, arose, and turned towards the shelves, removed some of the bundles of letters, and drew out his mother's little box.

There lay the miniature, still and open-eyed as he had left it. There too lay the bit of paper, brown and dry, with the hymn and the few words of sorrow written thereon. He looked at the portrait, but did not open the folded paper. Then first he thought whether there might not be something more in the box: what he had taken for the bottom seemed to be a tray. He lifted it by two little ears of ribbon, and there, underneath, lay a letter addressed to his father, in the same old-fashioned handwriting as the hymn. It was sealed with brown wax, full of spangles, impressed with a bush of something—he could not tell whether rushes or reeds or flags. Of course he dared not open it. His holy mother's words to his erring father must be sacred even from the eyes of their son. But what other or fitter messenger than himself could bear it to its destination? It was for this that he had been guided to it.

For years he had regarded the finding of his father as the first duty of his manhood: it was as if his mother had now given her sanction to the quest, with this letter to carry to the husband who, however he might have erred, was yet dear to her. He replaced it in the box, but the box no more on the forsaken shelf with its dreary barricade of soulless records. He carried it with him, and laid it in the bottom of his box, which henceforth he kept carefully locked: there lay as it were the pledge of his father's salvation, and his mother's redemption from an eternal grief.

He turned to his equation: it had cleared itself up; he worked it out in five minutes. Betty came to tell him that the dinner was ready, and he

went down, peaceful and hopeful, to his grandmother.

While at home he never worked in the evenings: it was bad enough to have to do so at college. Hence nature had a chance with him again. Blessings on the wintry blasts that broke into the first youth of Summer! They made him feel what summer was! Blessings on the cheerless days of rain, and even of sleet and hail, that would shove the reluctant year back into January. The fair face of Spring, with her tears dropping upon her quenchless smiles, peeped in suppressed triumph from behind the growing corn and the budding sallows on the river-bank. Nay, even when the snow came once more in defiance of calendars, it was but a background from which the near genesis should "stick fiery off."

In general he had a lonely walk after his lesson with Miss St. John was over: there was no one at Rothieden to whom his heart and intellect both were sufficiently drawn to make a close friendship possible. He had companions, however: Ericson had left his papers with him. The influence of these led him into yet closer sympathy with Nature and all her moods; a sympathy which, even in the stony heart of London, he not only did not lose but never ceased to feel. Even there a breath of wind would not only breathe upon him, it would breathe into him; and a sunset seen from the Strand was lovely as if it had hung over rainbow seas. On his way home he would often go into one of the shops where the neighbours congregated in the evenings, and hold a little talk; and although, with Miss St. John filling his heart, his friend's poems his imagination, and geometry and algebra his intellect, great was the contrast between his own inner mood and the words by which he kept up human relations with his townsfolk, yet in after years he counted it one of the greatest blessings of a lowly birth and education that he knew hearts and feelings which to understand one must have been young

amongst them. He would not have had a chance of knowing such as these if he had been the son of Dr. Anderson and born in Aberdeen.

Chapter 19 - Robert Mediates

One lovely evening in the first of the summer Miss St. John had dismissed him earlier than usual, and he had wandered out for a walk. After a round of a couple of miles, he returned by a fir-wood, through which went a pathway. He had heard Mary St. John say that she was going to see the wife of a labourer who lived at the end of this path. In the heart of the trees it was growing very dusky; but when he came to a spot where they stood away from each other a little space, and the blue sky looked in from above with one cloud floating in it from which the rose of the sunset was fading, he seated himself on a little mound of moss that had gathered over an ancient stump by the footpath, and drew out his friend's papers. Absorbed in his reading, he was not aware of an approach till the rustle of silk startled him. He lifted up his eyes, and saw Miss St. John a few yards from him on the pathway. He rose.

"It's almost too dark to read now, isn't it, Robert?" she said.

"Ah!" said Robert. "I know this writing so well that I could read it by moonlight. I wish I might read some of it to you. You *would* like it."

"May I ask whose it is, then? Poetry, too!"

"It's Mr. Ericson's. But I'm feared he wouldna like me to read it to anybody but myself. And yet—"

"I don't think he would mind me," returned Miss St. John. "I do know him a little. It is not as if I were *quite* a stranger, you know. Did he tell you not?"

"No. But then he never thought of such a thing. I don't know if it's fair, for they are carelessly written, and there are words and lines here and there that I am sure he would alter if he cared for them ae hair."

“Then if he doesn’t care for them, he won’t mind my hearing them. There!” she said, seating herself on the stump. “You sit down on the grass and read me—one at least.”

“You’ll remember they were never intended to be read?” urged Robert, not knowing what he was doing, and so fulfilling his destiny.

“I will be as jealous of his honour as ever you can wish,” answered Miss St. John gaily.

Robert laid himself on the grass at her feet, and read:—

MY TWO GENIUSES.

One is a slow and melancholy maid:
I know not if she cometh from the skies,
Or from the sleepy gulfs, but she will rise
Often before me in the twilight shade
Holding a bunch of poppies, and a blade
Of springing wheat: prostrate my body lies
Before her on the turf, the while she ties
A fillet of the weed about my head;
And in the gaps of sleep I seem to hear
A gentle rustle like the stir of corn,
And words like odours thronging to my ear:
“Lie still, beloved, still until the morn[tomorrow];
Lie still with me upon this rolling sphere,
Still till the judgment—thou art faint and worn.”

The other meets me in the public throng:
Her hair streams backward from her loose attire;
She hath a trumpet and an eye of fire;
She points me downward steadily and long—
“There is thy grave—arise, my son, be strong!
Hands are upon thy crown; awake, aspire
To immortality; heed not the lyre
Of the enchantress, nor her poppy-song;
But in the stillness of the summer calm,

Tremble for what is godlike in thy being.
Listen awhile, and thou shalt hear the psalm
Of victory sung by creatures past thy seeing;
And from far battle-fields there comes the neighing
Of dreadful onset, though the air is balm."

Maid with the poppies, must I let thee go?
Alas! I may not; thou art likewise dear;
I am but human, and thou hast a tear,
When she hath nought but splendour, and the glow
Of a wild energy that mocks the flow
Of the poor sympathies which keep us here.
Lay past thy poppies, and come twice as near,
And I will teach thee, and thou too shalt grow;
And thou shalt walk with me in open day
Through the rough thoroughfares with quiet grace;
And the wild-visaged maid shall lead the way,
Timing her footsteps to a gentler pace,
As her great orbs turn ever on thy face,
Drinking in draughts of loving help alway.

Miss St. John did not speak.

"War[were] ye able to follow him?" asked Robert.

"Quite, I assure you," she answered, with a tremulousness in her voice which delighted Robert as evidence of his friend's success.

"But they're nae[no, not] a' so easy to follow, I can tell ye, mem. Just hearken to this," he said, with some excitement.

When the storm was proudest,
And the wind was loudest,
I heard the hollow caverns drinking down below;
When the stars were bright,
And the ground was white,
I heard the grasses springing underneath the snow.

Many voices spake—
The river to the lake,
The iron-ribbed sky was talking to the sea;
And every starry spark
Made music with the dark,
And said how bright and beautiful everything must be.

"That line, mem," remarked Robert, "'s only jist scrattit[scratched, dug] in, as gin[if] he had no intention o' leavin' 't, an' only set it there to keep room for anither. But we'll jist gang[go] on wi' the lave[remainder, others; leave] o' 't. I ouchtna to hae interruppit it."

When the sun was setting,
All the clouds were getting
Beautiful and silvery in the rising moon;
Beneath the leafless trees
Wrangling in the breeze,
I could hardly see them for the leaves of June.

When the day had ended,
And the night descended,
I heard the sound of streams that I heard not through the day
And every peak afar,
Was ready for a star,
And they climbed and rolled around until the morning gray.

Then slumber soft and holy
Came down upon me slowly;
And I went I know not whither, and I lived I know not how;
My glory had been banished,
For when I woke it vanished,
But I waited on it's coming, and I am waiting now.

"There!" said Robert, ending, "can ye mak[make, do] onything o' that, Miss St. John?"

“I don’t say I can in words,” she answered; “but I think I could put it all into music.”

“But surely ye maun[must, have to] hae some notion o’ what it’s aboot afore you can do that.”

“Yes; but I have some notion of what it’s about, I think. Just lend it to me; and by the time we have our next lesson, you will see whether I’m not able to show you I understand it. I shall take good care of it,” she added, with a smile, seeing Robert’s reluctance to part with it. “It doesn’t matter my having it, you know, now that you’ve read it to me, I want to make you do it justice.—But it’s quite time I were going home. Besides, I really don’t think you can see to read any more.”

“Weel, it’s better no to try, though I hae them maistly[mostly] upo’ my tongue: I might blunder, and that wad[would] blaud[spoil, injure, soil] them.—Will you let me go home with you?” he added, in pure tremulous English.

“Certainly, if you like,” she answered; and they walked towards the town.

Robert opened the fountain of his love for Ericson, and let it gush like a river from a hillside. He talked on and on about him, with admiration, gratitude, devotion. And Miss St. John was glad of the veil of the twilight over her face as she listened, for the boy’s enthusiasm trembled through her as the wind through an Æolian harp. Poor Robert! He did not know, I say, what he was doing, and so was fulfilling his sacred destiny.

“Bring your manuscripts when you come next,” she said, as they walked along—gently adding, “I admire your friend’s verses very much, and should like to hear more of them.”

“I’ll be sure an’ do that,” answered Robert, in delight that he had found one to sympathize with him in his worship of Ericson, and that one his other idol.

When they reached the town, Miss St. John, calling to mind its natural propensity to gossip, especially on the evening of a market-day, when the shopkeepers, their labours over, would be standing in a speculative mood at their doors, surrounded by groups of friends and neighbours, felt shy of showing herself on the square with Robert, and proposed that they should part, giving as a by-the-bye reason that she had a little shopping to do as she went home. Too simple to suspect the real reason, but with a heart that delighted in obedience, Robert bade her good-night at once, and took another way.

As he passed the door of Merson the haberdasher's shop, there stood William MacGregor, the weaver, looking at nothing and doing nothing. We have seen something of him before: he was a remarkable compound of good nature and bad temper. People were generally afraid of him, because he had a biting satire at his command, amounting even to wit, which found vent in verse—not altogether despicable even from a literary point of view. The only person he, on his part, was afraid of, was his own wife; for upon her, from lack of apprehension, his keenest irony fell, as he said, like water on a duck's back, and in respect of her he had, therefore, no weapon of offence to strike terror withal. Her dulness was her defence. He liked Robert. When he saw him, he wakened up, laid hold of him by the button, and drew him in.

"Come in, lad," he said, "an' tak a pinch. I'm waitin' for Merson." As he spoke he took from his pocket his *mull*[snuff-box], made of the end of a ram's horn, and presented it to Robert, who accepted the pledge of friendship. While he was partaking, MacGregor drew himself with some effort upon the counter, saying in a half-comical, half-admonitory tone,

"Weel, and hoo's[how's] the mathematics, Robert?"

"Thrivin'," answered Robert, falling into his humour.

“Weel, that’s verra[very] weel. Duv[do] ye min’[mind, remember], Robert, hoo[how], whan[when] ye was aboot the age o’ aucht[eight] year aul’[old], ye cam to me ance[once] at my shop aboot something yer gran’mither, honest woman, wantit, an’ I, by way o’ takin’ my fun o’ ye, said to ye, ‘Robert, ye hae grown desperate; ye’re a man clean[entirely]; ye hae gotten the breeks[breeches] on.’ An’ says ye, ‘ay[yes, indeed], Mr. MacGregor, I want naething noo[now] but a watch an’ a wife’?”

“I doobt[suspect] I’ve forgotten a’ aboot it, Mr. MacGregor,” answered Robert. “But I’ve made some progress, accordin’ to your story, for Dr. Anderson, afore I cam hame[home], gae[gave] me a watch. An’ a fine crater[creature] it is, for it aye does its best, an’ sae I excuse its shortcomin’s.”

“There’s just ae thing, an’ nae anither,” returned the manufacturer, “that I can*not* excuse in a watch. Gin[if] a watch gangs[goes, walks] ower[over] fest[fast], ye fin’ ’t oot[out]. Gin[if] she gangs[goes, walks] ower[over] slow, ye fin’ ’t oot[out], an’ ye can aye calculate upo’ ’t correck eneuch[enough] for maitters[matters] sublunairy, as Mr. Maccleary says. An’ gin[if] a watch stops a’thegither[all together], ye ken it’s failin’, an’ ye ken whaur it sticks, an’ a’ ’at ye say ’s “Tut, tut, de’il[devil; not] hae ’t for a watch!” But there’s ae thing that God nor man canna bide in a watch, an’ that’s whan[when] it stan’s[stands] still for a bittock[a little bit, a short distance], an’ syne[then] gangs[goes, walks] on again. Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed]! tic, tic, tic! wi’ a fair face and a leein’[lying] hert[heart]. It wad[would] gar[cause, compel] ye believe it was a’ richt, and time for anither tum’ler[tumbler, glass (whisky)], whan[when] it’s twal[twelve] o’clock, an’ the kirkyaird fowk[folk] thinkin’ aboot risin’. Fegs, I had a watch o’ my father’s, an’ I regairdit it wi’ a reverence mair[more] like a human bein’: the second time it played me that pliskie[trick, prank], I dang[bang] oot[out] its guts upo’ the loupin’-on-stane[horse-block] at the door o’ the chop[shop, store]. But lat[let, allow] the watch

sit: whaur's the wife? Ye canna be a man yet wantin' the wife—by yer ain[own] statement."

"The watch cam unsoucht[unsought], Mr. MacGregor, an' I'm thinkin' sae maun[must, have to] the wife," answered Robert, laughing.

"Preserve me for ane[one] frae[from] a wife that comes unsoucht[unsought]," returned the weaver. "But, my lad, there may be some wives that winna[will not] come whan[when] they *are* soucht[sought]. Preserve me frae[from] them too!—noo[now], maybe ye dinna ken what I mean—*but tak ye tent*[*look out, pay attention, watch*] *what ye're aboot*. Dinna ye think 'at ilka[every] bonnie lass 'at may like to haud[hold, keep] a wark[work] wi' ye 's jist ready to mairry ye aff[off, away, past] han' whan[when] ye say, 'noo[now], my dawtie[darling (term of endearment)].'—An' ae word mair[more], Robert: Young men, especially braw[beautiful, fine] lads like yersel', 's unco[very] ready to fa'[fall, befall] in love wi' women fit to be their mithers. An' sae ye see—"

He was interrupted by the entrance of a girl. She had a shawl over her head, notwithstanding it was summer weather, and crept in hesitatingly, as if she were not quite at one with herself as to her coming purchase. Approaching a boy behind the counter on the opposite side of the shop, she asked for something, and he proceeded to serve her. Robert could not help thinking, from the one glimpse of her face he had got through the dusk, that he had seen her before. Suddenly the vision of an earthen floor with a pool of brown sunlight upon it, bare feet, brown hair, and soft eyes, mingled with a musk odour wafted from Arabian fairyland, rose before him: it was Jessie Hewson.

"I ken that lassie," he said, and moved to get down from the counter on which he too had seated himself.

"Na, na," whispered the manufacturer, laying, like the Ancient Mariner, a brown skinny hand of restraint upon Robert's arm—"na, na,

never heed her. Ye maunna[must not, may not] speyk to ilka[every] lass 'at ye ken. —Poor thing! she's been doin' something wrang[wrong, injured], to gang[go] slinkin' aboot i' the gloamin' like a baukie[bat], wi' her plaid[plaid used as blanket] ower[over] her heid[head]. Dinna fash[trouble, inconvenience] wi' her."

"Nonsense!" returned Robert, with indignation. "What for shouldna I speik till her? She's a decent lassie—a dochter o' James Hewson, the cottar[farm tenant, cottager] at Bodyfauld. I ken her fine."

He said this in a whisper; but the girl seemed to hear it, for she left the shop with a perturbation which the dimness of the late twilight could not conceal. Robert hesitated no longer, but followed her, heedless of the louder expostulations of MacGregor. She was speeding away down the street, but he took longer strides than she, and was almost up with her, when she drew her shawl closer about her head, and increased her pace.

"Jessie!" said Robert, in a tone of expostulation. But she made no answer. Her head sunk lower on her bosom, and she hurried yet faster. He gave a long stride or two and laid his hand on her shoulder. She stood still, trembling.

"Jessie, dinna ye ken me—Robert Faukner? Dinna be feart at me. What's the maitter[matter] wi' ye, 'at ye winna[will not] speik till a body? Hoo's[how's] a' the fowk[folk] at hame[home]?"

She burst out crying, cast one look into Robert's face, and fled. What a change was in that face? The peach-colour was gone from her cheek; it was pale and thin. Her eyes were hollow, with dark shadows under them, the shadows of a sad sunset. A foreboding of the truth arose in his heart, and the tears rushed up into his eyes. The next moment the eidolon[spirit-image] of Mary St. John, moving gracious and strong, clothed in worship and the dignity which is its own defence, appeared beside that of Jessie Hewson, her bowed head shaken with sobs, and her weak limbs urged to

ungraceful flight. As if walking in the vision of an eternal truth, he went straight to Captain Forsyth's door.

"I want to speak to Miss St. John, Isie," said Robert.

"She'll be doon in a minit."

"But isna yer mistress i' the drawin'-room?—I dinna want to see *her*."

"Ow[oh], weel," said the girl, who was almost fresh from the country, "jist rin[run] up the stair, an' chap[hammer, strike, ra] at the door o' her room."

With the simplicity of a child, for what a girl told him to do must be right, Robert sped up the stair, his heart going like a fire-engine. He had never approached Mary's room from this side, but instinct or something else led him straight to her door. He knocked.

"Come in," she said, never doubting it was the maid, and Robert entered.

She was brushing her hair by the light of a chamber candle. Robert was seized with awe, and his limbs trembled. He could have kneeled before her—not to beg forgiveness, he did not think of that—but to worship, as a man may worship a woman. It is only a strong, pure heart like Robert's that ever can feel all the inroad of the divine mystery of womanhood. But he did not kneel. He had a duty to perform. A flush rose in Miss St. John's face, and sank away, leaving it pale. It was not that she thought once of her own condition, with her hair loose on her shoulders, but, able only to conjecture what had brought him thither, she could not but regard Robert's presence with dismay. She stood with her ivory brush in her right hand uplifted, and a great handful of hair in her left. She was soon relieved, however, although what with his contemplated intercession, the dim vision of Mary's lovely face between the masses of her hair, and the lavender odour that filled the room—perhaps also a faint suspicion of impropriety sufficient to give force to

the rest—Robert was thrown back into the abyss of his mother-tongue, and out of this abyss talked like a Behemoth.

"Robert!" said Mary, in a tone which, had he not been so eager after his end, he might have interpreted as one of displeasure.

"Ye maun[must, have to] hearken till me, mem.—whan[when] I was oot[out] at Bodyfauld," he began methodically, and Mary, bewildered, gave one hasty brush to her handful of hair and again stood still: she could imagine no connection between this meeting and their late parting —"whan[when] I was was oot[out] at Bodyfauld ae simmer[Summer], I grew acquant wi' a bonnie lassie there, the dochter o' Jeames Hewson, an honest cottar[farm tenant, cottager], wi' Shakspeare an' the Arabian Nichts upo' a skelf[shelf] i' the hoose[house] wi' 'im. I gaed[went] in ae day whan[when] I wasna weel; an' she jist ministert to me, as nane[none] ever did but yersel', mem. An' she was that kin'[kind] an' mither-like to the wee bit greitin'[crying, weeping] bairnie[little child] 'at she had to tak care o' 'cause her mither was oot[out] wi' the lave[others] shearin'! Her face was jist like a simmer[Summer] day, an' weel I likit the luik[look] o' the lassie!—I met her again the nicht[tonight]. Ye never saw sic[such] a change. A white face, an' nothing but greitin'[crying, weeping] to come oot[out] o' her. She ran frae[from] me as gin[if] I had been the de'il[devil] himsel'. An' the thocht[thought] o' you, sae bonnie an' straucht[straight] an' gran', cam ower[over] me."

Yielding to a masterful impulse, Robert did kneel now. As if sinner, and not mediator, he pressed the hem of her garment to his lips.

"Dinna be angry at me, Miss St. John," he pleaded, "but be mercifu' to the lassie. Wha's[who is] to help her that can no more luik[look] a man i' the face, but the clear-e'ed lass that wad[would] luik[look] the sun himsel' oot[out] o' the lift[skies] gin[if] he daured[dared] to say a word against her. It's ae woman that can uphaud anither. Ye ken what I mean, an' I needna say mair[more]."

He rose and turned to leave the room.

Bewildered and doubtful, Miss St. John did not know what to answer, but felt that she must make some reply.

“You haven’t told me where to find the girl, or what you want me to do with her.”

“I’ll fin’ oot[out] whaur she bides,” he said, moving again towards the door.

“But what am I to do with her, Robert?”

“That’s your pairt[part]. Ye maun[must, have to] fin’ oot[out] what to do wi’ her. I canna tell ye that. But gin[if] I was you, I wad[would] gie[give] her a kiss to begin wi’. She’s nane[none] o’ yer brazen-faced hizzies[silly girls], yon. A kiss wad[would] be the savin’ o’ her.”

“But you may be—. But I have nothing to go upon. She would resent my interference.”

“She’s past resentin’ onything. She was gaein’ aboot the toon[town, village] like ane[one] o’ the deid ’at hae naething to say to onybody, an’ naebody onything to say to them. Gin[if] she gangs[goes, walks] on like that she’ll no be alive lang[long].”

That night Jessie Hewson disappeared. A mile or two up the river under a high bank, from which the main current had receded, lay an awful, swampy place—full of reeds, except in the middle where was one round space full of dark water and mud. Near this Jessie Hewson was seen about an hour after Robert had thus pled for her with his angel.

The event made a deep impression upon Robert. The last time that he saw them, James and his wife were as cheerful as usual, and gave him a hearty welcome. Jessie was in service, and doing well, they said. The next time he opened the door of the cottage it was like the entrance to a

haunted tomb. Not a smile was in the place. James's cheeriness was all gone. He was sitting at the table with his head leaning on his hand. His Bible was open before him, but he was not reading a word. His wife was moving listlessly about. They looked just as Jessie had looked that night —as if they had died long ago, but somehow or other could not get into their graves and be at rest. The child Jessie had nursed with such care was toddling about, looking rueful with loss. George had gone to America, and the whole of that family's joy had vanished from the earth.

The subject was not resumed between Miss St. John and Robert. The next time he saw her, he knew by her pale troubled face that she had heard the report that filled the town; and she knew by his silence that it had indeed reference to the same girl of whom he had spoken to her. The music would not go right that evening. Mary was *distraite*, and Robert was troubled. It was a week or two before there came a change. When the turn did come, over his being love rushed up like a spring-tide from the ocean of the Infinite.

He was accompanying her piano with his violin. He made blunders, and her playing was out of heart. They stopped as by consent, and a moment's silence followed. All at once she broke out with something Robert had never heard before. He soon found that it was a fantasy upon Ericson's poem. Ever through a troubled harmony ran a silver thread of melody from far away. It was the caverns drinking from the tempest overhead, the grasses growing under the snow, the stars making music with the dark, the streams filling the night with the sounds the day had quenched, the whispering call of the dreams left behind in "the fields of sleep,"—in a word, the central life pulsing in aeonian peace through the outer ephemeral storms. At length her voice took up the theme. The silvery thread became song, and through all the opposing, supporting

harmonies she led it to the solution of a close in which the only sorrow was in the music itself, for its very life is an “endless ending.” She found Robert kneeling by her side. As she turned from the instrument his head drooped over her knee. She laid her hand on his clustering curls, bethought herself, and left the room. Robert wandered out as in a dream. At midnight he found himself on a solitary hill-top, seated in the heather, with a few tiny fir-trees about him, and the sounds of a wind, ethereal as the stars overhead, flowing through their branches: he heard the sound of it, but it did not touch him.

Where was God?

In him and his question.

Chapter 20 - Ericson Loses to Win

If Mary St. John had been an ordinary woman, and if, notwithstanding, Robert had been in love with her, he would have done very little in preparation for the coming session. But although she now *possessed* him, although at times he only knew himself as loving her, there was such a mountain air of calm about her, such an outgoing divinity of peace, such a largely moulded harmony of being, that he could not love her otherwise than grandly. For her sake, weary with loving her, he would yet turn to his work, and, to be worthy of her, or rather, for he never dreamed of being worthy of her, to be worthy of leave to love her, would forget her enough to lay hold of some abstract truth of lines, angles, or symbols. A strange way of being in love, reader? You think so? I would there were more love like it: the world would be centuries nearer its redemption if a millionth part of the love in it were of the sort. All I insist, however, on my reader's believing is, that it showed, in a youth like Robert, not less but more love that he could go against love's sweetness for the sake of love's greatness. Literally, not figuratively, Robert would kiss the place where her foot had trod; but I know that once he rose from such a kiss "to trace the hyperbola by means of a string."

It had been arranged between Ericson and Robert, in Miss Napier's parlour, the old lady knitting beside, that Ericson should start, if possible, a week earlier than usual, and spend the difference with Robert at Rothieden. But then the old lady had opened her mouth and spoken. And I firmly believe, though little sign of tenderness passed between them, it was with an elder sister's feeling for Letty's admiration of the "lan'less laird," that she said as follows:—

“Dinna ye think, Mr. Ericson, it wad[would] be but fair to come to us neist[next, nearest] time? Mistress Faukner, honest lady, an’ lang[long] hae I kent[known, knew] her, ’s no sae auld a frien’ to you, Mr. Ericson, as oorsel’s—nae[no, not] offence to her, ye ken. A’body[everybody] canna be frien’s to a’body[everybody], ane[one] as lang[long] ’s anither, ye ken.”

“’Deed I maun[must, have to] alloo, Miss Naper,” interposed Robert, “it’s only fair. Ye see, Mr. Ericson, I cud[could] see as muckle[much] o’ ye almost, the tae[the one] way as the tither[the other]. Miss Naper maks[makes, does] me welcome as weel’s[well as] you.”

“An’ I *will* mak[make, do] ye welcome, Robert, as lang’s[long as] ye’re a gude lad, as ye are, and gang[go] na efter[after]—nae[no, not] ill gait[way]. But lat[let, allow] me hear o’ yer doin’ as sae mony[many] young gentlemen do, espeacially whan[when] they’re ta’en[taken, seized] up by their rich relations, an’, public-hoose as this is, I’ll close the door o’ ’t i’ yer face.”

“Bless me, Miss Naper!” said Robert, “what hae I dune[done] to set ye at me that gait[way]? Faith, I dinna ken what ye mean.”

“Nae[no, not] mair[more] do I, laddie. I hae naething against ye whatever. Only ye see auld fowk[folk] luiks[looks] aheid, an’ wad[would] fain be as sure o’ what’s to come as o’ what’s gane[gone].”

“Ye maun[must, have to] bide for that, I doobt[suspect],” said Robert.

“Laddie,” retorted Miss Napier, “ye hae mair[more] sense nor[than] ye hae ony[any] richt till. Haud[hold, keep] the tongue o’ ye. Mr. Ericson ’s to come here neist[next, nearest].”

And the old lady laughed such good humour into her stocking-sole, that the foot destined to wear it ought never to have been cold while it lasted. So it was then settled; and a week before Robert was to start for Aberdeen, Ericson walked into The Boar’s Head. Half-an-hour after that,

Crookit Caumill was shown into the ga'le-room with the message to Maister Robert that Maister Ericson was come, and wanted to see him.

Robert pitched Hutton's Mathematics into the grate, sprung to his feet, all but embraced Crookit Caumill on the spot, and was deterred only by the perturbed look the man wore. Crookit Caumill was a very human creature, and hadn't a fault but the drink, Miss Napier said. And very little of that he would have had if she had been as active as she was willing.

"What's the maitter[matter], Caumill?" asked Robert, in considerable alarm.

"Ow[oh], naething, sir," returned Campbell.

"What gars[causes, compels] ye look like that, than?" insisted Robert.

"Ow[oh], naething. But whan[when] Miss Letty cried doon the close upo' me, she had her awpron till her een[eyes], an' I thocht[thought] something bude[had to] to be wrang[wrong, injured]; but I hadna the hert[heart] to speir[ask about, enquire]."

Robert darted to the door, and rushed to the inn, leaving Caumill describing *iambi*[plural of iamb, a meter in poetry] on the road behind him.

When he reached The Boar's Head there was nobody to be seen. He darted up the stair to the room where he had first waited upon Ericson.

Three or four maids stood at the door. He asked no question, but went in, a dreadful fear at his heart. Two of the sisters and Dr. Gow stood by the bed.

Ericson lay upon it, clear-eyed, and still. His cheek was flushed. The doctor looked round as Robert entered.

"Robert," he said, "you must keep your friend here quiet. He's broken a blood-vessel—walked too much, I suppose. He'll be all right soon, I

hope; but we can't be too careful. Keep him quiet—that's the main thing. He mustn't speak a word."

So saying he took his leave.

Ericson held out his thin hand. Robert grasped it. Ericson's lips moved as if he would speak.

"Dinna speik, Mr. Ericson," said Miss Letty, whose tears were flowing unheeded down her cheeks, "dinna speik. We a' ken what ye mean an' what ye want wi'oot[out] that."

Then she turned to Robert, and said in a whisper,

"Dr. Gow wadna hae ye sent for; but I kent[known, knew] weel eneuch[enough] 'at he wad[would] be a' the quaieter gin[if] ye war[were] here. Jist gie[give] a chap[hammer, strike, ra] upo' the flure[floor] gin[if] ye want onything, an' I'll be wi' ye in twa seconds."

The sisters went away. Robert drew a chair beside the bed, and once more was nurse to his friend. The doctor had already bled him at the arm: such was the ordinary mode of treatment then.

Scarcely was he seated, when Ericson spoke—a smile flickering over his worn face.

"Robert, my boy," he said.

"Dinna speak," said Robert, in alarm; "dinna speak, Mr. Ericson."

"Nonsense," returned Ericson, feebly. "They're making a work about nothing. I've done as much twenty times since I saw you last, and I'm not dead yet. But I think it's coming."

"What's coming?" asked Robert, rising in alarm.

"Nothing," answered Ericson, soothingly,—"only death.—I should like to see Miss St. John once before I die. Do you think she would come and see me if I were really dying?"

"I'm sure she wad[would]. But gin[if] ye speik like this, Miss Letty winna[will not] lat[let, allow] *me* come near ye, no to say *her*. Oh, Mr. Ericson! Gin[if] ye dee[die], I sanna[shall not] care to live."

Bethinking himself that such was not the way to keep Ericson quiet, he repressed his emotion, sat down behind the curtain, and was silent. Ericson fell fast asleep. Robert crept from the room, and telling Miss Letty that he would return presently, went to Miss St. John.

"How can I go to Aberdeen without him?" he thought as he walked down the street.

Neither was a guide to the other; but the questioning of two may give just the needful points by which the parallax of a truth may be gained.

"Mr. Ericson's here, Miss St. John," he said, the moment he was shown into her presence.

Her face flushed. Robert had never seen her look so beautiful.

"He's verra[very] ill," he added.

Her face grew pale—very pale.

"He asked if I thought you would go and see him—that is if he were going to die."

A sunset flush, but faint as on the clouds of the east, rose over her pallor.

"I will go at once," she said, rising.

"Na, na," returned Robert, hastily. "It has to be manage. It's no to be dune[done] a' in a hurry. For ae thing, there's Dr. Gow says he maunna[must not, may not] speak ae[one] word; and for anither, there's Miss Letty 'ill[will] jist be like a watch-dog to haud[hold, keep] a'body[everybody] oot[out] ower[over] frae[from] 'im. We maun[must, have to] bide oor time. But gin[if] ye say ye'll gang[go], that 'll content him i' the meantime. I'll tell him."

“I will go any moment,” she said. “Is he very ill?”

“I’m afraid he is. I doobt[suspect] I’ll hae to gang[go] to Aberdeen withoot him.”

A week after, though he was better, his going was out of the question. Robert wanted to stay with him, but he would not hear of it. He would follow in a week or so, he said, and Robert must start fair with the rest of the *semies*[*second year university students*].

But all the removal he was ever able to bear was to the “red room,” the best in the house, opening, as I have already mentioned, from an outside stair in the archway. They put up a great screen inside the door, and there the lan’less laird lay like a lord.

Chapter 21 - Shargar Aspires

Robert's heart was dreary when he got on the box-seat of the mail-coach at Rothieden—it was yet drearier when he got down at The Royal Hotel in the street of Ben Accord—and it was dreariest of all when he turned his back on Ericson's, and entered his own room at Mrs. Fyvie's.

Shargar had met him at the coach. Robert had scarcely a word to say to him. And Shargar felt as dreary as Robert when he saw him sit down, and lay his head on the table without a word.

"What's the maitter[matter] wi' ye, Robert?" he faltered out at last. "Gin[if] ye dinna speyk to me, I'll cut my throat. I will, faith!"

"Haud[hold, keep] yer tongue wi' yer nonsense, Shargar. Mr. Ericson's deein'[dying]."

"O lord!" said Shargar, and said nothing more for the space of ten minutes.

Then he spoke again—slowly and sententiously.

"He hadna you to tak care o' him, Robert. Whaur is he?"

"At The Boar's Heid."

"That's weel. He'll be luikit[looked] efter[after] there."

"A body wad[would] like to hae their ain[own] han' in 't, Shargar."

"Ay[yes, indeed]. I wiss[wish] we had him here again."

The ice of trouble thus broken, the stream of talk flowed more freely.

"Hoo[how] are ye gettin' on at the schule, man?" asked Robert.

"Nae[no, not] that ill," answered Shargar. "I was at the heid[head] o' my class yesterday for five meenits[minutes]."

"An' hoo[how] did ye like it?"

“Man, it was fine. I thocht[thought] I was a gentleman a’ at ance[once].”

“Haud[hold, keep] ye at it, man,” said Robert, as if from the heights of age and experience, “and maybe ye *will* be a gentleman some day.”

“Is ’t poassible, Robert? A crater[creature] like me grow intil[into, within] a gentleman?” said Shargar, with wide eyes.

“What for no?” returned Robert.

“Eh, man!” said Shargar.

He stood up, sat down again, and was silent.

“For ae thing,” resumed Robert, after a pause, during which he had been pondering upon the possibilities of Shargar’s future—“for ae thing, I doobt[suspect] whether Dr. Anderson wad[would] hae ta’en[taken, seized] ony[any] fash[trouble, inconvenience] aboot ye, gin[if] he hadna thocht[thought] ye had the makin’ o’ a gentleman i’ ye.”

“Eh, man!” said Shargar.

He stood up again, sat down again, and was finally silent.

Next day Robert went to see Dr. Anderson, and told him about Ericson. The doctor shook his head, as doctors have done in such cases from &Aelig;sculapius[Greco-Roman god of medicine] downwards. Robert pressed no further questions.

“Will he be taken care of where he is?” asked the doctor.

“Guid care o”,’ answered Robert.

“Has he any money, do you think?”

“I hae nae[no, not] doobt[suspect] he has some, for he’s been teachin’ a’ the summer. The like o’ him maun[must, have to] an’ will work whether they’re fit or no.”

“Well, at all events, you write, Robert, and give him the hint that he’s not to fash[trouble, inconvenience] himself about money, for I have more than he’ll want. And you may just take the hint yourself at the same time, Robert, my boy,” he added in, if possible, a yet kinder tone.

Robert’s way of showing gratitude was the best way of all. He returned kindness with faith.

“Gin[if] I be in ony[any] want, doctor, I’ll jist rin[run] to ye at ance[once]. An’ gin[if] I want ower[over] muckle[much] ye maun[must, have to] jist say *na*.”

“That’s a good fellow. You take things as a body means them.”

“But hae ye naething ye wad[would] like me to do for ye this session, sir?”

“No. I won’t have you do anything but your own work. You have more to do than you had last year. Mind your work; and as often as you get tired over your books, shut them up and come to me. You may bring Shargar with you sometimes, but we must take care and not make too much of him all at once.”

“Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed], doctor. But he’s a fine crater[creature], Shargar, an’ I dinna think he’ll be that easy to blaud[spoil, injure, soil]. What do you think he’s turnin’ ower[over] i’ that reid[red] heid[head] o’ his noo[now]?”

“I can’t tell that. But there’s something to come out of the red head, I do believe. What is he thinking of?”

“Whether it be possible for him ever to be a gentleman. Noo[now] I tak that for a good sign i’ the likes o’ him.”

“No doubt of it. What did you say to him?”

“I tellt him ’at hoo[how] I didna think ye wad[would] hae ta’en[taken, seized] sae muckle[much] fash[trouble, inconvenience] gin[if] ye hadna had some houps[hopes] o’ the kin’[kind] aboot him.”

"You said well. Tell him from me that I expect him to be a gentleman. And by the way, Robert, do try a little, as I think I said to you once before, to speak English. I don't mean that you should give up Scotch, you know."

"Weel, sir, I *hae* been tryin'; but what am I to do whan[when] ye speyk to me as gin[if] ye war[were] my ain[own] father? I canna min' upo'[remember] a word o' English whan[when] ye do that."

Dr. Anderson laughed, but his eyes glittered.

Robert found Shargar busy over his Latin version[translation]. With a "Weel, Shargar," he took his books and sat down. A few moments after, Shargar lifted his head, stared a while at Robert, and then said,

"Duv[do] you railly[really] think it, Robert?"

"Think what? What are ye haverin'[talking incoherently] at, ye gowk[fool, blockhead]?"

"Duv[do] ye think 'at I ever could *grow* intil[into, within] a gentleman?"

"Dr. Anderson says he expecs 't o' ye."

"Eh, man!"

A long pause followed, and Shargar spoke again.

"Hoo[how] am I to begin, Robert?"

"Begin what?"

"To be a gentleman."

Robert scratched his head, like Brutus, and at length became oracular.

"Speyk the truth," he said.

"I'll do that. But what aboot—my father?"

"Naebody 'ill[will] cast up[taunt, reproach] yer *father* to ye. Ye need hae nae[no, not] fear o' that."

"My mither, than?" suggested Shargar, with hesitation.

"Ye maun[must, have to] haud[hold, keep] yer face to the fac'[fact, reality]."

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed]. But gin[if] they said onything, ye ken—aboot *her*."

"Gin[if] ony[any] man-body[full grown man] says a word agen[against] yer mither, ye maun[must, have to] jist knock him doon upo' the spot."

"But I michtna be able."

"Ye could try, ony[any] gait[way]."

"He micht knock *me* down, ye ken."

"Weel, gae doon than."

"Ay[yes, indeed]."

This was all the instruction Robert ever gave Shargar in the duties of a gentleman. And I doubt whether Shargar sought further enlightenment by direct question of any one. He worked harder than ever; grew cleanly in his person, even to fastidiousness; tried to speak English; and a wonderful change gradually, but rapidly, passed over his outer man. He grew taller and stronger, and as he grew stronger, his legs grew straighter, till the defect of approximating knees, the consequence of hardship, all but vanished. His hair became darker, and the albino look less remarkable, though still he would remind one of a vegetable grown in a cellar.

Dr. Anderson thought it well that he should have another year at the grammar-school before going to college.—Robert now occupied Ericson's room, and left his own to Shargar.

Robert heard every week from Miss St. John about Ericson. Her reports varied much; but on the whole he got a little better as the winter went on. She said that the good women at The Boar's Head paid him

every attention: she did not say that almost the only way to get him to eat was to carry him delicacies which she had prepared with her own hands.

She had soon overcome the jealousy with which Miss Letty regarded her interest in their guest, and before many days had passed she would walk into the archway and go up to his room without seeing any one, except the sister whom she generally found there. By what gradations their intimacy grew I cannot inform my reader, for on the events lying upon the boundary of my story, I have received very insufficient enlightenment; but the result it is easy to imagine. I have already hinted at an early disappointment of Miss St. John. She had grown greatly since, and her estimate of what she had lost had altered considerably in consequence. But the change was more rapid after she became acquainted with Ericson. She would most likely have found the young man she thought she was in love with in the days gone by a very commonplace person now. The heart which she had considered dead to the world had, even before that stormy night in the old house, begun to expostulate against its owner's mistake, by asserting a fair indifference to that portion of its past history. And now, to her large nature the simplicity, the suffering, the patience, the imagination, the grand poverty of Ericson, were irresistibly attractive. Add to this that she became his nurse, and soon saw that he was not indifferent to her—and if she fell in love with him as only a full-grown woman can love, without Ericson's *lips* saying anything that might not by Love's jealousy be interpreted as only of grateful affection, why should she not?

And what of Marjory Lindsay? Ericson had not forgotten her. But the brightest star must grow pale as the sun draws near; and on Ericson there were two suns rising at once on the low sea-shore of life whereon he had been pacing up and down moodily for three-and-twenty years,

listening evermore to the unprogressive rise and fall of the tidal waves, all talking of the eternal, all unable to reveal it—the sun of love and the sun of death. Mysie and he had never met. She pleased his imagination; she touched his heart with her helplessness; but she gave him no welcome to the shrine of her beauty: he loved through admiration and pity. He broke no faith to her; for he had never offered her any save in looks, and she had not accepted it. She was but a sickly plant grown in a hot-house. On his death-bed he found a woman a hiding-place from the wind, a covert from the tempest, the shadow of a great rock in a weary land! A strong she-angel with mighty wings, Mary St. John came behind him as he fainted out of life, tempered the burning heat of the Sun of Death, and laid him to sleep in the cool twilight of her glorious shadow. In the stead of trouble about a wilful, thoughtless girl, he found repose and protection and motherhood in a great-hearted woman.

For Ericson's sake, Robert made some effort to preserve the acquaintance of Mr. Lindsay and his daughter. But he could hardly keep up a conversation with Mr. Lindsay, and Mysie showed herself utterly indifferent to him even in the way of common friendship. He told her of Ericson's illness: she said she was sorry to hear it, and looked miles away. He could never get within a certain atmosphere of—what shall I call it? *avertedness* that surrounded her. She had always lived in a dream of unrealities; and the dream had almost devoured her life.

One evening Shargar was later than usual in coming home from the walk, or ramble rather, without which he never could settle down to his work. He knocked at Robert's door.

"Whaur do ye think I've been, Robert?"

"Hoo[how] suld[should] I ken, Shargar?" answered Robert, puzzling over a problem.

“I’ve been haein’ a glaiss wi’ Jock Mitchell.”

“Wha’s[who is] Jock Mitchell?”

“My brither[brother] Sandy’s groom, as I tellt ye afore.”

“Ye dinna think I can min’[mind] a’ your havers[nonsense, foolish talk], Shargar. Whaur was the comin’ gentleman whan[when] ye gaed[went] to drink wi’ a chield[child, young person] like that, wha, gin[if] my memory serves me, ye tauld me yersel’ was i’ the mids[midst, middle] o’ a’ his maister’s deevilry?”

“Yer memory serves ye weel eneuch[enough] to be doon upo’ me,” said Shargar. “But there’s a bit wordy[little word, little saying or proverb] ’at they read at the cathedral kirk the last Sunday ’at’s stucken[stuck] to me as gin[if] there was something by ordinar’[out of the ordinary] in ’t.”

“What’s that?” asked Robert, pretending to go on with his calculations all the time.

“Ow[oh], nae[no, not] muckle[much]; only this: “Judge not, that ye be not judged.”—I took a lesson frae[from] Jeck the giant-killer, wi’ the Welsh giant—was ’t Blunderbore they ca’d[called] him?—an’ poored the maist[most, almost] o’ my glaiss doon my breist[breast]. It wasna like ink; it wadna du[do] my sark[shirt] ony[any] ill.”

“But what garred[caused, compelled] ye gang[go] wi’ ’im at a’? He wasna fit company for a gentleman.”

“A gentleman ’s some saft[muddy, soft, silly] gin[if] he be ony[any] the waur[worse] o’ the company he gangs[goes, walks] in till. There may be rizzons, ye ken. Ye needna du[do] as they du[do]. Jock Mitchell was airin’ Reid[red] Rorie an’ Black Geordie. An’ says I—for I wantit to ken whether I was sic[such] a breme-buss[broom-bush] as I used to be—says I, ‘hoo[how] are ye, Jock Mitchell?’ An’ says Jock, ‘brawly[admirably, very, very much]. Wha the deevil are ye?’ An’ says I, ‘nae[no, not] mair[more] o’ a deevil nor[than] yersel’, Jock Mitchell, or Alexander,

Baron Rothie, either—though maybe that's no little o' ane[one].' 'Preserve me!' cried Jock, 'it's Shargar.'—'Nae[no, not] mair[more] o' that, Jock,' says I. 'Gin[if] I bena[be not] a gentleman, or a' be dune[done],'—an' there I stack[stuck], for I saw I was a muckle[much] fule[fool] to lat[let, allow] oot[out] onything o' the kin'[kind] to Jock. And sae he seemed to think, too, for he brak[break] oot[out] wi' a great guffaw; an' to win[get, go] ower[over] 't, I jined[joined], an' leuch[laughed] as gin[if] naething was farrer[farther] aff[off, away, past] frae[from] my thochts than ever bein' a gentleman. 'Whaur do ye pit[put, make] up, Jock?' I said. 'Oot[out] by here,' he answert, 'at Luckie Maitlan's.'—'That's a queer place for a baron to put up, Jock,' says I. 'There's rizzons,' says he, an' lays his forefinger upo' the side o' 's nose, o' whilk[which] there was hardly eneuch[enough] to haud[hold, keep] it ohn[without] gane[gone] intil[into, within] the opposit ee[eye]. 'We're no far frae[from] there,' says I—an' deed I can hardly tell ye, Robert, what garred[caused, compelled] me say sae, but I jist wantit to ken what that gentleman-brither o' mine was efter[after]; 'tak the horse hame[home],' says I—'I'll jist loup[leap, jump] upo' Black Geordie—an' we'll hae a glaiss thegither[together]. I'll stan'[stand] treat.' Sae he gae[gave] me the bridle, an' I lap[leaped] on. The deevil tried to get a moufu'[mouthful] o' my hip, but, faith! I was ower[over] swack[limber, supple] for 'im; an' awa[away] we rade[rode]."

"I didna ken 'at ye cud[could] ride, Shargar."

"Hoots[pshaw]! I cudna help it. I was aye takin' the horse to the watter[water] at The Boar's Heid, or The Royal Oak, or Lucky[old woman] Happit's, or The Aucht an' Furty. That's hoo[how] I cam to ken Jock sae weel. We war[were] guid eneuch[enough] frien's whan[when] I didna care for leein'[lying] or sweirin', an' sic[such] like."

"And what on earth did ye want wi' 'im noo[now]?"

"I tell ye I wantit to ken what that ne'er-do-weel brither[brother] o' mine was efter[after]. I had seen the horses stan'in' aboot twa or three times i' the

gloamin'; an' Sandy maun[must, have to] be aboot ill gin[if] he be aboot onything."

"What can 't maitter[matter] to you, Shargar, what a man like him 's aboot?"

"Weel, ye see, Robert, my mither aye broucht me up to ken a' 'at fowk[folk] was aboot, for she said ye cud[could] never tell whan[when] it micht turn oot[out] to the weelfaur[welfare] o' yer advantage—gran' words!—I wonner[wonder, marvel] whaur she forgathert[assembled, encountered] wi' them. But she was a terrible wuman[woman], my mither, an' kent[known, knew] a heap o' things—mair[more] nor[than] 'twas gude to ken, maybe. She gaed[went] aboot the country sae muckle[much], an' they say the gipsies she gaed[went] amang[among] 's a dreadfu' auld fowk[folk], an' hae the wisdom o' the Egyptians 'at Moses wad[would] hae naething to do wi'."

"Whaur is she noo[now]?"

"I dinna ken. She may turn up ony[any] day."

"There's ae thing, though, Shargar: gin[if] ye want to be a gentleman, ye maunna[must not, may not] gang[go] keekin'[peeping, prying] that gate[way] intil[into] ither[other] fowk's[folk's] affairs."

"Weel, I maun[must, have to] gie[give] 't up. I winna[will not] say a word o' what Jock Mitchell tellt me aboot Lord Sandy."

"Ow[oh], say awa'[away]."

"Na, na; ye wadna like to hear aboot ither[other] fowk's[folk's] affairs. My mither tellt me he did verra[very] ill efter[after] Watterloo till a fremt[strange, foreign] lass at Brussels. But that's neither here nor there. I maun[must, have to] set aboot my version[translation], or I winna[will not] get it dune[done] the nicht[tonight]."

“What is Lord Sandy after? What did the rascal tell you? Why do you make such a mystery of it?” said Robert, authoritatively, and in his best English.

“’Deed I cudna mak[make, do] naething o’ ’m[him]. He winkit an’ he mintit[insinuated, hinted] an’ he gae[gave] me to unnerstan’ ’at the deevil was efter[after] some lass or ither[other], but wha—my lad was as dumb ’s the graveyard about that. Gin[if] I cud[could] only win[get, go] at that, maybe I cud[could] play him a plisky[trick, prank]. But he coupit[tilted, tumbled] ower[over] three glasses o’ whusky, an’ the mair[more] he drank the less he wad[would] say. An’ sae I left him.”

“Well, take care what you’re about, Shargar. I don’t think Dr. Anderson would like you to be in such company,” said Robert; and Shargar departed to his own room and his version[translation].

Towards the end of the session Miss St. John’s reports of Ericson were worse. Yet he was very hopeful himself, and thought he was getting better fast. Every relapse he regarded as temporary; and when he got a little better, thought he had recovered his original position. It was some relief to Miss St. John to communicate her anxiety to Robert.

After the distribution of the prizes, of which he gained three, Robert went the same evening to visit Dr. Anderson, intending to go home the next day. The doctor gave him five golden sovereigns—a rare sight in Scotland. Robert little thought in what service he was about to spend them.

Chapter 22 - Robert in Action

It was late when he left his friend. As he walked through the Gallowgate, an ancient narrow street, full of low courts, some one touched him upon the arm. He looked round. It was a young woman. He turned again to walk on.

"Mr Faukner," she said, in a trembling voice, which Robert thought he had heard before.

He stopped.

"I don't know you," he said. "I can't see your face. Tell me who you are."

She returned no answer, but stood with her head aside. He could see that her hands shook.

"What do you want with me—if you won't say who you are?"

"I want to tell you something," she said; "but I canna speyk here. Come wi' me."

"I won't go with you without knowing who you are or where you're going to take me."

"Dinna ye ken me?" she said pitifully, turning a little towards the light of the gas-lamp, and looking up in his face.

"It canna be Jessie Hewson?" said Robert, his heart swelling at the sight of the pale worn countenance of the girl.

"I was Jessie Hewson ance[once]," she said, "but naebody here kens me by that name but yersel'. Will ye come in? There's no a crater[creature] i' the hoose[house] but mysel'."

Robert turned at once. "Go on," he said.

She led the way up a narrow stone stair between two houses. A door high up in the gable admitted them. The boards bent so much under his weight that Robert feared the floor would fall.

"Bide ye there, sir, till I fess[fetch, bring] a licht," she said.

This was Robert's first introduction to a phase of human life with which he became familiar afterwards.

"Mind hoo[how] ye gang[go], sir," she resumed, returning with a candle. "There's nae[no, not] flurin'[flooring] there. Haud[hold, keep] i' the middle efter[after] me, or ye'll gang[go] throu."

She led him into a room, with nothing in it but a bed, a table, and a chair. On the table was a half-made shirt. In the bed lay a tiny baby, fast asleep. It had been locked up alone in the dreary garret. Robert approached to look at the child, for his heart felt very warm to poor Jessie.

"A bonnie bairnie[little child]," he said,

"Isna he, sir? Think o' 'im comin' to me! Nobody can tell the mercy o' 't. Isna it strange that the verra[very] sin suld[should] bring an angel frae[from] haven[heaven] upo' the back o' 't to uphaud an' restore the sinner? Fowk[folk] thinks it's a punishment; but eh me! it's a mercifu' ane[one]. It's a wonner[wonder, marvel] he didna think shame to come to me. But he cam to beir[bear] *my* shame."

Robert wondered at her words. She talked of her sin with such a meek openness! She looked her shame in the face, and acknowledged it hers. Had she been less weak and worn, perhaps she could not have spoken thus.

"But what am I aboot!" she said, checking herself. "I didna fess[fetch, bring] ye here to speyk aboot mysel'. He's efter[after] mair[more] mischeef, and gin[if]

onything cud[could] be dune[done] to haud[hold, keep] him frae[from] 't—"

"Wha's[who is] efter[after] mischeef, Jessie?" interrupted Robert.

"Lord Rothie. He's gaein' aff[off, away, past] the nicht[tonight] in Skipper Hornbeck's boat to Antwerp, I think they ca'[call] 't, an' a bonnie young leddy[lady] wi' 'im. They war[were] to sail wi' the first o' the munelicht.—Surely I'm nae[no, not] ower[over] late," she added, going to the window. "Na, the mune[moon] canna be up yet."

"Na," said Robert; "I dinna think she rises muckle[much] afore twa o'clock the nicht[tonight]. But hoo[how] ken ye? Are ye sure o' 't? It's an awfu' thing to think o'."

"To convence[convince] ye, I maun[must, have to] jist tell ye the trowth[truth, indeed]. The hoose[house] we're in hasna a gude character. We're middlin' dacent up here; but the lave[rest (remainder)] o' the place is dreadfu'. Eh for the bonnie leys[grasslands] o' Bodyfauld! Gin[if] ye see my father, tell him I'm nane[none] waur[worse] than I was."

"They think ye droont[drowned] i' the Dyer's Pot, as they ca'[call] 't."

"There I am again!" she said—"miles awa'[away] an' nae[no, not] time to be lost!—My lord has a man they ca'[call] Mitchell. Ower[over] weel I ken him. There's a wuman[woman] doon the stair 'at he comes to see whiles[sometimes, at times]; an' twa or three nichts ago, I heard them lauchin'[laughing] thegither[together]. Sae I hearkened. They war[were] baith[both] some fou[full, well-fed], I'm thinkin'. I cudna tell ye a' 'at they said. That's a punishment noo[now], gin[if] ye like—to see and hear the warst[worst] o' yer ain[own] ill doin's. He tellt the limmer[loose woman] a heap o' his lord's secrets. Ay[yes, indeed], he tellt her aboot me, an' hoo[how] I had gane[gone] and droont[drowned] mysel'. I could hear 'maist[most, almost] ilka[every] word 'at he said; for ye see the flurin'[flooring] here 's no verra[very] soon'[sound], and I was jist 'at I cudna help hearkenin'. My lord's aff[off, away, past] the nicht[tonight], as I tell ye. It's a queer

gait[way], but a quaiet, he thinks, nae[no, not] doobt[suspect]. Gin[if] onybody wad[would] but tell her hoo[how] mony[many] een[eyes] the baron's made sair[sore] wi' greitin'[crying, weeping]!"

"But hoo's[how's] that to be dune[done]?" said Robert.

"I dinna ken. But I hae been watchin' to see you ever sin'[since] syne[then]. I hae seen ye gang[go] by mony[many] a time. Ye're the only man I ken 'at I could speyk till aboot it. Ye maun[must, have to] think what ye can do. The warst[worst] o' 't is I canna tell wha she is or whaur she bides."

"In that case, I canna see what's to be dune[done]."

"Cudna ye watch them aboord, an' slip a letter intil[into, within] her han'? Or ye cud[could] gie[give] 't to the skipper to gie[give] her."

"I ken the skipper weel eneuch[enough]. He's a respectable man. Gin[if] he kent[known, knew] what the baron was efter[after], he wadna tak him on boord."

"That wad[would] do little guid. He wad[would] only hae her aff[off, away, past] some ither[other] gait[way]."

"Weel," said Robert, rising, "I'll awa'[away] hame[home], an' think aboot it as I gang[go].—Wad[would] ye tak a feow[few] shillin's frae[from] an auld frien'?" he added with hesitation, putting his hand in his pocket.

"Na—no a baubee[halfpenny]," she answered. "Nobody sall[shall] say it was for mysel' I broucht ye here. Come efter[after] me, an' min'[mind] whaur ye pit[put, make] doon yer feet. It's no sicker[secure, safe, sure]."

She led him to the door. He bade her good-night.

"Tak care ye dinna fa'[fall, befall] gaein' doon the stair. It's maist[most, almost] as steep 's a wa'[wall]."

As Robert came from between the houses, he caught a glimpse of a man in a groom's dress going in at the street door of that he had left.

All the natural knighthood in him was roused. But what could he do? To write was a sneaking way. He would confront the baron. The baron and the girl would both laugh at him. The sole conclusion he could arrive at was to consult Shargar.

He lost no time in telling him the story.

"I tauld ye he was up to some deevilry or ither[other]," said Shargar. "I can shaw[show] ye the verra[very] hoose[house] he maun[must, have to] be gaein' to tak her frae[from]."

"Ye vratch[wretch]! what for didna ye tell me that afore?"

"Ye wadna hear aboot ither[other] fowk's[folk's] affairs. Na, not you! But some fowk[folk] has no richt to consideration. The verra[very] stanes[stones] they say 'ill[will] cry oot[out] ill secrets like brither[brother] Sandy's."

"Whase[whose] hoose[house] is 't?"

"I dinna ken. I only saw him come oot[out] o' 't ance[once], an' Jock Mitchell was haudin'[holding, keeping] Black Geordie roon'[around, round] the neuk[nook, corner]. It canna be far frae[from] Mr. Lindsay's 'at you an' Mr. Ericson used to gang[go] till."

"Come an' lat[let, allow] me see 't direckly," cried Robert, starting up, with a terrible foreboding at his heart.

They were in the street in a moment. Shargar led the way by a country lane to the top of the hill on the right, and then turning to the left, brought him to some houses standing well apart from each other. It was a region unknown to Robert. They were the backs of the houses of which Mr. Lindsay's was one.

"This is the hoose[house]," said Shargar.

Robert rushed into action. He knocked at the door. Mr. Lindsay's Jenny opened it.

“Is yer mistress in, Jenny?” he asked at once.

“Na. Ay[yes, indeed]. The maister’s gane[gone] to Bors Castle.”

“It’s Miss Lindsay I want to see.”

“She’s up in her ain[own] room wi’ a sair heid[headache].”

Robert looked her hard in the face, and knew she was lying.

“I want to see her verra[very] partic’lar,” he said.

“Weel, ye canna see her,” returned Jenny angrily. “I’ll tell her onything ye like.”

Concluding that little was to be gained by longer parley, but quite uncertain whether Mysie was in the house or not, Robert turned to Shargar, took him by the arm, and walked away in silence. When they were beyond earshot of Jenny, who stood looking after them,

“Ye’re sure that’s the hoose[house], Shargar?” said Robert quietly.

“As sure’s deith, and maybe surer, for I saw him come oot[out] wi’ my ain[own] een[eyes].”

“Weel, Shargar, it’s grown something awfu’ noo[now]. It’s Miss Lindsay. Was there iver[ever] sic[such] a villain as that Lord Rothie—that brither[brother] o’ yours!”

“I disoun[disown] ’im frae[from] this verra[very] ’oor[hour],” said Shargar solemnly.

“Something *maun*[*must, have to*] be dune[done]. We’ll awa’[away] to the quay, an’ see what’ll turn up. I wonner[wonder, marvel] hoo’s[how’s] the tide.”

“The tide’s risin’. They’ll never try to win[get, go] oot[out] till it’s slack[slow] watter[water]—furbye[as well as] ’at the Amphitrite, for as braid[broad] ’s she is, and her bows modelled efter[after] the cheeks o’ a resurrection cherub upo’ a gravestane, draws a heap o’ watter[water]: an’ the bar they say ’s waur[worse] to win[get, go] ower[over] nor[than] usual: it’s been gatherin’ again.”

As they spoke, the boys were making for the new town, eagerly. Just opposite where the Amphitrite lay was a public-house: into that they made up their minds to go, and there to write a letter, which they would give to Miss Lindsay if they could, or, if not, leave with Skipper Hoornbeek. Before they reached the river, a thick rain of minute drops began to fall, rendering the night still darker, so that they could scarcely see the vessels from the pavement on the other side of the quay, along which they were hurrying, to avoid the cables, rings, and stone posts that made its margin dangerous in the dim light. When they came to The Smack Inn they crossed right over to reach the Amphitrite. A growing fear kept them silent as they approached her berth. It was empty. They turned and stared at each other in dismay.

One of those amphibious animals that loiter about the borders of the water was seated on a stone smoking, probably fortified against the rain by the whisky inside him.

"Whaur's the Amphitrite, Alan?" asked Shargar, for Robert was dumb with disappointment and rage.

"Half doon to Stanehive by this time, I'm thinkin'," answered Alan. "For a brewin' tub like her, she fummles[fumbles] awa[away] nae[no, not] ill wi' a licht win' astarn[astern] o' her. But I'm doobtin'[suspecting] afore she win[get, go] across the herrin-pot her fine passengers 'll win[get, come] at the boddom[bottom] o' their stamacks[stomachs]. It's like to blaw[blow] a bonnetfu'[bonnetful], and she rows awfu' in ony[any] win'[wind]. I dinna think she cud[could] capsize, but for wamlin'[rolling, undulating] she's waur[worse] nor[than] a bairn with the grips."

In absolute helplessness, the boys had let him talk on: there was nothing more to be done; and Alan was in a talkative mood.

“Fegs! Gin[if] ’t come on to blaw[blow],” he resumed, “I wadna wonner[wonder, marvel] gin[if] they got the skipper to set them ashore at Stanehive. I heard auld Horny say something aboot lyin’ to there for a bit, to tak a keg or something aboord.”

The boys looked at each other, bade Alan good-night, and walked away.

“Hoo[how] far is ’t to Stonehaven, Shargar?” said Robert.

“I dinna richtly ken. Maybe frae[from] twal[twelve] to fifteen mile.”

Robert stood still. Shargar saw his face pale as death, and contorted with the effort to control his feelings.

“Shargar,’ he said, “what *am* I to do? I vowed to Mr. Ericson that, gin[if] he deid, I wad[would] luik[look] efter[after] that bonny lassie. An’ noo[now] whan[when] he’s lyin’ a’ but deid, I hae latten[let, allowed] her slip throu’ my fingers wi’ clean carelessness. What *am* I to do? Gin[if] I cud[could] only win[get, go] to Stonehaven afore the Amphitrite! I cud[could] gang[go] aboord wi’ the keg, and gin[if] I cud[could] do naething mair[more], I wad[would] hae tried to do my best. Gin[if] I do naething, my hert[heart] ’ll brak[break] wi’ the weicht o’ my shame.”

Shargar burst into a roar of laughter. Robert was on the point of knocking him down, but took him by the throat as a milder proceeding, and shook him.

“Robert! Robert!” gurgled Shargar, as soon as his choking had overcome his merriment, “ye’re an awfu’ Hielan’man[Highland man]. Hearken to me. I beg—g—g yer pardon. What I was thinkin’ o’ was—”

Robert relaxed his hold. But Shargar, notwithstanding the lesson Robert had given him, could hardly speak yet for the enjoyment of his own device.

“Gin[if] we could only get rid o’ Jock Mitchell!—” he crowed; and burst out again.

“He’s wi’ a wuman[woman] i’ the Gallowgate,” said Robert.

“Losh, man!” exclaimed Shargar, and started off at full speed.

He was no match for his companion, however.

“Whaur the deevil are ye rinnin’[running] till, ye wirrycow[scarecrow]?” panted Robert, as he laid hold of his collar.

“Lat[let, allow] me gang[go], Robert,” gasped Shargar. “Losh, man! ye’ll be on Black Geordie in anither ten meenits[minutes], an’ me ahin’ ye upo’ Reid[red] Rorie. An’ faith gin[if] we binna[be not] at Stanehive afore the Dutchman wi’ ’s boddom[bottom] foremost, it’ll be the faut[fault, blame] o’ the horse and no o’ the men.”

Robert’s heart gave a bound of hope.

“Hoo[how] ’ill[will] ye get them, Shargar?” he asked eagerly.

“Steal them,” answered Shargar, struggling to get away from the grasp still upon his collar.

“We micht be hanged for that.”

“Weel, Robert, I’ll tak a’ the wyte[blame, reproach, fault] o’ ’t. Gin[if] it hadna been for you, I micht ha’[have”] been hangt by this time for ill doin’: for your sake I’ll be hangt for weel doin’, an’ welcome. Come awa’[away]. To steal a mairch[march] upo’ brither[brother] Sandy wi’ aucht[eight] horse-huves o’ ’s ain[own]! Ha! ha! ha!”

They sped along, now running themselves out of breath, now walking themselves into it again, until they reached a retired hostelry between the two towns. Warning Robert not to show himself, Shargar disappeared round the corner of the house.

Robert grew weary, and then anxious. At length Shargar's face came through the darkness.

"Robert," he whispered, "gie[give] 's yer bonnet[man's cap]. I'll be wi' ye in a moment noo[now]."

Robert obeyed, too anxious to question him. In about three minutes more Shargar reappeared, leading what seemed the ghost of a black horse; for Robert could see only his eyes, and his hoofs made scarcely any noise. How he had managed it with a horse of Black Geordie's temper, I do not know, but some horses will let some persons do anything with them: he had drawn his own stockings over his fore feet, and tied their two caps upon his hind hoofs.

"Lead him awa'[away] quaietly up the road till I come to ye," said Shargar, as he took the mufflings off the horse's feet. "An' min' 'at he doesna tak a nip o' ye. He's some ill for bitin'. I'll be efter[after] ye direckly. Rorie's saiddlet an' bridled. He only wants his carpet-shune[slippers]."

Robert led the horse a few hundred yards, then stopped and waited. Shargar soon joined him, already mounted on Red Roderick.

"Here's yer bonnet[man's cap], Robert. It's some foul, I doobt[suspect]. But I cudna help it. Gang[go] on, man. Up wi' ye. Maybe I wad[would] hae better keepit[kept] Geordie mysel'. But ye can ride. Ance[once] ye're on, he canna bite ye."

But Robert needed no encouragement from Shargar. In his present mood he would have mounted a griffin. He was on horseback in a moment. They trotted gently through the streets, and out of the town. Once over the Dee[river in Aberdeen], they gave their horses the rein, and off they went through the dark drizzle. Before they got half-way they were wet to the skin; but little did Robert, or Shargar either, care for that. Not many words passed between them.

"Hoo[how] 'ill[will] ye get the horse (*plural*) in again, Shargar?" asked Robert.

"Afore I get them back," answered Shargar, "they'll be tired eneuch[enough] to gang[go] hame[home] o' themsel's. Gin[if] we had only had the luck to meet Jock!—that wad[would] hae been gran'."

"What for that?"

"I wad[would] hae cawed[driven, hammered] Reid[red] Rorie ower[over] the heid[head] o' 'm[him], an' left him lyin'—the coorse villain!"

The horses never flagged till they drew up in the main street of Stonehaven. Robert ran down to the harbour to make inquiry, and left Shargar to put them up.

The moon had risen, but the air was so full of vapour that she only succeeded in melting the darkness a little. The sea rolled in front, awful in its dreariness, under just light enough to show a something unlike the land. But the rain had ceased, and the air was clearer. Robert asked a solitary man, with a telescope in his hand, whether he was looking out for the Amphitrite. The man asked him gruffly in return what he knew of her. Possibly the nature of the keg to be put on board had something to do with his Scotch reply. Robert told him he was a friend of the captain, had missed the boat, and would give any one five shillings to put him on board. The man went away and returned with a companion. After some further questioning and bargaining, they agreed to take him. Robert loitered about the pier full of impatience. Shargar joined him.

Day began to break over the waves. They gleamed with a blue-gray leaden sheen. The men appeared coming along the harbour, and descended by a stair into a little skiff, where a barrel, or something like one, lay under a tarpaulin. Robert bade Shargar good-bye, and followed. They pushed off, rowed out into the bay, and lay on their oars waiting for

the vessel. The light grew apace, and Robert fancied he could distinguish the two horses with one rider against the sky on the top of the cliffs, moving northwards. Turning his eyes to the sea, he saw the canvas of the brig[bridge], and his heart beat fast. The men bent to their oars. She drew nearer, and lay to. When they reached her he caught the rope the sailors threw, was on board in a moment, and went aft to the captain. The Dutchman stared. In a few words Robert made him understand his object, offering to pay for his passage, but the good man would not hear of it. He told him that the lady and gentleman had come on board as brother and sister: the baron was too knowing to run his head into the noose of Scotch law.

"I cannot throw him over the board," said the skipper; "and what am I to do? I am afraid it is of no use. Ah! poor thing!"

By this time the vessel was under way. The wind freshened. Mysie had been ill ever since they left the month of the river: now she was much worse. Before another hour passed, she was crying to be taken home to her papa. Still the wind increased, and the vessel laboured much.

Robert never felt better, and if it had not been for the cause of his sea-faring, would have thoroughly enjoyed it. He put on some sea-going clothes of the captain's, and set himself to take his share in working the brig[bridge], in which he was soon proficient enough to be useful. When the sun rose, they were in a tossing wilderness of waves. With the sunrise, Robert began to think he had been guilty of a great folly. For what could he do? How was he to prevent the girl from going off with her lover the moment they landed? But his poor attempt would verify his willingness.

The baron came on deck now and then, looking bored. He had not calculated on having to nurse the girl. Had Mysie been well, he could have amused himself with her, for he found her ignorance interesting. As

it was, he felt injured, and indeed disgusted at the result of the experiment.

On the third day the wind abated a little; but towards night it blew hard again, and it was not until they reached the smooth waters of the Scheldt that Mysie made her appearance on deck, looking dreadfully ill, and altogether like a miserable, unhappy child. Her beauty was greatly gone, and Lord Rothie did not pay her much attention.

Robert had as yet made no attempt to communicate with her, for there was scarcely a chance of her concealing a letter from the baron. But as soon as they were in smooth water, he wrote one, telling her in the simplest language that the baron was a bad man, who had amused himself by making many women fall in love with him, and then leaving them miserable: he knew one of them himself.

Having finished his letter, he began to look abroad over the smooth water, and the land smooth as the water. He saw tall poplars, the spires of the forest, and rows of round-headed dumpy trees, like domes. And he saw that all the buildings like churches, had either spires like poplars, or low round domes like those other trees. The domes gave an eastern aspect to the country. The spire of Antwerp cathedral especially had the poplar for its model. The pinnacles which rose from the base of each successive start of its narrowing height were just the clinging, upright branches of the poplar—a lovely instance of Art following Nature's suggestion.

Chapter 23 - Robert Finds a New Instrument

At length the vessel lay alongside the quay, and as Mysie stepped from its side the skipper found an opportunity of giving her Robert's letter. It was the poorest of chances, but Robert could think of no other. She started on receiving it, but regarding the skipper's significant gestures put it quietly away. She looked anything but happy, for her illness had deprived her of courage, and probably roused her conscience. Robert followed the pair, saw them enter The Great Labourer—what could the name mean? could it mean The Good Shepherd?—and turned away helpless, objectless indeed, for he had done all that he could, and that all was of no potency. A world of innocence and beauty was about to be hurled from its orbit of light into the blackness of outer chaos; he knew it, and was unable to speak word or do deed that should frustrate the power of a devil who so loved himself that he counted it an honour to a girl to have him for her ruin. Her after life had no significance for him, save as a trophy of his victory. He never perceived that such victory was not yielded to him; that he gained it by putting on the garments of light; that if his inward form had appeared in its own ugliness, not one of the women whose admiration he had secured would not have turned from him as from the monster of an old tale.

Robert wandered about till he was so weary that his head ached with weariness. At length he came upon the open space before the cathedral, whence the poplar-spire rose aloft into a blue sky flecked with white clouds. It was near sunset, and he could not see the sun, but the upper half of the spire shone glorious in its radiance. From the top his eye sank to the base. In the base was a little door half open. Might not that be the lowly narrow entrance through the shadow up to the sun-filled air? He

drew near with a kind of tremor, for never before had he gazed upon visible grandeur growing out of the human soul, in the majesty of everlastingness—a tree of the Lord's planting. Where had been but an empty space of air and light and darkness, had risen, and had stood for ages, a mighty wonder awful to the eye, solid to the hand. He peeped through the opening of the door: there was the foot of a stair—marvellous as the ladder of Jacob's dream—turning away towards the unknown. He pushed the door and entered. A man appeared and barred his advance. Robert put his hand in his pocket and drew out some silver. The man took one piece—looked at it—turned it over—put it in his pocket, and led the way up the stair. Robert followed and followed and followed.

He came out of stone walls upon an airy platform whence the spire ascended heavenwards. His conductor led upward still, and he followed, winding within a spiral network of stone, through which all the world looked in. Another platform, and yet another spire springing from its basement. Still up they went, and at length stood on a circle of stone surrounding like a coronet the last base of the spire which lifted its apex untrodden. Then Robert turned and looked below. He grasped the stones before him. The loneliness was awful.

There was nothing between him and the roofs of the houses, four hundred feet below, but the spot where he stood. The whole city, with its red roofs, lay under him. He stood uplifted on the genius of the builder, and the town beneath him was a toy. The all but featureless flat spread forty miles on every side, and the roofs of the largest buildings below were as dovecots. But the space between was alive with awe—so vast, so real!

He turned and descended, winding through the network of stone which was all between him and space. The object of the architect must have been to melt away the material from before the eyes of the spirit. He hung in the air in a cloud of stone. As he came in his descent within the ornaments of one of the basements, he found himself looking through two thicknesses of stone lace on the nearing city. Down there was the beast of prey and his victim; but for the moment he was above the region of sorrow. His weariness and his headache had vanished utterly. With his mind tossed on its own speechless delight, he was slowly descending still, when he saw on his left hand a door ajar. He would look what mystery lay within. A push opened it. He discovered only a little chamber lined with wood. In the centre stood something—a bench-like piece of furniture, plain and worn. He advanced a step; peered over the top of it; saw keys, white and black; saw pedals below: it was an organ! Two strides brought him in front of it. A wooden stool, polished and hollowed with centuries of use, was before it. But where was the bellows? That might be down hundreds of steps below, for he was half-way only to the ground. He seated himself musingly, and struck, as he thought, a dumb chord. Responded, up in the air, far overhead, a mighty booming clang. Startled, almost frightened, even as if Mary St. John had said she loved him, Robert sprung from the stool, and, without knowing why, moved only by the chastity of delight, flung the door to the post. It banged and clicked. Almost mad with the joy of the titanic instrument, he seated himself again at the keys, and plunged into a tempest of clanging harmony. One hundred bells hang in that tower of wonder, an instrument for a city, nay, for a kingdom. Often had Robert dreamed that he was the galvanic centre of a thunder-cloud of harmony, flashing off from every finger the willed lightning tone: such was the unexpected scale of this instrument—so far aloft in the sunny air

rang the responsive notes, that his dream appeared almost realized. The music, like a fountain bursting upwards, drew him up and bore him aloft. From the resounding cone of bells overhead he no longer heard their tones proceed, but saw level-winged forms of light speeding off with a message to the nations. It was only his roused phantasy; but a sweet tone is nevertheless a messenger of God; and a right harmony and sequence of such tones is a little gospel.

At length he found himself following, till that moment unconsciously, the chain of tunes he well remembered having played on his violin the night he went first with Ericson to see Mysie, ending with his strange chant about the witch lady and the dead man's hand.

Ere he had finished the last, his passion had begun to fold its wings, and he grew dimly aware of a beating at the door of the solitary chamber in which he sat. He knew nothing of the enormity of which he was guilty —presenting unsought the city of Antwerp with a glorious phantasia. He did not know that only upon grand, solemn, world-wide occasions, such as a king's birthday or a ball at the H de Ville, was such music on the card. When he flung the door to, it had closed with a spring lock, and for the last quarter of an hour three gens-d'arme, commanded by the sacristan of the tower, had been thundering thereat. He waited only to finish the last notes of the wild Orcadian chant, and opened the door. He was seized by the collar, dragged down the stair into the street, and through a crowd of wondering faces—poor unconscious dreamer! it will not do to think on the house-top even, and you had been dreaming very loud indeed in the church spire—away to the bureau of the police.

Chapter 24 - Death

I need not recount the proceedings of the Belgian police; how they interrogated Robert concerning a letter from Mary St. John which they found in an inner pocket; how they looked doubtful over a copy of Horace that lay in his coat, and put evidently a momentous question about some algebraical calculations on the fly-leaf of it. Fortunately or unfortunately—I do not know which—Robert did not understand a word they said to him. He was locked up, and left to fret for nearly a week; though what he could have done had he been at liberty, he knew as little as I know. At last, long after it was useless to make any inquiry about Miss Lindsay, he was set at liberty. He could just pay for a steerage passage to London, whence he wrote to Dr. Anderson for a supply, and was in Aberdeen a few days after.

This was Robert's first cosmopolitan experience. He confided the whole affair to the doctor, who approved of all, saying it could have been of no use, but he had done right. He advised him to go home at once, for he had had letters inquiring after him. Ericson was growing steadily worse—in fact, he feared Robert might not see him alive.

If this news struck Robert to the heart, his pain was yet not without some poor alleviation:—he need not tell Ericson about Mysie, but might leave him to find out the truth when, free of a dying body, he would be better able to bear it. That very night he set off on foot for Rothieden. There was no coach from Aberdeen till eight the following morning, and before that he would be there.

It was a dreary journey without Ericson. Every turn of the road reminded him of him. And Ericson too was going a lonely unknown way.

Did ever two go together upon that way? Might not two die together and not lose hold of each other all the time, even when the sense of the clasping hands was gone, and the soul had withdrawn itself from the touch? Happy they who prefer the will of God to their own even in this, and would, as the best friend, have him near who *can* be near—him who made the fourth in the fiery furnace! Fable or fact, reader, I do not care. The One I mean *is*, and in him I hope.

Very weary was Robert when he walked into his grandmother's house.

Betty came out of the kitchen at the sound of his entrance.

"Is Mr. Ericson—?"

"Na; he's nae[no, not] deid," she answered. "He'll maybe live a day or twa, they say."

"Thank God!" said Robert, and went to his grandmother.

"Eh, laddie!" said Mrs. Falconer, the first greetings over, "ane[one] 's ta'en[taken, seized] an' anither 's left! but what for 's mair[more] nor[than] I can faddom[fathom]. There's that fine young man, Maister Ericson, at deith's door; an' here am I, an auld runklet[wrinkled, creased, crumple] wife, left to cry upo' deith, an' he winna[will not] hear me."

"Cry upo' God, grannie, an' no upo' deith," said Robert, catching at the word as his grandmother herself might have done. He had no such unfair habit when I knew him, and always spoke to one's meaning, not one's words. But then he had a wonderful gift of knowing what one's meaning was.

He did not sit down, but, tired as he was, went straight to The Boar's Head. He met no one in the archway, and walked up to Ericson's room. When he opened the door, he found the large screen on the other side, and hearing a painful cough, lingered behind it, for he could not control

his feelings sufficiently. Then he heard a voice—Ericson's voice; but oh, how changed!—He had no idea that he ought not to listen.

"Mary," the voice said, "do not look like that. *I* am not suffering. It is only my body. Your arm round me makes me so strong! Let me lay my head on your shoulder."

A brief pause followed.

"But, Eric," said Mary's voice, "there is one that loves you better than I do."

"If there is," returned Ericson, feebly, "he has sent his angel to deliver me."

"But you do believe in him, Eric?"

The voice expressed anxiety no less than love.

"I am going to see. There is no other way. When I find him, I shall believe in him. I shall love him with all my heart, I know. I love the thought of him now."

"But that's not himself, my—darling!" she said.

"No. But I cannot love himself till I find him. Perhaps there is no Jesus."

"Oh, don't say that. I can't bear to hear you talk so."

"But, dear heart, if you're so sure of him, do you think he would turn me away because I don't do what I can't do? I would if I could with all my heart. If I were to say I believed in him, and then didn't trust him, I could understand it. But when it's only that I'm not sure about what I never saw, or had enough of proof to satisfy me of, how can he be vexed at that? You seem to me to do him great wrong, Mary. Would you now banish me for ever, if I should, when my brain is wrapped in the clouds of death, forget you along with everything else for a moment?"

“No, no, no. Don’t talk like that, Eric, dear. There may be reasons, you know.”

“I know what they say well enough. But I expect Him, if there is a Him, to be better even than you, my beautiful—and I don’t know a fault in you, but that you believe in a God you can’t trust. If I believed in a God, wouldn’t I trust him just? And I do hope in him. We’ll see, my darling. When we meet again I think you’ll say I was right.”

Robert stood like one turned into marble. Deep called unto deep in his soul. The waves and the billows went over him.

Mary St. John answered not a word. I think she must have been conscience-stricken. Surely the Son of Man saw *nearly* as much faith in Ericson as in her. Only she clung to the word as a bond that the Lord had given her: she would rather have his bond.

Ericson had another fit of coughing. Robert heard the rustling of ministration. But in a moment the dying man again took up the word. He seemed almost as anxious about Mary’s faith as she was about his.

“There’s Robert,” he said: “I do believe that boy would die for me, and I never did anything to deserve it. Now Jesus Christ must be as good as Robert at least. *I* think he must be a great deal better, if he’s Jesus Christ at all. Now Robert might be hurt if I didn’t believe in *him*. But I’ve never seen Jesus Christ. It’s all in an old book, over which the people that say they believe in it the most, fight like dogs and cats. I beg your pardon, my Mary; but they do, though the words are ugly.”

“Ah! but if you had tried it as I’ve tried it, you would know better, Eric.”

“I think I should, dear. But it’s too late now. I must just go and see. There’s no other way left.”

The terrible cough came again. As soon as the fit was over, with a grand despair in his heart, Robert went from behind the screen.

Ericson was on a couch. His head lay on Mary St. John's bosom. Neither saw him.

"Perhaps," said Ericson, panting with death, "a kiss in heaven may be as good as being married on earth, Mary."

She saw Robert and did not answer. Then Eric saw him. He smiled; but Mary grew very pale.

Robert came forward, stooped and kissed Ericson's forehead, kneeled and kissed Mary's hand, rose and went out.

From that moment they were both dead to him. *Dead*, I say—not lost, not estranged, but dead—that is, awful and holy. He wept for Eric. He did not weep for Mary yet. But he found a time.

Ericson died two days after.

Here endeth Robert's youth.

Chapter 25 - In Memoriam

In memory of Eric Ericson, I add a chapter of sonnets gathered from his papers, almost desiring that those only should read them who turn to the book a second time. How his papers came into my possession, will be explained afterwards.

Tumultuous rushing o'er the outstretched plains;
A wildered maze of comets and of suns;
The blood of changeless God that ever runs
With quick diastole up the immortal veins;
A phantom host that moves and works in chains;
A monstrous fiction which, collapsing, stuns
The mind to stupor and amaze at once;
A tragedy which that man best explains
Who rushes blindly on his wild career
With trampling hoofs and sound of mailed war,
Who will not nurse a life to win a tear,
But is extinguished like a falling star:—
Such will at times this life appear to me,
Until I learn to read more perfectly.

HOM. IL. v. 403.

If thou art tempted by a thought of ill,
Crave not too soon for victory, nor deem
Thou art a coward if thy safety seem
To spring too little from a righteous will:
For there is nightmare on thee, nor until
Thy soul hath caught the morning's early gleam
Seek thou to analyze the monstrous dream
By painful introversion; rather fill
Thine eye with forms thou knowest to be truth:

But see thou cherish higher hope than this;
A hope hereafter that thou shalt be fit
Calm-eyed to face distortion, and to sit
Transparent among other forms of youth
Who own no impulse save to God and bliss.

And must I ever wake, gray dawn, to know
Thee standing sadly by me like a ghost?
I am perplexed with thee, that thou shouldst cost
This Earth another turning: all aglow
Thou shouldst have reached me, with a purple show
Along far-mountain tops: and I would post
Over the breadth of seas though I were lost
In the hot phantom-chase for life, if so
Thou camest ever with this numbing sense
Of chilly distance and unlovely light;
Waking this gnawing soul anew to fight
With its perpetual load: I drive thee hence—
I have another mountain-range from whence
Bursteth a sun unutterably bright.

GALILEO.

"And yet it moves!" Ah, Truth, where wert thou then,
When all for thee they racked each piteous limb?
Wert though in Heaven, and busy with thy hymn,
When those poor hands convulsed that held thy pen?
Art thou a phantom that deceivest men
To their undoing? or dost thou watch him
Pale, cold, and silent in his dungeon dim?
And wilt thou ever speak to him again?
"It moves, it moves! Alas, my flesh was weak;
That was a hideous dream! I'll cry aloud
How the green bulk wheels sunward day by day!
Ah me! ah me! perchance my heart was proud
That I alone should know that word to speak;

And now, sweet Truth, shine upon these, I pray."

If thou wouldst live the Truth in very deed,
Thou hast thy joy, but thou hast more of pain.
Others will live in peace, and thou be fain
To bargain with despair, and in thy need
To make thy meal upon the scantiest weed.
These palaces, for thee they stand in vain;
Thine is a ruinous hut; and oft the rain
Shall drench thee in the midnight; yea the speed
Of earth outstrip thee pilgrim, while thy feet
Move slowly up the heights. Yet will there come
Through the time-rents about thy moving cell,
An arrow for despair, and oft the hum
Of far-off populous realms where spirits dwell.

TO * * * *

Speak, Prophet of the Lord! We may not start
To find thee with us in thine ancient dress,
Haggard and pale from some bleak wilderness,
Empty of all save God and thy loud heart:
Nor with like rugged message quick to dart
Into the hideous fiction mean and base:
But yet, O prophet man, we need not less,
But more of earnest; though it is thy part
To deal in other words, if thou wouldst smite
The living Mammon, seated, not as then
In bestial quiescence grimly dight,
But thrice as much an idol-god as when
He stared at his own feet from morn to night.

THE WATCHER.

From out a windy cleft there comes a gaze

Of eyes unearthly which go to and fro
Upon the people's tumult, for below
The nations smite each other: no amaze
Troubles their liquid rolling, or affrays
Their deep-set contemplation: steadily glow
Those ever holier eye-balls, for they grow
Liker unto the eyes of one that prays.
And if those clasped hands tremble, comes a power
As of the might of worlds, and they are holden
Blessing above us in the sunrise golden;
And they will be uplifted till that hour
Of terrible rolling which shall rise and shake
This conscious nightmare from us and we wake.

THE BELOVED DISCIPLE.

I

One do I see and twelve; but second there
Methinks I know thee, thou beloved one;
Not from thy nobler port, for there are none
More quiet-featured; some there are who bear
Their message on their brows, while others wear
A look of large commission, nor will shun
The fiery trial, so their work is done:
But thou hast parted with thine eyes in prayer—
Unearthly are they both; and so thy lips
Seem like the porches of the spirit land;
For thou hast laid a mighty treasure by,
Unlocked by Him in Nature, and thine eye
Burns with a vision and apocalypse
Thy own sweet soul can hardly understand.

II

A Boanerges too! Upon my heart
It lay a heavy hour: features like thine

Should glow with other message than the shine
Of the earth-burrowing levin, and the start
That cleaveth horrid gulfs. Awful and swart
A moment stoodest thou, but less divine—
Brawny and clad in ruin!—till with mine
Thy heart made answering signals, and apart
Beamed forth thy two rapt eye-balls doubly clear,
And twice as strong because thou didst thy duty,
And though affianced to immortal Beauty,
Hiddest not weakly underneath her veil
The pest of Sin and Death which maketh pale:
Henceforward be thy spirit doubly dear.

THE LILY OF THE VALLEY.

There is not any weed but hath its shower,
There is not any pool but hath its star;
And black and muddy though the waters are,
We may not miss the glory of a flower,
And winter moons will give them magic power
To spin in cylinders of diamond spar;
And everything hath beauty near and far,
And keepeth close and waiteth on its hour.
And I when I encounter on my road
A human soul that looketh black and grim,
Shall I more ceremonious be than God?
Shall I refuse to watch one hour with him
Who once beside our deepest woe did bud
A patient watching flower about the brim.

'Tis not the violent hands alone that bring
The curse, the ravage, and the downward doom
Although to these full oft the yawning tomb
Owes deadly surfeit; but a keener sting,
A more immortal agony, will cling
To the half-fashioned sin which would assume

Fair Virtue's garb. The eye that sows the gloom
With quiet seeds of Death henceforth to spring
What time the sun of passion burning fierce
Breaks through the kindly cloud of circumstance;
The bitter word, and the unkindly glance,
The crust and canker coming with the years,
Are liker Death than arrows, and the lance
Which through the living heart at once doth pierce.

SPOKEN OF SEVERAL PHILOSOPHERS.

I pray you, all ye men, who put your trust
In moulds and systems and well-tackled gear,
Holding that Nature lives from year to year
In one continual round because she must—
Set me not down, I pray you, in the dust
Of all these centuries, like a pot of beer,
A pewter-pot disconsolately clear,
Which holds a potful, as is right and just.
I will grow clamorous—by the rood, I will,
If thus ye use me like a pewter pot.
Good friend, thou art a toper and a sot—
I will not be the lead to hold thy swill,
Nor any lead: I will arise and spill
Thy silly beverage, spill it piping hot.

Nature, to him no message dost thou bear,
Who in thy beauty findeth not the power
To gird himself more strongly for the hour
Of night and darkness. Oh, what colours rare
The woods, the valleys, and the mountains wear
To him who knows thy secret, and in shower
And fog, and ice-cloud, hath a secret bower
Where he may rest until the heavens are fair!
Not with the rest of slumber, but the trance
Of onward movement steady and serene,

Where oft in struggle and in contest keen
His eyes will opened be, and all the dance
Of life break on him, and a wide expanse
Roll upward through the void, sunny and green.

TO JUNE.

Ah, truant, thou art here again, I see!
For in a season of such wretched weather
I thought that thou hadst left us altogether,
Although I could not choose but fancy thee
Skulking about the hill-tops, whence the glee
Of thy blue laughter peeped at times, or rather
Thy bashful awkwardness, as doubtful whether
Thou shouldst be seen in such a company
Of ugly runaways, unshapely heaps
Of ruffian vapour, broken from restraint
Of their slim prison in the ocean deeps.
But yet I may not, chide: fall to thy books,
Fall to immediately without complaint—
There they are lying, hills and vales and brooks.

WRITTEN ABOUT THE LONGEST DAY.

Summer, sweet Summer, many-fingered Summer!
We hold thee very dear, as well we may:
It is the kernel of the year to-day—
All hail to thee! Thou art a welcome corner!
If every insect were a fairy drummer,
And I a fifer that could deftly play,
We'd give the old Earth such a roundelay
That she would cast all thought of labour from her
Ah! what is this upon my window-pane?
Some sulky drooping cloud comes pouting up,

Stamping its glittering feet along the plain!
Well, I will let that idle fancy drop.
Oh, how the spouts are bubbling with the rain!
And all the earth shines like a silver cup!

ON A MIDGE.

Whence do ye come, ye creature? Each of you
Is perfect as an angel; wings and eyes
Stupendous in their beauty—gorgeous dyes
In feathery fields of purple and of blue!
Would God I saw a moment as ye do!
I would become a molecule in size,
Rest with you, hum with you, or slanting rise
Along your one dear sunbeam, could I view
The pearly secret which each tiny fly,
Each tiny fly that hums and bobs and stirs,
Hides in its little breast eternally
From you, ye prickly grim philosophers,
With all your theories that sound so high:
Hark to the buzz a moment, my good sirs!

ON A WATERFALL.

Here stands a giant stone from whose far top
Comes down the sounding water. Let me gaze
Till every sense of man and human ways
Is wrecked and quenched for ever, and I drop
Into the whirl of time, and without stop
Pass downward thus! Again my eyes I raise
To thee, dark rock; and through the mist and haze
My strength returns when I behold thy prop
Gleam stern and steady through the wavering wrack
Surely thy strength is human, and like me

Thou bearest loads of thunder on thy back!
And, lo, a smile upon thy visage black—
A breezy tuft of grass which I can see
Waving serenely from a sunlit crack!

Above my head the great pine-branches tower
Backwards and forwards each to the other bends,
Beckoning the tempest-cloud which hither wends
Like a slow-laboured thought, heavy with power;
Hark to the patter of the coming shower!
Let me be silent while the Almighty sends
His thunder-word along; but when it ends
I will arise and fashion from the hour
Words of stupendous import, fit to guard
High thoughts and purposes, which I may wave,
When the temptation cometh close and hard,
Like fiery brands betwixt me and the grave
Of meaner things—to which I am a slave
If evermore I keep not watch and ward.

I do remember how when very young,
I saw the great sea first, and heard its swell
As I drew nearer, caught within the spell
Of its vast size and its mysterious tongue.
How the floor trembled, and the dark boat swung
With a man in it, and a great wave fell
Within a stone's cast! Words may never tell
The passion of the moment, when I flung
All childish records by, and felt arise
A thing that died no more! An awful power
I claimed with trembling hands and eager eyes,
Mine, mine for ever, an immortal dower.—
The noise of waters soundeth to this hour,
When I look seaward through the quiet skies.

ON THE SOURCE OF THE ARVE.

Hear'st thou the dash of water loud and hoarse
With its perpetual tidings upward climb,
Struggling against the wind? Oh, how sublime!
For not in vain from its portentous source,
Thy heart, wild stream, hath yearned for its full force,
But from thine ice-toothed caverns dark as time
At last thou issuest, dancing to the rhyme
Of thy outvolleying freedom! Lo, thy course
Lies straight before thee as the arrow flies,
Right to the ocean-plains. Away, away!
Thy parent waits thee, and her sunset dyes
Are ruffled for thy coming, and the gray
Of all her glittering borders flashes high
Against the glittering rocks: oh, haste, and fly!

Part 3. His Manhood

Chapter 1 - In the Desert

A life lay behind Robert Falconer, and a life lay before him. He stood on a shoal between.

The life behind him was in its grave. He had covered it over and turned away. But he knew it would rise at night.

The life before him was not yet born; and what should issue from that dull ghastly unrevealing fog on the horizon, he did not care. Thither the tide setting eastward would carry him, and his future must be born. All he cared about was to leave the empty garments of his dead behind him —the sky and the fields, the houses and the gardens which those dead had made alive with their presence. Travel, motion, ever on, ever away, was the sole impulse in his heart. Nor had the thought of finding his father any share in his restlessness.

He told his grandmother that he was going back to Aberdeen. She looked in his face with surprise, but seeing trouble there, asked no questions. As if walking in a dream, he found himself at Dr. Anderson's door.

"Why, Robert," said the good man, "what has brought you back? Ah! I see. Poor Ericson! I am very sorry, my boy. What can I do for you?"

"I can't go on with my studies now, sir," answered Robert. "I have taken a great longing for travel. Will you give me a little money and let me go?"

"To be sure I will. Where do you want to go?"

“I don’t know. Perhaps as I go I shall find myself wanting to go somewhere. You’re not afraid to trust me, are you, sir?”

“Not in the least, Robert. I trust you perfectly. You shall do just as you please.—Have you any idea, how much money you will want?”

“No. Give me what you are willing I should spend: I will go by that.”

“Come along to the bank then. I will give you enough to start with. Write at once when you want more. Don’t be too saving. Enjoy yourself as well as you can. I shall not grudge it.”

Robert smiled a wan smile at the idea of enjoying himself. His friend saw it, but let it pass. There was no good in persuading a man whose grief was all he had left, that he must ere long part with that too. That would have been in lowest deeps of sorrow to open a yet lower deep of horror. But Robert would have refused, and would have been right in refusing to believe with regard to himself what might be true in regard to most men. He might rise above his grief; he might learn to contain his grief; but lose it, forget it?—never.

He went to bid Shargar farewell. As soon as he had a glimpse of what his friend meant, he burst out in an agony of supplication.

“Tak me wi’ ye, Robert,” he cried. “Ye’re a gentleman noo[now]. I’ll be yer man. I’ll put on a livery coat, an’ gang[go] wi’ ye. I’ll awa’[away] to Dr. Anderson. He’s sure to lat[let, allow] me gang[go].”

“No, Shargar,” said Robert, “I can’t have you with me. I’ve come into trouble, Shargar, and I must fight it out alone.”

“Ay[yes, indeed], ay[yes, indeed]; I ken. Puir[poor] Mr. Ericson!”

“There’s nothing the matter with Mr. Ericson. Don’t ask me any questions. I’ve said more to you now than I’ve said to anybody besides.”

“That is guid o’ you, Robert. But am I never to see ye again?”

"I don't know. Perhaps we may meet some day."

"Perhaps is nae[no, not] muckle[much] to say, Robert," protested Shargar.

"It's more than can be said about everything, Shargar," returned Robert, sadly.

"Weel, I maun[must, have to] jist tak it as 't comes," said Shargar, with a despairing philosophy derived from the days when his mother thrashed him. "But, eh! Robert, gin[if] it had only pleased the Almichty to sen' me into the warl'[world] in a some respectable kin'[kind] o' a fashion!"

"Wi' a chance a' gaein' aboot the country like that curst villain yer brither[brother], I suppose?" retorted Robert, rousing himself for a moment.

"Na, na," responded Shargar. "I'll stick to my ain[own] mither. *She* never learned *me* sic[such] tricks."

"Do ye that. Ye canna compleen o' God. It's a' richt as far 's ye're concerned. Gin[if] he dinna something o' ye yet, it'll be *your* wyte[blame, reproach, fault], no his, I'm thinkin'."

They walked to Dr. Anderson's together, and spent the night there. In the morning Robert got on the coach for Edinburgh.

I cannot, if I would, follow him on his travels. Only at times, when the conversation rose in the dead of night, by some Jacob's ladder of blessed ascent, into regions where the heart of such a man could open as in its own natural clime, would a few words cause the clouds that enveloped this period of his history to dispart, and grant me a peep into the phantasm of his past. I suspect, however, that much of it left upon his mind no recallable impressions. I suspect that much of it looked to himself in the retrospect like a painful dream, with only certain objects and occurrences standing prominent enough to clear the moonlight mist enwrapping the rest.

What the precise nature of his misery was I shall not even attempt to conjecture. That would be to intrude within the holy place of a human heart. One thing alone I will venture to affirm—that bitterness against either of his friends, whose spirits rushed together and left his outside, had no place in that noble nature. His fate lay behind him, like the birth of Shargar, like the death of Ericson, a decree.

I do not even know in what direction he first went. That he had seen many cities and many countries was apparent from glimpses of ancient streets, of mountain-marvels, of strange constellations, of things in heaven and earth which no one could have seen but himself, called up by the magic of his words. A silent man in company, he talked much when his hour of speech arrived. Seldom, however, did he narrate any incident save in connection with some truth of human nature, or fact of the universe.

I do know that the first thing he always did on reaching any new place was to visit the church with the loftiest spire; but he never looked into the church itself until he had left the earth behind him as far as that church would afford him the possibility of ascent. Breathing the air of its highest region, he found himself vaguely strengthened, yes comforted. One peculiar feeling he had, into which I could enter only upon happy occasion, of the presence of God in the wind. He said the wind up there on the heights of human aspiration always made him long and pray. Asking him one day something about his going to church so seldom, he answered thus:

“My dear boy, it does me ten times more good to get outside the spire than to go inside the church. The spire is the most essential, and consequently the most neglected part of the building. It symbolizes the aspiration without which no man’s faith can hold its own. But the effort

of too many of her priests goes to conceal from the worshippers the fact that there is such a stair, with a door to it out of the church. It looks as if they feared their people would desert them for heaven. But I presume it arises generally from the fact that they know of such an ascent themselves, only by hearsay. The knowledge of God is good, but the church is better!"

"Could it be," I ventured to suggest, "that, in order to ascend, they must put off the priests' garments?"

"Good, my boy!" he answered. "All are priests up there, and must be clothed in fine linen, clean and white—the righteousness of saints—not the imputed righteousness of another,—that is a lying doctrine—but their own righteousness which God has wrought in them by Christ." I never knew a man in whom the inward was so constantly clothed upon by the outward, whose ordinary habits were so symbolic of his spiritual tastes, or whose enjoyment of the sight of his eyes and the hearing of his ears was so much informed by his highest feelings. He regarded all human affairs from the heights of religion, as from their church-spires he looked down on the red roofs of Antwerp, on the black roofs of Cologne, on the gray roofs of Strasburg, or on the brown roofs of Basel—uplifted for the time above them, not in dissociation from them.

On the base of the missing twin-spire at Strasburg, high over the roof of the church, stands a little cottage—how strange its white muslin window-curtains look up there! To the day of his death he cherished the fancy of writing a book in that cottage, with the grand city to which London looks a modern mushroom, its thousand roofs with row upon row of windows in them—often five garret stories, one above the other, and its thickets of multiform chimneys, the thrones and procreant

cradles of the storks, marvellous in history, habit, and dignity—all below him.

He was taken ill at Valence and lay there for a fortnight, oppressed with some kind of low fever. One night he awoke from a refreshing sleep, but could not sleep again. It seemed to him afterwards as if he had lain waiting for something. Anyhow something came. As it were a faint musical rain had invaded his hearing; but the night was clear, for the moon was shining on his window-blind. The sound came nearer, and revealed itself a delicate tinkling of bells. It drew nearer still and nearer, growing in sweet fulness as it came, till at length a slow torrent of tinklings went past his window in the street below. It was the flow of a thousand little currents of sound, a gliding of silvery threads, like the talking of water-ripples against the side of a barge in a slow canal—all as soft as the moonlight, as exquisite as an odour, each sound tenderly truncated and dull. A great multitude of sheep was shifting its quarters in the night, whence and whither and why he never knew. To his heart they were the messengers of the Most High. For into that heart, soothed and attuned by their thin harmony, not on the wind that floated without breaking their lovely message, but on the ripples of the wind that bloweth where it listeth, came the words, unlooked for, their coming unheralded by any mental premonition, "My peace I give unto you." The sounds died slowly away in the distance, fainting out of the air, even as they had grown upon it, but the words remained.

In a few moments he was fast asleep, comforted by pleasure into repose; his dreams were of gentle self-consoling griefs; and when he awoke in the morning—"My peace I give unto you," was the first thought of which he was conscious. It may be that the sound of the sheep-bells made him think of the shepherds that watched their flocks by night, and

they of the multitude of the heavenly host, and they of the song—"On earth peace": I do not know. The important point is not how the words came, but that the words remained—remained until he understood them, and they became to him spirit and life.

He soon recovered strength sufficiently to set out again upon his travels, great part of which he performed on foot. In this way he reached Avignon. Passing from one of its narrow streets into an open place in the midst, all at once he beheld, towering above him, on a height that overlooked the whole city and surrounding country, a great crucifix. The form of the Lord of Life still hung in the face of heaven and earth. He bowed his head involuntarily. No matter that when he drew nearer the power of it vanished. The memory of it remained with its first impression, and it had a share in what followed.

He made his way eastward towards the Alps. As he walked one day about noon over a desolate heath-covered height, reminding him not a little of the country of his childhood, the silence seized upon him. In the midst of the silence arose the crucifix, and once more the words which had often returned upon him sounded in the ears of the inner hearing, "My peace I give unto you." They were words he had known from the earliest memorial time. He had heard them in infancy, in childhood, in boyhood, in youth: now first in manhood it flashed upon him that the Lord did really mean that the peace of his soul should be the peace of their souls; that the peace wherewith his own soul was quiet, the peace at the very heart of the universe, was henceforth theirs—open to them, to all the world, to enter and be still. He fell upon his knees, bowed down in the birth of a great hope, held up his hands towards heaven, and cried, "Lord Christ, give me thy peace."

He said no more, but rose, caught up his stick, and strode forward, thinking.

He had learned what the sentence meant; what that was of which it spoke he had not yet learned. The peace he had once sought, the peace that lay in the smiles and tenderness of a woman, had “overcome him like a summer cloud,” and had passed away. There was surely a deeper, a wider, a grander peace for him than that, if indeed it was the same peace wherewith the king of men regarded his approaching end, that he had left as a heritage to his brothers. Suddenly he was aware that the earth had begun to live again. The hum of insects arose from the heath around him; the odour of its flowers entered his dulled sense; the wind kissed him on the forehead; the sky domed up over his head; and the clouds veiled the distant mountain tops like the smoke of incense ascending from the altars of the worshipping earth. All Nature began to minister to one who had begun to lift his head from the baptism of fire. He had thought that Nature could never more be anything to him; and she was waiting on him like a mother. The next moment he was offended with himself for receiving ministrations the reaction of whose loveliness might no longer gather around the form of Mary St. John. Every wavelet of scent, every toss of a flower’s head in the breeze, came with a sting in its pleasure—for there was no woman to whom they belonged. Yet he could not shut them out, for God and not woman is the heart of the universe. Would the day ever come when the loveliness of Mary St. John, felt and acknowledged as never before, would be even to him a joy and a thanksgiving? If ever, then because God is the heart of all.

I do not think this mood, wherein all forms of beauty sped to his soul as to their own needful centre, could have lasted over many miles of his journey. But such delicate inward revelations are none the less precious

that they are evanescent. Many feelings are simply too good to last—using the phrase not in the unbelieving sense in which it is generally used, expressing the conviction that God is a hard father, fond of disappointing his children, but to express the fact that intensity and endurance cannot yet coexist in the human economy. But the virtue of a mood depends by no means on its immediate presence. Like any other experience, it may be believed in, and, in the absence which leaves the mind free to contemplate it, work even more good than in its presence.

At length he came in sight of the Alpine regions. Far off, the heads of the great mountains rose into the upper countries of cloud, where the snows settled on their stony heads, and the torrents ran out from beneath the frozen mass to gladden the earth below with the faith of the lonely hills. The mighty creatures lay like grotesque animals of a far-off titanic time, whose dead bodies had been first withered into stone, then worn away by the storms, and covered with shrouds and palls of snow, till the outlines of their forms were gone, and only rough shapes remained like those just blocked out in the sculptor's marble, vaguely suggesting what the creatures had been, as the corpse under the sheet of death is like a man. He came amongst the valleys at their feet, with their blue-green waters hurrying seawards—from stony heights of air into the mass of "the restless wavy plain"; with their sides of rock rising in gigantic terrace after terrace up to the heavens; with their scaling pines, erect and slight, cone-head aspiring above cone-head, ambitious to clothe the bare mass with green, till failing at length in their upward efforts, the savage rock shot away and beyond and above them, the white and blue glaciers clinging cold and cruel to their ragged sides, and the dead blank of whiteness covering their final despair. He drew near to the lower glaciers, to find their awful abysses tremulous with liquid blue, a

blue tender and profound as if fed from the reservoir of some hidden sky intenser than ours; he rejoiced over the velvety fields dotted with the toy-like houses of the mountaineers; he sat for hours listening by the side of their streams; he grew weary, felt oppressed, longed for a wider outlook, and began to climb towards a mountain village of which he had heard from a traveller, to find solitude and freedom in an air as lofty as if he climbed twelve of his beloved cathedral spires piled up in continuous ascent.

After ascending for hours in zigzags through pine woods, where the only sound was of the little streams trotting down to the valley below, or the distant hush of some thin waterfall, he reached a level, and came out of the woods. The path now led along the edge of a precipice descending sheer to the uppermost terrace of the valley he had left. The valley was but a cleft in the mass of the mountain: a little way over sank its other wall, steep as a plumb-line could have made it, of solid rock. On his right lay green fields of clover and strange grasses. Ever and anon from the cleft steamed up great blinding clouds of mist, which now wandered about over the nations of rocks on the mountain side beyond the gulf, now wrapt himself in their bewildering folds. In one moment the whole creation had vanished, and there seemed scarce existence enough left for more than the following footstep; the next, a mighty mountain stood in front, crowned with blinding snow, an awful fact; the lovely heavens were over his head, and the green sod under his feet; the grasshoppers chirped about him, and the gorgeous butterflies flew. From regions far beyond came the bells of the kine and the goats. He reached a little inn, and there took up his quarters.

I am able to be a little minute in my description, because I have since visited the place myself. Great heights rise around it on all sides. It

stands as between heaven and hell, suspended between peaks and gulfs. The wind must roar awfully there in the winter; but the mountains stand away with their avalanches, and all the summer long keep the cold off the grassy fields.

The same evening, he was already weary. The next morning it rained. It rained fiercely all day. He would leave the place on the morrow. In the evening it began to clear up. He walked out. The sun was setting. The snow-peaks were faintly tinged with rose, and the ragged masses of vapour that hung lazy and leaden-coloured about the sides of the abyss, were partially dyed a sulky orange red. Then all faded into gray. But as the sunlight vanished, a veil sank from the face of the moon, already half-way to the zenith, and she gathered courage and shone, till the mountain looked lovely as a ghost in the gleam of its snow and the glimmer of its glaciers. “Ah!” thought Falconer, “such a peace at last is all a man can look for”—the repose of a spectral Elysium, a world where passion has died away, and only the dim ghost of its memory to disturb with a shadowy sorrow the helpless content of its undreaming years. The religion that can do but this much is not a very great or very divine thing. The human heart cannot invent a better it may be, but it can imagine grander results.

He did not yet know what the religion was of which he spoke. As well might a man born stone-deaf estimate the power of sweet sounds, or he who knows not a square from a circle pronounce upon the study of mathematics.

The next morning rose brilliant—an ideal summer day. He would not go yet; he would spend one day more in the place. He opened his valise to get some lighter garments. His eye fell on a New Testament. Dr.

Anderson had put it there. He had never opened it yet, and now he let it lie. Its time had not yet come. He went out.

Walking up the edge of the valley, he came upon a little stream whose talk he had heard for some hundred yards. It flowed through a grassy hollow, with steeply sloping sides. Water is the same all the world over; but there was more than water here to bring his childhood back to Falconer. For at the spot where the path led him down to the *burn*, a little crag stood out from the bank,—a gray stone like many he knew on the stream that watered the valley of Rothieden: on the top of the stone grew a little heather; and beside it, bending towards the water, was a silver birch. He sat down on the foot of the rock, shut in by the high grassy banks from the gaze of the awful mountains. The sole unrest was the run of the water beside him, and it sounded so homely, that he began to jabber Scotch to it. He forgot that this stream was born in the clouds, far up where that peak rose into the air behind him; he did not know that a couple of hundred yards from where he sat, it tumbled headlong into the valley below: with his country's birch-tree beside him, and the rock crowned with its tuft of heather over his head, the quiet as of a Sabbath afternoon fell upon him—that quiet which is the one altogether lovely thing in the Scotch Sabbath—and once more the words arose in his mind, "My peace I give unto you."

Now he fell a-thinking what this peace could be. And it came into his mind as he thought, that Jesus had spoken in another place about giving rest to those that came to him, while here he spoke about *"my* peace." Could this *my* mean a certain *kind* of peace that the Lord himself possessed? Perhaps it was in virtue of that peace, whatever it was, that he was the Prince of Peace. Whatever peace he had must be the highest and best peace—therefore the one peace for a man to seek, if indeed, as

the words of the Lord seemed to imply, a man was capable of possessing it. He remembered the New Testament in his box, and, resolving to try whether he could not make something more out of it, went back to the inn quieter in heart than since he left his home. In the evening he returned to the brook, and fell to searching the story, seeking after the peace of Jesus.

He found that the whole passage stood thus:—

"Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid."

He did not leave the place for six weeks. Every day he went to the burn, as he called it, with his New Testament; every day tried yet again to make out something more of what the Saviour meant. By the end of the month it had dawned upon him, he hardly knew how, that the peace of Jesus (although, of course, he could not know what it was like till he had it) must have been a peace that came from the doing of the will of his Father. From the account he gave of the discoveries he then made, I venture to represent them in the driest and most exact form that I can find they will admit of. When I use the word *discoveries*, I need hardly say that I use it with reference to Falconer and his previous knowledge. They were these:—that Jesus taught—

First,—That a man's business is to do the will of God:

Second,—That God takes upon himself the care of the man:

Third,—Therefore, that a man must never be afraid of anything; and so,

Fourth,—be left free to love God with all his heart, and his neighbour as himself.

But one day, his thoughts having cleared themselves a little upon these points, a new set of questions arose with sudden inundation—comprised in these two:—

"How can I tell for certain that there ever was such a man? How am I to be sure that such as he says is the mind of the maker of these glaciers and butterflies?"

All this time he was in the wilderness as much as Moses at the back of Horeb, or St. Paul when he vanishes in Arabia: and he did nothing but read the four gospels and ponder over them. Therefore it is not surprising that he should have already become so familiar with the gospel story, that the moment these questions appeared, the following words should dart to the forefront of his consciousness to meet them:—

"If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself."

Here was a word of Jesus himself, announcing the one means of arriving at a conviction of the truth or falsehood of all that he said, namely, the doing of the will of God by the man who would arrive at such conviction.

The next question naturally was: What is this will of God of which Jesus speaks? Here he found himself in difficulty. The theology of his grandmother rushed in upon him, threatening to overwhelm him with demands as to feeling and inward action from which his soul turned with sickness and fainting. That they were repulsive to him, that they appeared unreal, and contradictory to the nature around him, was no *proof* that they were not of God. But on the other hand, that they demanded what *seemed* to him unjust,—that these demands were founded on what *seemed* to him untruth attributed to God, on ways of thinking and feeling which are certainly degrading in a man,—these were

reasons of the very highest nature for refusing to act upon them so long as, from whatever defects it might be in himself, they bore to him this aspect. He saw that while they appeared to be such, even though it might turn out that he mistook them, to acknowledge them would be to wrong God. But this conclusion left him in no better position for practice than before.

When at length he did see what the will of God was, he wondered, so simple did it appear, that he had failed to discover it at once. Yet not less than a fortnight had he been brooding and pondering over the question, as he wandered up and down that burnside, or sat at the foot of the heather-crowned stone and the silver-barked birch, when the light began to dawn upon him. It was thus.

In trying to understand the words of Jesus by searching back, as it were, for such thoughts and feelings in him as would account for the words he spoke, the perception awoke that at least he could not have meant by the will of God any such theological utterances as those which troubled him. Next it grew plain that what he came to do, was just to lead his life. That he should do the work, such as recorded, and much besides, that the Father gave him to do—this was the will of God concerning him. With this perception arose the conviction that unto every man whom God had sent into the world, he had given a work to do in that world. He had to lead the life God meant him to lead. The will of God was to be found and done in the world. In seeking a true relation to the world, would he find his relation to God?

The time for action was come.

He rose up from the stone of his meditation, took his staff in his hand, and went down the mountain, not knowing whither he went. And these were some of his thoughts as he went:

"If it was the will of God who made me and her, my will shall not be set against his. I cannot be happy, but I will bow my head and let his waves and his billows go over me. If there is such a God, he knows what a pain I bear. His will be done. Jesus thought it well that his will should be done to the death. Even if there be no God, it will be grand to be a disciple of such a man, to do as he says, think as he thought—perhaps come to feel as he felt."

My reader may wonder that one so young should have been able to think so practically—to the one point of action. But he was in earnest, and what lay at the root of his character, at the root of all that he did, felt, and became, was childlike simplicity and purity of nature. If the sins of his father were mercifully visited upon him, so likewise were the grace and loveliness of his mother. And between the two, Falconer had fared well.

As he descended the mountain, the one question was—his calling. With the faintest track to follow, with the clue of a spider's thread to guide him, he would have known that his business was to set out at once to find, and save his father. But never since the day when the hand of that father smote him, and Mary St. John found him bleeding on the floor, had he heard word or conjecture concerning him. If he were to set out to find him now, it would be to search the earth for one who might have vanished from it years ago. He might as well search the streets of a great city for a lost jewel. When the time came for him to find his father, if such an hour was written in the decrees of—I dare not say Fate, for Falconer hated the word—if such was the will of God, some sign would be given him—that is, some hint which he could follow with action. As he thought and thought it became gradually plainer that he must begin his

obedience by getting ready for anything that God might require of him. Therefore he must go on learning till the call came.

But he shivered at the thought of returning to Aberdeen. Might he not continue his studies in Germany? Would that not be as good—possibly, from the variety of the experience, better? But how was it to be decided? By submitting the matter to the friend who made either possible. Dr. Anderson had been to him as a father: he would be guided by his pleasure.

He wrote, therefore, to Dr. Anderson, saying that he would return at once if he wished it, but that he would greatly prefer going to a German university for two years. The doctor replied that of course he would rather have him at home, but that he was confident Robert knew best what was best for himself; therefore he had only to settle where he thought proper, and the next summer he would come and see him, for he was not tied to Aberdeen any more than Robert.

Chapter 2 - Home Again

Four years passed before Falconer returned to his native country, during which period Dr. Anderson had visited him twice, and shown himself well satisfied with his condition and pursuits. The doctor had likewise visited Rothieden, and had comforted the heart of the grandmother with regard to her Robert. From what he learned upon this visit, he had arrived at a true conjecture, I believe, as to the cause of the great change which had suddenly taken place in the youth. But he never asked Robert a question leading in the direction of the grief which he saw the healthy and earnest nature of the youth gradually assimilating into his life. He had too much respect for sorrow to approach it with curiosity. He had learned to put off his shoes when he drew nigh the burning bush of human pain.

Robert had not settled at any of the universities, but had moved from one to the other as he saw fit, report guiding him to the men who spoke with authority. The time of doubt and anxious questioning was far from over, but the time was long gone by—if in his case it had ever been—when he could be like a wave of the sea, driven of the wind and tossed. He had ever one anchor of the soul, and he found that it held—the faith of Jesus (I say the faith of Jesus, not his own faith in Jesus), the truth of Jesus, the life of Jesus. However his intellect might be tossed on the waves of speculation and criticism, he found that the word the Lord had spoken remained steadfast; for in doing righteously, in loving mercy, in walking humbly, the conviction increased that Jesus knew the very secret of human life. Now and then some great vision gleamed across his soul of the working of all things towards a far-off goal of simple obedience to a law of life, which God knew, and which his son had

justified through sorrow and pain. Again and again the words of the Master gave him a peep into a region where all was explicable, where all that was crooked might be made straight, where every mountain of wrong might be made low, and every valley of suffering exalted. Ever and again some one of the dark perplexities of humanity began to glimmer with light in its inmost depth. Nor was he without those moments of communion when the creature is lifted into the secret place of the Creator.

Looking back to the time when it seemed that he cried and was not heard, he saw that God had been hearing, had been answering, all the time; had been making him capable of receiving the gift for which he prayed. He saw that intellectual difficulty encompassing the highest operations of harmonizing truth, can no more affect their reality than the dulness of chaos disprove the motions of the wind of God over the face of its waters. He saw that any true revelation must come out of the unknown in God through the unknown in man. He saw that its truths must rise in the man as powers of life, and that only as that life grows and unfolds can the ever-lagging intellect gain glimpses of partial outlines fading away into the infinite—that, indeed, only in material things and the laws that belong to them, are outlines possible—even there, only in the picture of them which the mind that analyzes them makes for itself, not in the things themselves.

At the close of these four years, with his spirit calm and hopeful, truth his passion, and music, which again he had resumed and diligently cultivated, his pleasure, Falconer returned to Aberdeen. He was received by Dr. Anderson as if he had in truth been his own son. In the room stood a tall figure, with its back towards them, pocketing its handkerchief. The next moment the figure turned, and—could it be?—

yes, it was Shargar. Doubt lingered only until he opened his mouth, and said "Eh, Robert!" with which exclamation he threw himself upon him, and after a very undignified fashion began crying heartily. Tall as he was, Robert's great black head towered above him, and his shoulders were like a rock against which Shargar's slight figure leaned. He looked down like a compassionate mastiff upon a distressed Italian grayhound. His eyes shimmered with feeling, but Robert's tears, if he ever shed any, were kept for very solemn occasions. He was more likely to weep for awful joy than for any sufferings either in himself or others. "Shargar!" pronounced in a tone full of a thousand memories, was all the greeting he returned; but his great manly hand pressed Shargar's delicate long-fingered one with a grasp which must have satisfied his friend that everything was as it had been between them, and that their friendship from henceforth would take a new start. For with all that Robert had seen, thought, and learned, now that the bitterness of loss had gone by, the old times and the old friends were dearer. If there was any truth in the religion of God's will, in which he was a disciple, every moment of life's history which had brought soul in contact with soul, must be sacred as a voice from behind the veil. Therefore he could not now rest until he had gone to see his grandmother.

"Will you come to Rothieden with me, Shargar? I beg your pardon—I oughtn't to keep up an old nickname," said Robert, as they sat that evening with the doctor, over a tumbler of toddy.

"If you call me anything else, I'll cut my throat, Robert, as I told you before. If any one else does," he added, laughing, "I'll cut his throat."

"Can he go with me, doctor?" asked Robert, turning to their host.

"Certainly. He has not been to Rothieden since he took his degree. He's an A.M. now, and has distinguished himself besides. You'll see him

in his uniform soon, I hope. Let's drink his health, Robert. Fill your glass."

The doctor filled his glass slowly and solemnly. He seldom drank even wine, but this was a rare occasion. He then rose, and with equal slowness, and a tremor in his voice which rendered it impossible to imagine the presence of anything but seriousness, said,

"Robert, my son, let's drink the health of George Moray, Gentleman. Stand up."

Robert rose, and in his confusion Shargar rose too, and sat down again, blushing till his red hair looked yellow beside his cheeks. The men repeated the words, "George Moray, Gentleman," emptied their glasses, and resumed their seats. Shargar rose trembling, and tried in vain to speak. The reason in part was, that he sought to utter himself in English.

"Hoots[pshaw]! Damn English!" he broke out at last. "Gin[if] I be a gentleman, Dr. Anderson and Robert Falconer, it's you twa 'at's made me ane[one], an' God bless ye, an' I'm yer hoomble servant to a' etairnity."

So saying, Shargar resumed his seat, filled his glass with trembling hand, emptied it to hide his feelings, but without success, rose once more, and retreated to the hall for a space.

The next morning Robert and Shargar got on the coach and went to Rothieden. Robert turned his head aside as they came near the bridge and the old house of Bogbonnie. But, ashamed of his weakness, he turned again and looked at the house. There it stood, all the same,—a thing for the night winds to howl in, and follow each other in mad gambols through its long passages and rooms, so empty from the first that not even a ghost had any reason for going there—a place almost without a history—dreary emblem of so many empty souls that have hidden their talent in a napkin, and have nothing to return for it when

the Master calls them. Having looked this one in the face, he felt stronger to meet those other places before which his heart quailed yet more. He knew that Miss St. John had left soon after Ericson's death: whether he was sorry or glad that he should not see her he could not tell. He thought Rothieden would look like Pompeii, a city buried and disinterred; but when the coach drove into the long straggling street, he found the old love revive, and although the blood rushed back to his heart when Captain Forsyth's house came in view, he did not turn away, but made his eyes, and through them his heart, familiar with its desolation. He got down at the corner, and leaving Shargar to go on to The Boar's Head and look after the luggage, walked into his grandmother's house and straight into her little parlour. She rose with her old stateliness when she saw a stranger enter the room, and stood waiting his address.

"Weel, grannie," said Robert, and took her in his arms.

"The Lord's name be praised!" faltered she. "He's ower[over] guid to the likes o' me."

And she lifted up her voice and wept.

She had been informed of his coming, but she had not expected him till the evening; he was much altered, and old age is slow.

He had hardly placed her in her chair, when Betty came in. If she had shown him respect before, it was reverence now.

"Eh, sir!" she said, "I didna ken it was you, or I wadna hae come into the room ohn[without] chappit[hammered, struck, rapped] at the door. I'll awa'[away] back to my kitchie[kitchen]."

So saying, she turned to leave the room.

"Hoots[pshaw]! Betty," cried Robert, "dinna be a gowk[fool, blockhead]. Gie[give] 's a grip o yer han'."

Betty stood staring and irresolute, overcome at sight of the manly bulk before her.

"Gin[if] ye dinna behave yersel', Betty, I'll jist awa'[away] ower[over] to Muckledrum, an' hae a caw[drive, hammer] throu the sessions-buik[church record of its proceedings]."

Betty laughed for the first time at the awful threat, and the ice once broken, things returned to somewhat of their old footing.

I must not linger on these days. The next morning Robert paid a visit to Bodyfauld, and found that time had there flowed so gently that it had left but few wrinkles and fewer gray hairs. The fields, too, had little change to show; and the hill was all the same, save that its pines had grown. His chief mission was to John Hewson and his wife. When he left for the continent, he was not so utterly absorbed in his own griefs as to forget Jessie. He told her story to Dr. Anderson, and the good man had gone to see her the same day.

In the evening, when he knew he should find them both at home, he walked into the cottage. They were seated by the fire, with the same pot hanging on the same crook for their supper. They rose, and asked him to sit down, but did not know him. When he told them who he was, they greeted him warmly, and John Hewson smiled something of the old smile, but only like it, for it had no "rays proportionately delivered" from his mouth over his face.

After a little indifferent chat, Robert said,

"I came through Aberdeen yesterday, John."

At the very mention of Aberdeen, John's head sunk. He gave no answer, but sat looking in the fire. His wife rose and went to the other end of the room, busying herself quietly about the supper. Robert thought it best to plunge into the matter at once.

"I saw Jessie last nicht," he said.

Still there was no reply. John's face had grown hard as a stone face, but Robert thought rather from the determination to govern his feelings than from resentment.

"She's been doin' weel ever sin'since syne[then]," he added.

Still no word from either; and Robert fearing some outburst of indignation ere he had said his say, now made haste.

"She's been a servant wi' Dr. Anderson for four year noo[now], an' he's sair[sore] pleased wi' her. She's a fine woman. But her bairnie's[little child is] deid, an' that was a sair[sore] blow till her."

He heard a sob from the mother, but still John made no sign.

"It was a bonnie bairnie[little child] as ever ye saw. It luikit[looked] in her face, she says, as gin[if] it kent[known, knew] a' aboot it, and had only come to help her throu the warst[worst] o' 't; for it gaed[went] hame[home] 'maist[most, almost] as sune's[soon as] ever she was richt able to thank God for sen'in' her sic[such] an angel to lead her to repentance."

"John," said his wife, coming behind his chair, and laying her hand on his shoulder, "what for dinna ye speyk? Ye hear what Maister Faukner says.—Ye dinna think a thing's clean[entirely] useless 'cause there may be a spot upo' 't?" she added, wiping her eyes with her apron.

"A spot upo' 't?" cried John, starting to his feet. "What ca'[call] ye a spot? —wuman[woman], dinna drive me mad to hear ye lichtlie[make light of, disparage] the glory o' virginity."

"That's a' verra[very] weel, John," interposed Robert quietly; "but there was ane[one] thocht[thought] as muckle[much] o' 't as ye do, an' wad[would] hae been ashamed to hear ye speak that gait[way] aboot yer ain[own] dauchter"

"I dinna unnerstan' ye," returned Hewson, looking *raised-like* at him.

“Dinna ye ken, man, that amo’among them ’at kentknown, knew the Lord best whanwhen he cam fraefrom haiven to luiklook efterafter his ainown—to seek and to save, ye ken—amo’among them ’at cam roonaround, round aboot him to hearken till ’im, was lasses ’at had ganegone the wrangwrong, injured gaitway a’thegitherall together,—no like your bonnie Jessie ’at fell but anceonce. Man, ye’re jist like Simon the Pharisee, ’at was sae scunnertdisgusted, loathed at oor Lord ’cause he lootlet the wumanwoman ’at was a sinner tak her wullwill o’ ’s feet—the feet ’at they warwere gaein’ to tak their wull o’ efterafter anither fashion afore langlong. He wadwould hae shawnshown her the door—Simon wadwould—like you, John; but the Lord tuiktook her pairtpart. An’ latlet, allow me tell *you*, John—an’ I winnawill not beg yer pardon for sayin’ ’t, for it’s God’s trowthtruth, indeed—latlet, allow me tell *you*, ’at ginif ye ganggo on that gaitway ye’ll be sidin’ wi’ the Pharisee, an’ no wi’ oor Lord. Ye may lippentrust, depend on to yer wife, ayyes, indeed, an’ to Jessie hersel’, that kens better northan eithereither o’ ye, no to makmake, do little o’ virginity. Faith! they think mairmore o’ ’t than ye do, I’m thinkin’, efterafter a’; only it’s no a thing to say muckle[much] aboot. An’ it’s no to stan’stand for a’thingeverything, anything, efterafter a’.”

Silence followed. John sat down again, and buried his face in his hands. At length he murmured from between them,

“The lassie’s weel?”

“Ayyes, indeed,” answered Robert; and silence followed again.

“What wadwould ye hae me do?” asked John, lifting his head a little.

“I wadwould hae ye sen’ a kin’kind word till her. The lassie’s hert’sheart is jist longin’ efterafter ye. That’s a’. And that’s no owerover muckle[much].”

“’Deed no,” assented the mother.

John said nothing. But when his visitor rose he bade him a warm good-night.

When Robert returned to Aberdeen he was the bearer of such a message as made poor Jessie glad at heart. This was his first experience of the sort.

When he left the cottage, he did not return to the house, but threaded the little forest of pines, climbing the hill till he came out on its bare crown, where nothing grew but heather and blaeberries. There he threw himself down, and gazed into the heavens. The sun was below the horizon; all the dazzle was gone out of the gold, and the roses were fast fading; the downy blue of the sky was trembling into stars over his head; the brown dusk was gathering in the air; and a wind full of gentleness and peace came to him from the west. He let his thoughts go where they would, and they went up into the abyss over his head.

"Lord, come to me," he cried in his heart, "for I cannot go to thee. If I were to go up and up through that awful space for ages and ages, I should never find thee. Yet there thou art. The tenderness of thy infinitude looks upon me from those heavens. Thou art in them and in me. Because thou thinkest, I think. I am thine—all thine. I abandon myself to thee. Fill me with thyself. When I am full of thee, my griefs themselves will grow golden in thy sunlight. Thou holdest them and their cause, and wilt find some nobler atonement between them than vile forgetfulness and the death of love. Lord, let me help those that are wretched because they do not know thee. Let me tell them that thou, the Life, must needs suffer for and with them, that they may be partakers of thy ineffable peace. My life is hid in thine: take me in thy hand as Gideon bore the pitcher to the battle. Let me be broken if need be, that thy light may shine upon the lies which men tell them in thy name, and which eat away their hearts."

Having persuaded Shargar to remain with Mrs. Falconer for a few days, and thus remove the feeling of offence she still cherished because of his "munelicht flittin",' he returned to Dr. Anderson, who now unfolded his plans for him. These were, that he should attend the medical classes common to the two universities, and at the same time accompany him in his visits to the poor. He did not at all mean, he said, to determine Robert's life as that of a medical man, but from what he had learned of his feelings, he was confident that a knowledge of medicine would be invaluable to him. I think the good doctor must have foreseen the kind of life which Falconer would at length choose to lead, and with true and admirable wisdom, sought to prepare him for it. However this may be, Robert entertained the proposal gladly, went into the scheme with his whole heart, and began to widen that knowledge of and sympathy with the poor which were the foundation of all his influence over them.

For a time, therefore, he gave a diligent and careful attendance upon lectures, read sufficiently, took his rounds with Dr. Anderson, and performed such duties as he delegated to his greater strength. Had the healing art been far less of an enjoyment to him than it was, he could yet hardly have failed of great progress therein; but seeing that it accorded with his best feelings, profoundest theories, and loftiest hopes, and that he received it as a work given him to do, it is not surprising that a certain faculty of cure, almost partaking of the instinctive, should have been rapidly developed in him, to the wonder and delight of his friend and master.

In this labour he again spent about four years, during which time he gathered much knowledge of human nature, learning especially to judge it from no stand-point of his own, but in every individual case to take a

new position whence the nature and history of the man should appear in true relation to the yet uncompleted result. He who cannot feel the humanity of his neighbour because he is different from himself in education, habits, opinions, morals, circumstances, objects, is unfit, if not unworthy, to aid him.

Within this period Shargar had gone out to India, where he had distinguished himself particularly on a certain harassing march. Towards the close of the four years he had leave of absence, and was on his way home. About the same time Robert, in consequence of a fever brought on by over-fatigue, was in much need of a holiday; and Dr. Anderson proposed that he should meet Moray at Southampton.

Shargar had no expectation of seeing him, and his delight, not greater on that account, broke out more wildly. No thinnest film had grown over his heart, though in all else he was considerably changed. The army had done everything that was wanted for his outward show of man. The drawling walk had vanished, and a firm step and soldierly stride had taken its place; his bearing was free, yet dignified; his high descent came out in the ease of his carriage and manners: there could be no doubt that at last Shargar was a gentleman. His hair had changed to a kind of red chestnut. His complexion was much darkened with the Indian sun. His eyes, too, were darker, and no longer rolled slowly from one object to another, but indicated by their quick glances a mind ready to observe and as ready to resolve. His whole appearance was more than prepossessing—it was even striking.

Robert was greatly delighted with the improvement in him, and far more when he found that his mind's growth had at least kept pace with his body's change. It would be more correct to say that it had preceded and occasioned it; for however much the army may be able to do in that

way, it had certainly, in Moray's case, only seconded the law of inward growth working outward show.

The young men went up to London together, and great was the pleasure they had in each other's society, after so long a separation in which their hearts had remained unchanged while their natures had grown both worthy and capable of more honour and affection. They had both much to tell; for Robert was naturally open save in regard to his grief; and Shargar was proud of being able to communicate with Robert from a nearer level, in virtue of now knowing many things that Robert could not know. They went together to a hotel in St. Paul's Churchyard.

Chapter 3 - A Mere Glimpse

At the close of a fortnight, Falconer thought it time to return to his duties in Aberdeen. The day before the steamer sailed, they found themselves, about six o'clock, in Gracechurch Street. It was a fine summer evening. The street was less crowded than earlier in the afternoon, although there was a continuous stream of waggons, omnibuses, and cabs both ways. As they stood on the curbstone, a little way north of Lombard Street, waiting to cross—

"You see, Shargar," said Robert, "Nature will have her way. Not all the hurry and confusion and roar can keep the shadows out. Look: wherever a space is for a moment vacant, there falls a shadow, as grotesque, as strange, as full of unutterable things as any shadow on a field of grass and daisies."

"I remember feeling the same kind of thing in India," returned Shargar, "where nothing looked as if it belonged to the world I was born in, but my own shadow. In such a street as this, however, all the shadows look as if they belonged to another world, and had no business here."

"I quite feel that," returned Falconer. "They come like angels from the lovely west and the pure air, to show that London cannot hurt them, for it too is within the Kingdom of God—to teach the lovers of nature, like the old orthodox Jew, St. Peter, that they must not call anything common or unclean."

Shargar made no reply, and Robert glanced round at him. He was staring with wide eyes into, not at the crowd of vehicles that filled the street. His face was pale, and strangely like the Shargar of old days.

"What's the matter with you?" Robert asked in some bewilderment.

Receiving no answer, he followed Shargar's gaze, and saw a strange sight for London city.

In the middle of the crowd of vehicles, with an omnibus before them, and a brewer's dray behind them, came a line of three donkey-carts, heaped high with bundles and articles of gipsy-gear. The foremost was conducted by a middle-aged woman of tall, commanding aspect, and expression both cunning and fierce. She walked by the donkey's head carrying a short stick, with which she struck him now and then, but which she oftener waved over his head like the truncheon of an excited marshal on the battle-field, accompanying its movements now with loud cries to the animal, now with loud response to the chaff of the omnibus conductor, the dray driver, and the tradesmen in carts about her. She was followed by a very handsome, olive-complexioned, wild-looking young woman, with her black hair done up in a red handkerchief, who conducted her donkey more quietly. Both seemed as much at home in the roar of Gracechurch Street as if they had been crossing a wild common. A loutish-looking young man brought up the rear with the third donkey. From the bundles on the foremost cart peeped a lovely, fair-haired, English-looking child.

Robert took all this in in a moment. The same moment Shargar's spell was broken.

"Lord, it *is* my mither!" he cried, and darted under a horse's neck into the middle of the *ruck*[bulk, mass].

He needled his way through till he reached the woman. She was swearing at a cabman whose wheel had caught the point of her donkey's shaft, and was hauling him round. Heedless of everything, Shargar threw his arms about her, crying,

"Mither! mither!"

“Nane[none] o’ yer blastit[blaste] humbug!” she exclaimed, as, with a vigorous throw and a wriggle, she freed herself from his embrace and pushed him away.

The moment she had him at arm’s length, however, her hand closed upon his arm, and her other hand went up to her brow. From underneath it her eyes shot up and down him from head to foot, and he could feel her hand closing and relaxing and closing again, as if she were trying to force her long nails into his flesh. He stood motionless, waiting the result of her scrutiny, utterly unconscious that he caused a congestion in the veins of London, for every vehicle within sight of the pair had stopped. Falconer said a strange silence fell upon the street, as if all the things in it had been turned into shadows.

A rough voice, which sounded as if all London must have heard it, broke the silence. It was the voice of the cabman who had been in altercation with the woman. Bursting into an insulting laugh, he used words with regard to her which it is better to leave unrecorded. The same instant Shargar freed himself from her grasp, and stood by the fore wheel of the cab.

“Get down!” he said, in a voice that was not the less impressive that it was low and hoarse.

The fellow saw what he meant, and whipped his horse. Shargar sprung on the box, and dragged him down all but headlong.

“Now,” he said, “beg my mother’s pardon.”

“Be damned if I do, &c., &c.,” said the cabman.

“Then defend yourself,” said Shargar. “Robert.”

Falconer was watching it all, and was by his side in a moment.

“Come on, you, &c., &c.,” cried the cabman, plucking up heart and putting himself in fighting shape. He looked one of those insolent fellows whom none see discomfited more gladly than the honest men of his own class. The same moment he lay between his horse’s feet.

Shargar turned to Robert, and saying only, “There, Robert!” turned again towards the woman. The cabman rose bleeding, and, desiring no more of the same, climbed on his box, and went off, belabouring his horse, and pursued by a roar from the street, for the spectators were delighted at his punishment.

“Now, mother,” said Shargar, panting with excitement.

“What ca’[call] they ye?” she asked, still doubtful, but as proud of being defended as if the coarse words of her assailant had had no truth in them. “Ye canna be my lang-leggit Geordie.”

“What for no?”

“Ye’re a gentleman, faith!”

“An’ what for no, again?” returned Shargar, beginning to smile.

“Weel, it’s weel speired[asked about, enquired]. Yer father was ane[one] ony[any] gait[way]—gin[if] sae be ’at ye are as ye say.”

Moray put his head close to hers, and whispered some words that nobody heard but herself.

“It’s ower[over] lang[long] syne[then] to min’ upo’[remember] that,” she said in reply, with a look of cunning consciousness ill settled upon her fine features. “But ye can be naebody but my Geordie. Haith, man!” she went on, regarding him once more from head to foot, “but ye’re a credit to me, I maun[must, have to] alloo. Weel, gie[give] me a sovereign, an’ I s’ never come near ye.”

Poor Shargar in his despair turned half mechanically towards Robert. He felt that it was time to interfere.

“You forget, mother,” said Shargar, turning again to her, and speaking English now, “it was I that claimed you, and not you that claimed me.”

She seemed to have no idea of what he meant.

“Come up the road here, to oor public[public house, pub], an’ tak a glaiss, wuman[woman],” said Falconer. “Dinna haud[hold, keep] the fowk[folk] luikin’[looking] at ye.”

The temptation of a glass of something strong, and the hope of getting money out of them, caused an instant acquiescence. She said a few words to the young woman, who proceeded at once to tie her donkey’s head to the tail of the other cart.

“Shaw[show] the gait[way] than,” said the elder, turning again to Falconer.

Shargar and he led the way to St. Paul’s Churchyard, and the woman followed faithfully. The waiter stared when they entered.

“Bring a glass of whisky,” said Falconer, as he passed on to their private room. When the whisky arrived, she tossed it off, and looked as if she would like another glass.

“Yer father ’ill[will] hae ta’en[taken, seized] ye up, I’m thinkin’, laddie?” she said, turning to her son.

“No,” answered Shargar, gloomily. “There’s the man that took me up.”

“An’ wha may ye be?” she asked, turning to Falconer.

“Mr. Falconer,” said Shargar.

“No a son o’ Anerew[Andrew] Faukner?” she asked again, with evident interest.

“The same,” answered Robert.

“Well, Geordie,” she said, turning once more to her son, “it’s like mither, like father to the twa o’ ye.”

“Did you know my father?” asked Robert, eagerly.

Instead of answering him she made another remark to her son.

“He needna be ashamed o’ *your* company, ony[any] gait[way]—queer kin’[kind] o’ a mither ’at I am.”

“He never was ashamed of my company,” said Shargar, still gloomily.

“Ay[yes, indeed], I kent[known, knew] yer father weel eneuch[enough],” she said, now answering Robert—“mair[more] by token ’at I saw him last nicht. He was luikin’[looking] nae[no, not] that ill.”

Robert sprung from his seat, and caught her by the arm.

“Ow[oh]! ye needna gang[go] into sic[such] a flurry. *He*’ll no come near ye, I s’ warran’.”

“Tell me where he is,” said Robert. “Where did you see him? I’ll gie[give] ye a’ ’at I hae gin[if] ye’ll tak me till him.”

“Hooly[slowly, cautiously]! Hooly! Wha’s[who is] to gang[go] luikin’[looking] for a thrum[tangle, mess] in a hay-sow[long stack of hay]?” returned she, coolly. “I only said ’at I saw him.”

“But are ye sure it was him?” asked Falconer.

“Ay[yes, indeed], sure eneuch[enough],” she answered.

“What maks[makes, does] ye sae sure?”

“’Cause I never was vrang[wrong] yet. Set a man ance[once] atween my twa een[eyes], an’ that ’ll be twa ’at kens him whan[when] ’s ain[own] mither ’s forgotten ’im.”

“Did you speak to him?”

“Maybe ay[yes, indeed], an’ maybe no. I didna come here to be hecklet[cross-questioned, examined] afore a jury.”

“Tell me what he’s like,” said Robert, agitated with eager hope.

“Gin[if] ye dinna ken what he’s like, what for suld[should] ye tak the trouble to speir[ask about, enquire]? But ’deed ye’ll ken what he’s like whan[when] ye fa’[fall, befall] in wi’ him,” she added, with a vindictive laugh—vindictive because he had given her only one glass of strong drink.

With the laugh she rose, and made for the door. They rose at the same moment to detain her. Like one who knew at once to fight and flee, she turned and stunned them as with a blow.

“She’s a fine yoong thing, yon sister o’ yours, Geordie. She’ll be worth siller[silver, money] by the time she’s had a while at the schuil.”

The men looked at each other aghast. When they turned their eyes she had vanished. They rushed to the door, and, parting, searched in both directions. But they were soon satisfied that it was of no use. Probably she had found a back way into Paternoster Row, whence the outlets are numerous.

Chapter 4 - The Doctor's Death

But now that Falconer had a ground, even thus shadowy, for hoping—I cannot say believing—that his father might be in London, he could not return to Aberdeen. Moray, who had no heart to hunt for his mother, left the next day by the steamer. Falconer took to wandering about the labyrinthine city, and in a couple of months knew more about the metropolis—the west end excepted—than most people who had lived their lives in it. The west end is no doubt a considerable exception to make, but Falconer sought only his father, and the west end was the place where he was least likely to find him. Day and night he wandered into all sorts of places: the worse they looked the more attractive he found them. It became almost a craze with him. He could not pass a dirty court or low-browed archway. He *might* be there. Or he might have been there. Or it was such a place as he would choose for shelter. He knew to what such a life as his must have tended.

At first he was attracted only by tall elderly men. Such a man he would sometimes follow till his following made him turn and demand his object. If there was no suspicion of Scotch in his tone, Falconer easily apologized. If there was, he made such replies as might lead to some betrayal. He could not defend the course he was adopting: it had not the shadow of probability upon its side. Still the greatest successes the world has ever beheld had been at one time the greatest improbabilities! He could not choose but go on, for as yet he could think of no other way.

Neither could a man like Falconer long confine his interest to this immediate object, especially after he had, in following it, found opportunity of being useful. While he still made it his main object to find

his father, that object became a centre from which radiated a thousand influences upon those who were as sheep that had no shepherd. He fell back into his old ways at Aberdeen, only with a boundless sphere to work in, and with the hope of finding his father to hearten him. He haunted the streets at night, went into all places of entertainment, often to the disgust of senses and soul, and made his way into the lowest forms of life without introduction or protection.

There was a certain stately air of the hills about him which was often mistaken for country inexperience, and men thought in consequence to make gain or game of him. But such found their mistake, and if not soon, then the more completely. Far from provoking or even meeting hostility, he soon satisfied those that persisted, that it was dangerous. In two years he became well known to the poor of a large district, especially on both sides of Shoreditch, for whose sake he made the exercise of his profession though not an object yet a ready accident.

He lived in lodgings in John Street—the same in which I found him when I came to know him. He made few acquaintances, and they were chiefly the house-surgeons of hospitals—to which he paid frequent visits.

He always carried a book in his pocket, but did not read much. On Sundays he generally went to some one of the many lonely heaths or commons of Surrey with his New Testament. When weary in London, he would go to the reading-room of the British Museum for an hour or two. He kept up a regular correspondence with Dr. Anderson.

At length he received a letter from him, which occasioned his immediate departure for Aberdeen. Until now, his friend, who was entirely satisfied with his mode of life, and supplied him freely with money, had not even expressed a wish to recall him, though he had often spoken of visiting him in London. It now appeared that, unwilling to

cause him any needless anxiety, he had abstained from mentioning the fact that his health had been declining. He had got suddenly worse, and Falconer hastened to obey the summons he had sent him in consequence.

With a heavy heart he walked up to the hospitable door, recalling as he ascended the steps how he had stood there a helpless youth, in want of a few pounds to save his hopes, when this friend received him and bid him God-speed on the path he desired to follow. In a moment more he was shown into the study, and was passing through it to go to the cottage-room, when Johnston laid his hand on his arm.

"The maister's no up yet, sir," he said, with a very solemn look. "He's been desperate efter[after] seein' ye, and I maun[must, have to] gang[go] an' lat[let, allow] him ken 'at ye're here at last, for fear it suld[should] be ower[over] muckle[much] for him, seein' ye a' at ance[once]. But eh, sir!" he added, the tears gathering in his eyes, "ye'll hardly ken 'im. He's that changed!"

Johnston left the study by the door to the cottage—Falconer had never known the doctor sleep there—and returning a moment after, invited him to enter. In the bed in the recess—the room unchanged, with its deal table, and its sanded floor—lay the form of his friend. Falconer hastened to the bedside, kneeled down, and took his hand speechless. The doctor was silent too, but a smile overspread his countenance, and revealed his inward satisfaction. Robert's heart was full, and he could only gaze on the worn face. At length he was able to speak.

"What for didna ye sen' for me?" he said. "Ye never tellt me ye was ailin'[ailing]."

"Because you were doing good, Robert, my boy; and I who had done so little had no right to interrupt what you were doing. I wonder if God will

give me another chance. I would fain do better. I don't think I *could* sit singing psalms to all eternity," he added with a smile.

"Whatever good I may do afore my turn comes, I hae you to thank for 't. Eh, doctor, gin[if] it hadna been for you!"

Robert's feelings overcame him. He resumed, brokenly,

"Ye gae[gave] me a man to believe in, whan[when] my ain[own] father had forsaken me, and my frien' was awa[away] to God. Ye hae made me, doctor. Wi' meat an' drink an' learnin' an' siller[silver, money], an' a'thing[everything, anything] at ance[once], ye hae made me."

"Eh, Robert!" said the dying man, half rising on his elbow, "to think what God maks[makes, does] us a' to ane[one] anither! My father did ten times for me what I hae dune[done] for you. As I lie here thinkin' I may see him afore a week's ower[over], I'm jist a bairn again."

As he spoke, the polish of his speech was gone, and the social refinement of his countenance with it. The face of his ancestors, the noble, sensitive, heart-full, but rugged, bucolic, and weather-beaten through centuries of windy ploughing, hail-stormed sheep-keeping, long-paced seed-sowing, and multiform labour, surely not less honourable in the sight of the working God than the fighting of the noble, came back in the face of the dying physician. From that hour to his death he spoke the rugged dialect of his fathers.

A day or two after this, Robert again sitting by his bedside,

"I dinna ken," he said, "whether it's richt—but I hae nae[no, not] fear o' deith, an' yet I canna say I'm sure aboot onything. I hae seen mony[many] a ane[one] dee[die] that cud[could] hae no faith i' the Saviour; but I never saw that fear that some gude fowk[folk] wud[would] hae ye believe maun[must, have to] come at the last. I wadna like to tak to ony[any] papistry; but I never cud[could] mak[make, do] oot[out] frae[from] the Bible—and I read mair[more] at it i' the jungle

than maybe ye wad[would] think—that it's a' ower[over] wi' a body at their deith. I never heard them bring foret[forward] ony[any] text but ane[one]—the maist[most, almost] ridiculous hash[mess, muddle] 'at ever ye heard—to justifee 't."

"I ken the text ye mean—'As the tree falleth so it shall lie,' or something like that—'at they say King Solomon wrote, though better scholars say his tree had fa'en[fallen] mony[many] a lang[long] year afore that text saw the licht. I dinna believe sic[such] a thocht[thought] was i' the man's heid[head] when he wrote it. It is as ye say—ower[over] contemptible to ca'[call] an argument. I'll read it to ye ance[once] mair[more]."

Robert got his Bible, and read the following portion from that wonderful book, so little understood, because it is so full of wisdom—the Book of Ecclesiastes:—

"Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.

"Give a portion to seven, and also to eight; for thou knowest not what evil shall be upon the earth.

"If the clouds be full of rain, they empty themselves upon the earth: and if the tree fall toward the south, or toward the north, in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be.

"He that observeth the wind shall not sow; and he that regardeth the clouds shall not reap.

"As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit, nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God who maketh all.

"In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening withhold not thine hand: for thou knowest not whether shall prosper, either this or that, or whether they both shall be alike good."

"Ay[yes, indeed], ay; that's it," said Dr. Anderson. "Weel, I maun[must, have to] say again that they're ill aff[off, away, past] for an argument that taks that for ane[one] upo' sic[such] a momentous subjec'. I prefer to say, wi' the same auld

man, that I know not the works of God who maketh all. But I wish I could say I believed onything for certain sure. But whan[when] I think aboot it—wad[would] ye believe 't? the faith o' my father's mair[more] to me nor[than] ony[any] faith o' my ain[own]. That soonds strange. But it's this: I'm positeeve that that godly great auld man kent[known, knew] mair[more] aboot a' thae[those, these] things—I cud[could] see 't i' the face o' 'm[him]—nor ony[any] ither[other] man 'at ever I kent[known, knew]. An' it's no by comparison only. I'm sure he *did* ken. There was something atween God and him. An' I think he wasna likely to be wrang[wrong, injured]; an' sae I tak courage to believe as muckle[much] as I can, though maybe no sae muckle[much] as I fain wad[would]."

Robert, who from experience of himself, and the observations he had made by the bedsides of not a few dying men and women, knew well that nothing but the truth itself can carry its own conviction; that the words of our Lord are a body as it were in which the spirit of our Lord dwells, or rather the key to open the heart for the entrance of that spirit, turned now from all argumentation to the words of Jesus. He himself had said of them, "They are spirit and they are life;" and what folly to buttress life and spirit with other powers than their own! From that day to the last, as often and as long as the dying man was able to listen to him, he read from the glad news just the words of the Lord. As he read thus, one fading afternoon, the doctor broke out with,

"Eh, Robert, the patience o' him! *He* didna quench the smokin' flax[smouldering wick (Matt.12:20)]. There's little fire aboot me, but surely I ken in my ain[own] hert[heart] some o' the risin' smoke o' the sacrifice. Eh! Sic[such] words as they are! An' he was gaein' doon to the grave himsel', no half my age, as peacefu', though the road was sae rouch[rough], as gin[if] he had been gaein' hame[home] till 's father."

"Sae he was," returned Robert.

“Ay; but here am I lyin’ upo’ my bed, slippin’ easy awa[away]. An’ there was he—”

The old man ceased. The sacred story was too sacred for speech. Robert sat with the New Testament open before him on the bed.

“The mair[more] the words o’ Jesus come into me,” the doctor began again, “the surer I am o’ seein’ my auld Brahmin frien’, Robert. It’s true I thought his religion not only began but ended inside him. It was a’ a booin’[bowing] doon afore and an aspirin’ up into the bosom o’ the infinite God. I dinna mean to say ’at he wasna honourable to them aboot him. And I never saw in him muckle[much] o’ that pride to the lave[others] that belangs to the Brahmin. It was raither a stately kin’ness[kindness] than that condescension which is the vice o’ Christians. But he had naething to do wi’ them. The first comman’ment was a’ he kent[known, knew]. He loved God —nae[no, not] a God like Jesus Christ, but the God he kent[known, knew]—and that was a’ he could. The second comman’ment—that glorious recognition o’ the divine in humanity makin’ ’t fit and needfu’ to be loved, that claim o’ God upon and for his ain[own] bairns, that love o’ the neebour as yer’sel—he didna ken. Still there was religion in him; and he who died for the sins o’ the whole world has surely been revealed to him lang[long] er’[ere, before] noo[now], and throu the knowledge o’ him, he noo[now] dwalls[dwells] in that God efter[after] whom he aspired.”

Here was the outcome of many talks which Robert and the doctor had had together, as they laboured amongst the poor.

“Did ye never try,” Robert asked, “to lat[let, allow] him ken aboot the comin’ o’ God to his world in Jesus Christ?”

“I couldna do muckle[much] that way honestly, my ain[own] faith was sae poor and sma’[small, little]. But I tellt him what Christians believed. I tellt him aboot the character and history o’ Christ. But it didna seem to tak

muckle[much] hauld[hold] o' him. It wasna interesstin' till him. Just ance[once] whan[when] I tellt him some things he had said aboot his relation to God—sic[such] as, 'I and my Father are one,'—and aboot the relation o' a' his disciples to God and himsel'—'I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one,' he said, wi' a smile, 'The man was a good Brahmin.'"

"It's little," said Robert, "the one great commandment can do withoot the other. It's little we can ken what God to love, or hoo[how] to love him, withoot 'thy neighbour as thyself.' Ony[any] ane[one] o' them withoot the ither[other] stan's[stands] like the ae factor o' a multiplication, or ae wing upo' a laverock[lark (bird)]."

Towards the close of the week, he grew much feebler. Falconer scarcely left his room. He woke one midnight, and murmured as follows, with many pauses for breath and strength:

"Robert, my time's near, I'm thinkin'; for, wakin' an' sleepin', I'm a bairn again. I can hardly believe whiles[sometimes, at times] 'at my father hasna a grup[grip, grasp] o' my han'. A meenute ago I was traivellin' throu a terrible driftin' o' snaw[snow]—eh, hoo[how] it whustled[whistled] and sang! and the cauld[cold] o' 't was stingin'; but my father had a grup[grip, grasp] o' me, an' I jist despised it, an' was stampin' 't doon wi' my wee bit feet, for I was like saven[seven] year auld or thereaboots. An' syne[then] I thocht[thought] I heard my mither singin', and kent[known, knew] by that that the ither[other] was a dream. I'm thinkin' a hantle[much, large quantity] 'ill[will] luik[look] dreamy afore lang[long]. Eh! I wonner[wonder, marvel] what the final waukin'[waking] 'ill[will] be like."

After a pause he resumed,

"Robert, my dear boy, ye're i' the richt gait[way]. Haud[hold, keep] on an' lat[let, allow] naething turn ye aside. Man, it's a great comfort to me to think that ye're my ain[own] flesh and blude[blood], an' nae[no, not] that far aff[off, away,

past. My father an' your great-gran'father upo' the gran'mither's side war were ain own brithers brothers, fellows. I wonner wonder, marvel hoo how far doon it wad would gang go. Ye're the only ane one upo' my father's side, you and yer father, gin if he *be* alive, that I hae sib relation, akin to me. My will's i' the bottom drawer upo' the left han' i' my writin' table i' the leebrary:—I hae left ye ilka every plack smallest coin (1/3 of penny) 'at I possess. Only there's ae thing that I want ye to do. First o' a', ye maun must, have to gang go on as yer doin' in London for ten year mair more. Gin if deein' dying men hae ony any o' that foresicht that's been attreebuted to them in a' ages, it's borne in upo' me that ye *wull will* see yer father again. At a' events, ye'll be helpin' some ill-faured ill-favored sowls souls to a clean comely face and a bonny. But gin if ye dinna fa' fall, befall in wi' yer father within ten year, ye maun must, have to behaud withhold, delay a wee, an' jist pack up yer box, an' gang go awa' away ower over the sea to Calcutta, an' du do what I hae tellt ye to do i' that wull will. I bind ye by nae no, not promise, Robert, an' I winna will not hae nane none. Things micht happen to put ye in a terrible difficulty wi' a promise. I'm only tellin' ye what I wad would like. Especially gin if ye hae fund found yer father, ye maun must, have to gang go by yer ain own jeedgment aboot it, for there 'll be a hantle much, large quantity to do wi' him efter after ye hae gotten a grup grip, grasp o' 'im. An' noo now, I maun must, have to lie still, an' maybe sleep again, for I hae spoken ower over muckle much."

Hoping that he would sleep and wake yet again, Robert sat still. After an hour, he looked, and saw that, although hitherto much oppressed, he was now breathing like a child. There was no sign save of past suffering: his countenance was peaceful as if he had already entered into his rest. Robert withdrew, and again seated himself. And the great universe became to him as a bird brooding over the breaking shell of the dying man.

On either hand we behold a birth, of which, as of the moon, we see but half. We are outside the one, waiting for a life from the unknown; we are inside the other, watching the departure of a spirit from the womb of the world into the unknown. To the region whither he goes, the man enters newly born. We forget that it is a birth, and call it a death. The body he leaves behind is but the *placenta* by which he drew his nourishment from his mother Earth. And as the child-bed is watched on earth with anxious expectancy, so the couch of the dying, as we call them, may be surrounded by the birth-watchers of the other world, waiting like anxious servants to open the door to which this world is but the wind-blown porch.

Extremes meet. As a man draws nigh to his second birth, his heart looks back to his childhood. When Dr. Anderson knew that he was dying, he retired into the *simulacrum* of his father's *benn*[inner room] *end*.

As Falconer sat thinking, the doctor spoke. They were low, faint, murmurous sounds, for the lips were nearly at rest. Wanted no more for utterance, they were going back to the holy dust, which is God's yet.

"Father, father!" he cried quickly, in the tone and speech of a Scotch laddie, "I'm gaein' doon. Haud[hold, keep] a grup[grip, grasp] o' my han'."

When Robert hurried to the bedside, he found that the last breath had gone in the words. The thin right hand lay partly closed, as if it had been grasping a larger hand. On the face lay confidence just ruffled with apprehension: the latter melted away, and nothing remained but that awful and beautiful peace which is the farewell of the soul to its servant.

Robert knelt and thanked God for the noble man.

Chapter 5 - A Talk with Grannie

Dr. Anderson's body was, according to the fine custom of many of the people of Aberdeen, borne to the grave by twelve stalwart men in black, with broad round *bonnets*[*man's caps*] on their heads, the one-half relieving the other—a privilege of the company of shore-porters. Their exequies are thus freed from the artificial, grotesque, and pagan horror given by obscene mutes, frightful hearse, horses, and feathers. As soon as, in the beautiful phrase of the Old Testament, John Anderson was thus gathered to his fathers, Robert went to pay a visit to his grandmother.

Dressed to a point in the same costume in which he had known her from childhood, he found her little altered in appearance. She was one of those who instead of stooping with age, settle downwards: she was still as erect as ever, though shorter. Her step was feebler, and when she prayed, her voice quavered more. On her face sat the same settled, almost hard repose, as ever; but her behaviour was still more gentle than when he had seen her last. Notwithstanding, however, that time had wrought so little change in her appearance, Robert felt that somehow the mist of a separation between her world and his was gathering; that she was, as it were, fading from his sight and presence, like the moon towards "her interlunar cave." Her face was gradually turning from him towards the land of light.

"I hae buried my best frien' but yersel', grannie," he said, as he took a chair close by her side, where he used to sit when he read the Bible and Boston to her.

"I trust he's happy. He was a douce[gentle, sensible] and a weel-behaved man; and ye hae rizzon[reason] to respec' his memory. Did he dee[die] the

deith o' the richteous, think ye, laddie?"

"I do think that, grannie. He loved God and his Saviour."

"The Lord be praised!" said Mrs. Falconer. "I had guid houps[hopes] o' 'im in 's latter days. And fowk[folk] says he's made a rich man o' ye, Robert?"

"He's left me ilka[every] thing, excep' something till 's servan's[servants]—wha hae weel deserved it."

"Eh, Robert! but it's a terrible snare. Siller[silver, money] 's an awfu' thing. My puir[poor] Anerew[Andrew] never begud[began] to gang[go] the ill gait[way], till he began to hae ower[over] muckle[much] siller[silver, money]. But it badena[did not bide] lang[long] wi' 'im."

"But it's no an ill thing itsel', grannie; for God made siller[silver, money] as weel 's ither[other] things."

"He thinksna muckle[much] o' 't, though, or he wad[would] gie[give] mair[more] o' 't to some fowk[folk]. But as ye say, it's his, and gin[if] ye hae grace to use 't aricht, it may be made a great blessin' to yersel' and ither[other] fowk[folk]. But eh, laddie! tak guid tent[attention, care, notice] 'at ye ride upo' the tap[top, tip, head] o' 't, an' no lat[let, allow] it rise like a muckle[much] jaw[billow, wave] ower[over] yer heid[head]; for it's an awfu' thing to be droont[drowned] in riches."

"Them 'at prays no to be led into temptation hae a chance—haena they, grannie?"

"That hae they, Robert. And to be plain wi' ye, I haena that muckle[much] fear o' ye; for I hae heard the kin'[kind] o' life 'at ye hae been leadin'. God's hearkent to my prayers for you; and gin[if] ye gang[go] on as ye hae begun, my prayers, like them o' David the son o' Jesse, are endit. Gang[go] on, my dear lad, gang[go] on to pluck brands frae[from] the burnin'. Haud[hold, keep] oot[out] a helpin' han' to ilka[every] son and dauchter o' Adam 'at will tak a

grip o' 't. Be a burnin' an' a shinin' licht, that men may praise, no you, for ye're but clay i' the han's[hands] o' the potter, but yer Father in heaven. Tak the drunkard frae[from] his whusky, the deboshed[debauched] frae[from] his debosh[debauchery], the sweirer frae[from] his aiths[oaths], the leear[lier] frae[from] his lees[lies]; and giena[do not give] ony[any] o' them ower[over] muckle[much] o' yer siller[silver, money] at ance[once], for fear 'at they grow fat an' kick an' defy God and you. That's my advice to ye, Robert."

"And I houp[hope] I'll be able to haud[hold, keep] gey[fairly, considerably] and near till 't, grannie, for it's o' the best. But wha[who] tellt ye what I was aboot in Lonnon?"

"Himsel'."

"Dr. Anderson?"

"Ay[yes, indeed], jist himsel'. I hae had letter upo' letter frae[from] 'im aboot you and a' 'at ye was aboot. He keepit[kept] me acquant wi' 't a'."

This fresh proof of his friend's affection touched Robert deeply. He had himself written often to his grandmother, but he had never entered into any detail of his doings, although the thought of her was ever at hand beside the thought of his father.

"Do ye ken, grannie, what's at the hert[heart] o' my houps[hopes] i' the meesery an' degradation that I see frae[from] mornin' to nicht, and aftener[more often] yet frae nicht to mornin' i' the back closes and wynds[alleys and narrow streets] o' the great city?"

"I trust it's the glory o' God, laddie."

"I houp[hope] that's no a'thegither[all together] wantin', grannie. For I love God wi' a' my hert[heart]. But I doobt[suspect] it's aftener[more often] the savin' o' my earthly father nor[than] the glory o' my heavenly ane[one] that I'm thinkin' o'."

Mrs. Falconer heaved a deep sigh.

"God grant ye success, Robert," she said. "But that canna be richt."

"What canna be richt?"

"No to put the glory o' God first and foremost."

"Weel, grannie; but a body canna rise to the heicht o' grace a' at ance[once], nor yet in ten, or twenty year. Maybe gin[if] I do richt, I may be able to come to that or a' be dune[done]. An' efter[after] a', I'm sure I love God mair[more] nor[than] my father. But I canna help thinkin' this, that gin[if] God heardna ae sang o' glory frae[from] this ill-doin' earth o' his, he wadna be nane[none] the waur[worse]; but—"

"Hoo[how] ken ye that?" interrupted his grandmother.

"Because he wad[would] be as gude and great and grand as ever."

"Ow[oh] ay[yes, indeed]."

"But what wad[would] come o' my father wantin' his salvation? He can waur[worse] want that, remainin' the slave o' iniquity, than God can want his glory. Forby[as well], ye ken there's nae[no, not] glory to God like the repentin' o' a sinner, justifeein' God, an' sayin' till him—'Father, ye're a' richt, an' I'm a' wrang[wrong, injured].' What greater glory can God hae nor[than] that?"

"It's a' true 'at ye say. But still gin[if] God cares for that same glory, ye oucht[ought] to think o' that first, afore even the salvation o' yer father."

"Maybe ye're richt, grannie. An' gin[if] it be as ye say—he's promised to lead us into a' trowth[truth, indeed], an' he'll lead me into that trowth[truth, indeed]. But I'm thinkin' it's mair[more] for oor sakes than his ain[own] 'at he cares aboot his glory. I dinna believe 'at he thinks aboot his glory excep' for the sake o' the trowth[truth, indeed] an' men's herts[hearts] deein'[dying] for want o' 't."

Mrs. Falconer thought for a moment.

"It may be 'at ye're richt, laddie; but ye hae a way o' sayin' things 'at 's some fearsome."

"God's nae[no, not] like a prood man to tak offence, grannie. There's naething pleases him like the trowth[truth, indeed], an' there's naething displeases him like leein'[lying], particularly whan[when] it's by way o' uphaudin' him. He wants nae[no, not] sic[such] uphaudin'. Noo[now], *ye* say things aboot him whiles[sometimes, at times] 'at soun's[sounds] to me fearsome."

"What kin'[kind] o' things are they, laddie?" asked the old lady, with offence glooming in the background.

"Sic[such] like as whan[when] ye speyk aboot him as gin[if] he was a puir[poor] prood[proud] bailey-like[pompous air of a magistrate (bailie)] body, fu'[full] o' his ain[own] importance, an' ready to be doon upo' onybody 'at didna ca'[call] him by the name o' 's office—ay[yes, indeed] think-thinkin' aboot 's ain[own] glory; in place o' the quaiet, michty[mighty, God], gran', self-forgettin', a'-creatin'[all-creating], a'-uphaudin'[all-upholding], eternal bein', wha took the form o' man in Christ Jesus, jist that he micht hae 't in 's pooer to beir[bear] and be humblet[humbled] for oor sakes. Eh, grannie! think o' the face o' that man o' sorrows, that never said a hard word till a sinfu' wuman[woman], or a despised publican: was he thinkin' aboot 's ain[own] glory, think ye? An' we hae no richt to say we ken God save in the face o' Christ Jesus. Whatever 's no like Christ is no like God."

"But, laddie, he cam to saitisfee God's justice by sufferin' the punishment due to oor sins; to turn aside his wrath an' curse; to reconcile him to us. Sae he cudna be *a'thegither*[*all together*] like God."

"He did naething o' the kin'[kind], grannie. It's a' a lee that. He cam to saitisfee God's justice by giein'[giving] him back his bairns; by garrin'[causing, compelling] them see that God was just; by sendin' them greetin'[crying, weeping

hame[home] to fa'[fall, befall] at his feet, an' grip his knees an' say, 'Father, ye're i' the richt.' He cam to lift the weicht o' the sins that God had curst aff[off, away, past] o' the shoothers[shoulders] o' them 'at did them, by makin' them turn agen[against] them, an' be for God an' no for sin. And there isna a word o' reconceelin' God till 's in a' the Testament, for there was no need o' that: it was us that he needed to be reconcilet to him. An' sae he bore oor sins and carried oor sorrows; for those sins comin' oot[out] in the multitudes—ay[yes, indeed] and in his ain[own] disciples as weel, caused him no en' o' grief o' mind an' pain o' body, as a'body[everybody] kens. It wasna his ain[own] sins, for he had nane[none], but oors, that caused him sufferin'; and he took them awa'[away]—they're vainishin' even noo[now] frae[from] the earth, though it doesna luik[look] like it in Rag-fair or Petticoat-lane. An' for oor sorrows—they jist garred[caused, compelled] him greit[cry, weep]. His richteousness jist annihilates oor guilt, for it's a great gulf that swallows up and destroys 't. And sae he gae[gave] his life a ransom for us: and he is the life o' the world. He took oor sins upo' him, for he cam into the middle o' them an' took them up—by no sleicht o' han', by no quibblin' o' the lawyers, aboot imputin' his richteousness to us, and sic[such] like, which is no to be found i' the Bible at a', though I dinna say that there's no possible meanin' i' the phrase, but he took them and took them awa'[away]; and here am I, grannie, growin' oot[out] o' my sins in consequennce, and there are ye, grannie, growin' oot[out] o' yours in consequennce, an' haein' nearhan' dune[done] wi' them a'thegither[all together] er[ere, before] this time."

"I wis[wish] that may be true, laddie. But I carena[do not care] hoo[how] ye put it," returned his grandmother, bewildered no doubt with this outburst, "sae be that ye put him first an' last an' i' the mids'[midst, middle] o' a' thing[everything, anything], an' say wi' a' yer hert[heart], 'His will be dune[done]!'"

"Wi' a' my hert[heart], 'His will be dune[done],' grannie," responded Robert.

“Amen, amen. And noo[now], laddie, duv[do] ye think there’s ony[any] likliheid that yer father ’s still i’ the body? I dream aboot him whiles[sometimes, at times] sae lifelike that I canna believe him deid. But that’s a’ freits[superstitious fancies].”

“Weel, grannie, I haena the least assurance. But I hae the mair[more] houp[hope]. Wad[would] ye ken him gin[if] ye saw him?”

“Ken him!” she cried; “I wad[would] ken him gin[if] he had been no to say four, but forty days i’ the sepulchre! My ain[own] Anerew! Hoo[how] cud[could] ye speir[ask about, enquire] sic[such] a queston, laddie?”

“He maun[must, have to] be sair[sore] changed, grannie. He maun[must, have to] be turnin’ auld by this time.”

“Auld! Sic[such] like ’s yersel, laddie.—hoots[pshaw], hoots[pshaw]! ye’re richt. I am forgettin’. But nanetheless wad[would] I ken him.”

“I wis[wish] I kent[known, knew] what he was like. I saw him ance[once]—hardly twise[twice], but a’ that I min’ upo’[remember] wad[would] stan’[stand] me in ill stead amo’[among] the streets o’ Lonnon.”

“I doobt[suspect] that,” returned Mrs. Falconer—a form of expression rather oddly indicating sympathetic and somewhat regretful agreement with what has been said. “But,” she went on, “I can lat[let, allow] ye see a pictur’ o’ ’im, though I doobt[suspect] it winna[will not] shaw[show] sae muckle[much] to you as to me. He had it paintit to gie[give] to yer mother upo’ their weddin’ day. Och hone[alas]! She did the like for him; but what cam o’ that ane[one], I dinna ken.”

Mrs. Falconer went into the little closet to the old bureau, and bringing out the miniature, gave it to Robert. It was the portrait of a young man in antiquated blue coat and white waistcoat, looking innocent, and, it must be confessed, dull and uninteresting. It had been painted by a travelling artist, and probably his skill did not reach to

expression. It brought to Robert's mind no faintest shadow of recollection. It did not correspond in the smallest degree to what seemed his vague memory, perhaps half imagination, of the tall worn man whom he had seen that Sunday. He could not have a hope that this would give him the slightest aid in finding him of whom it had once been a shadowy resemblance at least.

"Is 't like him, grannie?" he asked.

As if to satisfy herself once more ere she replied, she took the miniature, and gazed at it for some time. Then with a deep hopeless sigh, she answered,

"Ay[yes, indeed], it's like him; but it's no himsel'. Eh, the bonny broo[eyebrow], an' the smilin' een[eyes] o' him!—smilin' upon a'body[everybody], an' upo' her maist[most, almost] o' a', till he took to the drink, and waur[worse] gin[if] waur can be. It was a' siller[silver, money] an' company—company 'at cudna be merry ohn[without] drunken. Verity their lauchter was like the cracklin' o' thorns aneath a pot. Het[hot] watter[water] and whusky was aye the cry efter[after] their denner[dinner] an' efter[after] their supper, till my puir[poor] Anerew tuik[took] till the bare whusky i' the mornin' to fill the ebb o' the toddy. He wad[would] never hae dune[done] as he did but for the whusky. It jist drave[drove] oot[out] a' gude and loot[let] in a' ill."

"Wull[will] ye lat[let, allow] me tak this wi' me, grannie?" said Robert; for though the portrait was useless for identification, it might serve a further purpose.

"Ow[oh], ay[yes, indeed], tak it. I dinna want it. I can see him weel wantin' that. But I hae nae[no, not] houp[hope] left 'at ye'll ever fa'[fall, befall] in wi' him."

"God's aye doin' unlikly things, grannie," said Robert, solemnly.

"He's dune[done] a' 'at he can for him, I doobt[suspect], already."

“Duv[do] ye think ’at God cudna save a man gin[if] he liket, than, grannie?”

“God can do a’thing[everything, anything]. There’s nae[no, not] doobt[suspect] but by the gift o’ his speerit he cud[could] save a’body[everybody].”

“An’ ye think he’s no mercifu’ eneuch[enough] to do ’t?”

“It winna[will not] do to meddle wi’ fowk’s[folk’s] free wull[will]. To gar[cause, compel] fowk[folk] he gude wad[would] be nae[no, not] gudeness.”

“But gin[if] God could actually create the free wull[will], dinna ye think he cud[could] help it to gang[go] richt, withoot ony[any] garrin’[causing, compelling]? We ken sae little aboot it, grannie! Hoo[how] does his speerit help onybody? Does he *gar*[*cause, compel*] them ’at accep’s the offer o’ salvation?”

“Na, I canna think that. But he shaws[shows] them the trowth[truth, indeed] in sic[such] a way that they jist canna bide themsel’s, but maun[must, have to] turn to him for verra[very] peace an’ rist[rest].”

“Weel, that’s something as I think. An’ until I’m sure that a man has had the trowth[truth, indeed] shawn[shown] till him in sic[such] a way ’s that, I canna alloo mysel’ to think that hooever he may hae sinned, he has finally rejeckit the trowth[truth, indeed]. Gin[if] I kent[known, knew] that a man had seen the trowth[truth, indeed] as I hae seen ’t whiles[sometimes, at times], and had deleeberately turned his back upo’ ’t and said, “I’ll nane[none] o’ ’t,” than I doobt[suspect] I wad[would] be maist[most, almost] compelled to alloo that there was nae[no, not] mair[more] salvation for him, but a certain and fearfu’ luikin’[looking] for o’ judgment and fiery indignation. But I dinna believe that ever man did sae. But even than, I dinna ken.”

“I did a’ for him that I kent[known, knew] hoo[how] to do,” said Mrs. Falconer, reflectingly. “Nicht an’ mornin’ an’ aften[often] midday prayin’ for an’ wi’ him.”

“Maybe ye scunnert[disgusted, loathed] him at it, grannie.”

She gave a stifled cry of despair.

“Dinna say that, laddie, or ye’ll drive me oot[out] o’ my min’. God forgie[forgive] me, gin[if] that be true. I deserve hell mair[more] nor[than] my Anerew.”

“But, ye see, grannie, supposin’ it war[were] sae, that wadna be laid to your accoont, seein’ ye did the best ye kent[known, knew]. Nor wad[would] it be forgotten to him. It wad[would] mak[make, do] a hantle[much, large quantity] difference to his sin; it wad[would] be a great excuse for him. An’ jist think, gin[if] it be fair for ae human being to influence anither a’ ’at they can, and that’s nae[no, not] interferin’ wi’ their free wull[will]—it’s impossible to measure what God cud[could] do wi’ his speerit winnin’ at them frae[from] a’ sides, and able to put sic[such] thouchts an’ sic[such] pictures into them as we canna think. It wad[would] a’ be true that he tellt them, and the trowth[truth, indeed] can never be a meddlin’ wi’ the free wull.”

Mrs. Falconer made no reply, but evidently went on thinking.

She was, though not a great reader, yet a good reader. Any book that was devout and thoughtful she read gladly. Through some one or other of this sort she must have been instructed concerning free will, for I do not think such notions could have formed any portion of the religious teaching she had heard. Men in that part of Scotland then believed that the free will of man was only exercised in rejecting—never in accepting the truth; and that men were saved by the gift of the Spirit, given to some and not to others, according to the free will of God, in the exercise of which no reason appreciable by men, or having anything to do with their notions of love or justice, had any share. In the recognition of will and choice in the acceptance of the mercy of God, Mrs. Falconer was then in advance of her time. And it is no wonder if her notions did not all hang logically together.

"At ony[any] rate, grannie," resumed her grandson, *"I* haena dune[done] a' for him 'at *I* can yet; and I'm no gaein' to believe onything that wad[would] mak[make, do] me remiss in my endeavour. Houp[hope] for mysel', for my father, for a'body[everybody], is what's savin' me, an' garrin'[causing, compelling] me work. An' gin[if] ye tell me that I'm no workin' wi' God, that God's no the best an' the greatest worker aboon[above, over] a', ye tak the verra[very] hert[heart] oot[out] o' my breist[breast], and I dinna believe in God nae[no, not] mair[more], an' my han's[hands] drap[drop] doon by my sides, an' my legs winna[will not] gang[go]. No,' said Robert, rising, "God 'ill[will] gie[give] me my father sometime, grannie; for what man can do wantin' a father? Human bein' canna win[get, go] at the hert[heart] o' things, canna ken a' the oots[outs] an' ins, a' the sides o' love, excep' he has a father amo'[among] the lave[others] to love; an' I hae had nane[none], grannie. An' that God kens."

She made him no answer. She dared not say that he expected too much from God. Is it likely that Jesus will say so of any man or woman when he looks for faith in the earth?

Robert went out to see some of his old friends, and when he returned it was time for supper and *worship*. These were the same as of old: a plate of porridge, and a wooden bowl of milk for the former; a chapter and a hymn, both read, and a prayer from grannie, and then from Robert for the latter. And so they went to bed.

But Robert could not sleep. He rose and dressed himself, went up to the empty garret, looked at the stars through the skylight, knelt and prayed for his father and for all men to the Father of all, then softly descended the stairs, and went out into the street.

Chapter 6 - Shargar's Mother

It was a warm still night in July—moonless but not dark. There is no night there in the summer—only a long ethereal twilight. He walked through the sleeping town so full of memories, all quiet in his mind now—quiet as the air that ever broods over the house where a friend has dwelt. He left the town behind, and walked—through the odours of grass and of clover and of the yellow flowers on the old earthwalls that divided the fields—sweet scents to which the darkness is friendly, and which, mingling with the smell of the earth itself, reach the founts of memory sooner than even words or tones—down to the brink of the river that flowed scarcely murmuring through the night, itself dark and brown as the night from its far-off birthplace in the peaty hills. He crossed the footbridge and turned into the bleachfield. Its houses were desolate, for that trade too had died away. The machinery stood rotting and rusting. The wheel gave no answering motion to the flow of the water that glided away beneath it. The thundering *beatles* were still. The huge legs of the wauk-mill[fulling-mill] took no more seven-leagued strides nowhither. The rubbing-boards with their thickly-fluted surfaces no longer frothed the soap from every side, tormenting the web of linen into a brightness to gladden the heart of the housewife whose hands had spun the yarn. The terrible boiler that used to send up from its depths bubbling and boiling spouts and peaks and ridges, lay empty and cold. The little house behind, where its awful furnace used to glow, and which the pungent chlorine used to fill with its fumes, stood open to the wind and the rain: he could see the slow river through its unglazed window beyond. The water still went slipping and sliding through the deserted places, a power whose use had departed. The canal, the delight of his childhood, was nearly

choked with weeds; it went flowing over long grasses that drooped into it from its edges, giving a faint gurgle once and again in its flow, as if it feared to speak in the presence of the stars, and escaped silently into the river far below. The grass was no longer mown like a lawn, but was long and deep and thick. He climbed to the place where he had once lain and listened to the sounds of the belt of fir-trees behind him, hearing the voice of Nature that whispered *God* in his ears, and there he threw himself down once more. All the old things, the old ways, the old glories of childhood—were they gone? No. Over them all, in them all, was God still. There is no past with him. An eternal present, He filled his soul and all that his soul had ever filled. His history was taken up into God: it had not vanished: his life was hid with Christ in God. To the God of the human heart nothing that has ever been a joy, a grief, a passing interest, can ever cease to be what it has been; there is no fading at the breath of time, no passing away of fashion, no dimming of old memories in the heart of him whose being creates time. Falconer's heart rose up to him as to his own deeper life, his indwelling deepest spirit—above and beyond him as the heavens are above and beyond the earth, and yet nearer and homelier than his own most familiar thought. "As the light fills the earth," thought he, "so God fills what we call life. My sorrows, O God, my hopes, my joys, the upliftings of my life are with thee, my root, my life. Thy comfortings, my perfect God, are strength indeed!"

He rose and looked around him. While he lay, the waning, fading moon had risen, weak and bleared and dull. She brightened and brightened until at last she lighted up the night with a wan, forgetful gleam. "So should I feel," he thought, "about the past on which I am now gazing, were it not that I believe in the God who forgets nothing. That which has been, is." His eye fell on something bright in the field beyond.

He would see what it was, and crossed the earthen dyke. It shone like a little moon in the grass. By humouring the reflection he reached it. It was only a cutting of *white iron*, left by some tinker. He walked on over the field, thinking of Shargar's mother. If he could but find her! He walked on and on. He had no inclination to go home. The solitariness of the night, the *uncanniness* of the moon, prevents most people from wandering far: Robert had learned long ago to love the night, and to feel at home with every aspect of God's world. How this peace contrasted with the nights in London streets! this grass with the dark flow of the Thames! these hills and those clouds half melted into moonlight with the lanes blazing with gas! He thought of the child who, taken from London for the first time, sent home the message: "Tell mother that it's dark in the country at night." Then his thoughts turned again to Shargar's mother! Was it not possible, being a wanderer far and wide, that she might be now in Rothieden? Such people have a love for their old haunts, stronger than that of orderly members of society for their old homes. He turned back, and did not know where he was. But the lines of the hill-tops directed him. He hastened to the town, and went straight through the sleeping streets to the back wynd[narrow lane or street] where he had found Shargar sitting on the doorstep. Could he believe his eyes? A feeble light was burning in the shed. Some other poverty-stricken bird of the night, however, might be there, and not she who could perhaps guide him to the goal of his earthly life. He drew near, and peeped in at the broken window. A heap of something lay in a corner, watched only by a long-snuffed candle.

The heap moved, and a voice called out querulously,

"Is that you, Shargar, ye shochlin[in-kneed, waddling] deevil?"

Falconer's heart leaped. He hesitated no longer, but lifted the latch and entered. He took up the candle, snuffed it as he best could, and approached the woman. When the light fell on her face she sat up, staring wildly with eyes that shunned and sought it.

"Wha are ye that winna[will not] lat[let, allow] me dee[die] in peace and quaietness?"

"I'm Robert Falconer."

"Come to speir[ask about, enquire] efter[after] yer ne'er-do-weel o' a father, I reckon," she said.

"Yes," he answered.

"Wha's[who is] that ahin' ye?"

"Naebody's ahin' me," answered Robert.

"Dinna lee. Wha's[who is] that ahin' the door?"

"Naebody. I never tell lees[lies]."

"Whaur's Shargar? What for doesna he come till 's mither?"

"He's hynd[straight, by the nearest road] awa'[away] ower[over] the seas—a captain o' sodgers[soldiers]."

"It's a lee. He's an ill-faured[ill-favored] scoonrel no to come till 's mither an' bid her gude-bye, an' her gaein' to hell."

"Gin[if] ye speir[ask, inquire] at Christ, he'll tak ye oot[out] o' the verra[very] mou'[mouth] o' hell, wuman."

'Christ! Wha's[who is] that? Ow[oh], ay[yes, indeed]! It's him 'at they preach aboot i' the kirks. Na, na. There's nae[no, not] gude o' that. There's nae[no, not] time to repent noo[now]. I doobt[suspect] sic[such] repentance as mine wadna gang[go] for muckle[much] wi' the likes o' him."

“The likes o’ him ’s no to be gotten. He cam to save the likes o’ you an’ me.”

“The likes o’ you an’ me! said ye, laddie? There’s no like atween you and me. He’ll hae naething to say to me, but ‘gang[go] to hell wi’ ye for a bitch.’”

“He never said sic[such] a word in ’s life. He wad[would] say, ‘Poor thing! she was ill-used. Ye maunna[must not, may not] sin ony[any] mair[more]. Come, and I’ll help ye.’ He wad[would] say something like that. He’ll save a body whan[when] she wadna think it.”

“An’ I hae gien[given] my bonnie bairn to the deevil wi’ my ain[own] han’s[hands]! She’ll come to hell efter[after] me to girn[grimace, snarl] at me, an’ set them on me wi’ their reid[red] het[hot] taings[tongs, prongs], and curse me. Och hone[alas]! Och hone!”

“Hearken to me,” said Falconer, with as much authority as he could assume. But she rolled herself over again in the corner, and lay groaning.

“Tell me whaur she is,” said Falconer, “and I’ll tak her oot[out] o’ their grup[grip, grasp], whaever[whoever] they be.”

She sat up again, and stared at him for a few moments without speaking.

“I left her wi’ a wuman[woman] waur[worse] nor[than] mysel’,” she said at length. “God forgie[forgive] me.”

“He will forgie[forgive] ye, gin[if] ye tell me whaur she is.”

“Do ye think he will? Eh, Maister Faukner! The wuman[woman] bides in a coort off o’ Clare Market. I dinna min’ upo’[remember] the name o’ ’t, though I cud[could] gang[go] till ’t wi’ my een[eyes] steekit[shut, closed, clenched]. *Her* name’s Widow Walker—an auld rowdie[ugly hag]—damn her sowl[soul]!”

“Na, na, ye maunna[must not, may not] say that gin[if] ye want to be forgien yersel’. I’ll fin’ her oot[out]. An’ I’m thinkin’ it winna[will not] be lang[long] or I hae a grup[grip, grasp] o’ her. I’m gaein’ back to Lonnon in twa days or three.”

‘Dinna gang[go] till I’m deid. Bide an’ haud[hold, keep] the deevil aff[off, away, past] o’ me. He has a grup[grip, grasp] o’ my hert[heart] noo[now], rivin’[tearing, wrenching] at it wi’ his lang[long] nails—as lang[long] ’s birds’ nebs[nibs, claws].’

“I’ll bide wi’ ye till we see what can be dune[done] for ye. What’s the maitter[matter] wi’ ye? I’m a doctor noo[now].”

There was not a chair or box or stool on which to sit down. He therefore kneeled beside her. He felt her pulse, questioned her, and learned that she had long been suffering from an internal complaint, which had within the last week grown rapidly worse. He saw that there was no hope of her recovery, but while she lived he gave himself to her service as to that of a living soul capable of justice and love. The night was more than warm, but she had fits of shivering. He wrapped his coat round her, and wiped from the poor degraded face the damps of suffering. The woman-heart was alive still, for she took the hand that ministered to her and kissed it with a moan. When the morning came she fell asleep. He crept out and went to his grandmother’s, where he roused Betty, and asked her to get him some peat and coals. Finding his grandmother awake, he told her all, and taking the coals and the peat, carried them to the hut, where he managed, with some difficulty, to light a fire on the hearth; after which he sat on the doorstep till Betty appeared with two men carrying a mattress and some bedding. The noise they made awoke her.

“Dinna tak me,” she cried. “I winna[will not] do ’t again, an’ I’m deein’[dying], I tell ye I’m deein’, and that’ll clear a’ scores—o’ this side ony[any] gait[way],”

she added.

They lifted her upon the mattress, and made her more comfortable than perhaps she had ever been in her life. But it was only her illness that made her capable of prizing such comfort. In health, the heather on a hill-side was far more to her taste than bed and blankets. She had a wild, roving, savage nature, and the wind was dearer to her than house-walls. She had come of ancestors—and it was a poor little atom of truth that a soul bred like this woman could have been born capable of entertaining. But she too was eternal—and surely not to be fixed for ever in a bewilderment of sin and ignorance—a wild-eyed soul staring about in hell-fire for want of something it could not understand and had never beheld—by the changeless mandate of the God of love! She was in less pain than during the night, and lay quietly gazing at the fire. Things awful to another would no doubt cross her memory without any accompanying sense of dismay; tender things would return without moving her heart; but Falconer had a hold of her now. Nothing could be done for her body except to render its death as easy as might be; but something might be done for herself. He made no attempt to produce this or that condition of mind in the poor creature. He never made such attempts. “How can I tell the next lesson a soul is capable of learning?” he would say. “The Spirit of God is the teacher. My part is to tell the good news. Let that work as it ought, as it can, as it will.” He knew that pain is with some the only harbinger that can prepare the way for the entrance of kindness: it is not understood till then. In the lulls of her pain he told her about the man Christ Jesus—what he did for the poor creatures who came to him—how kindly he spoke to them—how he cured them. He told her how gentle he was with the sinning women, how he forgave them and told them to do so no more. He left the story without comment to

work that faith which alone can redeem from selfishness and bring into contact with all that is living and productive of life, for to believe in him is to lay hold of eternal life: he is the Life—therefore the life of men. She gave him but little encouragement: he did not need it, for he believed in the Life. But her outcries were no longer accompanied with that fierce and dreadful language in which she sought relief at first. He said to himself, "What matter if I see no sign? I am doing my part. Who can tell, when the soul is free from the distress of the body, when sights and sounds have vanished from her, and she is silent in the eternal, with the terrible past behind her, and clear to her consciousness, how the words I have spoken to her may yet live and grow in her; how the kindness God has given me to show her may help her to believe in the root of all kindness, in the everlasting love of her Father in heaven? That she can feel at all is as sure a sign of life as the adoration of an ecstatic saint."

He had no difficulty now in getting from her what information she could give him about his father. It seemed to him of the greatest import, though it amounted only to this, that when he was in London, he used to lodge at the house of an old Scotchwoman of the name of Macallister, who lived in Paradise Gardens, somewhere between Bethnal Green and Spitalfields. Whether he had been in London lately, she did not know; but if anybody could tell him where he was, it would be Mrs. Macallister.

His heart filled with gratitude and hope and the surging desire for the renewal of his London labours. But he could not leave the dying woman till she was beyond the reach of his comfort: he was her keeper now. And "he that believeth shall not make haste." Labour without perturbation, readiness without hurry, no haste, and no hesitation, was the divine law of his activity.

Shargar's mother breathed her last holding his hand. They were alone. He kneeled by the bed, and prayed to God, saying,

"Father, this woman is in thy hands. Take thou care of her, as thou hast taken care of her hitherto. Let the light go up in her soul, that she may love and trust thee, O light, O gladness. I thank thee that thou hast blessed me with this ministration. Now lead me to my father. Thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever and ever. Amen."

He rose and went to his grandmother and told her all. She put her arms round his neck, and kissed him, and said,

"God bless ye, my bonny lad. And he will bless ye. He will; he will. Noo[now] gang yer wa's[go on], and do the wark[work] he gies[gives] ye to do. Only min'[mind, remember], it's no you; it's him."

The next morning, the sweet winds of his childhood wooing him to remain yet a day among their fields, he sat on the top of the Aberdeen coach, on his way back to the horrors of court and alley in the terrible London.

Chapter 7 - The Silk-Weaver

When he arrived he made it his first business to find “Widow Walker.” She was evidently one of the worst of her class; and could it have been accomplished without scandal, and without interfering with the quietness upon which he believed that the true effect of his labours in a large measure depended, he would not have scrupled simply to carry off the child. With much difficulty, for the woman was suspicious, he contrived to see her, and was at once reminded of the child he had seen in the cart on the occasion of Shargar’s recognition of his mother. He fancied he saw in her some resemblance to his friend Shargar. The affair ended in his paying the woman a hundred and fifty pounds to give up the girl. Within six months she had drunk herself to death. He took little Nancy Kennedy home with him, and gave her in charge to his housekeeper. She cried a good deal at first, and wanted to go back to Mother Walker, but he had no great trouble with her after a time. She began to take a share in the house-work, and at length to wait upon him. Then Falconer began to see that he must cultivate relations with other people in order to enlarge his means of helping the poor. He nowise abandoned his conviction that whatever good he sought to do or lent himself to aid must be effected entirely by individual influence. He had little faith in societies, regarding them chiefly as a wretched substitute, just better than nothing, for that help which the neighbour is to give to his neighbour. Finding how the unbelief of the best of the poor is occasioned by hopelessness in privation, and the sufferings of those dear to them, he was confident that only the personal communion of friendship could make it possible for them to believe in God. Christians must be in the world as He was in the world; and in proportion as the

truth radiated from them, the world would be able to believe in Him. Money he saw to be worse than useless, except as a gracious outcome of human feelings and brotherly love. He always insisted that the Saviour healed only those on whom his humanity had laid hold; that he demanded faith of them in order to make them regard him, that so his personal being might enter into their hearts. Healing without faith in its source would have done them harm instead of good—would have been to them a windfall, not a Godsend; at best the gift of magic, even sometimes the power of Satan casting out Satan. But he must not therefore act as if he were the only one who could render this individual aid, or as if men influencing the poor individually could not aid each other in their individual labours. He soon found, I say, that there were things he could not do without help, and Nancy was his first perplexity. From this he was delivered in a wonderful way.

One afternoon he was *prowling* about Spitalfields, where he had made many acquaintances amongst the silk-weavers and their families. Hearing a loud voice as he passed down a stair from the visit he had been paying further up the house, he went into the room whence the sound came, for he knew a little of the occupant. He was one De Fleuri, or as the neighbours called him, Diffleery, in whose countenance, after generations of want and debasement, the delicate lines and noble cast of his ancient race were yet emergent. This man had lost his wife and three children, his whole family except a daughter now sick, by a slow-consuming hunger; and he did not believe there was a God that ruled in the earth. But he supported his unbelief by no other argument than a hopeless bitter glance at his empty loom. At this moment he sat silent—a rock against which the noisy waves of a combative Bible-reader were breaking in rude foam. His silence and apparent impassiveness angered

the irreverent little worthy. To Falconer's humour he looked a vulgar bull-terrier barking at a noble, sad-faced staghound. His foolish arguments against infidelity, drawn from Paley's *Natural Theology*, and tracts about the inspiration of the Bible, touched the sore-hearted unbelief of the man no nearer than the clangour of negro kettles affects the eclipse of the sun. Falconer stood watching his opportunity. Nor was the eager disputant long in affording him one. Socratic fashion, Falconer asked him a question, and was answered; followed it with another, which, after a little hesitation, was likewise answered; then asked a third, the ready answer to which involved such a flagrant contradiction of the first, that the poor sorrowful weaver burst into a laugh of delight at the discomfiture of his tormentor. After some stammering, and a confused attempt to recover the line of argument, the would-be partizan of Deity roared out, "The fool hath said in his heart there is no God;" and with this triumphant discharge of his swivel, turned and ran down the stairs precipitately.

Both laughed while the sound of his footsteps lasted. Then Falconer said,

"My De Fleuri, I believe in God with all my heart, and soul, and strength, and mind; though not in that poor creature's arguments. I don't know that your unbelief is not better than his faith."

"I am greatly obliged to you, Mr. Falconer. I haven't laughed so for years. What right has he to come pestering me?"

"None whatever. But you must forgive him, because he is well-meaning, and because his conceit has made a fool of him. They're not all like him. But how is your daughter?"

"Very poorly, sir. She's going after the rest. A Spitalfields weaver ought to be like the cats: they don't mind how many of their kittens are

drowned."

"I beg your pardon. They don't like it. Only they forget it sooner than we do."

"Why do you say *we*, sir? *You* don't know anything of that sort."

"The heart knows its own bitterness, De Fleuri—and finds it enough, I dare say."

The weaver was silent for a moment. When he spoke again, there was a touch of tenderness in his respect.

"Will you go and see my poor Katey, sir?"

"Would she like to see me?"

"It does her good to see you. I never let that fellow go near her. He may worry me as he pleases; but she shall die in peace. That is all I can do for her."

"Do you still persist in refusing help—for your daughter—I don't mean for yourself?"

Not believing in God, De Fleuri would not be obliged to his fellow. Falconer had never met with a similar instance.

"I do. I won't kill her, and I won't kill myself: I am not bound to accept charity. It's all right. I only want to leave the whole affair behind; and I sincerely hope there's nothing to come after. If I were God, I should be ashamed of such a mess of a world."

"Well, no doubt you would have made something more to your mind—and better, too, if all you see were all there is to be seen. But I didn't send that bore away to bore you myself. I'm going to see Katey."

"Very well, sir. I won't go up with you, for I won't interfere with what you think proper to say to her."

“That’s rather like faith somewhere!” thought Falconer. “Could that man fail to believe in Jesus Christ if he only saw him—anything like as he is?”

Katey lay in a room overhead; for though he lacked food, this man contrived to pay for a separate room for his daughter, whom he treated with far more respect than many gentlemen treat their wives. Falconer found her lying on a wretched bed. Still it was a bed; and many in the same house had no bed to lie on. He had just come from a room overhead where lived a widow with four children. All of them lay on a floor whence issued at night, by many holes, awful rats. The children could not sleep for horror. They did not mind the little ones, they said, but when the big ones came, they were awake all night.

“Well, Katey, how are you?”

“No better, thank God.”

She spoke as her father had taught her. Her face was worn and thin, but hardly death-like. Only extremes met in it—the hopelessness had turned through quietude into comfort. Her hopelessness affected him more than her father’s. But there was nothing he could do for her.

There came a tap at the door.

“Come in,” said Falconer, involuntarily.

A lady in the dress of a Sister of Mercy entered with a large basket on her arm. She started, and hesitated for a moment when she saw him. He rose, thinking it better to go. She advanced to the bedside. He turned at the door, and said,

“I won’t say good-bye yet, Katey, for I’m going to have a chat with your father, and if you will let me, I will look in again.”

As he turned he saw the lady kiss her on the forehead. At the sound of his voice she started again, left the bedside and came towards him. Whether he knew her by her face or her voice first, he could not tell.

"Robert," she said, holding out her hand.

It was Mary St. John. Their hands met, joined fast, and lingered, as they gazed each in the other's face. It was nearly fourteen years since they had parted. The freshness of youth was gone from her cheek, and the signs of middle age were present on her forehead. But she was statelier, nobler, and gentler than ever. Falconer looked at her calmly, with only a still swelling at the heart, as if they met on the threshold of heaven. All the selfishness of passion was gone, and the old earlier adoration, elevated and glorified, had returned. He was a boy once more in the presence of a woman-angel. She did not shrink from his gaze, she did not withdraw her hand from his clasp.

"I am so glad, Robert!" was all she said.

"So am I," he answered quietly. "We may meet sometimes then?"

"Yes. Perhaps we can help each other."

"You can help me," said Falconer. "I have a girl I don't know what to do with."

"Send her to me. I will take care of her."

"I will bring her. But I must come and see you first."

"That will tell you where I live," she said, giving him a card. "Good-bye."

"Till to-morrow," said Falconer.

"She's not like that Bible fellow," said De Fleuri, as he entered his room again. "She don't walk into your house as if it was her own."

He was leaning against his idle loom, which, like a dead thing, filled the place with the mournfulness of death. Falconer took a broken chair, the only one, and sat down.

"I am going to take a liberty with you, Mr. De Fleuri," he said.

"As you please, Mr. Falconer."

"I want to tell you the only fault I have to you."

"Yes?"

"You don't do anything for the people in the house. Whether you believe in God or not, you ought to do what you can for your neighbour."

He held that to help a neighbour is the strongest antidote to unbelief, and an open door out of the bad air of one's own troubles, as well.

De Fleuri laughed bitterly, and rubbed his hand up and down his empty pocket. It was a pitiable action. Falconer understood it.

"There are better things than money: sympathy, for instance. You could talk to them a little."

"I have no sympathy, sir."

"You would find you had, if you would let it out."

"I should only make them more miserable. If I believed as you do, now, there might be some use."

"There's that widow with her four children in the garret. The poor little things are tormented by the rats: couldn't you nail bits of wood over their holes?"

De Fleuri laughed again.

"Where am I to get the bits of wood, except I pull down some of those laths. And they wouldn't keep them out a night."

"Couldn't you ask some carpenter?"

“I won’t ask a favour.”

“I shouldn’t mind asking, now.”

“That’s because you don’t know the bitterness of needing.”

“Fortunately, however, there’s no occasion for it. You have no right to refuse for another what you wouldn’t accept for yourself. Of course I could send in a man to do it; but if you would do it, that would do her heart good. And that’s what most wants doing good to—isn’t it, now?”

“I believe you’re right there, sir. If it wasn’t for the misery of it, I shouldn’t mind the hunger.”

“I should like to tell you how I came to go poking my nose into other people’s affairs. Would you like to hear my story now?”

“If you please, sir.”

A little pallid curiosity seemed to rouse itself in the heart of the hopeless man. So Falconer began at once to tell him how he had been brought up, describing the country and their ways of life, not excluding his adventures with Shargar, until he saw that the man was thoroughly interested. Then all at once, pulling out his watch, he said,

“But it’s time I had my tea, and I haven’t half done yet. I am not fond of being hungry, like you, Mr. De Fleuri.”

The poor fellow could only manage a very dubious smile.

“I’ll tell you what,” said Falconer, as if the thought had only just struck him—“come home with me, and I’ll give you the rest of it at my own place.”

“You must excuse me, sir.”

“Bless my soul, the man’s as proud as Lucifer! He wont accept a neighbour’s invitation to a cup of tea—for fear it should put him under obligations, I suppose.”

“It’s very kind of you, sir, to put it in that way; but I don’t choose to be taken in. You know very well it’s not as one equal asks another you ask me. It’s charity.”

“Do I not behave to you as an equal?”

“But you know that don’t make us equals.”

“But isn’t there something better than being equals? Supposing, as you will have it, that we’re not equals, can’t we be friends?”

“I hope so, sir.”

“Do you think now, Mr. De Fleuri, if you weren’t something more to me than a mere equal, I would go telling you my own history? But I forgot: I have told you hardly anything yet. I have to tell you how much nearer I am to your level than you think. I had the design too of getting you to help me in the main object of my life. Come, don’t be a fool. I want you.”

“I can’t leave Katey,” said the weaver, hesitatingly.

“Miss St. John is there still. I will ask her to stop till you come back.”

Without waiting for an answer, he ran up the stairs, and had speedily arranged with Miss St. John. Then taking his consent for granted, he hurried De Fleuri away with him, and knowing how unfit a man of his trade was for walking, irrespective of feebleness from want, he called the first cab, and took him home. Here, over their tea, which he judged the safest meal for a stomach unaccustomed to food, he told him about his grandmother, and about Dr. Anderson, and how he came to give himself to the work he was at, partly for its own sake, partly in the hope of finding his father. He told him his only clue to finding him; and that he had called on Mrs. Macallister twice every week for two years, but had heard nothing of him. De Fleuri listened with what rose to great interest

before the story was finished. And one of its ends at least was gained: the weaver was at home with him. The poor fellow felt that such close relation to an outcast, did indeed bring Falconer nearer to his own level.

"Do you want it kept a secret, sir?" he asked.

"I don't want it made a matter of gossip. But I do not mind how many respectable people like yourself know of it." He said this with a vague hope of assistance.

Before they parted, the unaccustomed tears had visited the eyes of De Fleuri, and he had consented not only to repair Mrs. Chisholm's garret-floor, but to take in hand the expenditure of a certain sum weekly, as he should judge expedient, for the people who lived in that and the neighbouring houses—in no case, however, except of sickness, or actual want of bread from want of work. Thus did Falconer appoint a sorrow-made infidel to be the almoner of his christian charity, knowing well that the nature of the Son of Man was in him, and that to get him to do as the Son of Man did, in ever so small a degree, was the readiest means of bringing his higher nature to the birth. Nor did he ever repent the choice he had made.

When he waited upon Miss St. John the next day, he found her in the ordinary dress of a lady. She received him with perfect confidence and kindness, but there was no reference made to the past. She told him that she had belonged to a sisterhood, but had left it a few days before, believing she could do better without its restrictions.

"It was an act of cowardice," she said,—"wearing the dress yesterday. I had got used to it, and did not feel safe without it; but I shall not wear it any more."

"I think you are right," said Falconer. "The nearer any friendly act is associated with the individual heart, without intervention of class or

creed, the more the humanity, which is the divinity of it, will appear."

He then told her about Nancy.

"I will keep her about myself for a while," said Miss St. John, "till I see what can be done with her. I know a good many people who without being prepared, or perhaps able to take any trouble, are yet ready to do a kindness when it is put in their way."

"I feel more and more that I ought to make some friends," said Falconer; "for I find my means of help reach but a little way. What had I better do? I suppose I could get some introductions.—I hardly know how."

"That will easily be managed. I will take that in hand. If you will accept invitations, you will soon know a good many people—of all sorts," she added with a smile.

About this time Falconer, having often felt the pressure of his ignorance of legal affairs, and reflected whether it would not add to his efficiency to rescue himself from it, began such a course of study as would fit him for the profession of the law. Gifted with splendid health, and if with a slow strength of grasping, yet with a great power of holding, he set himself to work, and regularly read for the bar.

Chapter 8 - My Own Acquaintance

It was after this that my own acquaintance with Falconer commenced. I had just come out of one of the theatres in the neighbourhood of the Strand, unable to endure any longer the dreary combination of false magnanimity and real meanness, imported from Paris in the shape of a melodrama, for the delectation of the London public. I had turned northwards, and was walking up one of the streets near Covent Garden, when my attention was attracted to a woman who came out of a gin-shop, carrying a baby. She went to the kennel, and bent her head over, ill with the poisonous stuff she had been drinking. And while the woman stood in this degrading posture, the poor, white, wasted baby was looking over her shoulder with the smile of a seraph, perfectly unconscious of the hell around her.

"Children *will* see things as God sees them," murmured a voice beside me.

I turned and saw a tall man with whose form I had already become a little familiar, although I knew nothing of him, standing almost at my elbow, with his eyes fixed on the woman and the child, and a strange smile of tenderness about his mouth, as if he were blessing the little creature in his heart.

He too saw the wonder of the show, typical of so much in the world, indeed of the world itself—the seemingly vile upholding and ministering to the life of the pure, the gracious, the fearless. Aware from his tone more than from his pronunciation that he was a fellow-countryman, I ventured to speak to him, and in a home-dialect.

"It's a wonnerfu' sicht. It's the cake o' Ezekiel ower[over] again."

He looked at me sharply, thought a moment, and said,

"You were going my way when you stopped. I will walk with you, if you will."

"But what's to be done about it?" I said.

"About what?" he returned.

"About the child there," I answered.

"Oh! she is its mother," he replied, walking on.

"What difference does that make?" I said.

"All the difference in the world. If God has given her that child, what right have you or I to interfere?"

"But I verily believe from the look of the child she gives it gin."

"God saves the world by the new blood, the children. To take her child from her, would be to do what you could to damn her."

"It doesn't look much like salvation there."

"You mustn't interfere with God's thousand years any more than his one day."

"Are you sure she is the mother?" I asked.

"Yes. I would not have left the child with her otherwise."

"What would you have done with it? Got it into some orphan asylum? —or the Foundling perhaps?"

"Never," he answered. "All those societies are wretched inventions for escape from the right way. There ought not to be an orphan asylum in the kingdom."

"What! Would you put them all down then?"

"God forbid. But I would, if I could, make them all useless."

"How could you do that?"

“I would *merely* enlighten the hearts of childless people as to their privileges.”

“Which are?”

“To be fathers and mothers to the fatherless and motherless.”

“I have often wondered why more of them did not adopt children. Why don’t they?”

“For various reasons which a real love to child nature would blow to the winds—all comprised in this, that such a child would not be their own child. As if ever a child could be their own! That a child is God’s is of rather more consequence than whether it is born of this or that couple. Their hearts would surely be glad when they went into heaven to have the angels of the little ones that always behold the face of their Father coming round them, though they were not exactly their father and mother.”

“I don’t know what the passage you refer to means.”

“Neither do I. But it must mean something, if He said it. Are you a clergyman?”

“No. I am only a poor teacher of mathematics and poetry, shown up the back stairs into the nurseries of great houses.”

“A grand chance, if I may use the word.”

“I do try to wake a little enthusiasm in the sons and daughters—without much success, I fear.”

“Will you come and see me?” he said.

“With much pleasure. But, as I have given you an answer, you owe me one.”

“I do.”

“Have you adopted a child?”

"No."

"Then you have some of your own?"

"No."

"Then, excuse me, but why the warmth of your remarks on those who —"

"I think I shall be able to satisfy you on that point, if we draw to each other. Meantime I must leave you. Could you come to-morrow evening?"

"With pleasure."

We arranged the hour and parted. I saw him walk into a low public-house, and went home.

At the time appointed, I rang the bell, and was led by an elderly woman up the stair, and shown into a large room on the first-floor—poorly furnished, and with many signs of bachelor-carelessness. Mr. Falconer rose from an old hair-covered sofa to meet me as I entered. I will first tell my reader something of his personal appearance.

He was considerably above six feet in height, square-shouldered, remarkably long in the arms, and his hands were uncommonly large and powerful. His head was large, and covered with dark wavy hair, lightly streaked with gray. His broad forehead projected over deep-sunk eyes, that shone like black fire. His features, especially his Roman nose, were large, and finely, though not delicately, modelled. His nostrils were remarkably large and flexile, with a tendency to slight motion: I found on further acquaintance that when he was excited, they expanded in a wild equine manner. The expression of his mouth was of tender power, crossed with humour. He kept his lips a little compressed, which gave a certain sternness to his countenance: but when this sternness dissolved in a smile, it was something enchanting. He was plainly, rather shabbily

clothed. No one could have guessed at his profession or social position. He came forward and received me cordially. After a little indifferent talk, he asked me if I had any other engagement for the evening.

"I never have any engagements," I answered—"at least, of a social kind. I am *burd alane*[quite alone]. I know next to nobody."

"Then perhaps you would not mind going out with me for a stroll?"

"I shall be most happy," I answered.

There was something about the man I found exceedingly attractive; I had very few friends; and there was besides something odd, almost romantic, in this beginning of an intercourse: I would see what would come of it.

"Then we'll have some supper first," said Mr. Falconer, and rang the bell.

While we ate our chops—

"I dare say you think it strange," my host said, "that without the least claim on your acquaintance, I should have asked you to come and see me, Mr.—"

He stopped, smiling.

"My name is Gordon—Archie Gordon," I said.

"Well, then, Mr. Gordon, I confess I have a design upon you. But you will remember that you addressed me first."

"You *spoke* first," I said.

"Did I?"

"I did not say you spoke to me, but you spoke.—I should not have ventured to make the remark I did make, if I had not heard your voice first. What design have you on me?"

“That will appear in due course. Now take a glass of wine, and we’ll set out.”

We soon found ourselves in Holborn, and my companion led the way towards the City. The evening was sultry and close.

“Nothing excites me more,” said Mr. Falconer, “than a walk in the twilight through a crowded street. Do you find it affect you so?”

“I cannot speak as strongly as you do,” I replied. “But I perfectly understand what you mean. Why is it, do you think?”

“Partly, I fancy, because it is like the primordial chaos, a concentrated tumult of undetermined possibilities. The germs of infinite adventure and result are floating around you like a snow-storm. You do not know what may arise in a moment and colour all your future. Out of this mass may suddenly start something marvellous, or, it may be, something you have been looking for for years.”

The same moment, a fierce flash of lightning, like a blue sword-blade a thousand times shattered, quivered and palpitated about us, leaving a thick darkness on the sense. I heard my companion give a suppressed cry, and saw him run up against a heavy drayman who was on the edge of the path, guiding his horses with his long whip. He begged the man’s pardon, put his hand to his head, and murmured, “I shall know him now.” I was afraid for a moment that the lightning had struck him, but he assured me there was nothing amiss. He looked a little excited and confused, however.

I should have forgotten the incident, had he not told me afterwards—when I had come to know him intimately—that in the moment of that lightning flash, he had had a strange experience: he had seen the form of his father, as he had seen him that Sunday afternoon, in the midst of the surrounding light. He was as certain of the truth of the presentation as if

a gradual revival of memory had brought with it the clear conviction of its own accuracy. His explanation of the phenomenon was, that, in some cases, all that prevents a vivid conception from assuming objectivity, is the self-assertion of external objects. The gradual approach of darkness cannot surprise and isolate the phantasm; but the suddenness of the lightning could and did, obliterating everything without, and leaving that over which it had no power standing alone, and therefore visible.

"But," I ventured to ask, "whence the minuteness of detail, surpassing, you say, all that your memory could supply?"

"That I think was a quickening of the memory by the realism of the presentation. Excited by the vision, it caught at its own past, as it were, and suddenly recalled that which it had forgotten. In the rapidity of all pure mental action, this at once took its part in the apparent objectivity."

To return to the narrative of my first evening in Falconer's company.

It was strange how insensible the street population was to the grandeur of the storm. While the thunder was billowing and bellowing over and around us—

"A hundred pins for one ha'penny," bawled a man from the gutter, with the importance of a Cagliostro.

"Evening Star! Telegrauwff!" roared an ear-splitting urchin in my very face. I gave him a shove off the pavement.

"Ah! don't do that," said Falconer. "It only widens the crack between him and his fellows—not much, but a little."

"You are right," I said. "I won't do it again."

The same moment we heard a tumult in a neighbouring street. A crowd was execrating a policeman, who had taken a woman into custody,

and was treating her with unnecessary rudeness. Falconer looked on for a few moments.

"Come, policeman!" he said at length, in a tone of expostulation. "You're rather rough, are you not? She's a woman, you know."

"Hold your blasted humbug," answered the man, an exceptional specimen of the force at that time at all events, and shook the tattered wretch, as if he would shake her out of her rags.

Falconer gently parted the crowd, and stood beside the two.

"I will help you," he said, "to take her to the station, if you like, but you must not treat her that way."

"I don't want your help," said the policeman; "I know you, and all the damned lot of you."

"Then I shall be compelled to give you a lesson," said Falconer.

The man's only answer was a shake that made the woman cry out.

"I shall get into trouble if you get off," said Falconer to her. "Will you promise me, on your word, to go with me to the station, if I rid you of the fellow?"

"I will, I will," said the woman.

"Then, look out," said Falconer to the policeman; "for I'm going to give you that lesson."

The officer let the woman go, took his baton, and made a blow at Falconer. In another moment—I could hardly see how—he lay in the street.

"Now, my poor woman, come along," said Falconer.

She obeyed, crying gently. Two other policemen came up.

“Do you want to give that woman in charge, Mr. Falconer?” asked one of them.

“I give that man in charge,” cried his late antagonist, who had just scrambled to his feet. “Assaulting the police in discharge of their duty.”

“Very well,” said the other. “But you’re in the wrong box, and that you’ll find. You had better come along to the station, sir.”

“Keep that fellow from getting hold of the woman—you two, and we’ll go together,” said Falconer.

Bewildered with the rapid sequence of events, I was following in the crowd. Falconer looked about till he saw me, and gave me a nod which meant *come along*. Before we reached Bow Street, however, the offending policeman, who had been walking a little behind in conversation with one of the others, advanced to Falconer, touched his hat, and said something, to which Falconer replied.

“Remember, I have my eye upon you,” was all I heard, however, as he left the crowd and rejoined me. We turned and walked eastward again.

The storm kept on intermittently, but the streets were rather more crowded than usual notwithstanding.

“Look at that man in the woollen jacket,” said Falconer. “What a beautiful outline of face! There must be something noble in that man.”

“I did not see him,” I answered, “I was taken up with a woman’s face, like that of a beautiful corpse. It’s eyes were bright. There was gin in its brain.”

The streets swarmed with human faces gleaming past. It was a night of ghosts.

There stood a man who had lost one arm, earnestly pumping bilge-music out of an accordion with the other, holding it to his body with the

stump. There was a woman, pale with hunger and gin, three match-boxes in one extended hand, and the other holding a baby to her breast. As we looked, the poor baby let go its hold, turned its little head, and smiled a wan, shrivelled, old-fashioned smile in our faces.

"Another happy baby, you see, Mr. Gordon," said Falconer. "A child, fresh from God, finds its heaven where no one else would. The devil could drive woman out of Paradise; but the devil himself cannot drive the Paradise out of a woman."

"What can be done for them?" I said, and at the moment, my eye fell upon a row of little children, from two to five years of age, seated upon the curb-stone.

They were chattering fast, and apparently carrying on some game, as happy as if they had been in the fields.

"Wouldn't you like to take all those little grubby things, and put them in a great tub and wash them clean?" I said.

"They'd fight like spiders," rejoined Falconer.

"They're not fighting now."

"Then don't make them. It would be all useless. The probability is that you would only change the forms of the various evils, and possibly for worse. You would buy all that man's glue-lizards, and that man's three-foot rules, and that man's dog-collars and chains, at three times their value, that they might get more drink than usual, and do nothing at all for their living to-morrow.—What a happy London you would make if you were Sultan Haroun!" he added, laughing. "You would put an end to poverty altogether, would you not?"

I did not reply at once.

"But I beg your pardon," he resumed; "I am very rude."

“Not at all,” I returned. “I was only thinking how to answer you. They would be no worse after all than those who inherit property and lead idle lives.”

“True; but they would be no better. Would you be content that your quondam[former] poor should be no better off than the rich? What would be gained thereby? Is there no truth in the words ‘Blessed are the poor’? A deeper truth than most Christians dare to see.—Did you ever observe that there is not one word about the vices of the poor in the Bible—from beginning to end?”

“But they have their vices.”

“Indubitably. I am only stating a fact. The Bible is full enough of the vices of the rich. I make no comment.”

“But don’t you care for their sufferings?”

“They are of secondary importance quite. But if you had been as much amongst them as I, perhaps you would be of my opinion, that the poor are not, cannot possibly feel so wretched as they seem to us. They live in a climate, as it were, which is their own, by natural law comply with it, and find it not altogether unfriendly. The Laplander will prefer his wastes to the rich fields of England, not merely from ignorance, but for the sake of certain blessings amongst which he has been born and brought up. The blessedness of life depends far more on its interest than upon its comfort. The need of exertion and the doubt of success, renders life much more interesting to the poor than it is to those who, unblessed with anxiety for the bread that perisheth, waste their poor hearts about rank and reputation.”

“I thought such anxiety was represented as an evil in the New Testament.”

“Yes. But it is a still greater evil to lose it in any other way than by faith in God. You would remove the anxiety by destroying its cause: God would remove it by lifting them above it, by teaching them to trust in him, and thus making them partakers of the divine nature. Poverty is a blessing when it makes a man look up.”

“But you cannot say it does so always.”

“I cannot determine when, where, and how much; but I am sure it does. And I am confident that to free those hearts from it by any deed of yours would be to do them the greatest injury you could. Probably their want of foresight would prove the natural remedy, speedily reducing them to their former condition—not however without serious loss.”

“But will not this theory prove at last an an-sthetic rather than an anodyne? I mean that, although you may adopt it at first for refuge from the misery the sight of their condition occasions you, there is surely a danger of its rendering you at last indifferent to it.”

“Am I indifferent? But you do not know me yet. Pardon my egotism. There may be such danger. Every truth has its own danger or shadow. Assuredly I would have no less labour spent upon them. But there can be no *true* labour done, save in as far as we are fellow-labourers with God. We must work with him, not *against* him. Every one who works without believing that God is doing the best, the absolute good for them, is, must be, more or less, thwarting God. He would take the poor out of God’s hands. For others, as for ourselves, we must trust him. If we could thoroughly understand anything, that would be enough to prove it undivine; and that which is but one step beyond our understanding must be in some of its relations as mysterious as if it were a hundred. But through all this darkness about the poor, at least I can see wonderful veins and fields of light, and with the help of this partial vision, I trust

for the rest. The only and the greatest thing man is capable of is Trust in God."

"What then is a man to do for the poor? How is he to work with God?" I asked.

"He must be a man amongst them—a man breathing the air of a higher life, and therefore in all natural ways fulfilling his endless human relations to them. Whatever you do for them, let your own being, that is you in relation to them, be the background, that so you may be a link between them and God, or rather I should say, between them and the knowledge of God."

While Falconer spoke, his face grew grander and grander, till at last it absolutely shone. I felt that I walked with a man whose faith was his genius.

"Of one thing I am pretty sure," he resumed, "that the same recipe Goethe gave for the enjoyment of life, applies equally to all work: 'Do the thing that lies next you.' That is all our business. Hurried results are worse than none. We must force nothing, but be partakers of the divine patience. How long it took to make the cradle! and we fret that the baby Humanity is not reading Euclid and Plato, even that it is not understanding the Gospel of St. John! If there is one thing evident in the world's history, it is that God hasteneth not. All haste implies weakness. Time is as cheap as space and matter. What they call the church militant is only at drill yet, and a good many of the officers too not out of the awkward squad. I am sure I, for a private, am not. In the drill a man has to conquer himself, and move with the rest by individual attention to his own duty: to what mighty battlefields the recruit may yet be led, he does not know. Meantime he has nearly enough to do with his goose-step, while there is plenty of single combat, skirmish, and light cavalry work

generally, to get him ready for whatever is to follow. I beg your pardon: I am preaching."

"Eloquently," I answered.

Of some of the places into which Falconer led me that night I will attempt no description—places blazing with lights and mirrors, crowded with dancers, billowing with music, close and hot, and full of the saddest of all sights, the uninteresting faces of commonplace women.

"There is a passion," I said, as we came out of one of these dreadful places, "that lingers about the heart like the odour of violets, like a glimmering twilight on the borders of moonrise; and there is a passion that wraps itself in the vapours of patchouli and coffins, and streams from the eyes like gaslight from a tavern. And yet the line is ill to draw between them. It is very dreadful. These are women."

"They are in God's hands," answered Falconer. "He hasn't done with them yet. Shall it take less time to make a woman than to make a world? Is not the woman the greater? She may have her ages of chaos, her centuries of crawling slime, yet rise a woman at last."

"How much alike all those women were!"

"A family likeness, alas! which always strikes you first."

"Some of them looked quite modest."

"There are great differences. I do not know anything more touching than to see how a woman will sometimes wrap around her the last remnants of a soiled and ragged modesty. It has moved me almost to tears to see such a one hanging her head in shame during the singing of a detestable song. That poor thing's shame was precious in the eyes of the Master, surely."

"Could nothing be done for her?"

“I contrived to let her know where she would find a friend if she wanted to be good: that is all you can do in such cases. If the horrors of their life do not drive them out at such an open door, you can do nothing else, I fear—for the time.”

“Where are you going now, may I ask?”

“Into the city—on business,” he added with a smile.

“There will be nobody there so late.”

“Nobody! One would think you were the beadle of a city church, Mr. Gordon.”

We came into a very narrow, dirty street. I do not know where it is. A slatternly woman advanced from an open door, and said,

“Mr. Falconer.”

He looked at her for a moment.

“Why, Sarah, have you come to this already?” he said.

“Never mind me, sir. It’s no more than you told me to expect. You knowed him better than I did. Leastways I’m an honest woman.”

“Stick to that, Sarah; and be good-tempered.”

“I’ll have a try anyhow, sir. But there’s a poor cretur a dyin’ up-stairs; and I’m afeard it’ll go hard with her, for she throwed a Bible out o’ window this very morning, sir.”

“Would she like to see me? I’m afraid not.”

“She’s got Lilywhite, what’s a sort of a reader, readin’ that same Bible to her now.”

“There can be no great harm in just looking in,” he said, turning to me.

“I shall be happy to follow you—anywhere,” I returned.

“She’s awful ill, sir; cholerer or summat,” said Sarah, as she led the way up the creaking stair.

We half entered the room softly. Two or three women sat by the chimney, and another by a low bed, covered with a torn patchwork counterpane, spelling out a chapter in the Bible. We paused for a moment to hear what she was reading. Had the book been opened by chance, or by design? It was the story of David and Bathsheba. Moans came from the bed, but the candle in a bottle, by which the woman was reading, was so placed that we could not see the sufferer.

We stood still and did not interrupt the reading.

“Ha! ha! ha!” laughed a coarse voice from the side of the chimney: “the saint, you see, was no better than some of the rest of us!”

“I think he was a good deal worse just then,” said Falconer, stepping forward.

“Gracious! there’s Mr. Falconer,” said another woman, rising, and speaking in a flattering tone.

“Then,” remarked the former speaker, “there’s a chance for old Moll and me yet. King David was a saint, wasn’t he? Ha! ha!”

“Yes, and you might be one too, if you were as sorry for your faults as he was for his.”

“Sorry, indeed! I’ll be damned if I be sorry. What have I to be sorry for? Where’s the harm in turning an honest penny? I ha’[have”] took no man’s wife, nor murdered himself neither. There’s yer saints! He was a rum ’un. Ha! ha!”

Falconer approached her, bent down and whispered something no one could hear but herself. She gave a smothered cry, and was silent.

“Give me the book,” he said, turning towards the bed. “I’ll read you something better than that. I’ll read about some one that never did anything wrong.”

“I don’t believe there never was no sich a man,” said the previous reader, as she handed him the book, grudgingly.

“Not Jesus Christ himself?” said Falconer.

“Oh! I didn’t know as you meant him.”

“Of course I meant him. There never was another.”

“I have heard tell—p’raps it was yourself, sir—as how he didn’t come down upon us over hard after all, bless him!”

Falconer sat down on the side of the bed, and read the story of Simon the Pharisee and the woman that was a sinner. When he ceased, the silence that followed was broken by a sob from somewhere in the room. The sick woman stopped her moaning, and said,

“Turn down the leaf there, please, sir. Lilywhite will read it to me when you’re gone.”

The some one sobbed again. It was a young slender girl, with a face disfigured by the small-pox, and, save for the tearful look it wore, poor and expressionless. Falconer said something gentle to her.

“Will he ever come again?” she sobbed.

“Who?” asked Falconer.

“Him—Jesus Christ. I’ve heard tell, I think, that he was to come again some day.”

“Why do you ask?”

“Because—” she said, with a fresh burst of tears, which rendered the words that followed unintelligible. But she recovered herself in a few

moments, and, as if finishing her sentence, put her hand up to her poor, thin, colourless hair, and said,

"My hair ain't long enough to wipe his feet."

"Do you know what he would say to you, my girl?" Falconer asked.

"No. What would he say to me? He would speak to me, would he?"

"He would say: Thy sins are forgiven thee."

"Would he, though? Would he?" she cried, starting up. "Take me to him—take me to him. Oh! I forgot. He's dead. But he will come again, won't he? He was crucified four times, you know, and he must ha'have" come four times for that. Would they crucify him again, sir?"

"No, they wouldn't crucify him now—in England at least. They would only laugh at him, shake their heads at what he told them, as much as to say it wasn't true, and sneer and mock at him in some of the newspapers."

"Oh dear! I've been very wicked."

"But you won't be so any more."

"No, no, no. I won't, I won't, I won't."

She talked hurriedly, almost wildly. The coarse old woman tapped her forehead with her finger. Falconer took the girl's hand.

"What is your name?" he said.

"Nell."

"What more?"

"Nothing more."

"Well, Nelly," said Falconer.

"How kind of you to call me Nelly!" interrupted the poor girl. "They always calls me Nell, just."

“Nelly,” repeated Falconer, “I will send a lady here to-morrow to take you away with her, if you like, and tell you how you must do to find Jesus.—People always find him that want to find him.”

The elderly woman with the rough voice, who had not spoken since he whispered to her, now interposed with a kind of cowed fierceness.

“Don’t go putting humbug into my child’s head now, Mr. Falconer —’ticing her away from her home. Everybody knows my Nell’s been an idiot since ever she was born. Poor child!”

“I ain’t your child,” cried the girl, passionately. “I ain’t nobody’s child.”

“You are God’s child,” said Falconer, who stood looking on with his eyes shining, but otherwise in a state of absolute composure.

“Am I? Am I? You won’t forget to send for me, sir?”

“That I won’t,” he answered.

She turned instantly towards the woman, and snapped her fingers in her face.

“I don’t care that for you,” she cried. “You dare to touch me now, and I’ll bite you.”

“Come, come, Nelly, you mustn’t be rude,” said Falconer.

“No, sir, I won’t no more, leastways to nobody but she. It’s she makes me do all the wicked things, it is.”

She snapped her fingers in her face again, and then burst out crying.

“She will leave you alone now, I think,” said Falconer. “She knows it will be quite as well for her not to cross me.”

This he said very significantly, as he turned to the door, where he bade them a general good-night. When we reached the street, I was too bewildered to offer any remark. Falconer was the first to speak.

“It always comes back upon me, as if I had never known it before, that women like some of those were of the first to understand our Lord.”

“Some of them wouldn’t have understood him any more than the Pharisee, though.”

“I’m not so sure of that. Of course there are great differences. There are good and bad amongst them as in every class. But one thing is clear to me, that no indulgence of passion destroys the spiritual nature so much as respectable selfishness.”

“I am afraid you will not get society to agree with you,” I said, foolishly.

“I have no wish that society should agree with me; for if it did, it would be sure to do so upon the worst of principles. It is better that society should be cruel, than that it should call the horrible thing a trifle: it would know nothing between.”

Through the city—though it was only when we crossed one of the main thoroughfares that I knew where we were—we came into the region of Bethnal Green. From house to house till it grew very late, Falconer went, and I went with him. I will not linger on this part of our wanderings. Where I saw only dreadful darkness, Falconer always would see some glimmer of light. All the people into whose houses we went knew him. They were all in the depths of poverty. Many of them were respectable. With some of them he had long talks in private, while I waited near. At length he said,

“I think we had better be going home, Mr. Gordon. You must be tired.”

“I am, rather,” I answered. “But it doesn’t matter, for I have nothing to do to-morrow.”

“We shall get a cab, I dare say, before we go far.”

“Not for me. I am not so tired, but that I would rather walk,” I said.

“Very well,” he returned. “Where do you live?”

I told him.

“I will take you the nearest way.”

“You know London marvellously.”

“Pretty well now,” he answered.

We were somewhere near Leather Lane about one o’clock. Suddenly we came upon two tiny children standing on the pavement, one on each side of the door of a public-house. They could not have been more than two and three. They were sobbing a little—not much. The tiny creatures stood there awfully awake in sleeping London, while even their own playmates were far off in the fairyland of dreams.

“This is the kind of thing,” I said, “that makes me doubt whether there be a God in heaven.”

“That is only because he is down here,” answered Falconer, “taking such good care of us all that you can’t see him. There is not a gin-palace, or yet lower hell in London, in which a man or woman can be out of God. The whole being love, there is nothing for you to set it against and judge it by. So you are driven to fancies.”

The house was closed, but there was light above the door. We went up to the children, and spoke to them, but all we could make out was that mammie was in there. One of them could not speak at all. Falconer knocked at the door. A good-natured-looking Irishwoman opened it a little way and peeped out.

“Here are two children crying at your door, Ma’am,” said Falconer.

“Och(exclamation of sorrow or regret), the darlin’s! they want their mother.”

“Do you know her, then?”

“True for you, and I do. She’s a mighty dacent woman in her way when the drink’s out uv her, and very kind to the childher; but oncet she smells the dhrop o’ gin, her head’s gone intirely. The purty craytures have waked up, an’ she not come home, and they’ve run out to look after her.”

Falconer stood a moment as if thinking what would be best. The shriek of a woman rang through the night.

“There she is!” said the Irishwoman. “For God’s sake don’t let her get a hould o’ the darlints. She’s ravin’ mad. I seen her try to kill them oncet.”

The shrieks came nearer and nearer, and after a few moments the woman appeared in the moonlight, tossing her arms over her head, and screaming with a despair for which she yet sought a defiant expression. Her head was uncovered, and her hair flying in tangles; her sleeves were torn, and her gaunt arms looked awful in the moonlight. She stood in the middle of the street, crying again and again, with shrill laughter between, “Nobody cares for me, and I care for nobody! Ha! ha! ha!”

“Mammie! mammie!” cried the elder of the children, and ran towards her.

The woman heard, and rushed like a fury towards the child. Falconer too ran, and caught up the child. The woman gave a howl and rushed towards the other. I caught up that one. With a last shriek, she dashed her head against the wall of the public-house, dropped on the pavement, and lay still.

Falconer set the child down, lifted the wasted form in his arms, and carried it into the house. The face was blue as that of a strangled corpse. She was dead.

“Was she a married woman?” Falconer asked.

“It’s myself can’t tell you sir,” the Irishwoman answered. “I never saw any boy with her.”

“Do you know where she lived?”

“No, sir. Somewhere not far off, though. The children will know.”

But they stood staring at their mother, and we could get nothing out of them. They would not move from the corpse.

“I think we may appropriate this treasure-trove,” said Falconer, turning at last to me; and as he spoke, he took the eldest in his arms. Then, turning to the woman, he gave her a card, saying, “If any inquiry is made about them, there is my address.—Will you take the other, Mr. Gordon?”

I obeyed. The children cried no more. After traversing a few streets, we found a cab, and drove to a house in Queen Square, Bloomsbury.

Falconer got out at the door of a large house, and rung the bell; then got the children out, and dismissed the cab. There we stood in the middle of the night, in a silent, empty square, each with a child in his arms. In a few minutes we heard the bolts being withdrawn. The door opened, and a tall graceful form wrapped in a dressing-gown, appeared.

“I have brought you two babies, Miss St. John,” said Falconer. “Can you take them?”

“To be sure I can,” she answered, and turned to lead the way. “Bring them in.”

We followed her into a little back room. She put down her candle, and went straight to the cupboard, whence she brought a sponge-cake, from which she cut a large piece for each of the children.

“What a mercy they are, Robert,—those little gates in the face! Red Lane leads direct to the heart,” she said, smiling, as if she rejoiced in the

idea of taming the little wild angelets. “Don’t you stop. You are tired enough, I am sure. I will wake my maid, and we’ll get them washed and put to bed at once.”

She was closing the door, when Falconer turned.

“Oh! Miss St. John,” he said, “I was forgetting. Could you go down to No. 13 in Soap Lane—you know it, don’t you?”

“Yes. Quite well.”

“Ask for a girl called Nell—a plain, pock-marked young girl—and take her away with you.”

“When shall I go?”

“To-morrow morning. But I shall be in. Don’t go till you see me. Good-night.”

We took our leave without more ado.

“What a lady-like woman to be the matron of an asylum!” I said.

Falconer gave a little laugh. “That is no asylum. It is a private house.”

“And the lady?”

“Is a lady of private means,” he answered, “who prefers Bloomsbury to Belgravia, because it is easier to do noble work in it. Her heaven is on the confines of hell.”

“What will she do with those children?”

“Kiss them and wash them and put them to bed.”

“And after that?”

“Give them bread and milk in the morning.”

“And after that?”

“Oh! there’s time enough. We’ll see. There’s only one thing she won’t do.”

“What is that?”

“Turn them out again.”

A pause followed, I cogitating.

“Are you a society, then?” I asked at length.

“No. At least we don’t use the word. And certainly no other society would acknowledge us.”

“What are you, then?”

“Why should we be anything, so long as we do our work?”

“Don’t you think there is some affectation in refusing a name?”

“Yes, if the name belongs to you? Not otherwise.”

“Do you lay claim to no epithet of any sort?”

“We are a church, if you like. There!”

“Who is your clergyman?”

“Nobody.”

“Where do you meet?”

“Nowhere.”

“What are your rules, then?”

“We have none.”

“What makes you a church?”

“Divine Service.”

“What do you mean by that?”

“The sort of thing you have seen to-night.”

“What is your creed?”

“Christ Jesus.”

“But what do you believe about him?”

“What we can. We count any belief *in* him—the smallest—better than any belief about him—the greatest—or about anything else besides. But we exclude no one.”

“How do you manage without?”

“By admitting no one.”

“I cannot understand you.”

“Well, then: we are an undefined company of people, who have grown into human relations with each other naturally, through one attractive force—love for human beings, regarding them *as* human beings only in virtue of the divine in them.”

“But you must have some rules,” I insisted.

“None whatever. They would cause us only trouble. We have nothing to take us from our work. Those that are most in earnest, draw most together; those that are on the outskirts have only to do nothing, and they are free of us. But we do sometimes ask people to help us—not with money.”

“But who are the *we*?”

“Why *you*, if you will do anything, and I and Miss St. John and twenty others—and a great many more I don’t know, for every one is a centre to others. It is our work that binds us together.”

“Then when that stops you drop to pieces.”

“Yes, thank God. We shall then die. There will be no corporate body—which means a bodied body, or an unsouled body, left behind to simulate life, and corrupt, and work no end of disease. We go to ashes at once, and leave no corpse for a ghoul to inhabit and make a vampire of. When our spirit is dead, our body is vanished.”

“Then you won’t last long.”

“Then we oughtn’t to last long.”

“But the work of the world could not go on so.”

“We are not the life of the world. God is. And when we fail, he can and will send out more and better labourers into his harvest-field. It is a divine accident by which we are thus associated.”

“But surely the church must be otherwise constituted.”

“My dear sir, you forget: I said we were *a* church, not *the* church.”

“Do you belong to the Church of England?”

“Yes, some of us. Why should we not? In as much as she has faithfully preserved the holy records and traditions, our obligations to her are infinite. And to leave her would be to quarrel, and start a thousand *vermiculate* questions, as Lord Bacon calls them, for which life is too serious in my eyes. I have no time for that.”

“Then you count the Church of England *the* Church?”

“Of England, yes; of the universe, no: that is constituted just like ours, with the living working Lord for the heart of it.”

“Will you take me for a member?”

“No.”

“Will you not, if—?”

“You may make yourself one if you will. I will not speak a word to gain you. I have shown you work. Do something, and you are of Christ’s Church.”

We were almost at the door of my lodging, and I was getting very weary in body, and indeed in mind, though I hope not in heart. Before we separated, I ventured to say,

“Will you tell me why you invited me to come and see you? Forgive my presumption, but you seemed to seek acquaintance with me, although you did make me address you first.”

He laughed gently, and answered in the words of the ancient mariner: —

> “The moment that his face I see,
> I know the man that must hear me:
> To him my tale I teach.”

Without another word, he shook hands with me, and left me. Weary as I was, I stood in the street until I could hear his footsteps no longer.

Chapter 9 - The Brothers

One day, as Falconer sat at a late breakfast, Shargar burst into his room. Falconer had not even known that he was coming home, for he had outstripped the letter he had sent. He had his arm in a sling, which accounted for his leave.

"Shargar!" cried Falconer, starting up in delight.

"Major Shargar, if you please. Give me all my honours, Robert," said Moray, presenting his left hand.

"I congratulate you, my boy. Well, this is delightful! But you are wounded."

"Bullet—broken—that's all. It's nearly right again. I'll tell you about it by and by. I am too full of something else to talk about trifles of that sort. I want you to help me."

He then rushed into the announcement that he had fallen desperately in love with a lady who had come on board with her maid at Malta, where she had been spending the winter. She was not very young, about his own age, but very beautiful, and of enchanting address. How she could have remained so long unmarried he could not think. It could not be but that she had had many offers. She was an heiress, too, but that Shargar felt to be a disadvantage for him. All the progress he could yet boast of was that his attentions had not been, so far as he could judge, disagreeable to her. Robert thought even less of the latter fact than Shargar himself, for he did not believe there were many women to whom Shargar's attentions would be disagreeable: they must always be simple and manly. What was more to the point, she had given him her address

in London, and he was going to call upon her the next day. She was on a visit to Lady Janet Gordon, an elderly spinster, who lived in Park-street.

"Are you quite sure she's not an adventuress, Shargar?"

"It's o' no mainner[manner] o' use to tell ye what I'm sure or no sure o', Robert, in sic[such] a case. But I'll manage, somehoo, 'at ye sall[shall] see her yersel', an' syne[then] I'll speir[ask about, enquire] back yer ain[own] queston at ye."

"Weel, hae ye tauld her a' aboot yersel'?"

"No!" answered Shargar, growing suddenly pale. "I never thocht[thought] aboot that. But I had no richt, for a' that passed, to intrude mysel' upo' her to that extent."

"Weel, I reckon ye're richt. Yer wounds an' yer medals ought to weigh weel against a' that. There's this comfort in 't, that gin[if] she bena[be not] richt weel worthy o' ye, auld frien', she winna[will not] tak ye."

Shargar did not seem to see the comfort of it. He was depressed for the remainder of the day. In the morning he was in wild spirits again. Just before he started, however, he said, with an expression of tremulous anxiety,

"Oucht[ought] I to tell her a' at ance[once]—already—aboot—aboot my mither?"

"I dinna say that. Maybe it wad[would] be equally fair to her and to yersel' to lat[let, allow] her ken ye a bit better afore ye do that.—We'll think that ower[over].—whan[when] ye gang[go] doon the stair, ye'll see a bit brougham at the door waitin' for ye. Gie[give] the coachman ony[any] orders ye like. He's your servant as lang[long] 's ye're in London. Commit yer way to the Lord, my boy."

Though Shargar did not say much, he felt strengthened by Robert's truth to meet his fate with something of composure. But it was not to be

decided that day. Therein lay some comfort.

He returned in high spirits still. He had been graciously received both by Miss Hamilton and her hostess—a kind-hearted old lady, who spoke Scotch with the pure tone of a gentlewoman, he said—a treat not to be had once in a twelvemonth. She had asked him to go to dinner in the evening, and to bring his friend with him. Robert, however, begged him to make his excuse, as he had an engagement in—a very different sort of place.

When Shargar returned, Robert had not come in. He was too excited to go to bed, and waited for him. It was two o'clock before he came home. Shargar told him there was to be a large party at Lady Patterdale's the next evening but one, and Lady Janet had promised to procure him an invitation.

The next morning Robert went to see Mary St. John, and asked if she knew anything of Lady Patterdale, and whether she could get him an invitation. Miss St. John did not know her, but she thought she could manage it for him. He told her all about Shargar, for whose sake he wished to see Miss Hamilton before consenting to be introduced to her. Miss St. John set out at once, and Falconer received a card the next day. When the evening came, he allowed Shargar to set out alone in his brougham, and followed an hour later in a hansom.

When he reached the house, the rooms were tolerably filled, and as several parties had arrived just before him, he managed to enter without being announced. After a little while he caught sight of Shargar. He stood alone, almost in a corner, with a strange, rather *raised* expression in his eyes. Falconer could not see the object to which they were directed. Certainly, their look was not that of love. He made his way up to him and

laid his hand on his arm. Shargar betrayed no little astonishment when he saw him.

"You here, Robert!" he said.

"Yes, I'm here. Have you seen her yet? Is she here?"

"Wha do ye think 's speakin' till her this verra[very] minute? Look there!" Shargar said in a low voice, suppressed yet more to hide his excitement.

Following his directions, Robert saw, amidst a little group of gentlemen surrounding a seated lady, of whose face he could not get a peep, a handsome elderly man, who looked more fashionable than his years justified, and whose countenance had an expression which he felt repulsive. He thought he had seen him before, but Shargar gave him no time to come to a conclusion of himself.

"It's my brither[brother] Sandy, as sure 's deith!" he said; "and he's been hingin'[hanging] aboot her ever sin'[since] she cam in. But I dinna think she likes him a'thegither[all together] by the leuk[look] o' her."

"What for dinna ye gang[go] up till her yersel', man? I wadna stan'[stand] that gin[if] 'twas me."

"I'm feared 'at he ken me. He's terrible gleg[quick, lively, smart]. A' the Morays are gleg, and yon marquis has an ee[eye] like a hawk."

"What does 't maitter[matter]? Ye hae dune[done] naething to be ashamed o' like him."

"Ay[yes, indeed]; but it's this. I wadna hae her hear the trowth[truth] aboot me frae[from] that boar's mou'[mouth] o' his first. I wad[would] hae her hear 't frae my ain[own], an' syne[then] she canna think I meant to tak her in."

At this moment there was a movement in the group. Shargar, receiving no reply, looked round at Robert. It was now Shargar's turn to be surprised at his expression.

“Are ye seein’ a vraith[apparition], Robert?” he said. “What gars[causes, compels] ye leuk[look] like that, man?”

“Oh!” answered Robert, recovering himself, “I thought I saw some one I knew. But I’m not sure. I’ll tell you afterwards. We’ve been talking too earnestly. People are beginning to look at us.”

So saying, he moved away towards the group of which the marquis still formed one. As he drew near he saw a piano behind Miss Hamilton. A sudden impulse seized him, and he yielded to it. He made his way to the piano, and seating himself, began to play very softly—so softly that the sounds could scarcely be heard beyond the immediate neighbourhood of the instrument. There was no change on the storm of talk that filled the room. But in a few minutes a face white as a shroud was turned round upon him from the group in front, like the moon dawning out of a cloud. He stopped at once, saying to himself, “I was right;” and rising, mingled again with the crowd. A few minutes after, he saw Shargar leading Miss Hamilton out of the room, and Lady Janet following. He did not intend to wait his return, but got near the door, that he might slip out when he should re-enter. But Shargar did not return. For, the moment she reached the fresh air, Miss Hamilton was so much better that Lady Janet, whose heart was as young towards young people as if she had never had the unfortunate love affair tradition assigned her, asked him to see them home, and he followed them into her carriage. Falconer left a few minutes after, anxious for quiet that he might make up his mind as to what he ought to do. Before he had walked home, he had resolved on the next step. But not wishing to see Shargar yet, and at the same time wanting to have a night’s rest, he went home only to change his clothes, and betook himself to a hotel in Covent Garden.

He was at Lady Janet's door by ten o'clock the next morning, and sent in his card to Miss Hamilton. He was shown into the drawing-room, where she came to him.

"May I presume on old acquaintance?" he asked, holding out his hand.

She looked in his face quietly, took his hand, pressed it warmly, and said,

"No one has so good a right, Mr. Falconer. Do sit down."

He placed a chair for her, and obeyed.

After a moment's silence on both sides:

"Are you aware, Miss—?" he said and hesitated.

"Miss Hamilton," she said with a smile. "I was Miss Lindsay when you knew me so many years ago. I will explain presently."

Then with an air of expectation she awaited the finish of his sentence.

"Are you aware, Miss Hamilton, that I am Major Moray's oldest friend?"

"I am quite aware of it, and delighted to know it. He told me so last night."

Somewhat dismayed at this answer, Falconer resumed,

"Did Major Moray likewise communicate with you concerning his own history?"

"He did. He told me all."

Falconer was again silent for some moments.

"Shall I be presuming too far if I venture to conclude that my friend will not continue his visits?"

"On the contrary," she answered, with the same delicate blush that in old times used to overspread the lovely whiteness of her face, "I expect

him within half-an-hour."

"Then there is no time to be lost," thought Falconer.

"Without presuming to express any opinion of my own," he said quietly, "a social code far less severe than that which prevails in England, would take for granted that an impassable barrier existed between Major Moray and Miss Hamilton."

"Do not suppose, Mr. Falconer, that I could not meet Major Moray's honesty with equal openness on my side."

Falconer, for the first time almost in his life, was incapable of speech from bewilderment. But Miss Hamilton did not in the least enjoy his perplexity, and made haste to rescue both him and herself. With a blush that was now deep as any rose, she resumed,

"But I owe you equal frankness, Mr. Falconer. There is no barrier between Major Moray and myself but the foolish—no, wicked—indiscretion of an otherwise innocent and ignorant girl. Listen, Mr. Falconer: under the necessity of the circumstances you will not misjudge me if I compel myself to speak calmly. This, I trust, will be my final penance. I thought Lord Rothie was going to marry me. To do him justice, he never said so. Make what excuse for my folly you can. I was lost in a mist of vain imaginations. I had had no mother to teach me anything, Mr. Falconer, and my father never suspected the necessity of teaching me anything. I was very ill on the passage to Antwerp, and when I began to recover a little, I found myself beginning to doubt both my own conduct and his lordship's intentions. Possibly the fact that he was not quite so kind to me in my illness as I had expected, and that I felt hurt in consequence, aided the doubt. Then the thought of my father returning and finding that I had left him, came and burned in my heart like fire. But what was I to do? I had never been out of Aberdeen before.

I did not know even a word of French. I was altogether in Lord Rothie's power. I thought I loved him, but it was not much of love that sea-sickness could get the better of. With a heart full of despair I went on shore. The captain slipped a note into my hand. I put it in my pocket, but pulled it out with my handkerchief in the street. Lord Rothie picked it up. I begged him to give it me, but he read it, and then tore it in pieces. I entered the hotel, as wretched as girl could well be. I began to dislike him. But during dinner he was so kind and attentive that I tried to persuade myself that my fears were fanciful. After dinner he took me out. On the stairs we met a lady whose speech was Scotch. Her maid called her Lady Janet. She looked kindly at me as I passed. I thought she could read my face. I remembered afterwards that Lord Rothie turned his head away when we met her. We went into the cathedral. We were standing under that curious dome, and I was looking up at its strange lights, when down came a rain of bell-notes on the roof over my head. Before the first tune was over, I seemed to expect the second, and then the third, without thinking how I could know what was coming; but when they ended with the ballad of the Witch Lady, and I lifted up my head and saw that I was not by my father's fireside, but in Antwerp Cathedral with Lord Rothie, despair filled me with a half-insane resolution. Happily Lord Rothie was at some little distance talking to a priest about one of Rubens's pictures. I slipped unseen behind the nearest pillar, and then flew from the church. How I got to the hotel I do not know, but I did reach it. "Lady Janet,' was all I could say. The waiter knew the name, and led me to her room. I threw myself on my knees, and begged her to save me. She assured me no one should touch me. I gasped 'Lord Rothie,' and fainted. When I came to myself—but I need not tell you all the particulars. Lady Janet did take care of me. Till last night I never saw Lord Rothie again. I

did not acknowledge him, but he persisted in talking to me, behave as I would, and I saw well enough that he knew me."

Falconer took her hand and kissed it.

"Thank God," he said. "That spire was indeed the haunt of angels as I fancied while I played upon those bells."

"I knew it was you—that is, I was sure of it when I came to think about it; but at the time I took it for a direct message from heaven, which nobody heard but myself."

"It was such none the less that I was sent to deliver it," said Falconer. "I little thought during my imprisonment because of it, that the end of my journey was already accomplished."

Mysie put her hand in his.

"You have saved me, Mr. Falconer."

"For Ericson's sake, who was dying and could not," returned Falconer.

"Ah!" said Mysie, her large eyes opening with wonder. It was evident she had had no suspicion of his attachment to her.

"But," said Falconer, "there was another in it, without whom I could have done nothing."

"Who was that?"

"George Moray."

"Did he know me then?"

"No. Fortunately not. You would not have looked at him then. It was all done for love of me. He is the truest fellow in the world, and altogether worthy of you, Miss Hamilton. I will tell you the whole story some day, lest he should not do himself justice."

“Ah, that reminds me. Hamilton sounds strange in your voice. You suspected me of having changed my name to hide my history?”

It was so, and Falconer’s silence acknowledged the fact.

“Lady Janet brought me home, and told my father all. When he died a few years after, she took me to live with her, and never rested till she had brought me acquainted with Sir John Hamilton, in favour of whom my father had renounced his claim to some disputed estates. Sir John had lost his only son, and he had no daughter. He was a kind-hearted old man, rather like my own father. He took to me, as they say, and made me change my name to his, leaving me the property that might have been my father’s, on condition that whoever I married should take the same name. I don’t think your friend will mind making the exchange,” said Mysie in conclusion, as the door opened and Shargar came in.

“Robert, ye’re a’ gait[everywhere] !” he exclaimed as he entered. Then, stopping to ask no questions, “Ye see I’m to hae a name o’ my ain[own] efter[after] a’,” he said, with a face which looked even handsome in the light of his gladness.

Robert shook hands with him, and wished him joy heartily.

“Wha wad[would] hae thocht[thought] it, Shargar,” he added, “that day ’at ye pat[put, made] bonnets[man’s caps] for hose upo’ Black Geordie’s huves[hooves]?”

The butler announced the Marquis of Boarshead. Mysie’s eyes flashed. She rose from her seat, and advanced to meet the marquis, who entered behind the servant. He bowed and held out his hand. Mysie retreated one step, and stood.

“Your lordship has no right to force yourself upon me. You must have seen that I had no wish to renew the acquaintance I was unhappy enough to form—now, thank God, many years ago.”

“Forgive me, Miss Hamilton. One word in private,” said the marquis.

“Not a word,” returned Mysie.

“Before these gentlemen, then, whom I have not the honour of knowing, I offer you my hand.”

“To accept that offer would be to wrong myself even more than your lordship has done.”

She went back to where Moray was standing, and stood beside him. The evil spirit in the marquis looked out at its windows.

“You are aware, madam,” he said, “that your reputation is in the hand I offer you?”

“The worse for it, my lord,” returned Mysie, with a scornful smile. “But your lordship’s brother will protect it.”

“My brother!” said the marquis. “What do you mean? I have no brother!”

“Ye hae mair[more] brithers[brothers, fellows] than ye ken o’, Lord Sandy, and I’m ane[one] o’ them,” said Shargar.

“You are either a liar or a bastard, then,” said the marquis, who had not been brought up in a school of which either self-restraint or respect for women were prominent characteristics.

Falconer forgot himself for a moment, and made a stride forward.

“Dinna hit him, Robert,” cried Shargar. “He ance[once] gae[gave] me a shillin’, an’ it helpit[helped], as ye ken, to haud[hold, keep] me alive to face him this day.—No liar, my lord, but a bastard, thank heaven.” Then, with a laugh, he instantly added, “gin[if] I had been ain[own] brither[brother] to you, my lord, God only knows what a rascal I micht hae been.”

“By God, you shall answer for your damned insolence,” said the marquis, and, lifting his riding-whip from the table where he had laid it,

he approached his brother.

Mysie rang the bell.

“Haud[hold, keep] yer han’, Sandy,” cried Shargar. “I hae faced mair[more] fearsome foes than you. But I hae some faimily-feelin’, though ye hae nane[none]: I wadna willin’ly strike my brither[brother].”

As he spoke, he retreated a little. The marquis came on with raised whip. But Falconer stepped between, laid one of his great hands on the marquis’s chest, and flung him to the other end of the room, where he fell over an ottoman. The same moment the servant entered.

“Ask your mistress to oblige me by coming to the drawing-room,” said Mysie.

The marquis had risen, but had not recovered his presence of mind when Lady Janet entered. She looked inquiringly from one to the other.

“Please, Lady Janet, will you ask the Marquis of Boarshead to leave the house,” said Mysie.

“With all my hert[heart],” answered Lady Janet; “and the mair[more] that he’s a kin’[kind] o’ a cousin o’ my ain[own]. Gang yer wa’s[go on], Sandy. Ye’re no fit company for decent fowk[folk]; an’ that ye wad[would] ken yersel’, gin[if] ye had ony[any] idea left o’ what decency means.”

Without heeding her, the marquis went up to Falconer.

“Your card, sir.”

Lady Janet followed him.

“’Deed ye s’ get nae[no, not] cairds here,” she said, pushing him aside.

“So you allow your friends to insult me in your own house as they please, cousin Janet?” said the marquis, who probably felt her opposition the most formidable of all.

"'Deed they canna say waur[worse] o' ye nor[than] I think. Gang[go] awa'[away], an' repent. Consider yer gray hairs, man."

This was the severest blow he had yet received. He left the room, "swearing at large."

Falconer followed him; but what came of it nobody ever heard.

Major and Miss Hamilton were married within three months, and went out to India together, taking Nancy Kennedy with them.

Chapter 10 - A Neophyte

Before many months had passed, without the slightest approach to any formal recognition, I found myself one of the church of labour of which Falconer was clearly the bishop. As he is the subject, or rather object of my book, I will now record a fact which may serve to set forth his views more clearly. I gained a knowledge of some of the circumstances, not merely from the friendly confidences of Miss St. John and Falconer, but from being a kind of a Scotch cousin of Lady Janet Gordon, whom I had taken an opportunity of acquainting with the relation. She was old-fashioned enough to acknowledge it even with some eagerness. The ancient clan-feeling is good in this, that it opens a channel whose very existence is a justification for the flow of simply human feelings along all possible levels of social position. And I would there were more of it. Only something better is coming instead of it—a recognition of the infinite brotherhood in Christ. All other relations, all attempts by churches, by associations, by secret societies—of Freemasons and others, are good merely as they tend to destroy themselves in the wider truth; as they teach men to be dissatisfied with their limitations. But I wander; for I mentioned Lady Janet now, merely to account for some of the information I possess concerning Lady Georgina Betterton.

I met her once at my so-called cousin's, whom she patronized as a dear old thing. To my mind, she was worth twenty of her, though she was wrinkled and Scottishly sententious. "A sweet old bat," was another epithet of Lady Georgina's. But she came to see her, notwithstanding, and did not refuse to share in her nice little dinners, and least of all, when Falconer was of the party, who had been so much taken with Lady

Janet's behaviour to the Marquis of Boarshead, just recorded, that he positively *cultivated* her acquaintance thereafter.

Lady Georgina was of an old family—an aged family, indeed; so old, in fact, that some envious people professed to think it decrepit with age. This, however, may well be questioned if any argument bearing on the point may be drawn from the person of Lady Georgina. She was at least as tall as Mary St. John, and very handsome—only with somewhat masculine features and expression. She had very sloping shoulders and a long neck, which took its finest curves when she was talking to inferiors: condescension was her forte. Of the admiration of *the men*, she had had more than enough, although either they were afraid to go farther, or she was hard to please.

She had never contemplated anything admirable long enough to comprehend it; she had never looked up to man or woman with anything like reverence; she saw too quickly and too keenly into the foibles of all who came near her to care to look farther for their virtues. If she had ever been humbled, and thence taught to look up, she might by this time have been a grand woman, worthy of a great man's worship. She patronized Miss St. John, considerably to her amusement, and nothing to her indignation. Of course she could not understand her. She had a vague notion of how she spent her time; and believing a certain amount of fanaticism essential to religion, wondered how so sensible and ladylike a person as Miss St. John could *go in for* it.

Meeting Falconer at Lady Janet's, she was taken with him. Possibly she recognized in him a strength that would have made him her master, if he had cared for such a distinction; but nothing she could say attracted more than a passing attention on his part. Falconer was out of her sphere, and her influences were powerless to reach him.

At length she began to have a glimmering of the relation of labour between Miss St. John and him, and applied to the former for some enlightenment. But Miss St. John was far from explicit, for she had no desire for such assistance as Lady Georgina's. What motives next led her to seek the interview I am now about to record, I cannot satisfactorily explain, but I will hazard a conjecture or two, although I doubt if she understood them thoroughly herself.

She was, if not *blasée*, at least *ennuyée*, and began to miss excitement, and feel blindly about her for something to make life interesting. She was gifted with far more capacity than had ever been exercised, and was of a large enough nature to have grown sooner weary of trifles than most women of her class. She might have been an artist, but she drew like a young lady; she might have been a prophetess, and Byron was her greatest poet. It is no wonder that she wanted something she had not got.

Since she had been foiled in her attempt on Miss St. John, which she attributed to jealousy, she had, in quite another circle, heard strange, wonderful, even romantic stories about Falconer and his doings among the poor. A new world seemed to open before her longing gaze—a world, or a calenture, a mirage? for would she cross the "wandering fields of barren foam," to reach the green grass that did wave on the far shore? the dewless desert to reach the fair water that did lie leagues beyond its pictured sweetness? But I think, mingled with whatever motives she may have had, there must have been some desire to be a nobler, that is a more useful woman than she had been.

She had not any superabundance of feminine delicacy, though she had plenty of good-breeding, and she trusted to her position in society to cover the eccentricity of her present undertaking.

One morning after breakfast she called upon Falconer; and accustomed to visits from all sorts of people, Mrs. Ashton showed her into his sitting-room without even asking her name. She found him at his piano, apologized, in her fashionable drawl, for interrupting his music, and accepted his offer of a chair without a shade of embarrassment. Falconer seated himself and sat waiting.

"I fear the step I have taken will appear strange to you, Mr. Falconer. Indeed it appears strange to myself. I am afraid it may appear stranger still."

"It is easy for me to leave all judgment in the matter to yourself, Miss—I beg your pardon; I know we have met; but for the moment I cannot recall your name."

"Lady Georgina Betterton," drawled the visitor carelessly, hiding whatever annoyance she may have felt.

Falconer bowed. Lady Georgina resumed.

"Of course it only affects myself; and I am willing to take the risk, notwithstanding the natural desire to stand well in the opinion of any one with whom even *my* boldness could venture such a step."

A smile, intended to be playful, covered the retreat of the sentence. Falconer bowed again. Lady Georgina had yet again to resume.

"From the little I have seen, and the much I have heard of you—excuse me, Mr. Falconer—I cannot help thinking that you know more of the secret of life than other people—if indeed it has any secret."

"Life certainly is no burden to me," returned Falconer. "If that implies the possession of any secret which is not common property, I fear it also involves a natural doubt whether such secret be communicable."

"Of course I mean only some secret everybody ought to know."

"I do not misunderstand you."

"I want to live. You know the world, Mr. Falconer. I need not tell you what kind of life a girl like myself leads. I am not old, but the gilding is worn off. Life looks bare, ugly, uninteresting. I ask you to tell me whether there is any reality in it or not; whether its past glow was only gilt; whether the best that can be done is to get through with it as fast as possible?"

"Surely your ladyship must know some persons whose very countenances prove that they have found a reality at the heart of life."

"Yes. But none whose judgment I could trust. I cannot tell how soon they may find reason to change their minds on the subject. Their satisfaction may only be that they have not tried to rub the varnish off the gilding so much as I, and therefore the gilding itself still shines a little in their eyes."

"If it be only gilding, it is better it should be rubbed off."

"But I am unwilling to think it is. I am not willing to sign a bond of farewell to hope. Life seemed good once. It is bad enough that it seems such no longer, without consenting that it must and shall be so. Allow me to add, for my own sake, that I speak from the bitterness of no chagrin. I have had all I ever cared—or condescended to wish for. I never had anything worth the name of a disappointment in my life."

"I cannot congratulate you upon that," said Falconer, seriously. "But if there be a truth or a heart in life, assurance of the fact can only spring from harmony with that truth. It is not to be known save by absolute contact with it; and the sole guide in the direction of it must be duty: I can imagine no other possible conductor. We must do before we can know."

“Yes, yes,” replied Lady Georgina, hastily, in a tone that implied, “Of course, of course: we know all about that.” But aware at once, with the fine instinct belonging to her mental organization, that she was thus shutting the door against all further communication, she added instantly: “But what *is* one’s duty? There is the question.”

“The thing that lies next you, of course. You are, and must remain, the sole judge of that. Another cannot help you.”

“But that is just what I do not know.”

I interrupt Lady Georgina to remark—for I too have been a pupil of Falconer—that I believe she must have suspected what her duty was, and would not look firmly at her own suspicion. She added:

“I want direction.”

But the same moment she proceeded to indicate the direction in which she wanted to be directed; for she went on:

“You know that now-a-days there are so many modes in which to employ one’s time and money that one does not know which to choose. The lower strata of society, you know, Mr. Falconer—so many channels! I want the advice of a man of experience, as to the best investment, if I may use the expression: I do not mean of money only, but of time as well.”

“I am not fitted to give advice in such a matter.”

“Mr. Falconer!”

“I assure you I am not. I subscribe to no society myself—not one.”

“Excuse me, but I can hardly believe the rumours I hear of you—people will talk, you know—are all inventions. They say you are for ever burrowing amongst the poor. Excuse the phrase.”

“I excuse or accept it, whichever you please. Whatever I do, I am my own steward.”

“Then you are just the person to help me! I have a fortune, not very limited, at my own disposal: a gentleman who is his own steward, would find his labours merely facilitated by administering for another as well—such labours, I mean.”

“I must beg to be excused, Lady Georgina. I am accountable only for my own, and of that I have quite as much as I can properly manage. It is far more difficult to use money for others than to spend it for yourself.”

“Ah!” said Lady Georgina, thoughtfully, and cast an involuntary glance round the untidy room, with its horse-hair furniture, its ragged array of books on the wall, its side-table littered with pamphlets he never read, with papers he never printed, with pipes he smoked by chance turns. He saw the glance and understood it.

“I am accustomed,” he said, “to be in such sad places for human beings to live in, that I sometimes think even this dingy old room an absolute palace of comfort.—But,” he added, checking himself, as it were, “I do not see in the least how your proposal would facilitate an answer to your question.”

“You seem hardly inclined to do me justice,” said Lady Georgina, with, for the first time, a perceptible, though slight shadow crossing the disc of her resolution. “I only meant it,” she went on, “as a step towards a further proposal, which I think you will allow looks at least in the direction you have been indicating.”

She paused.

“May I beg of you to state the proposal?” said Falconer.

But Lady Georgina was apparently in some little difficulty as to the proper form in which to express her object. At last it appeared in the cloak of a question.

“Do you require no assistance in your efforts for the elevation of the lower classes?” she asked.

“I don’t make any such efforts,” said Falconer.

Some of my lady-readers will probably be remarking to themselves, “How disagreeable of him! I can’t endure the man.” If they knew how Falconer had to beware of the forwardness and annoyance of well-meaning women, they would not dislike him so much. But Falconer could be indifferent to much dislike, and therein I know some men that envy him.

When he saw, however, that Lady Georgina was trying to swallow a lump in her throat, he hastened to add,

“I have only relations with individuals—none with classes.”

Lady Georgina gathered her failing courage. “Then there is the more hope for me,” she said. “Surely there are things a woman might be useful in that a man cannot do so well—especially if she would do as she was told, Mr. Falconer?”

He looked at her, inquiring of her whole person what *numen* abode in the fane[what spirit abode in the temple]. She misunderstood the look.

“I could dress very differently, you know. I will be a sister of charity, if you like.”

“And wear a uniform?—as if the god of another world wanted to make proselytes or traitors in this! No, Lady Georgina, it was not of a dress so easily altered that I was thinking; it was of the *habit*, the dress of mind, of thought, of feeling. When you laid aside your beautiful dress, could

you avoid putting on the garment of *condescension*, the most unchristian virtue attributed to Deity or saint? Could you—I must be plain with you, Lady Georgina, for this has nothing to do with the forms of so-called society—could your temper endure the mortifications of low opposition and misrepresentation of motive and end—which, avoid intrusion as you might, would yet force themselves on your perception? Could you be rudely, impudently thwarted by the very persons for whom you were spending your strength and means, and show no resentment? Could you make allowances for them as for your own brothers and sisters, your own children?"

Lady Georgina was silent.

"I shall seem to glorify myself, but at that risk I must put the reality before you.—Could you endure the ugliness both moral and physical which you must meet at every turn? Could you look upon loathsomeness, not merely without turning away in disgust, and thus wounding the very heart you would heal, but without losing your belief in the Fatherhood of God, by losing your faith in the actual blood-relationship to yourself of these wretched beings? Could you believe in the immortal essence hidden under all this garbage—God at the root of it all? How would the delicate senses you probably inherit receive the intrusions from which they could not protect themselves? Would you be in no danger of finding personal refuge in the horrid fancy, that these are but the slimy borders of humanity where it slides into, and is one with bestiality? I could show you one fearful baboon-like woman, whose very face makes my nerves shudder: could you believe that woman might one day become a lady, beautiful as yourself, and *therefore* minister to her? Would you not be tempted, for the sake of your own comfort, if not for the pride of your own humanity, to believe that, like untimely blossoms, these must fall

from off the boughs of the tree of life, and come to nothing at all—a theory that may do for the preacher, but will not do for the worker: him it would paralyze?—or, still worse, infinitely worse, that they were doomed, from their birth, to endless ages of a damnation, filthy as that in which you now found them, and must probably leave them? If you could come to this, you had better withhold your hand; for no desire for the betterment of the masses, as they are stupidly called, can make up for a lack of faith in the individual. If you cannot hope for them in your heart, your hands cannot reach them to do them good. They will only hurt them."

Lady Georgina was still silent. Falconer's eloquence had perhaps made her ashamed.

"I want you to sit down and count the cost, before you do any mischief by beginning what you are unfit for. Last week I was compelled more than once to leave the house where my duty led me, and to sit down upon a stone in the street, so ill that I was in danger of being led away as intoxicated, only the policeman happened to know me. Twice I went back to the room I had left, crowded with human animals, and one of them at least dying. It was all I could do, and I have tolerable nerve and tolerable experience."

A mist was gathering over Lady Georgina's eyes. She confessed it afterwards to Miss St. John. And through the mist he looked larger than human.

"And then the time you must spend before you can lay hold upon them at all, that is with the personal relation which alone is of any real influence! Our Saviour himself had to be thirty years in the world before he had footing enough in it to justify him in beginning to teach publicly: he had been laying the needful foundations all the time. Not under any

circumstances could I consent to make use of you before you had brought yourself into genuine relations with some of them first."

"Do you count societies, then, of no use whatever?" Lady Georgina asked, more to break the awkwardness of her prolonged silence than for any other reason.

"In as far as any of the persons they employ fulfil the conditions of which I have spoken, they are useful—that is, just in as far as they come into genuine human relations with those whom they would help. In as far as their servants are incapable of this, the societies are hurtful. The chief good which societies might effect would be the procuring of simple justice for the poor. That is what they need at the hands of the nation, and what they do not receive. But though few can have the knowledge of the poor I have, many could do something, if they would only set about it simply, and not be too anxious to convert them; if they would only be their friends after a common-sense fashion. I know, say, a hundred wretched men and women far better than a man in general knows him with whom he claims an ordinary intimacy. I know many more by sight whose names in the natural course of events I shall probably know soon. I know many of their relations to each other, and they talk about each other to me as if I were one of themselves, which I hope in God I am. I have been amongst them a good many years now, and shall probably spend my life amongst them. When I went first, I was repeatedly robbed; now I should hardly fear to carry another man's property. Two years ago I had my purse taken, but next morning it was returned, I do not know by whom: in fact it was put into my pocket again—every coin, as far as I could judge, as it left me. I seldom pretend to teach them—only now and then drop a word of advice. But possibly, before I die, I may speak to them in public. At present I avoid all attempt at organization of any sort,

and as far as I see, am likely of all things to avoid it. What I want is first to be their friend, and then to be at length recognized as such. It is only in rare cases that I seek the acquaintance of any of them: I let it come naturally. I bide my time. Almost never do I offer assistance. I wait till they ask it, and then often refuse the sort they want. The worst thing you can do for them is to attempt to save them from the natural consequences of wrong: you may sometimes help them out of them. But it is right to do many things for them when you know them, which it would not be right to do for them until you know them. I am amongst them; they know me; their children know me; and something is always occurring that makes this or that one come to me. Once I have a footing, I seldom lose it. So you see, in this my labour I am content to do the thing that lies next me. I wait events. You have had no training, no blundering to fit you for such work. There are many other modes of being useful; but none in which I could undertake to direct you. I am not in the habit of talking so much about my ways—but that is of no consequence. I think I am right in doing so in this instance."

"I cannot misunderstand you," faltered Lady Georgina.

Falconer was silent. Without looking up from the floor on which her eyes had rested all the time he spoke, Lady Georgina said at last,

"Then what is *my* next duty? What is the thing that lies nearest to me?"

"That, I repeat, belongs to your every-day history. No one can answer that question but yourself. Your next duty is just to determine what your next duty is.—Is there nothing you neglect? Is there nothing you know you ought not to do?—You would know your duty, if you thought in earnest about it, and were not ambitious of great things."

“Ah then,” responded Lady Georgina, with an abandoning sigh, “I suppose it is something very commonplace, which will make life more dreary than ever. That cannot help me.”

“It will, if it be as dreary as reading the newspapers to an old deaf aunt. It will soon lead you to something more. Your duty will begin to comfort you at once, but will at length open the unknown fountain of life in your heart.”

Lady Georgina lifted up her head in despair, looked at Falconer through eyes full of tears, and said vehemently,

“Mr. Falconer, you can have no conception how wretched a life like mine is. And the futility of everything is embittered by the consciousness that it is from no superiority to such things that I do not care for them.”

“It *is* from superiority to such things that you do not care for them. You were not made for such things. They cannot fill your heart. It has whole regions with which they have no relation.”

“The very thought of music makes me feel ill. I used to be passionately fond of it.”

“I presume you got so far in it that you asked, ‘Is there nothing more?’ Concluding there was nothing more, and yet needing more, you turned from it with disappointment?”

“It is the same,” she went on hurriedly, “with painting, modelling, reading—whatever I have tried. I am sick of them all. They do nothing for me.”

“How can you enjoy music, Lady Georgina, if you are not in harmony with the heart and source of music?”

“How do you mean?”

“Until the human heart knows the divine heart, it must sigh and complain like a petulant child, who flings his toys from him because his mother is not at home. When his mother comes back to him he finds his toys are good still. When we find Him in our own hearts, we shall find him in everything, and music will be deep enough then, Lady Georgina. It is this that the Brahmin and the Platonist seek; it is this that the mystic and the anchorite sigh for; towards this the teaching of the greatest of men would lead us: Lord Bacon himself says, ‘Nothing can fill, much less extend the soul of man, but God, and the contemplation of God.’ It is Life you want. If you will look in your New Testament, and find out all that our Lord says about Life, you will find the only cure for your malady. I know what such talk looks like; but depend upon it, what I am talking about is something very different from what you fancy it. Anyhow to this you must come, one day or other.”

“But how am I to gain this indescribable good, which so many seek, and so few find?”

“Those are not my words,” said Falconer emphatically. “I should have said—‘which so few yet seek; but so many shall at length find.’”

“Do not quarrel with my foolish words, but tell me how I am to find it; for I suppose there must be something in what so many good people assert.”

“You thought I could give you help?”

“Yes. That is why I came to you.”

“Just so. I cannot give you help. Go and ask it of one who can.”

“Speak more plainly.”

“Well then: if there be a God, he must hear you if you call to him. If there be a father, he will listen to his child. He will teach you everything.”

“But I don’t know what I want.”

“He does: ask him to tell you what you want. It all comes back to the old story: ‘If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him!’ But I wish you would read your New Testament—the Gospels I mean: you are not in the least fit to understand the Epistles yet. Read the story of our Saviour as if you had never read it before. He at least was a man who seemed to have that secret of life after the knowledge of which your heart is longing.”

Lady Georgina rose. Her eyes were again full of tears. Falconer too was moved. She held out her hand to him, and without another word left the room. She never came there again.

Her manner towards Falconer was thereafter much altered. People said she was in love with him: if she was, it did her no harm. Her whole character certainly was changed. She sought the friendship of Miss St. John, who came at length to like her so much, that she took her with her in some of her walks among the poor. By degrees she began to do something herself after a quiet modest fashion. But within a few years, probably while so engaged, she caught a fever from which she did not recover. It was not till after her death that Falconer told any one of the interview he had had with her. And by that time I had the honour of being very intimate with him. When she knew that she was dying, she sent for him. Mary St. John was with her. She left them together. When he came out, he was weeping.

Chapter 11 - The Suicide

Falconer lived on and laboured on in London. Wherever he found a man fitted for the work, he placed him in such office as De Fleuri already occupied. At the same time he went more into society, and gained the friendship of many influential people. Besides the use he made of this to carry out plans for individual rescue, it enabled him to bestir himself for the first and chief good which he believed it was in the power of the government to effect for the class amongst which he laboured. As I have shown, he did not believe in any positive good being effected save through individual contact—through faith, in a word—faith in the human helper—which might become a stepping-stone through the chaotic misery towards faith in the Lord and in his Father. All that association could do, as such, was only, in his judgment, to remove obstructions from the way of individual growth and education—to put better conditions within reach—first of all, to provide that the people should be able, if they would, to live decently. He had no notion of domestic inspection, or of offering prizes for cleanliness and order. He knew that misery and wretchedness are the right and best condition of those who live so that misery and wretchedness are the natural consequences of their life. But there ought always to be the possibility of emerging from these; and as things were, over the whole country, for many who would if they could, it was impossible to breathe fresh air, to be clean, to live like human beings. And he saw this difficulty ever on the increase, through the rapacity of the holders of small house-property, and the utter wickedness of railway companies, who pulled down every house that stood in their way, and did nothing to provide room for those who were thus ejected—most probably from a wretched place, but only, to be

driven into a more wretched still. To provide suitable dwellings for the poor he considered the most pressing of all necessary reforms. His own fortune was not sufficient for doing much in this way, but he set about doing what he could by purchasing houses in which the poor lived, and putting them into the hands of persons whom he could trust, and who were immediately responsible to him for their proceedings: they had to make them fit for human abodes, and let them to those who desired better accommodation, giving the preference to those already tenants, so long as they paid their reasonable rent, which he considered far more necessary for them to do than for him to have done.

One day he met by appointment the owner of a small block, of which he contemplated the purchase. They were in a dreadfully dilapidated condition, a shame that belonged more to the owner than the inhabitants. The man wanted to sell the houses, or at least was willing to sell them, but put an exorbitant price upon them. Falconer expostulated.

"I know the whole of the rent these houses could bring you in," he said, "without making any deduction for vacancies and defalcations: what you ask is twice as much as they would fetch if the full rent were certain."

The poor wretch looked up at him with the leer of a ghoul. He was dressed like a broken-down clergyman, in rusty black, with a neck-cloth of whitey-brown.

"I admit it," he said in good English, and a rather educated tone. "Your arguments are indisputable. I confess besides that so far short does the yield come of the amount on paper, that it would pay me to give them away. But it's the funerals, sir, that make it worth my while. I'm an undertaker, as you may judge from my costume. I count back-rent in the burying. People may cheat their landlord, but they can't cheat the

undertaker. They *must* be buried. That's the one indispensable—ain't it, sir?"

Falconer had let him run on that he might have the measure of him. Now he was prepared with his reply.

"You've told me your profession," he said: "I'll tell you mine. I am a lawyer. If you don't let me have those houses for five hundred, which is the full market value, I'll prosecute you. It'll take a good penny from the profits of your coffins to put those houses in a state to satisfy the inspector."

The wretched creature was struck dumb. Falconer resumed.

"You're the sort of man that ought to be kept to your pound of filthy flesh. I know what I say; and I'll do it. The law costs me nothing. *You* won't find it so."

The undertaker sold the houses, and no longer in that quarter killed the people he wanted to bury.

I give this as a specimen of the kind of thing Falconer did. But he took none of the business part in his own hands, on the same principle on which Paul the Apostle said it was unmeet for him to leave the preaching of the word in order to serve tables—not that the thing was beneath him, but that it was not his work so long as he could be doing more important service still.

De Fleuri was one of his chief supports. The whole nature of the man mellowed under the sun of Falconer, and over the work that Falconer gave him to do. His daughter recovered, and devoted herself to the same labour that had rescued her. Miss St. John was her *superior*. By degrees, without any laws or regulations, a little company was gathered, not of ladies and gentlemen, but of men and women, who aided each other, and without once meeting as a whole, laboured not the less as one body in

the work of the Lord, bound in one by bonds that had nothing to do with cobweb committee meetings or public dinners, chairmen or wine-flushed subscriptions. They worked like the leaven of which the Lord spoke.

But De Fleuri, like almost every one in the community I believe, had his own private schemes subserving the general good. He knew the best men of his own class and his own trade, and with them his superior intellectual gifts gave him influence. To them he told the story of Falconer's behaviour to him, of Falconer's own need, and of his hungry-hearted search. An enthusiasm of help seized upon the men. To aid your superior is such a rousing gladness!—Was anything of this in St. Paul's mind when he spoke of our being fellow-workers with God? I only put the question.—Each one of these had his own trustworthy acquaintances, or neighbours, rather—for like finds out like all the world *through*, as well as *over*—and to them he told the story of Falconer and his father, so that in all that region of London it became known that the man who loved the poor was himself needy, and looked to the poor for their help. Without them he could not be made perfect.

Some of my readers may be inclined to say that it was dishonourable in Falconer to have occasioned the publishing of his father's disgrace. Such may recall to their minds that concealment is no law of the universe; that, on the contrary, the Lord of the Universe said once: "There is nothing covered that shall not be revealed." Was the disgrace of Andrew Falconer greater because a thousand men knew it, instead of forty, who could not help knowing it? Hope lies in light and knowledge. Andrew would be none the worse that honest men knew of his vice: they would be the first to honour him if he should overcome it. If he would not—the disgrace was just, and would fall upon his son only in sorrow,

not in dishonour. The grace of God—the making of humanity by his beautiful hand—no, heart—is such, that disgrace clings to no man after repentance, any more than the feet defiled with the mud of the world come yet defiled from the bath. Even the things that proceed out of the man, and do terribly defile him, can be cast off like the pollution of the leper by a grace that goes deeper than they; and the man who says, "I have sinned: I will sin no more," is even by the voice of his brothers crowned as a conqueror, and by their hearts loved as one who has suffered and overcome. Blessing on the God-born human heart! Let the hounds of God, not of Satan, loose upon sin;—God only can rule the dogs of the devil;—let them hunt it to the earth; let them drag forth the demoniac to the feet of the Man who loved the people while he let the devil take their swine; and do not talk about disgrace from a thing being known when the disgrace is that the thing should exist.

One night I was returning home from some poor attempts of my own. I had now been a pupil of Falconer for a considerable time, but having my own livelihood to make, I could not do so much as I would.

It was late, nearly twelve o'clock, as I passed through the region of Seven Dials. Here and there stood three or four brutal-looking men, and now and then a squalid woman with a starveling baby in her arms, in the light of the gin-shops. The babies were the saddest to see—nursery-plants already in training for the places these men and women now held, then to fill a pauper's grave, or perhaps a perpetual cell—say rather, for the awful spaces of silence, where the railway director can no longer be guilty of a worse sin than house-breaking, and his miserable brother will have no need of the shelter of which he deprived him. Now and then a flaunting woman wavered past—a *night-shade*, as our old dramatists would have called her. I could hardly keep down an evil disgust that

would have conquered my pity, when a scanty white dress would stop beneath a lamp, and the gay dirty bonnet, turning round, reveal a painted face, from which shone little more than an animal intelligence, *not* brightened by the gin she had been drinking. Vague noises of strife and of drunken wrath flitted around me as I passed an alley, or an opening door let out its evil secret. Once I thought I heard the dull *thud* of a blow on the head. The noisome vapours were fit for any of Swedenborg's hells. There were few sounds, but the very quiet seemed infernal. The night was hot and sultry. A skinned cat, possibly still alive, fell on the street before me. Under one of the gas-lamps lay something long: it was a tress of dark hair, torn perhaps from some woman's head: she had beautiful hair at least. Once I heard the cry of *murder*, but where, in that chaos of humanity, right or left, before or behind me, I could not even guess. *Home* to such regions, from gorgeous stage-scenery and dresses, from splendid, mirror-beladen casinos, from singing-halls, and places of private and prolonged revelry, trail the daughters of men at all hours from midnight till morning. Next day they drink hell-fire that they may forget. Sleep brings an hour or two of oblivion, hardly of peace; but they must wake, worn and miserable, and the waking brings no hope: their only known help lies in the gin-shop. What can be done with them? But the secrets God keeps must be as good as those he tells.

But no sights of the night ever affected me so much as walking through this same St. Giles's on a summer Sunday morning, when church-goers were in church. Oh! the faces that creep out into the sunshine then, and haunt their doors! Some of them but skins drawn over skulls, living Death's-heads, grotesque in their hideousness.

I was not very far from Falconer's abode. My mind was oppressed with sad thoughts and a sense of helplessness. I began to wonder what Falconer might at that moment be about. I had not seen him for a long time—a whole fortnight. He might be at home: I would go and see, and if there were light in his windows I would ring his bell.

I went. There was light in his windows. He opened the door himself, and welcomed me. I went up with him, and we began to talk. I told him of my sad thoughts, and my feelings of helplessness.

"He that believeth shall not make haste," he said. "There is plenty of time. You must not imagine that the result depends on you, or that a single human soul can be lost because you may fail. The question, as far as you are concerned, is, whether you are to be honoured in having a hand in the work that God is doing, and will do, whether you help him or not. Some will be honoured: shall it be me? And this honour gained excludes no one: there is work, as there is bread in his house, enough and to spare. It shows no faith in God to make frantic efforts or frantic lamentations. Besides, we ought to teach ourselves to see, as much as we may, the good that is in the condition of the poor."

"Teach me to see that, then," I said. "Show me something."

"The best thing is their kindness to each other. There is an absolute divinity in their self-denial for those who are poorer than themselves. I know one man and woman, married people, who pawned their very furniture and wearing apparel to procure cod-liver oil for a girl dying in consumption. She was not even a relative, only an acquaintance of former years. They had found her destitute and taken her to their own poor home. There are fathers and mothers who will work hard all the morning, and when dinner-time comes 'don't want any,' that there may be enough for their children—or half enough, more likely. Children will

take the bread out of their own mouths to put in that of their sick brother, or to stick in the fist of baby crying for a crust—giving only a queer little helpless grin, half of hungry sympathy, half of pleasure, as they see it disappear. The marvel to me is that the children turn out so well as they do; but that applies to the children in all ranks of life. Have you ever watched a group of poor children, half-a-dozen of them with babies in their arms?"

"I have, a little, and have seen such a strange mixture of carelessness and devotion."

"Yes. I was once stopped in the street by a child of ten, with face absolutely swollen with weeping, asking me to go and see baby who was very ill. She had dropped him four times that morning, but had no idea that could have done him any harm. The carelessness is ignorance. Their form of it is not half so shocking as that of the mother who will tremble at the slightest sign of suffering in her child, but will hear him lie against his brother without the smallest discomfort. Ah! we shall all find, I fear, some day, that we have differed from each other, where we have done best, only in mode—perhaps not even in degree. A grinding tradesman takes advantage of the over supply of labour to get his work done at starvation prices: I owe him love, and have never thought of paying my debt except in boundless indignation."

"I wish I had your faith and courage, Mr. Falconer," I said.

"You are in a fair way of having far more," he returned. "You are not so old as I am, by a long way. But I fear you are getting out of spirits. Is to-morrow a hard day with you?"

"I have next to nothing to do to-morrow."

"Then will you come to me in the evening? We will go out together."

Of course I was only too glad to accept the proposal. But our talk did not end here. The morning began to shine before I rose to leave him; and before I reached my abode it was broad daylight. But what a different heart I carried within me! And what a different London it was outside of me! The scent of the hayfields came on the hardly-moving air. It was a strange morning—a new day of unknown history—in whose young light the very streets were transformed, looking clear and clean, and wondrously transparent in perspective, with unknown shadows lying in unexpected nooks, with projection and recess, line and bend, as I had never seen them before. The light was coming as if for the first time since the city sprang into being—as if a thousand years had rolled over it in darkness and lamplight, and now, now, after the prayers and longings of ages, the sun of God was ascending the awful east, and the spirit-voice had gone forth: "Arise, shine, for thy light is come."

It was a well-behaved, proper London through which I walked home. Here and there, it is true, a debauched-looking man, with pale face, and red sleepy eyes, or a weary, withered girl, like a half-moon in the daylight, straggled somewhither. But they looked strange to the London of the morning. They were not of it. Alas for those who creep to their dens, like the wild beasts when the sun arises, because the light has shaken them out of the world. All the horrid phantasms of the Valley of the Shadow of Death that had risen from the pit with the vaporous night had sunk to escape the arrows of the sun, once more into its bottomless depth. If any horrid deed was doing now, how much more horrid in the awful still light of this first hour of a summer morn! How many evil passions now lay sunk under the holy waves of sleep! How many heartaches were gnawing only in dreams, to wake with the brain, and gnaw in earnest again! And over all brooded the love of the Lord Christ,

who is Lord over all blessed for ever, and shall yet cast death and hell into the lake of fire—the holy purifying Fate.

I got through my sole engagement—a very dreary one, for surely never were there stupider young people in the whole region of rank than those to whom duty and necessity sent me on the Wednesday mornings of that London season—even with some enjoyment. For the lessons Falconer had been giving me clung to me and grew on me until I said thus to myself: "Am I to believe only for the poor, and not for the rich? Am I not to bear with conceit even, hard as it is to teach? for is not this conceit itself the measure as the consequence of incapacity and ignorance? They cannot help being born stupid, any more than some of those children in St. Giles's can help being born preternaturally, unhealthily clever. I am going with my friend this evening: that hope is enough to make me strong for one day at least." So I set myself to my task, and that morning wiled the first gleam of intelligent delight out of the eyes of one poor little washed-out ladyship. I could have kissed her from positive thankfulness.

The day did wear over. The evening did come. I was with my friend—for friend I could call him none the less and all the more that I worshipped him.

"I have business in Westminster," he said, "and then on the other side of the water."

"I am more and more astonished at your knowledge of London, Mr. Falconer," I said. "You must have a great faculty for places."

"I think rather the contrary," he answered. "But there is no end to the growth of a faculty, if one only uses it—especially when his whole nature is interested in its efficiency, and makes demands upon it. The will applies to the intellect; the intellect communicates its necessities to the

brain; the brain bestirs itself, and grows more active; the eyes lend their aid; the memory tries not to be behind; and at length you have a man gifted in localities."

"How is it that people generally can live in such quiet ignorance of the regions that surround them, and the kind of humanity so near them?" I said after a pause.

"It does seem strange. It is as if a man should not know who were in his own house. Would-be civilization has for the very centre of its citadel, for the citizens of its innermost city, for the heart around which the gay and fashionable, the learned, the artistic, the virtuous, the religious are gathered, a people some of whom are barbarous, some cruel, many miserable, many unhappy, save for brief moments not of hope, but of defiance, distilled in the alembic of the brain from gin: what better life could steam up from such a Phlegethon! Look there: 'Cream of the Valley!' As if the mocking serpent must with sweet words of Paradise deepen the horrors of the hellish compound, to which so many of our brothers and sisters made in the image of God, fly as to their only Saviour from the misery of feeling alive."

"How is it that the civilized people of London do not make a simultaneous inroad upon the haunts of the demons and drive them out?"

"It is a mercy they do not. They would only do infinite mischief. The best notion civilization seems to have is—not to drive out the demons, but to drive out the possessed; to take from them the poor refuges they have, and crowd them into deeper and more fetid hells—to make room for what?—more and more temples in which Mammon may be worshipped. The good people on the other hand invade them with foolish tracts, that lie against God; or give their money to build churches,

where there is as yet no people that will go to them. Why, the other day, a young clergyman bored me, and would have been boring me till now, I think, if I would have let him, to part with a block of my houses, where I know every man, woman, and child, and keep them in comparative comfort and cleanliness and decency, to say no more, that he might pull them down and build a church upon the site—not quite five minutes' walk from the church where he now officiates."

It was a blowing, moon-lit night. The gaslights flickered and wavered in the gusts of wind. It was cold, very cold for the season. Even Falconer buttoned his coat over his chest. He got a few paces in advance of me sometimes, when I saw him towering black and tall and somewhat gaunt, like a walking shadow. The wind increased in violence. It was a north-easter, laden with dust, and a sense of frozen Siberian steppes. We had to stoop and head it at the corners of streets. Not many people were out, and those who were, seemed to be hurrying home. A few little provision-shops, and a few inferior butchers' stalls were still open. Their great jets of gas, which looked as if they must poison the meat, were flaming fierce and horizontal, roaring like fiery flags, and anon dying into a blue hiss. Discordant singing, more like the howling of wild beasts, came from the corner houses, which blazed like the gates of hell. Their doors were ever on the swing, and the hot odours of death rushed out, and the cold blast of life rushed in. We paused a little before one of them —over the door, upon the sign, was in very deed the name *Death*. There were ragged women within who took their half-dead babies from their bare, cold, cheerless bosoms, and gave them of the poison of which they themselves drank renewed despair in the name of comfort. They say that most of the gin consumed in London is drunk by women. And the little clay-coloured baby-faces made a grimace or two, and sank to sleep on

the thin tawny breasts of the mothers, who having gathered courage from the essence of despair, faced the scowling night once more, and with bare necks and hopeless hearts went—whither? Where do they all go when the gin-hells close their yawning jaws? Where do they lie down at night? They vanish like unlawfully risen corpses in the graves of cellars and garrets, in the charnel-vaults of pestiferously-crowded lodging-houses, in the prisons of police-stations, under *dry* arches, within hoardings; or they make vain attempts to rest the night out upon door-steps or curbstones. All their life long man denies them the one right in the soil which yet is so much theirs, that once that life is over, he can no longer deny it—the right of room to lie down. Space itself is not allowed to be theirs by any right of existence: the voice of the night-guardian commanding them to move on, is as the howling of a death-hound hunting them out of the air into their graves.

In St. James's we came upon a group around the gates of a great house. Visitors were coming and going, and it was a show to be had for nothing by those who had nothing to pay. Oh! the children with clothes too ragged to hold pockets for their chilled hands, that stared at the childless duchess descending from her lordly carriage! Oh! the wan faces, once lovely as theirs, it may be, that gazed meagre and pinched and hungry on the young maidens in rose-colour and blue, tripping lightly through the avenue of their eager eyes—not yet too envious of unattainable felicity to gaze with admiring sympathy on those who seemed to them the angels, the goddesses of their kind. "O God!" I thought, but dared not speak, "and thou couldst make *all* these girls so lovely! Thou couldst give them all the gracious garments of rose and blue and white if thou wouldst! Why should these not be like those? They are hungry even, and wan and torn. These too are thy children. There is

wealth enough in thy mines and in thy green fields, room enough in thy starry spaces, O God!" But a voice—the echo of Falconer's teaching, awoke in my heart—"Because I would have these more blessed than those, and those more blessed with them, for they *are* all my children."

By the Mall we came into Whitehall, and so to Westminster Bridge. Falconer had changed his mind, and would cross at once. The present bridge was not then finished, and the old bridge alongside of it was still in use for pedestrians. We went upon it to reach the other side. Its centre rose high above the other, for the line of the new bridge ran like a chord across the arc of the old. Through chance gaps in the boarding between, we looked down on the new portion which was as yet used by carriages alone. The moon had, throughout the evening, alternately shone in brilliance from amidst a lake of blue sky, and been overwhelmed in billowy heaps of wind-tormented clouds. As we stood on the apex of the bridge, looking at the night, the dark river, and the mass of human effort about us, the clouds gathered and closed and tumbled upon her in crowded layers. The wind howled through the arches beneath, swept along the boarded fences, and whistled in their holes. The gas-lights blew hither and thither, and were perplexed to live at all.

We were standing at a spot where some shorter pieces had been used in the hoarding; and, although I could not see over them, Falconer, whose head rose more than half a foot above mine, was looking on the other bridge below. Suddenly he grasped the top with his great hands, and his huge frame was over it in an instant. I was on the top of the hoarding the same moment, and saw him prostrate some twelve feet below. He was up the next instant, and running with huge paces diagonally towards the Surrey side. He had seen the figure of a woman come flying along from the Westminster side, without bonnet or shawl.

When she came under the spot where we stood, she had turned across at an obtuse angle towards the other side of the bridge, and Falconer, convinced that she meant to throw herself into the river, went over as I have related. She had all but scrambled over the fence—for there was no parapet yet—by the help of the great beam that ran along to support it, when he caught her by her garments. So poor and thin were those garments, that if she had not been poor and thin too, she would have dropped from them into the darkness below. He took her in his arms, lifted her down upon the bridge, and stood as if protecting her from a pursuing death. I had managed to find an easier mode of descent, and now stood a little way from them.

"Poor girl! poor girl!" he said, as if to himself: "was this the only way left?"

Then he spoke tenderly to her. What he said I could not hear—I only heard the tone.

"O sir!" she cried, in piteous entreaty, "do let me go. Why should a wretched creature like me be forced to live? It's no good to you, sir. Do let me go."

"Come here," he said, drawing her close to the fence. "Stand up again on the beam. Look down."

She obeyed, in a mechanical kind of way. But as he talked, and she kept looking down on the dark mystery beneath, flowing past with every now and then a dull vengeful glitter—continuous, forceful, slow, he felt her shudder in his still clasping arm.

"Look," he said, "how it crawls along—black and slimy! how silent and yet how fierce! Is that a nice place to go to down there? Would there be any rest there, do you think, tumbled about among filth and creeping things, and slugs that feed on the dead; among drowned women like

yourself drifting by, and murdered men, and strangled babies? Is that the door by which you would like to go out of the world?"

"It's no worse," she faltered, "—not so bad as what I should leave behind."

"If this were the only way out of it, I would not keep you from it. I would say, 'Poor thing! there is no help: she must go.' But there is another way.'

"There is no other way, sir—if you knew all," she said.

"Tell me, then."

"I cannot. I dare not. Please—I would rather go."

She looked, from the mere glimpses I could get of her, somewhere about five-and-twenty, making due allowance for the wear of suffering so evident even in those glimpses. I think she might have been beautiful if the waste of her history could have been restored. That she had had at least some advantages of education, was evident from both her tone and her speech. But oh, the wild eyes, and the tortured lips, drawn back from the teeth with an agony of hopelessness, as she struggled anew, perhaps mistrusting them, to escape from the great arms that held her!

"But the river cannot drown *you*," Falconer said. "It can only stop your breath. It cannot stop your thinking. You will go on thinking, thinking, all the same. Drowning people remember in a moment all their past lives. All their evil deeds come up before them, as if they were doing them all over again. So they plunge back into the past and all its misery. While their bodies are drowning, their souls are coming more and more awake."

"That is dreadful," she murmured, with her great eyes fixed on his, and growing steadier in their regard. She had ceased to struggle, so he had

slackened his hold of her, and she was leaning back against the fence.

"And then," he went on, "what if, instead of closing your eyes, as you expected, and going to sleep, and forgetting everything, you should find them come open all at once, in the midst of a multitude of eyes all round about you, all looking at you, all thinking about you, all judging you? What if you should hear, not a tumult of voices and noises, from which you could hope to hide, but a solemn company talking about you—every word clear and plain, piercing your heart with what you could not deny, —and you standing naked and shivering in the midst of them?"

"It is too dreadful!" she cried, making a movement as if the very horror of the idea had a fascination to draw her towards the realization of it. "But," she added, yielding to Falconer's renewed grasp, "they wouldn't be so hard upon me there. They would not be so cruel as men are here."

"Surely not. But all men are not cruel. I am not cruel," he added, forgetting himself for a moment, and caressing with his huge hand the wild pale face that glimmered upon him as it were out of the infinite night—all but swallowed up in it.

She drew herself back, and Falconer, instantly removing his hand, said,

"Look in my face, child, and see whether you cannot trust me."

As he uttered the words, he took off his hat, and stood bare-headed in the moon, which now broke out clear from the clouds. She did look at him. His hair blew about his face. He turned it towards the wind and the moon, and away from her, that she might be undisturbed in her scrutiny. But how she judged of him, I cannot tell; for the next moment he called out in a tone of repressed excitement,

"Gordon, Gordon, look there—above your head, on the other bridge."

I looked and saw a gray head peering over the same gap through which Falconer had looked a few minutes before. I knew something of his personal quest by this time, and concluded at once that he thought it was or might be his father.

"I cannot leave the poor thing—I dare not," he said.

I understood him, and darted off at full speed for the Surrey end of the bridge. What made me choose that end, I do not know; but I was right.

I had some reason to fear that I might be stopped when I reached it, as I had no business to be upon the new bridge. I therefore managed, where the upper bridge sank again towards a level with the lower, to scramble back upon it. As I did so the tall gray-headed man passed me with an uncertain step. I did not see his face. I followed him a few yards behind. He seemed to hear and dislike the sound of my footsteps, for he quickened his pace. I let him increase the distance between us, but followed him still. He turned down the river. I followed. He began to double. I doubled after him. Not a turn could he get before me. He crossed all the main roads leading to the bridges till he came to the last—when he turned toward London Bridge. At the other end, he went down the stairs into Thames Street, and held eastward still. It was not difficult to keep up with him, for his stride though long was slow. He never looked round, and I never saw his face; but I could not help fancying that his back and his gait and his carriage were very like Falconer's.

We were now in a quarter of which I knew nothing, but as far as I can guess from after knowledge, it was one of the worst districts in London, lying to the east of Spital Square. It was late, and there were not many people about.

As I passed a court, I was accosted thus:

"'Ain't you got a glass of ale for a poor cove, gov'nor?"

“I have no coppers,” I said hastily. “I am in a hurry besides,” I added as I walked on.

“Come, come!” he said, getting up with me in a moment, “that ain’t a civil answer to give a cove after his lush, that ain’t got a blessed mag.”

As he spoke he laid his hand rather heavily on my arm. He was a lumpy-looking individual, like a groom who had been discharged for stealing his horse’s provender, and had not quite worn out the clothes he had brought with him. From the opposite side at the same moment, another man appeared, low in stature, pale, and marked with the small-pox.

He advanced upon me at right angles. I shook off the hand of the first, and I confess would have taken to my heels, for more reasons than one, but almost before I was clear of him, the other came against me, and shoved me into one of the low-browed entries which abounded.

I was so eager to follow my chase that I acted foolishly throughout. I ought to have emptied my pockets at once; but I was unwilling to lose a watch which was an old family piece, and of value besides.

“Come, come! I don’t carry a barrel of ale in my pocket,” I said, thinking to keep them in good-humour. I know better now. Some of these roughs will take all you have in the most good-humoured way in the world, bandying chaff with you all the time. I had got amongst another set, however.

“Leastways you’ve got as good,” said a third, approaching from the court, as villanous-looking a fellow as I have ever seen.

“This is hardly the right way to ask for it,” I said, looking out for a chance of bolting, but putting my hand in my pocket at the same time. I confess again I acted very stupidly throughout the whole affair, but it was my first experience.

“It’s a way we’ve got down here, anyhow,” said the third with a brutal laugh. “Look out, Savoury Sam,” he added to one of them.

“Now I don’t want to hurt you,” struck in the first, coming nearer, “but if you gives tongue, I’ll make cold meat of you, and gouge your pockets at my leisure, before ever a blueskin can turn the corner.”

Two or three more came sidling up with their hands in their pockets.

“What have you got there, Slicer?” said one of them, addressing the third, who looked like a ticket-of-leave man.

“We’ve cotched a pig-headed counter-jumper here, that didn’t know Jim there from a man-trap, and went by him as if he’d been a bull-dog on a long-chain. He wants to fight cocum. But we won’t trouble him. We’ll help ourselves. Shell out now.”

As he spoke he made a snatch at my watch-chain. I forgot myself and hit him. The same moment I received a blow on the head, and felt the blood running down my face. I did not quite lose my senses, though, for I remember seeing yet another man—a tall fellow, coming out of the gloom of the court. How it came into my mind, I do not know, and what I said I do not remember, but I must have mentioned Falconer’s name somehow.

The man they called Slicer, said,

“Who’s he? Don’t know the—.”

Words followed which I cannot write.

“What! you devil’s gossoon!” returned an Irish voice I had not heard before. “You don’t know Long Bob, you gonnof!”

All that passed I heard distinctly, but I was in a half faint, I suppose, for I could no longer see.

"Now what the devil in a dice-box do you mean?" said Slicer, possessing himself of my watch. "Who is the blasted cove?—not that I care a flash of damnation."

"A man as 'll knock you down if he thinks you want it, or give you a half-a-crown if he thinks you want it—all's one to him, only he'll have the choosing which."

"What the hell's that to me? Look spry. He mustn't lie there all night. It's too near the ken. Come along, you Scotch haddock."

I was aware of a kick in the side as he spoke.

"I tell you what it is, Slicer," said one whose voice I had not yet heard, "if so be this gentleman's a friend of Long Bob, you just let him alone, *I* say."

I opened my eyes now, and saw before me a tall rather slender man in a big loose dress-coat, to whom Slicer had turned with the words,

"You say! Ha! ha! Well, *I* say—There's my Scotch haddock! who'll touch him?"

"I'll take him home," said the tall man, advancing towards me. I made an attempt to rise. But I grew deadly ill, fell back, and remember nothing more.

When I came to myself I was lying on a bed in a miserable place. A middle-aged woman of degraded countenance, but kindly eyes, was putting something to my mouth with a teaspoon: I knew it by the smell to be gin. But I could not yet move. They began to talk about me, and I lay and listened. Indeed, while I listened, I lost for a time all inclination to get up, I was so much interested in what I heard.

"He's comin' to hisself," said the woman. "He'll be all right by and by. I wonder what brings the likes of him into the likes of this place. It must

look a kind of hell to them gentle-folks, though *we* manage to live and die in it."

"I suppose," said another, "he's come on some of Mr. Falconer's business."

"That's why Job's took him in charge. They say he was after somebody or other, they think.—No friend of Mr. Falconer's would be after another for any mischief," said my hostess.

"But who is this Mr. Falconer?—Is Long Bob and he both the same alias?" asked a third.

"Why, Bessy, ain't you no better than that damned Slicer, who ought to ha'[have"] been hung up to dry this many a year? But to be sure you "ain't been long in our quarter. Why, every child hereabouts knows Mr. Falconer. Ask Bobby there."

"Who's Mr. Falconer, Bobby?"

A child's voice made reply,

"A man with a long, long beard, that goes about, and sometimes grows tired and sits on a door-step. I see him once. But he ain't Mr. Falconer, nor Long Bob neither," added Bobby in a mysterious tone. "I know who he is."

"What do you mean, Bobby? Who is he, then?"

The child answered very slowly and solemnly,

"He's Jesus Christ."

The woman burst into a rude laugh.

"Well," said Bobby in an offended tone, "Slicer's own Tom says so, and Polly too. We all says so. He allus pats me on the head, and gives me a penny."

Here Bobby began to cry, bitterly offended at the way Bessy had received his information, after considering him sufficiently important to have his opinion asked.

"True enough," said his mother. "I see him once a-sittin' on a door-step, lookin' straight afore him, and worn-out like, an' a lot o' them childer standin' all about him, an' starin' at him as mum as mice, for fear of disturbin' of him. When I come near, he got up with a smile on his face, and give each on 'em a penny all round, and walked away. Some do say he's a bit crazed like; but I never saw no sign o' that; and if any one ought to know, that one's Job's Mary; and you may believe me when I tell you that he was here night an' mornin' for a week, and after that off and on, when we was all down in the cholerer. Ne'er a one of us would ha' come through but for him."

I made an attempt to rise. The woman came to my bedside.

"How does the gentleman feel hisself now?" she asked kindly.

"Better, thank you," I said. "I am ashamed of lying like this, but I feel very queer."

"And it's no wonder, when that devil Slicer give you one o' his even down blows on the top o' your head. Nobody knows what he carry in his sleeve that he do it with—only you've got off well, young man, and that *I* tell you, with a decent cut like that. Only don't you go tryin' to get up now. Don't be in a hurry till your blood comes back like."

I lay still again for a little. When I lifted my hand to my head, I found it was bandaged up. I tried again to rise. The woman went to the door, and called out,

"Job, the gentleman's feelin' better. He'll soon be able to move, I think. What will you do with him now?"

"I'll go and get a cab," said Job; and I heard him go down a stair.

I raised myself, and got on the floor, but found I could not stand. By the time the cab arrived, however, I was able to crawl to it. When Job came, I saw the same tall thin man in the long dress coat. His head was bound up too.

"I am sorry to see you too have been hurt—for my sake, of course," I said. "Is it a bad blow?"

"Oh! it ain't over much. I got in with a smeller afore he came right down with his slogger. But I say, I hope as how you *are* a friend of Mr. Falconer's, for you see we can't afford the likes of this in this quarter for every chance that falls in Slicer's way. Gentlemen has no business here."

"On the contrary, I mean to come again soon, to thank you all for being so good to me."

"Well, when you comes next, you'd better come with *him*, you know."

"You mean with Mr. Falconer?"

"Yes, who else? But are you able to go now? for the sooner you're out of this the better."

"Quite able. Just give me your arm."

He offered it kindly. Taking a grateful farewell of my hostess, I put my hand in my pocket, but there was nothing there. Job led me to the mouth of the court, where a cab, evidently of a sort with the neighbourhood, was waiting for us. I got in. Job was shutting the door.

"Come along with me, Job," I said. "I'm going straight to Mr. Falconer's. He will like to see you, especially after your kindness to me."

"Well, I don't mind if I do look arter you a little longer; for to tell the truth," said Job, as he opened the door, and got in beside me, "I don't over and above like the look of the—horse."

“It’s no use trying to rob me over again,” I said; but he gave no reply. He only shouted to the cabman to drive to John Street, telling him the number.

I can scarcely recall anything more till we reached Falconer’s chambers. Job got out and rang the bell. Mrs. Ashton came down. Her master was not come home.

“Tell Mr. Falconer,” I said, “that I’m all right, only I couldn’t make anything of it.”

“Tell him,” growled Job, “that he’s got his head broken, and won’t be out o’ bed to-morrow. That’s the way with them fine-bred ones. They lies a-bed when the likes o’ me must go out what they calls a-custamongering, broken head and all.”

“You shall stay at home for a week if you like, Job—that is if I’ve got enough to give you a week’s earnings. I’m not sure though till I look, for I’m not a rich man any more than yourself.”

“Rubbish!” said Job as he got in again; “I was only flummuxing the old un. Bless your heart, sir, I wouldn’t stay in—not for nothink. Not for a bit of a pat on the crown, nohow. Home ain’t none so nice a place to go snoozing in—nohow. Where do you go to, gov’nor?”

I told him. When I got out, and was opening the door, leaning on his arm, I said I was very glad they hadn’t taken my keys.

“Slicer nor Savoury Sam neither’s none the better o’ you, and I hopes you’re not much the worse for them,” said Job, as he put into my hands my purse and watch. “Count it, gov’nor, and see if it’s all right. Them pusses is mannyfactered express for the convenience o’ the fakers. Take my advice, sir, and keep a yellow dump[sovereign] in yer coat-tails, a flatch yenork[half-crown] in yer waistcoat, and yer yeneps[pence] in yer breeches. You won’t lose much nohow then. Good-night, sir, and I wish you better.”

“But I must give you something for plaster,” I said. “You’ll take a yellow dump, at least?”

“We’ll talk about that another day,” said Job; and with a second still heartier good-night, he left me. I managed to crawl up to my room, and fell on my bed once more fainting. But I soon recovered sufficiently to undress and get into it. I was feverish all night and next day, but towards evening begun to recover.

I kept expecting Falconer to come and inquire after me; but he never came. Nor did he appear the next day or the next, and I began to be very uneasy about him. The fourth day I sent for a cab, and drove to John Street. He was at home, but Mrs. Ashton, instead of showing me into his room, led me into her kitchen, and left me there.

A minute after, Falconer came to me. The instant I saw him I understood it all. I read it in his face: he had found his father.

Chapter 12 - Andrew at Last

Having at length persuaded the woman to go with him, Falconer made her take his arm, and led her off the bridge. In Parliament Street he was looking about for a cab as they walked on, when a man he did not know, stopped, touched his hat, and addressed him.

"I'm thinkin', sir, ye'll be sair[sorely] wantit at hame[home] the nicht[tonight] It wad[would] be better to gang[go] at ance[once], an' lat[let, allow] the puir[poor] fowk[folk] luik[look] efter[after] themsels for ae nicht."

"I'm sorry I dinna ken ye, man. Do ye ken me?"

"Fine that, Mr. Falconer. There's mony[many] ane[one] kens you and praises God."

"God be praised!" returned Falconer. "Why am I wanted at home?"

"'Deed I wad[would] raither not say, sir.—Hey!"

This last exclamation was addressed to a cab just disappearing down King Street from Whitehall. The driver heard, turned, and in a moment more was by their side.

"Ye had better gang[go] into her an' awa'[away] hame[home], and lea'[leave] the poor lassie to me. I'll tak guid care o' her."

She clung to Falconer's arm. The man opened the door of the cab. Falconer put her in, told the driver to go to Queen Square, and if he could not make haste, to stop the first cab that could, got in himself, thanked his unknown friend, who did not seem quite satisfied, and drove off.

Happily Miss St. John was at home, and there was no delay. Neither was any explanation of more than six words necessary. He jumped again

into the cab and drove home. Fortunately for his mood, though in fact it mattered little for any result, the horse was fresh, and both able and willing.

When he entered John Street, he came to observe before reaching his own door that a good many men were about in little quiet groups—some twenty or so, here and there. When he let himself in with his pass-key, there were two men in the entry. Without stopping to speak, he ran up to his own chambers. When he got into his sitting-room, there stood De Fleuri, who simply waved his hand towards the old sofa. On it lay an elderly man, with his eyes half open, and a look almost of idiocy upon his pale, puffed face, which was damp and shining. His breathing was laboured, but there was no further sign of suffering. He lay perfectly still. Falconer saw at once that he was under the influence of some narcotic, probably opium; and the same moment the all but conviction darted into his mind that Andrew Falconer, his grandmother's son, lay there before him. That he was his own father he had no feeling yet. He turned to De Fleuri.

"Thank you, friend," he said. "I shall find time to thank you."

"Are we right?" asked De Fleuri.

"I don't know. I think so," answered Falconer; and without another word the man withdrew.

His first mood was very strange. It seemed as if all the romance had suddenly deserted his life, and it lay bare and hopeless. He felt nothing. No tears rose to the brim of their bottomless wells—the only wells that have no bottom, for they go into the depths of the infinite soul. He sat down in his chair, stunned as to the heart and all the finer chords of his nature. The man on the horsehair sofa lay breathing—that was all. The gray hair about the pale ill-shaven face glimmered like a cloud before

him. What should he do or say when he awaked? How approach this far-estranged soul? How ever send the cry of *father* into that fog-filled world? Could he ever have climbed on those knees and kissed those lips, in the far-off days when the sun and the wind of that northern atmosphere made his childhood blessed beyond dreams? The actual—that is the present phase of the ever-changing—looked the ideal in the face; and the mirror that held them both, shook and quivered at the discord of the faces reflected. A kind of moral cold seemed to radiate from the object before him, and chill him to the very bones. This could not long be endured. He fled from the actual to the source of all the ideal—to that Saviour who, the infinite mediator, mediates between all hopes and all positions; between the most debased actual and the loftiest ideal; between the little scoffer of St. Giles's and his angel that ever beholds the face of the Father in heaven. He fell on his knees, and spoke to God, saying that he had made this man; that the mark of his fingers was on the man's soul somewhere. He prayed to the making Spirit to bring the man to his right mind, to give him once more the heart of a child, to begin him yet again at the beginning. Then at last, all the evil he had done and suffered would but swell his gratitude to Him who had delivered him from himself and his own deeds. Having breathed this out before the God of his life, Falconer rose, strengthened to meet the honourable debased soul when it should at length look forth from the dull smeared windows of those ill-used eyes.

He felt his pulse. There was no danger from the narcotic. The coma would pass away. Meantime he would get him to bed. When he began to undress him a new reverence arose which overcame all disgust at the state in which he found him. At length one sad little fact about his dress, revealing the poverty-stricken attempt of a man to preserve the shadow

of decency, called back the waters of the far-ebbed ocean of his feelings. At the prick of a pin the heart's blood will flow: at the sight of—a pin it was—Robert burst into tears, and wept like a child; the deadly cold was banished from his heart, and he not only loved, but knew that he loved—felt the love that was there. Everything then about the worn body and shabby garments of the man smote upon the heart of his son, and through his very poverty he was sacred in his eyes. The human heart awakened the filial—reversing thus the ordinary process of Nature, who by means of the filial, when her plans are unbroken, awakes the human; and he reproached himself bitterly for his hardness, as he now judged his late mental condition—unfairly, I think. He soon had him safe in bed, unconscious of the helping hands that had been busy about him in his heedless sleep; unconscious of the radiant planet of love that had been folding him round in its atmosphere of affection.

But while he thus ministered, a new question arose in his mind—to meet with its own new, God-given answer. What if this should not be the man after all?—if this love had been spent in mistake, and did not belong to him at all? The answer was, that he was a man. The love Robert had given he could not, would not withdraw. The man who had been for a moment as his father he could not cease to regard with devotion. At least he was a man with a divine soul. He might at least be somebody's father. Where love had found a moment's rest for the sole of its foot, there it must build its nest.

When he had got him safe in bed, he sat down beside him to think what he would do next. This sleep gave him very needful leisure to think. He could determine nothing—not even how to find out if he was indeed his father. If he approached the subject without guile, the man might be fearful and cunning—might have reasons for being so, and for striving to

conceal the truth. But this was the first thing to make sure of, because, if it was he, all the hold he had upon him lay in his knowing it for certain. He could not think. He had had little sleep the night before. He must not sleep this night. He dragged his bath into his sitting-room, and refreshed his faculties with plenty of cold water, then lighted his pipe and went on thinking—not without prayer to that Power whose candle is the understanding of man. All at once he saw how to begin. He went again into the chamber, and looked at the man, and handled him, and knew by his art that a waking of some sort was nigh. Then he went to a corner of his sitting-room, and from beneath the table drew out a long box, and from the box lifted Dooble Sandy's auld wife, tuned the somewhat neglected strings, and laid the instrument on the table.

When, keeping constant watch over the sleeping man, he judged at length that his soul had come near enough to the surface of the ocean of sleep to communicate with the outer world through that bubble his body, which had floated upon its waves all the night unconscious, he put his chair just outside the chamber door, which opened from his sitting-room, and began to play gently, softly, far away. For a while he extemporized only, thinking of Rothieden, and the grandmother, and the bleach-green, and the hills, and the waste old factory, and his mother's portrait and letters. As he dreamed on, his dream got louder, and, he hoped, was waking a more and more vivid dream in the mind of the sleeper. "For who can tell," thought Falconer, "what mysterious sympathies of blood and childhood's experience there may be between me and that man?—such, it may be, that my utterance on the violin will wake in his soul the very visions of which my soul is full while I play, each with its own nebulous atmosphere of dream-light around it." For music wakes its own feeling, and feeling wakes thought, or rather, when

perfected, blossoms into thought, thought radiant of music as those lilies that shine phosphorescent in the July nights. He played more and more forcefully, growing in hope. But he had been led astray in some measure by the fulness of his expectation. Strange to tell, doctor as he was, he had forgotten one important factor in his calculation: how the man would awake from his artificial sleep. He had not reckoned of how the limbeck of his brain would be left discoloured with vile deposit, when the fumes of the narcotic should have settled and given up its central spaces to the faintness of desertion.

Robert was very keen of hearing. Indeed he possessed all his senses keener than any other man I have known. He heard him toss on his bed. Then he broke into a growl, and damned the miauling, which, he said, the strings could never have learned anywhere but in a cat's belly. But Robert was used to bad language; and there are some bad things which, seeing that there they are, it is of the greatest consequence to get used to. It gave him, no doubt, a pang of disappointment to hear such an echo to his music from the soul which he had hoped especially fitted to respond in harmonious unison with the wail of his violin. But not for even this moment did he lose his presence of mind. He instantly moderated the tone of the instrument, and gradually drew the sound away once more into the distance of hearing. But he did not therefore let it die. Through various changes it floated in the thin -ther of the soul, changes delicate as when the wind leaves the harp of the reeds by a river's brink, and falls a-ringing at the heather bells, or playing with the dry silvery pods of honesty that hang in the poor man's garden, till at length it drew nearer once more, bearing on its wings the wail of red Flodden, the Flowers of the Forest. Listening through the melody for sounds of a far different kind, Robert was aware that those sounds had ceased; the growling was

still; he heard no more turnings to and fro. How it was operating he could not tell, further than that there must be some measure of soothing in its influence. He ceased quite, and listened again. For a few moments there was no sound. Then he heard the half-articulate murmuring of one whose organs have been all but overcome by the beneficent paralysis of sleep, but whose feeble will would compel them to utterance. He was nearly asleep again. Was it a fact, or a fancy of Robert's eager heart? Did the man really say,

"Play that again, father. It's bonnie, that! I aye likit the Flooers o' the Forest. Play awa'[away]. I hae had a frichtsome dream. I thocht[thought] I was i' the ill place. I doobt[suspect] I'm no weel. But yer fiddle aye did me gude. Play awa'[away], father!"

All the night through, till the dawn of the gray morning, Falconer watched the sleeping man, all but certain that he was indeed his father. Eternities of thought passed through his mind as he watched—this time by the couch, as he hoped, of a new birth. He was about to see what could be done by one man, strengthened by all the aids that love and devotion could give, for the redemption of his fellow. As through the darkness of the night and a sluggish fog to aid it, the light of a pure heaven made its slow irresistible way, his hope grew that athwart the fog of an evil life, the darkness that might be felt, the light of the Spirit of God would yet penetrate the heart of the sinner, and shake the wickedness out of it. Deeper and yet deeper grew his compassion and his sympathy, in prospect of the tortures the man must go through, before the will that he had sunk into a deeper sleep than any into which opium could sink his bodily being, would shake off its deathly lethargy, and arise, torn with struggling pain, to behold the light of a new spiritual morning. All that he could do he was prepared to do, regardless of

entreaty, regardless of torture, anger, and hate, with the inexorable justice of love, the law that will not, must not, dares not yield—strong with an awful tenderness, a wisdom that cannot be turned aside, to redeem the lost soul of his father. And he strengthened his heart for the conflict by saying that if he would do thus for his father, what would not God do for his child? Had He not proved already, if there was any truth in the grand story of the world's redemption through that obedience unto the death, that his devotion was entire, and would leave nothing undone that could be done to lift this sheep out of the pit into whose darkness and filth he had fallen out of the sweet Sabbath of the universe?

He removed all his clothes, searched the pockets, found in them one poor shilling and a few coppers, a black cutty pipe[short tobacco-pipe], a box of snuff, a screw of pigtail, a knife with a buckhorn handle and one broken blade, and a pawn-ticket for a keyed flute, on the proceeds of which he was now sleeping—a sleep how dearly purchased, when he might have had it free, as the gift of God's gentle darkness! Then he destroyed the garments, committing them to the fire as the hoped farewell to the state of which they were the symbols and signs.

He found himself perplexed, however, by the absence of some of the usual symptoms of the habit of opium, and concluded that his poor father was in the habit of using stimulants as well as narcotics, and that the action of the one interfered with the action of the other.

He called his housekeeper. She did not know whom her master supposed his guest to be, and regarded him only as one of the many objects of his kindness. He told her to get some tea ready, as the patient would most likely wake with a headache. He instructed her to wait upon him as a matter of course, and explain nothing. He had resolved to pass for the doctor, as indeed he was; and he told her that if he should be at

all troublesome, he would be with her at once. She must keep the room dark. He would have his own breakfast now; and if the patient remained quiet, would sleep on the sofa.

He woke murmuring, and evidently suffered from headache and nausea. Mrs. Ashton took him some tea. He refused it with an oath—more of discomfort than of ill-nature—and was too unwell to show any curiosity about the person who had offered it. Probably he was accustomed to so many changes of abode, and to so many bewilderments of the brain, that he did not care to inquire where he was or who waited upon him. But happily for the heart's desire of Falconer, the debauchery of his father had at length reached one of many crises. He had caught cold before De Fleuri and his comrades found him. He was now ill—feverish and oppressed. Through the whole of the following week they nursed and waited upon him without his asking a single question as to where he was or who they were; during all which time Falconer saw no one but De Fleuri and the many poor fellows who called to inquire after him and the result of their supposed success. He never left the house, but either watched by the bedside, or waited in the next room. Often would the patient get out of bed, driven by the longing for drink or for opium, gnawing him through all the hallucinations of delirium; but he was weak, and therefore manageable. If in any lucid moments he thought where he was, he no doubt supposed that he was in a hospital, and probably had sense enough to understand that it was of no use to attempt to get his own way there. He was soon much worn, and his limbs trembled greatly. It was absolutely necessary to give him stimulants, or he would have died, but Robert reduced them gradually as he recovered strength.

But there was an infinite work to be done beyond even curing him of his evil habits. To keep him from strong drink and opium, even till the

craving after them was gone, would be but the capturing of the merest outwork of the enemy's castle. He must be made such that, even if the longing should return with tenfold force, and all the means for its gratification should lie within the reach of his outstretched hand, he would not touch them. God only was able to do that for him. He would do all that he knew how to do, and God would not fail of his part. For this he had raised him up; to this he had called him; for this work he had educated him, made him a physician, given him money, time, the love and aid of his fellows, and, beyond all, a rich energy of hope and faith in his heart, emboldening him to attempt whatever his hand found to do.

Chapter 13 - Andrew Rebels

As Andrew Falconer grew better, the longing of his mind after former excitement and former oblivion, roused and kept alive the longing of his body, until at length his thoughts dwelt upon nothing but his diseased cravings. His whole imagination, naturally not a feeble one, was concentrated on the delights in store for him as soon as he was well enough to be his own master, as he phrased it, once more. He soon began to see that, if he was in a hospital, it must be a private one, and at last, irresolute as he was both from character and illness, made up his mind to demand his liberty. He sat by his bedroom fire one afternoon, for he needed much artificial warmth. The shades of evening were thickening the air. He had just had one of his frequent meals, and was gazing, as he often did, into the glowing coals. Robert had come in, and after a little talk was sitting silent at the opposite corner of the chimney-piece.

"Doctor," said Andrew, seizing the opportunity, "you've been very kind to me, and I don't know how to thank you, but it is time I was going. I am quite well now. Would you kindly order the nurse to bring me my clothes to-morrow morning, and I will go."

This he said with the quavering voice of one who speaks because he has made up his mind to speak. A certain something, I believe a vague molluscous form of conscience, made him wriggle and shift uneasily upon his chair as he spoke.

"No, no," said Robert, "you are not fit to go. Make yourself comfortable, my dear sir. There is no reason why you should go."

"There is something I don't understand about it. I want to go."

“It would ruin my character as a professional man to let a patient in your condition leave the house. The weather is unfavourable. I cannot—I must not consent.”

“Where am I? I don’t understand it. I want to understand it.”

“Your friends wish you to remain where you are for the present.”

“I have no friends.”

“You have one, at least, who puts his house here at your service.”

“There’s something about it I don’t like. Do you suppose I am incapable of taking care of myself?”

“I do indeed,” answered his son with firmness.

“Then you are quite mistaken,” said Andrew, angrily. “I am quite well enough to go, and have a right to judge for myself. It is very kind of you, but I am in a free country, I believe.”

“No doubt. All honest men are free in this country. But—”

He saw that his father winced, and said no more. Andrew resumed, after a pause in which he had been rousing his feeble drink-exhausted anger,

“I tell you I will not be treated like a child. I demand my clothes and my liberty.”

“Do you know where you were found that night you were brought here?”

“No. But what has that to do with it? I was ill. You know that as well as I.”

“You are ill now because you were lying then on the wet ground under a railway-arch—utterly incapable from the effects of opium, or drink, or both. You would have been taken to the police-station, and would

probably have been dead long before now, if you had not been brought here."

He was silent for some time. Then he broke out,

"I tell you I *will* go. I do not choose to live on charity. I will *not*. I demand my clothes."

"I tell you it is of no use. When you are well enough to go out you shall go out, but not now."

"Where am I? Who are you?"

He looked at Robert with a keen, furtive glance, in which were mingled bewilderment and suspicion.

"I am your best friend at present."

He started up—fiercely and yet feebly, for a thought of terror had crossed him.

"You do not mean I am in a madhouse?"

Robert made no reply. He left him to suppose what he pleased. Andrew took it for granted that he was in a private asylum, sank back in his chair, and from that moment was quiet as a lamb. But it was easy to see that he was constantly contriving how to escape. This mental occupation, however, was excellent for his recovery; and Robert dropped no hint of his suspicion. Nor were many precautions necessary in consequence; for he never left the house without having De Fleuri there, who was a man of determination, nerve, and, now that he ate and drank, of considerable strength.

As he grew better, the stimulants given him in the form of medicine at length ceased. In their place Robert substituted other restoratives, which prevented him from missing the stimulants so much, and at length got

his system into a tolerably healthy condition, though at his age, and after so long indulgence, it could hardly be expected ever to recover its tone.

He did all he could to provide him with healthy amusement—played backgammon, draughts, and cribbage with him, brought him Sir Walter's and other novels to read, and often played on his violin, to which he listened with great delight. At times of depression, which of course were frequent, the Flowers of the Forest made the old man weep. Falconer put yet more soul into the sounds than he had ever put into them before. He tried to make the old man talk of his childhood, asking him about the place of his birth, the kind of country, how he had been brought up, his family, and many questions of the sort. His answers were vague, and often contradictory. Indeed, the moment the subject was approached, he looked suspicious and cunning. He said his name was John Mackinnon, and Robert, although his belief was strengthened by a hundred little circumstances, had as yet received no proof that he was Andrew Falconer. Remembering the pawn-ticket, and finding that he could play on the flute, he brought him a beautiful instrument—in fact a silver one—the sight of which made the old man's eyes sparkle. He put it to his lips with trembling hands, blew a note or two, burst into the tears of weakness, and laid it down. But he soon took it up again, and evidently found both pleasure in the tones and sadness in the memories they awakened. At length Robert brought a tailor, and had him dressed like a gentleman—a change which pleased him much. The next step was to take him out every day for a drive, upon which his health began to improve more rapidly. He ate better, grew more lively, and began to tell tales of his adventures, of the truth of which Robert was not always certain, but never showed any doubt. He knew only too well that the use of opium is especially destructive to the conscience. Some of his stories

he believed more readily than others, from the fact that he suddenly stopped in them, as if they were leading him into regions of confession which must be avoided, resuming with matter that did not well connect itself with what had gone before. At length he took him out walking, and he comported himself with perfect propriety.

But one day as they were going along a quiet street, Robert met an acquaintance, and stopped to speak with him. After a few moments' chat he turned, and found that his father, whom he had supposed to be standing beside him, had vanished. A glance at the other side of the street showed the probable refuge—a public-house. Filled but not overwhelmed with dismay, although he knew that months might be lost in this one moment, Robert darted in. He was there, with a glass of whisky in his hand, trembling now more from eagerness than weakness. He struck it from his hold. But he had already swallowed one glass, and he turned in a rage. He was a tall and naturally powerful man—almost as strongly built as his son, with long arms like his, which were dangerous even yet in such a moment of factitious strength and real excitement. Robert could not lift his arm even to defend himself from his father, although, had he judged it necessary, I believe he would not, in the cause of his redemption, have hesitated to knock him down, as he had often served others whom he would rather a thousand times have borne on his shoulders. He received his father's blow on the cheek. For one moment it made him dizzy, for it was well delivered. But when the bar-keeper jumped across the counter and approached with his fist doubled, that was another matter. He measured his length on the floor, and Falconer seized his father, who was making for the street, and notwithstanding his struggles and fierce efforts to strike again, held him secure and himself scathless, and bore him out of the house.

A crowd gathers in a moment in London, speeding to a fray as the vultures to carrion. On the heels of the population of the neighbouring mews came two policemen, and at the same moment out came the barman to the assistance of Andrew. But Falconer was as well known to the police as if he had a ticket-of-leave, and a good deal better.

"Call a four-wheel cab," he said to one of them. "I'm all right."

The man started at once. Falconer turned to the other.

"Tell that man in the apron," he said, "that I'll make him all due reparation. But he oughtn't to be in such a hurry to meddle. He gave me no time but to strike hard."

"Yes, sir," answered the policeman obediently. The crowd thought he must be a great man amongst the detectives; but the bar-keeper vowed he would "summons" him for the assault.

"You may, if you like," said Falconer. "When I think of it, you shall do so. You know where I live?" he said, turning to the policeman.

"No, sir, I don't. I only know you well enough."

"Put your hand in my coat-pocket, then, and you'll find a card-case. The other. There! Help yourself."

He said this with his arms round Andrew's, who had ceased to cry out when he saw the police.

"Do you want to give this gentleman in charge, sir?"

"No. It is a little private affair of my own, this."

"Hadn't you better let him go, sir, and we'll find him for you when you want him?"

"No. He may give me in charge if he likes. Or if you should want him, you will find him at my house."

Then pinioning his prisoner still more tightly in his arms, he leaned forward, and whispered in his ear,

"Will you go home quietly, or give me in charge? There is no other way, Andrew Falconer."

He ceased struggling. Through all the flush of the contest his face grew pale. His arms dropped by his side. Robert let him go, and he stood there without offering to move. The cab came up; the policeman got out; Andrew stepped in of his own accord, and Robert followed.

"You see it's all right," he said. "Here, give the barman a sovereign. If he wants more, let me know. He deserved all he got, but I was wrong. John Street."

His father did not speak a word, or ask a question all the way home. Evidently he thought it safer to be silent. But the drink he had taken, though not enough to intoxicate him, was more than enough to bring back the old longing with redoubled force. He paced about the room the rest of the day like a wild beast in a cage, and in the middle of the night, got up and dressed, and would have crept through the room in which Robert lay, in the hope of getting out. But Robert slept too anxiously for that. The captive did not make the slightest noise, but his very presence was enough to wake his son. He started at a bound from his couch, and his father retreated in dismay to his chamber.

Chapter 14 - The Brown Letter

At length the time arrived when Robert would make a further attempt, although with a fear and trembling to quiet which he had to seek the higher aid. His father had recovered his attempt to rush anew upon destruction. He was gentler and more thoughtful, and would again sit for an hour at a time gazing into the fire. From the expression of his countenance upon such occasions, Robert hoped that his visions were not of the evil days, but of those of his innocence.

One evening when he was in one of these moods—he had just had his tea, the gas was lighted, and he was sitting as I have described—Robert began to play in the next room, hoping that the music would sink into his heart, and do something to prepare the way for what was to follow. Just as he had played over the Flowers of the Forest for the third time, his housekeeper entered the room, and receiving permission from her master, went through into Andrew's chamber, and presented a packet, which she said, and said truly, for she was not in the secret, had been left for him. He received it with evident surprise, mingled with some consternation, looked at the address, looked at the seal, laid it on the table, and gazed again with troubled looks into the fire. He had had no correspondence for many years. Falconer had peeped in when the woman entered, but the moment she retired he could watch him no longer. He went on playing a slow, lingering voluntary, such as the wind plays, of an amber autumn evening, on the Aeolian harp of its pines. He played so gently that he must hear if his father should speak.

For what seemed hours, though it was but half-an-hour, he went on playing. At length he heard a stifled sob. He rose, and peeped again into

the room. The gray head was bowed between the hands, and the gaunt frame was shaken with sobs. On the table lay the portraits of himself and his wife; and the faded brown letter, so many years folded in silence and darkness, lay open beside them. He had known the seal, with the bush of rushes and the Gaelic motto. He had gently torn the paper from around it, and had read the letter from the grave—no, from the land beyond, the land of light, where human love is glorified. Not then did Falconer read the sacred words of his mother; but afterwards his father put them into his hands. I will give them as nearly as I can remember them, for the letter is not in my possession.

"My beloved Andrew, I can hardly write, for I am at the point of death. I love you still—love you as dearly as before you left me. Will you ever see this? I will try to send it to you. I will leave it behind me, that it may come into your hands when and how it may please God. You may be an old man before you read these words, and may have almost forgotten your young wife. Oh! if I could take your head on my bosom where it used to lie, and without saying a word, think all that I am thinking into your heart. Oh! my love, my love! will you have had enough of the world and its ways by the time this reaches you? Or will you be dead, like me, when this is found, and the eyes of your son only, my darling little Robert, read the words? Oh, Andrew, Andrew! my heart is bleeding, not altogether for myself, not altogether for you, but both for you and for me. Shall I never, never be able to let out the sea of my love that swells till my heart is like to break with its longing after you, my own Andrew? Shall I never, never see you again? That is the terrible thought—the only thought almost that makes me shrink from dying. If I should go to sleep, as some think, and not even dream about you, as I dream and weep every night now! If I should only wake in the crowd of the resurrection,

and not know where to find you! Oh, Andrew, I feel as if I should lose my reason when I think that you may be on the left hand of the Judge, and I can no longer say *my love*, because you do not, cannot any more love God. I will tell you the dream I had about you last night, which I think was what makes me write this letter. I was standing in a great crowd of people, and I saw the empty graves about us on every side. We were waiting for the great white throne to appear in the clouds. And as soon as I knew that, I cried, 'Andrew, Andrew!' for I could not help it. And the people did not heed me; and I cried out and ran about everywhere, looking for you. At last I came to a great gulf. When I looked down into it, I could see nothing but a blue deep, like the blue of the sky, under my feet. It was not so wide but that I could see across it, but it was oh! so terribly deep. All at once, as I stood trembling on the very edge, I saw you on the other side, looking towards me, and stretching out your arms as if you wanted me. You were old and much changed, but I knew you at once, and I gave a cry that I thought all the universe must have heard. You heard me. I could see that. And I was in a terrible agony to get to you. But there was no way, for if I fell into the gulf I should go down for ever, it was so deep. Something made me look away, and I saw a man coming quietly along the same side of the gulf, on the edge, towards me. And when he came nearer to me, I saw that he was dressed in a gown down to his feet, and that his feet were bare and had a hole in each of them. So I knew who it was, Andrew. And I fell down and kissed his feet, and lifted up my hands, and looked into his face—oh, such a face! And I tried to pray. But all I could say was, 'O Lord, Andrew, Andrew!' Then he smiled, and said, 'Daughter, be of good cheer. Do you want to go to him?' And I said, 'Yes, Lord.' Then he said, 'And so do I. Come.' And he took my hand and led me over the edge of the precipice; and I was not afraid, and I did not sink, but walked upon the air to go to you. But when I got

to you, it was too much to bear; and when I thought I had you in my arms at last, I awoke, crying as I never cried before, not even when I found that you had left me to die without you. Oh, Andrew, what if the dream should come true! But if it should *not* come true! I dare not think of that, Andrew. I *couldn't* be happy in heaven without you. It may be very wicked, but I do not feel as if it were, and I can't help it if it is. But, dear husband, come to me again. Come back, like the prodigal in the New Testament. God will forgive you everything. Don't touch drink again, my dear love. I know it was the drink that made you do as you did. *You* could never have done it. It was the drink that drove you to do it. You didn't know what you were doing. And then you were ashamed, and thought I would be angry, and could not bear to come back to me. Ah, if you were to come in at the door, as I write, you would see whether or not I was proud to have my Andrew again. But I would not be nice for you to look at now. You used to think me pretty—you said beautiful—so long ago. But I am so thin now, and my face so white, that I almost frighten myself when I look in the glass. And before you get this I shall be all gone to dust, either knowing nothing about you, or trying to praise God, and always forgetting where I am in my psalm, longing so for you to come. I am afraid I love you too much to be fit to go to heaven. Then, perhaps, God will send me to the other place, all for love of you, Andrew. And I do believe I should like that better. But I don't think he will, if he is anything like the man I saw in my dream. But I am growing so faint that I can hardly write. I never felt like this before. But that dream has given me strength to die, because I hope you will come too. Oh, my dear Andrew, do, do repent and turn to God, and he will forgive you. Believe in Jesus, and he will save you, and bring me to you across the deep place. But I must make haste. I can hardly see. And I must not leave this letter

open for anybody but you to read after I am dead. Good-bye, Andrew. I love you all the same. I am, my dearest Husband, your affectionate Wife,

"H. FALCONER."

Then followed the date. It was within a week of her death. The letter was feebly written, every stroke seeming more feeble by the contrasted strength of the words. When Falconer read it afterwards, in the midst of the emotions it aroused—the strange lovely feelings of such a bond between him and a beautiful ghost, far away somewhere in God's universe, who had carried him in her lost body, and nursed him at her breasts—in the midst of it all, he could not help wondering, he told me, to find the forms and words so like what he would have written himself. It seemed so long ago when that faded, discoloured paper, with the gilt edges, and the pale brown ink, and folded in the large sheet, and sealed with the curious wax, must have been written; and here were its words so fresh, so new! not withered like the rose-leaves that scented the paper from the work-box where he had found it, but as fresh as if just shaken from the rose-trees of the heart's garden. It was no wonder that Andrew Falconer should be sitting with his head in his hands when Robert looked in on him, for he had read this letter.

When Robert saw how he sat, he withdrew, and took his violin again, and played all the tunes of the old country he could think of, recalling Dooble Sandy's workshop, that he might recall the music he had learnt there.

No one who understands the bit and bridle of the association of ideas, as it is called in the skeleton language of mental philosophy, wherewith the Father-God holds fast the souls of his children—to the very last that we see of them, at least, and doubtless to endless ages beyond—will sneer at Falconer's notion of making God's violin a ministering spirit in

the process of conversion. There is a well-authenticated story of a convict's having been greatly reformed for a time, by going, in one of the colonies, into a church, where the matting along the aisle was of *the same pattern as that in the church to which he had gone when a boy*—with his mother, I suppose. It was not the matting that so far converted him: it was not to the music of his violin that Falconer looked for aid, but to the memories of childhood, the mysteries of the kingdom of innocence which that could recall—those memories which

> Are yet the fountain light of all our day,
> Are yet a master light of all our seeing.

For an hour he did not venture to go near him. When he entered the room he found him sitting in the same place, no longer weeping, but gazing into the fire with a sad countenance, the expression of which showed Falconer at once that the soul had come out of its cave of obscuration, and drawn nearer to the surface of life. He had not seen him look so much like one "clothed, and in his right mind," before. He knew well that nothing could be built upon this; that this very emotion did but expose him the more to the besetting sin; that in this mood he would drink, even if he knew that he would in consequence be in danger of murdering the wife whose letter had made him weep. But it was progress, notwithstanding. He looked up at Robert as he entered, and then dropped his eyes again. He regarded him perhaps as a presence doubtful whether of angel or devil, even as the demoniacs regarded the Lord of Life who had come to set them free. Bewildered he must have been to find himself, towards the close of a long life of debauchery, wickedness, and the growing pains of hell, caught in a net of old times, old feelings, old truths.

Now Robert had carefully avoided every indication that might disclose him to be a Scotchman even, nor was there the least sign of suspicion in Andrew's manner. The only solution of the mystery that could have presented itself to him was, that his friends were at the root of it—probably his son, of whom he knew absolutely nothing. His mother could not be alive still. Of his wife's relatives there had never been one who would have taken any trouble about him after her death, hardly even before it. John Lammie was the only person, except Dr. Anderson, whose friendship he could suppose capable of this development. The latter was the more likely person. But he would be too much for him yet; he was not going to be treated like a child, he said to himself, as often as the devil got uppermost.

My reader must understand that Andrew had never been a man of resolution. He had been wilful and headstrong; and these qualities, in children especially, are often mistaken for resolution, and generally go under the name of strength of will. There never was a greater mistake. The mistake, indeed, is only excusable from the fact that extremes meet, and that this disposition is so opposite to the other, that it looks to the careless eye most like it. He never resisted his own impulses, or the enticements of evil companions. Kept within certain bounds at home, after he had begun to go wrong, by the weight of opinion, he rushed into all excesses when abroad upon business, till at length the vessel of his fortune went to pieces, and he was a waif on the waters of the world. But in feeling he had never been vulgar, however much so in action. There was a feeble good in him that had in part been protected by its very feebleness. He could not sin so much against it as if it had been strong. For many years he had fits of shame, and of grief without repentance; for repentance is the active, the divine part—the turning again; but taking

more steadily both to strong drink and opium, he was at the time when De Fleuri found him only the dull ghost of Andrew Falconer walking in a dream of its lost carcass.

Chapter 15 - Father and Son

Once more Falconer retired, but not to take his violin. He could play no more. Hope and love were swelling within him. He could not rest. Was it a sign from heaven that the hour for speech had arrived? He paced up and down the room. He kneeled and prayed for guidance and help. Something within urged him to try the rusted lock of his father's heart. Without any formed resolution, without any conscious volition, he found himself again in his room. There the old man still sat, with his back to the door, and his gaze fixed on the fire, which had sunk low in the grate. Robert went round in front of him, kneeled on the rug before him, and said the one word,

"Father!"

Andrew started violently, raised his hand, which trembled as with a palsy, to his head, and stared wildly at Robert. But he did not speak. Robert repeated the one great word. Then Andrew spoke, and said in a trembling, hardly audible voice,

"Are you my son?—my boy Robert, sir?"

"I am. I am. Oh, father, I have longed for you by day, and dreamed about you by night, ever since I saw that other boys had fathers, and I had none. Years and years of my life—I hardly know how many—have been spent in searching for you. And now I have found you!"

The great tall man, in the prime of life and strength, laid his big head down on the old man's knee, as if he had been a little child. His father said nothing, but laid his hand on the head. For some moments the two remained thus, motionless and silent. Andrew was the first to speak. And his words were the voice of the spirit that striveth with man.

“What am I to do, Robert?”

No other words, not even those of passionate sorrow, or overflowing affection, could have been half so precious in the ears of Robert. When a man once asks what he is to do, there is hope for him. Robert answered instantly,

“You must come home to your mother.”

“My mother!” Andrew exclaimed. “You don’t mean to say she’s alive?”

“I heard from her yesterday—in her own hand, too,” said Robert.

“I daren’t. I daren’t,” murmured Andrew.

“You must, father,” returned Robert. “It is a long way, but I will make the journey easy for you. She knows I have found you. She is waiting and longing for you. She has hardly thought of anything but you ever since she lost you. She is only waiting to see you, and then she will go home, she says. I wrote to her and said, ‘Grannie, I have found your Andrew.’ And she wrote back to me and said, ‘God be praised. I shall die in peace.’”

A silence followed.

“Will she forgive me?” said Andrew.

“She loves you more than her own soul,” answered Robert. “She loves you as much as I do. She loves you as God loves you.”

“God can’t love me,” said Andrew, feebly. “He would never have left me if he had loved me.”

“He has never left you from the very first. You would not take his way, father, and he just let you try your own. But long before that he had begun to get me ready to go after you. He put such love to you in my heart, and gave me such teaching and such training, that I have found

you at last. And now I have found you, I will hold you. You cannot escape —you will not want to escape any more, father?"

Andrew made no reply to this appeal. It sounded like imprisonment for life, I suppose. But thought was moving in him. After a long pause, during which the son's heart was hungering for a word whereon to hang a further hope, the old man spoke again, muttering as if he were only speaking his thoughts unconsciously.

"Where's the use? There's no forgiveness for me. My mother is going to heaven. I must go to hell. No. It's no good. Better leave it as it is. I daren't see her. It would kill me to see her."

"It will kill her not to see you; and that will be one sin more on your conscience, father."

Andrew got up and walked about the room. And Robert only then arose from his knees.

"And there's *my* mother," he said.

Andrew did not reply; but Robert saw when he turned next towards the light, that the sweat was standing in beads on his forehead.

"Father," he said, going up to him.

The old man stopped in his walk, turned, and faced his son.

"Father," repeated Robert, "you've got to repent; and God won't let you off; and you needn't think it. You'll have to repent some day."

"In hell, Robert," said Andrew, looking him full in the eyes, as he had never looked at him before. It seemed as if even so much acknowledgment of the truth had already made him bolder and honester.

"Yes. Either on earth or in hell. Would it not be better on earth?"

"But it will be no use in hell," he murmured.

In those few words lay the germ of the preference for hell of poor souls, enfeebled by wickedness. They will not have to *do* anything there—only to moan and cry and suffer for ever, they think. It is effort, the out-going of the living will that they dread. The sorrow, the remorse of repentance, they do not so much regard: it is the action it involves; it is the having to turn, be different, and do differently, that they shrink from; and they have been taught to believe that this will not be required of them there—in that awful refuge of the will-less. I do not say they think thus: I only say their dim, vague, feeble feelings are such as, if they grew into thought, would take this form. But tell them that the fire of God without and within them will compel them to bethink themselves; that the vision of an open door beyond the smoke and the flames will ever urge them to call up the ice-bound will, that it may obey; that the torturing spirit of God in them will keep their consciences awake, not to remind them of what they ought to have done, but to tell them what they *must* do now, and hell will no longer fascinate them. Tell them that there is *no* refuge from the compelling Love of God, save that Love itself—that He is in hell too, and that if they make their bed in hell they shall not escape him, and then, perhaps, they will have some true presentiment of the worm that dieth not and the fire that is not quenched.

"Father, it *will* be of use in hell," said Robert. "God will give you no rest even there. You will have to repent some day, I do believe—if not now under the sunshine of heaven, then in the torture of the awful world where there is no light but that of the conscience. Would it not be better and easier to repent now, with your wife waiting for you in heaven, and your mother waiting for you on earth?"

Will it be credible to my reader, that Andrew interrupted his son with the words,

“Robert, it is dreadful to hear you talk like that. Why, you don’t believe in the Bible!”

His words will be startling to one who has never heard the lips of a hoary old sinner drivel out religion. To me they are not so startling as the words of Christian women and bishops of the Church of England, when they say that the doctrine of the everlasting happiness of the righteous stands or falls with the doctrine of the hopeless damnation of the wicked. Can it be that to such the word is everything, the spirit nothing? No. It is only that the devil is playing a very wicked prank, not with them, but in them: they are pluming themselves on being selfish after a godly sort.

“I do believe the Bible, father,” returned Robert, “and have ordered my life by it. If I had not believed the Bible, I fear I should never have looked for you. But I won’t dispute about it. I only say I believe that you will be compelled to repent some day, and that now is the best time. Then, you will not only have to repent, but to repent that you did not repent now. And I tell you, father, that you *shall* go to my grandmother.”

Chapter 16 - Change of Scene

But various reasons combined to induce Falconer to postpone yet for a period their journey to the North. Not merely did his father require an unremitting watchfulness, which it would be difficult to keep up in his native place amongst old friends and acquaintances, but his health was more broken than he had at first supposed, and change of air and scene without excitement was most desirable. He was anxious too that the change his mother must see in him should be as little as possible attributable to other causes than those that years bring with them. To this was added that his own health had begun to suffer from the watching and anxiety he had gone through, and for his father's sake, as well as for the labour which yet lay before him, he would keep that as sound as he might. He wrote to his grandmother and explained the matter. She begged him to do as he thought best, for she was so happy that she did not care if she should never see Andrew in this world: it was enough to die in the hope of meeting him in the other. But she had no reason to fear that death was at hand; for, although much more *frail*, she felt as well as ever.

By this time Falconer had introduced me to his father. I found him in some things very like his son; in others, very different. His manners were more polished; his pleasure in pleasing much greater: his humanity had blossomed too easily, and then *run to seed*. Alas, to no seed that could bear fruit! There was a weak expression about his mouth—a wavering interrogation: it was so different from the firmly-closed portals whence issued the golden speech of his son! He had a sly, sidelong look at times, whether of doubt or cunning, I could not always determine. His eyes, unlike his son's, were of a light blue, and hazy both in texture and

expression. His hands were long-fingered and tremulous. He gave your hand a sharp squeeze, and the same instant abandoned it with indifference. I soon began to discover in him a tendency to patronize any one who showed him a particle of respect as distinguished from common-place civility. But under all outward appearances it seemed to me that there was a change going on: at least being very willing to believe it, I found nothing to render belief impossible.

He was very fond of the flute his son had given him, and on that sweetest and most expressionless of instruments he played exquisitely.

One evening when I called to see them, Falconer said,

"We are going out of town for a few weeks, Gordon: will you go with us?"

"I am afraid I can't."

"Why? You have no teaching at present, and your writing you can do as well in the country as in town."

"That is true; but still I don't see how I can. I am too poor for one thing."

"Between you and me that is nonsense."

"Well, I withdraw that," I said. "But there is so much to be done, specially as you will be away, and Miss St John is at the Lakes."

"That is all very true; but you need a change. I have seen for some weeks that you are failing. Mind, it is our best work that He wants, not the dregs of our exhaustion. I hope you are not of the mind of our friend Mr. Watts, the curate of St. Gregory's."

"I thought you had a high opinion of Mr. Watts," I returned.

"So I have. I hope it is not necessary to agree with a man in everything before we can have a high opinion of him."

"Of course not. But what is it you hope I am not of his opinion in?"

"He seems ambitious of killing himself with work—of wearing himself out in the service of his master—and as quickly as possible. A good deal of that kind of thing is a mere holding of the axe to the grindstone, not a lifting of it up against thick trees. Only he won't be convinced till it comes to the helve. I met him the other day; he was looking as white as his surplice. I took upon me to read him a lecture on the holiness of holidays. 'I can't leave my poor,' he said. 'Do you think God can't do without you?' I asked. 'Is he so weak that he cannot spare the help of a weary man? But I think he must prefer quality to quantity, and for healthy work you must be healthy yourself. How can you be the visible sign of the Christ-present amongst men, if you inhabit an exhausted, irritable brain? Go to God's infirmary and rest a while. Bring back health from the country to those that cannot go to it. If on the way it be transmuted into spiritual forms, so much the better. A little more of God will make up for a good deal less of you.'"

"What did he say to that?"

"He said our Lord died doing the will of his Father. I told him—'Yes, when his time was come, not sooner. Besides, he often avoided both speech and action.' 'Yes,' he answered, 'but he could tell when, and we cannot.' 'Therefore,' I rejoined, 'you ought to accept your exhaustion as a token that your absence will be the best thing for your people. If there were no God, then perhaps you ought to work till you drop down dead—I don't know.'"

"Is he gone yet?"

"No. He won't go. I couldn't persuade him."

"When do you go?"

"To-morrow."

"I shall be ready, if you really mean it."

"That's an *if* worthy only of a courtier. There may be much virtue in an *if*, as Touchstone says, for the taking up of a quarrel; but that *if* is bad enough to breed one," said Falconer, laughing. "Be at the Paddington Station at noon to-morrow. To tell the whole truth, I want you to help me with my father."

This last was said at the door as he showed me out.

In the afternoon we were nearing Bristol. It was a lovely day in October. Andrew had been enjoying himself; but it was evidently rather the pleasure of travelling in a first-class carriage like a gentleman than any delight in the beauty of heaven and earth. The country was in the rich sombre dress of decay.

"Is it not remarkable," said my friend to me, "that the older I grow, I find autumn affecting me the more like spring?"

"I am thankful to say," interposed Andrew, with a smile in which was mingled a shade of superiority, "that no change of the seasons ever affects *me*."

"Are you sure you are right in being thankful for that, father?" asked his son.

His father gazed at him for a moment, seemed to bethink himself after some feeble fashion or other, and rejoined,

"Well, I must confess I did feel a touch of the rheumatism this morning."

How I pitied Falconer! Would he ever see of the travail of his soul in this man? But he only smiled a deep sweet smile, and seemed to be thinking divine things in that great head of his.

At Bristol we went on board a small steamer, and at night were landed at a little village on the coast of North Devon. The hotel to which we went was on the steep bank of a tumultuous little river, which tumbled past its foundation of rock, like a troop of watery horses galloping by with ever-dissolving limbs. The elder Falconer retired almost as soon as we had had supper. My friend and I lighted our pipes, and sat by the open window, for although the autumn was so far advanced, the air here was very mild. For some time we only listened to the sound of the waters.

"There are three things," said Falconer at last, taking his pipe out of his mouth with a smile, "that give a peculiarly perfect feeling of abandonment: the laughter of a child; a snake lying *across* a fallen branch; and the rush of a stream like this beneath us, whose only thought is to get to the sea."

We did not talk much that night, however, but went soon to bed. None of us slept well. We agreed in the morning that the noise of the stream had been too much for us all, and that the place felt close and torpid. Andrew complained that the ceaseless sound wearied him, and Robert that he felt the aimless endlessness of it more than was good for him. I confess it irritated me like an anodyne unable to soothe. We were clearly all in want of something different. The air between the hills clung to them, hot and moveless. We would climb those hills, and breathe the air that flitted about over their craggy tops.

As soon as we had breakfasted, we set out. It was soon evident that Andrew could not ascend the steep road. We returned and got a carriage. When we reached the top, it was like a resurrection, like a dawning of hope out of despair. The cool friendly wind blew on our faces, and breathed strength into our frames. Before us lay the ocean, the visible type of the invisible, and the vessels with their white sails moved about

over it like the thoughts of men feebly searching the unknown. Even Andrew Falconer spread out his arms to the wind, and breathed deep, filling his great chest full.

"I feel like a boy again," he said.

His son strode to his side, and laid his arm over his shoulders.

"So do I, father," he returned; "but it is because I have got you."

The old man turned and looked at him with a tenderness I had never seen on his face before. As soon as I saw that, I no longer doubted that he could be saved.

We found rooms in a farm-house on the topmost height.

"These are poor little hills, Falconer," I said. "Yet they help one like mountains."

"The whole question is," he returned, "whether they are high enough to lift you out of the dirt. Here we are in the airs of heaven—that is all we need."

"They make me think how often, amongst the country people of Scotland, I have wondered at the clay-feet upon which a golden head of wisdom stood! What poor needs, what humble aims, what a narrow basement generally, was sufficient to support the statues of pure-eyed Faith and white-handed Hope."

"Yes," said Falconer: "he who is faithful over a few things is a lord of cities. It does not matter whether you preach in Westminster Abbey, or teach a ragged class, so you be faithful. The faithfulness is all."

After an early dinner we went out for a walk, but we did not go far before we sat down upon the grass. Falconer laid himself at full length and gazed upwards.

“When I look like this into the blue sky,” he said, after a moment’s silence, “it seems so deep, so peaceful, so full of a mysterious tenderness, that I could lie for centuries, and wait for the dawning of the face of God out of the awful loving-kindness.”

I had never heard Falconer talk of his own present feelings in this manner; but glancing at the face of his father with a sense of his unfitness to hear such a lofty utterance, I saw at once that it was for his sake that he had thus spoken. The old man had thrown himself back too, and was gazing into the sky, puzzling himself, I could see, to comprehend what his son could mean. I fear he concluded, for the time, that Robert was not gifted with the amount of common-sense belonging of right to the Falconer family, and that much religion had made him a dreamer. Still, I thought I could see a kind of awe pass like a spiritual shadow across his face as he gazed into the blue gulfs over him. No one can detect the first beginnings of any life, and those of spiritual emotion must more than any lie beyond our ken: there is infinite room for hope. Falconer said no more. We betook ourselves early within doors, and he read King Lear to us, expounding the spiritual history of the poor old king after a fashion I had never conceived—showing us how the said history was all compressed, as far as human eye could see of it, into the few months that elapsed between his abdication and his death; how in that short time he had to learn everything that he ought to have been learning all his life; and how, because he had put it off so long, the lessons that had then to be given him were awfully severe.

I thought what a change it was for the old man to lift his head into the air of thought and life, out of the sloughs of misery in which he had been wallowing for years.

Chapter 17 - In the Country

The next morning Falconer, who knew the country, took us out for a drive. We passed through lanes and gates out upon all open moor, where he stopped the carriage, and led us a few yards on one side. Suddenly, hundreds of feet below us, down what seemed an almost precipitous descent, we saw the wood-embosomed, stream-trodden valley we had left the day before. Enough had been cleft and scooped seawards out of the lofty table-land to give room for a few little conical hills with curious peaks of bare rock. At the bases of these hills flowed noisily two or three streams, which joined in one, and trotted out to sea over rocks and stones. The hills and the sides of the great cleft were half of them green with grass, and half of them robed in the autumnal foliage of thick woods. By the streams and in the woods nestled pretty houses; and away at the mouth of the valley and the stream lay the village. All around, on our level, stretched farm and moorland.

When Andrew Falconer stood so unexpectedly on the verge of the steep descent, he trembled and started back with fright. His son made him sit down a little way off, where yet we could see into the valley. The sun was hot, the air clear and mild, and the sea broke its blue floor into innumerable sparkles of radiance. We sat for a while in silence.

“Are you sure,” I said, in the hope of setting my friend talking, “that there is no horrid pool down there? no half-trampled thicket, with broken pottery and shreds of tin lying about? no dead carcass, or dirty cottage, with miserable wife and greedy children? When I was a child, I knew a lovely place that I could not half enjoy, because, although hidden from my view, an ugly stagnation, half mud, half water, lay in a certain

spot below me. When I had to pass it, I used to creep by with a kind of dull terror, mingled with hopeless disgust, and I have never got over the feeling."

"You remind me much of a friend of mine of whom I have spoken to you before," said Falconer, 'Eric Ericson. I have shown you many of his verses, but I don't think I ever showed you one little poem containing an expression of the same feeling. I think I can repeat it.

"Some men there are who cannot spare
A single tear until they feel
The last cold pressure, and the heel
Is stamped upon the outmost layer.

"And, waking, some will sigh to think
The clouds have borrowed winter's wing—
Sad winter when the grasses spring
No more about the fountain's brink.

"And some would call me coward-fool:
I lay a claim to better blood;
But yet a heap of idle mud
Hath power to make me sorrowful."

I sat thinking over the verses, for I found the feeling a little difficult to follow, although the last stanza was plain enough. Falconer resumed.

"I think this is as likely as any place," he said, "to be free of such physical blots. For the moral I cannot say. But I have learned, I hope, not to be too fastidious—I mean so as to be unjust to the whole because of the part. The impression made by a whole is just as true as the result of an analysis, and is greater and more valuable in every respect. If we rejoice in the beauty of the whole, the other is sufficiently forgotten. For moral ugliness, it ceases to distress in proportion as we labour to remove

it, and regard it in its true relations to all that surrounds it. There is an old legend which I dare say you know. The Saviour and his disciples were walking along the way, when they came upon a dead dog. The disciples did not conceal their disgust. The Saviour said: 'How white its teeth are!'"

"That is very beautiful," I rejoined. "Thank God for that. It is true, whether invented or not. But," I added, "it does not quite answer to the question about which we have been talking. The Lord got rid of the pain of the ugliness by finding the beautiful in it."

"It does correspond, however, I think, in principle," returned Falconer; "only it goes much farther, making the exceptional beauty hallow the general ugliness—which is the true way, for beauty is life, and therefore infinitely deeper and more powerful than ugliness which is death. 'A dram of sweet,' says Spenser, 'is worth a pound of sour.'Edmund Spenser, *The Faerie Queene* (1590). I.e., a small amount of joy and love can compensate for a large amount of pain and sorrow."

It was so delightful to hear him talk—for what he said was not only far finer than my record of it, but the whole man spoke as well as his mouth—that I sought to start him again.

"I wish," I said, "that I could see things as you do—in great masses of harmonious unity. I am only able to see a truth sparkling here and there, and to try to lay hold of it. When I aim at more, I am like Noah's dove, without a place to rest the sole of my foot."

"That is the only way to begin. Leave the large vision to itself, and look well after your sparkles. You will find them grow and gather and unite, until you are afloat on a sea of radiance—with cloud shadows no doubt."

"And yet," I resumed, "I never seem to have room."

"That is just why."

“But I feel that I cannot find it. I know that if I fly to that bounding cape on the far horizon there, I shall only find *a place*—a place to want another in. There is no fortunate island out on that sea.”

“I fancy,” said Falconer, “that until a man loves space, he will never be at peace in a place. At least so I have found it. I am content if you but give me room. All space to me throbs with being and life; and the loveliest spot on the earth seems but the compression of space till the meaning shines out of it, as the fire flies out of the air when you drive it close together. To seek place after place for freedom, is a constant effort to flee from space, and a vain one, for you are ever haunted by the need of it, and therefore when you seek most to escape it, fancy that you love it and want it.”

“You are getting too mystical for me now,” I said. “I am not able to follow you.”

“I fear I was on the point of losing myself. At all events I can go no further now. And indeed I fear I have been but skirting the Limbo of Vanities.”

He rose, for we could both see that this talk was not in the least interesting to our companion. We got again into the carriage, which, by Falconer’s orders, was turned and driven in the opposite direction, still at no great distance from the lofty edge of the heights that rose above the shore.

We came at length to a lane bounded with stone walls, every stone of which had its moss and every chink its fern. The lane grew more and more grassy; the walls vanished; and the track faded away into a narrow winding valley, formed by the many meeting curves of opposing hills. They were green to the top with sheep-grass, and spotted here and there with patches of fern, great stones, and tall withered foxgloves. The air

was sweet and healthful, and Andrew evidently enjoyed it because it reminded him again of his boyhood. The only sound we heard was the tinkle of a few tender sheep-bells, and now and then the tremulous bleating of a sheep. With a gentle winding, the valley led us into a more open portion of itself, where the old man paused with a look of astonished pleasure.

Before us, seaward, rose a rampart against the sky, like the turreted and embattled wall of a huge eastern city, built of loose stones piled high, and divided by great peaky rocks. In the centre rose above them all one solitary curiously-shaped mass, one of the oddest peaks of the Himmalays in miniature. From its top on the further side was a sheer descent to the waters far below the level of the valley from which it immediately rose. It was altogether a strange freaky fantastic place, not without its grandeur. It looked like the remains of a frolic of the Titans, or rather as if reared by the boys and girls, while their fathers and mothers "lay stretched out huge in length," and in breadth too, upon the slopes around, and laughed thunderously at the sportive invention of their sons and daughters. Falconer helped his father up to the edge of the rampart that he might look over. Again he started back, "afraid of that which was high," for the lowly valley was yet at a great height above the diminished waves. On the outside of the rampart ran a narrow path whence the green hill-side went down steep to the sea. The gulls were screaming far below us; we could see the little flying streaks of white. Beyond was the great ocean. A murmurous sound came up from its shore.

We descended and seated ourselves on the short springy grass of a little mound at the foot of one of the hills, where it sank slowly, like the dying gush of a wave, into the hollowest centre of the little vale.

“Everything tends to the cone-shape here,” said Falconer,—“the oddest and at the same time most wonderful of mathematical figures.”

“Is it not strange,” I said, “that oddity and wonder should come so near?”

“They often do in the human world as well,” returned he. “Therefore it is not strange that Shelley should have been so fond of this place. It is told of him that repeated sketches of the spot were found on the covers of his letters. I know nothing more like Shelley’s poetry than this valley—wildly fantastic and yet beautiful—as if a huge genius were playing at grandeur, and producing little models of great things. But there is one grand thing I want to show you a little further on.”

We rose, and walked out of the valley on the other side, along the lofty coast. When we reached a certain point, Falconer stood and requested us to look as far as we could, along the cliffs to the face of the last of them.

“What do you see?” he asked.

“A perpendicular rock, going right down into the blue waters,” I answered.

“Look at it: what is the outline of it like? Whose face is it?”

“Shakspere’s, by all that is grand!” I cried.

“So it is,” said Andrew.

“Right. Now I’ll tell you what I would do. If I were very rich, and there were no poor people in the country, I would give a commission to some great sculptor to attack that rock and work out its suggestion. Then, it I had any money left, we should find one for Bacon, and one for Chaucer, and one for Milton; and, as we are about it, we may fancy as many more as we like; so that from the bounding rocks of our island, the memorial

faces of our great brothers should look abroad over the seas into the infinite sky beyond."

"Well, now," said the elder, "I think it is grander as it is."

"You are quite right, father," said Robert. "And so with many of our fancies for perfecting God's mighty sketches, which he only can finish."

Again we seated ourselves and looked out over the waves.

"I have never yet heard," I said, "how you managed with that poor girl that wanted to drown herself—on Westminster Bridge, I mean—that night, you remember."

"Miss St. John has got her in her own house at present. She has given her those two children we picked up at the door of the public-house to take care of. Poor little darlings! they are bringing back the life in her heart already. There is actually a little colour in her cheek—the dawn, I trust, of the eternal life. That is Miss St. John's way. As often as she gets hold of a poor hopeless woman, she gives her a motherless child. It is wonderful what the childless woman and motherless child do for each other."

"I was much amused the other day with the lecture one of the police magistrates gave a poor creature who was brought before him for attempting to drown herself. He did give her a sovereign out of the poor box, though."

"Well, that might just tide her over the shoal of self-destruction," said Falconer. "But I cannot help doubting whether any one has a *right* to prevent a suicide from carrying out his purpose, who is not prepared to do a good deal more for him than that. What would you think of the man who snatched the loaf from a hungry thief, threw it back into the baker's cart, and walked away to his club-dinner? Harsh words of rebuke, and the threat of severe punishment upon a second attempt—what are they

to the wretch weary of life? To some of them the *kindest* punishment would be to hang them for it. It is something else than punishment that they need. If the comfortable alderman had but "a feeling of their afflictions," felt in himself for a moment how miserable *he* must be, what a waste of despair must be in his heart, before he would do it himself, before the awful river would appear to him a refuge from the upper air, he would change his tone. I fear he regards suicide chiefly as a burglarious entrance into the premises of the respectable firm of Vension, Port, & Co."

"But you mustn't be too hard upon him, Falconer; for if his God is his belly, how can he regard suicide as other than the most awful sacrilege?"

"Of course not. His well-fed divinity gives him one great commandment: 'Thou shalt love thyself with all thy heart. The great breach is to hurt thyself—worst of all to send thyself away from the land of luncheons and dinners, to the country of thought and vision.' But, alas! he does not reflect on the fact that the god Belial does not feed all his votaries; that he has his elect; that the altar of his inner-temple too often smokes with no sacrifice of which his poor meagre priests may partake. They must uphold the Divinity which has been good to *them*, and not suffer his worship to fall into disrepute."

"Really, Robert," said his father, "I am afraid to think what you will come to. You will end in denying there is a God at all. You don't believe in hell, and now you justify suicide. Really—I must say—to say the least of it—I have not been accustomed to hear such things."

The poor old man looked feebly righteous at his wicked son. I verily believe he was concerned for his eternal fate. Falconer gave a pleased glance at me, and for a moment said nothing. Then he began, with a kind of logical composure:

“In the first place, father, I do not believe in such a God as some people say they believe in. Their God is but an idol of the heathen, modified with a few Christian qualities. For hell, I don’t believe there is any escape from it but by leaving hellish things behind. For suicide, I do not believe it is wicked because it hurts yourself, but I do believe it is very wicked. I only want to put it on its own right footing.”

“And pray what do you consider its right footing?”

“My dear father, I recognize no duty as owing to a man’s self. There is and can be no such thing. I am and can be under no obligation to myself. The whole thing is a fiction, and of evil invention. It comes from the upper circles of the hell of selfishness. Or, perhaps, it may with some be merely a form of metaphysical mistake; but an untruth it is. Then for the duty we do owe to other people: how can we expect the men or women who have found life to end, as it seems to them, in a dunghill of misery—how can we expect such to understand any obligation to live for the sake of the general *others*, to no individual of whom, possibly, do they bear an endurable relation? What remains?—The grandest, noblest duty from which all other duty springs: the duty to the possible God. Mind, I say *possible* God, for I judge it the first of my duties towards my neighbour to regard his duty from his position, not from mine.”

“But,” said I, “how would you bring that duty to bear on the mind of a suicide?”

“I think some of the tempted could understand it, though I fear not one of those could who judge them hardly, and talk sententiously of the wrong done to a society which has done next to nothing for her, by the poor, starved, refused, husband-tortured wretch perhaps, who hurries at last to the might of the filthy flowing river which, the one thread of hope in the web of despair, crawls through the city of death. What should I say

to him? I should say: 'God liveth: thou art not thine own but his. Bear thy hunger, thy horror in his name. I in his name will help thee out of them, as I may. To go before he calleth thee, is to say "Thou forgettest," unto him who numbereth the hairs of thy head. Stand out in the cold and the sleet and the hail of this world, O son of man, till thy Father open the door and call thee. Yea, even if thou knowest him not, stand and wait, lest there should be, after all, such a loving and tender one, who, for the sake of a good with which thou wilt be all-content, and without which thou never couldst be content, permits thee there to stand—for a time—long to his sympathizing as well as to thy suffering heart.'"

Here Falconer paused, and when he spoke again it was from the ordinary level of conversation. Indeed I fancied that he was a little uncomfortable at the excitement into which his feelings had borne him.

"Not many of them could understand this, I dare say: but I think most of them could feel it without understanding it. Certainly the 'belly with good capon lined' will neither understand nor feel it. Suicide is a sin against God, I repeat, not a crime over which human laws have any hold. In regard to such, man has a duty alone—that, namely, of making it possible for every man to live. And where the dread of death is not sufficient to deter, what can the threat of punishment do? Or what great thing is gained if it should succeed? What agonies a man must have gone through in whom neither the horror of falling into such a river, nor of the knife in the flesh instinct with life, can extinguish the vague longing to wrap up his weariness in an endless sleep!"

"But," I remarked, "you would, I fear, encourage the trade in suicide. Your kindness would be terribly abused. What would you do with the pretended suicides?"

“Whip them, for trifling with and trading upon the feelings of their kind.”

“Then you would drive them to suicide in earnest.”

“Then they might be worth something, which they were not before.”

“We are a great deal too humane for that now-a-days, I fear. We don’t like hurting people.”

“No. We are infested with a philanthropy which is the offspring of our mammon-worship. But surely our tender mercies are cruel. We don’t like to hang people, however unfit they may be to live amongst their fellows. A weakling pity will petition for the life of the worst murderer—but for what? To keep him alive in a confinement as like their notion of hell as they dare to make it—namely, a place whence all the sweet visitings of the grace of God are withdrawn, and the man has not a chance, so to speak, of growing better. In this hell of theirs they will even pamper his beastly body.”

“They have the chaplain to visit them.”

“I pity the chaplain, cut off in his labours from all the aids which God’s world alone can give for the teaching of these men. Human beings have *not* the right to inflict such cruel punishment upon their fellow-man. It springs from a cowardly shrinking from responsibility, and from mistrust of the mercy of God;—perhaps first of all from an over-valuing of the mere life of the body. Hanging is tenderness itself to such a punishment.”

“I think you are hardly fair, though, Falconer. It is the fear of sending them to hell that prevents them from hanging them.”

“Yes. You are right, I dare say. They are not of David’s mind, who would rather fall into the hands of God than of men. They think their hell

is not so hard as his, and may be better for them. But I must not, as you say, forget that they do believe their everlasting fate hangs upon their hands, for if God once gets his hold of them by death, they are lost for ever."

"But the chaplain may awake them to a sense of their sins."

"I do not think it is likely that talk will do what the discipline of life has not done. It seems to me, on the contrary, that the clergyman has no commission to rouse people to a sense of their sins. That is not his work. He is far more likely to harden them by any attempt in that direction. Every man does feel his sins, though he often does not know it. To turn his attention away from what he does feel by trying to rouse in him feelings which are impossible to him in his present condition, is to do him a great wrong. The clergyman has the message of salvation, not of sin, to give. Whatever oppression is on a man, whatever trouble, whatever conscious something that comes between him and the blessedness of life, is his sin; for whatever is not of faith is sin; and from all this He came to save us. Salvation alone can rouse in us a sense of our sinfulness. One must have got on a good way before he can be sorry for his sins. There is no condition of sorrow laid down as necessary to forgiveness. Repentance does not mean sorrow: it means turning away from the sins. Every man can do that, more or less. And that every man must do. The sorrow will come afterwards, all in good time. Jesus offers to take us out of our own hands into his, if we will only obey him."

The eyes of the old man were fixed on his son as he spoke. He did seem to be thinking. I could almost fancy that a glimmer of something like hope shone in his eyes.

It was time to go home, and we were nearly silent all the way.

The next morning was so wet that we could not go out, and had to amuse ourselves as we best might in-doors. But Falconer's resources never failed. He gave us this day story after story about the poor people he had known. I could see that his object was often to get some truth into his father's mind without exposing it to rejection by addressing it directly to himself; and few subjects could be more fitted for affording such opportunity than his experiences among the poor.

The afternoon was still rainy and misty. In the evening I sought to lead the conversation towards the gospel-story; and then Falconer talked as I never heard him talk before. No little circumstance in the narratives appeared to have escaped him. He had thought about everything, as it seemed to me. He had looked under the surface everywhere, and found truth—mines of it—under all the upper soil of the story. The deeper he dug the richer seemed the ore. This was combined with the most pictorial apprehension of every outward event, which he treated as if it had been described to him by the lips of an eye-witness. The whole thing lived in his words and thoughts.

"When anything looks strange, you must look the deeper," he would say.

At the close of one of our fits of talk, he rose and went to the window.

"Come here," he said, after looking for a moment.

All day a dropping cloud had filled the space below, so that the hills on the opposite side of the valley were hidden, and the whole of the sea, near as it was. But when we went to the window we found that a great change had silently taken place. The mist continued to veil the sky, and it clung to the tops of the hills; but, like the rising curtain of a stage, it had rolled half-way up from their bases, revealing a great part of the sea and shore, and half of a cliff on the opposite side of the valley: this, in itself of

a deep red, was now smitten by the rays of the setting sun, and glowed over the waters a splendour of carmine. As we gazed, the vaporous curtain sank upon the shore, and the sun sank under the waves, and the sad gray evening closed in the weeping night, and clouds and darkness swathed the weary earth. For doubtless the earth needs its night as well as the creatures that live thereon.

In the morning the rain had ceased, but the clouds remained. But they were high in the heavens now, and, like a departing sorrow, revealed the outline and form which had appeared before as an enveloping vapour of universal and shapeless evil. The mist was now far enough off to be seen and thought about. It was clouds now—no longer mist and rain. And I thought how at length the evils of the world would float away, and we should see what it was that made it so hard for us to believe and be at peace.

In the afternoon the sky had partially cleared, but clouds hid the sun as he sank towards the west. We walked out. A cold autumnal wind blew, not only from the twilight of the dying day, but from the twilight of the dying season. A sorrowful hopeless wind it seemed, full of the odours of dead leaves—those memories of green woods, and of damp earth—the bare graves of the flowers. Would the summer ever come again?

We were pacing in silence along a terraced walk which overhung the shore far below. More here than from the hilltop we seemed to look immediately into space, not even a parapet intervening betwixt us and the ocean. The sound of a mournful lyric, never yet sung, was in my brain; it drew nearer to my mental grasp; but ere it alighted, its wings were gone, and it fell dead on my consciousness. Its meaning was this: “Welcome, Requiem of Nature. Let me share in thy Requiescat. Blow,

wind of mournful memories. Let us moan together. No one taketh from us the joy of our sorrow. We may mourn as we will."

But while I brooded thus, behold a wonder! The mass about the sinking sun broke up, and drifted away in cloudy bergs, as if scattered on the diverging currents of solar radiance that burst from the gates of the west, and streamed east and north and south over the heavens and over the sea. To the north, these masses built a cloudy bridge across the sky from horizon to horizon, and beneath it shone the rosy-sailed ships floating stately through their triumphal arch up the channel to their home. Other clouds floated stately too in the upper sea over our heads, with dense forms, thinning into vaporous edges. Some were of a dull angry red; some of as exquisite a primrose hue as ever the flower itself bore on its bosom; and betwixt their edges beamed out the sweetest, purest, most melting, most transparent blue, the heavenly blue which is the symbol of the spirit as red is of the heart. I think I never saw a blue to satisfy me before. Some of these clouds threw shadows of many-shaded purple upon the green sea; and from one of the shadows, so dark and so far out upon the glooming horizon that it looked like an island, arose as from a pier, a wondrous structure of dim, fairy colours, a multitude of rainbow-ends, side by side, that would have spanned the heavens with a gorgeous arch, but failed from the very grandeur of the idea, and grew up only a few degrees against the clouded west. I stood rapt. The two Falconers were at some distance before me, walking arm in arm. They stood and gazed likewise. It was as if God had said to the heavens and the earth and the chord of the seven colours, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people." And I said to my soul, "Let the tempest rave in the world; let sorrow wail like a sea-bird in the midst thereof; and let thy heart respond to her shivering cry; but the vault of heaven encloses the tempest and the

shrieking bird and the echoing heart; and the sun of God's countenance can with one glance from above change the wildest winter day into a summer evening compact of poets' dreams."

My companions were walking up over the hill. I could see that Falconer was earnestly speaking in his father's ear. The old man's head was bent towards the earth. I kept away. They made a turn from home. I still followed at a distance. The evening began to grow dark. The autumn wind met us again, colder, stronger, yet more laden with the odours of death and the frosts of the coming winter. But it no longer blew as from the charnel-house of the past; it blew from the stars through the chinks of the unopened door on the other side of the sepulchre. It was a wind of the worlds, not a wind of the leaves. It told of the march of the spheres, and the rest of the throne of God. We were going on into the universe—home to the house of our Father. Mighty adventure! Sacred repose! And as I followed the pair, one great star throbbed and radiated over my head.

Chapter 18 - Three Generations

The next week I went back to my work, leaving the father and son alone together. Before I left, I could see plainly enough that the bonds were being drawn closer between them. A whole month passed before they returned to London. The winter then had set in with unusual severity. But it seemed to bring only health to the two men. When I saw Andrew next, there was certainly a marked change upon him. Light had banished the haziness from his eye, and his step was a good deal firmer. I can hardly speak of more than the physical improvement, for I saw very little of him now. Still I did think I could perceive more of judgment in his face, as if he sometimes weighed things in his mind. But it was plain that Robert continued very careful not to let him a moment out of his knowledge. He busied him with the various sights of London, for Andrew, although he knew all its miseries well, had never yet been inside Westminster Abbey. If he could only trust him enough to get him something to do! But what was he fit for? To try him, he proposed once that he should write some account of what he had seen and learned in his wanderings; but the evident distress with which he shrunk from the proposal was grateful to the eyes and heart of his son.

It was almost the end of the year when a letter arrived from John Lammie, informing Robert that his grandmother had caught a violent cold, and that, although the special symptoms had disappeared, it was evident her strength was sinking fast, and that she would not recover.

He read the letter to his father.

“We must go and see her, Robert, my boy,” said Andrew.

It was the first time that he had shown the smallest desire to visit her. Falconer rose with glad heart, and proceeded at once to make arrangements for their journey.

It was a cold, powdery afternoon in January, with the snow thick on the ground, save where the little winds had blown the crown of the street bare before Mrs. Falconer's house. A post-chaise with four horses swept wearily round the corner, and pulled up at her door. Betty opened it, and revealed an old withered face very sorrowful, and yet expectant. Falconer's feelings I dare not, Andrew's I cannot attempt to describe, as they stepped from the chaise and entered. Betty led the way without a word into the little parlour. Robert went next, with long quiet strides, and Andrew followed with gray, bowed head. Grannie was not in her chair. The doors which during the day concealed the bed in which she slept, were open, and there lay the aged woman with her eyes closed. The room was as it had always been, only there seemed a filmy shadow in it that had not been there before.

"She's deein'[dying], sir," whispered Betty. "Ay[yes, indeed] is she. Och hone[alas]!"

Robert took his father's hand, and led him towards the bed. They drew nigh softly, and bent over the withered, but not even yet very wrinkled face. The smooth, white, soft hands lay on the sheet, which was folded back over her bosom. She was asleep, or rather, she slumbered.

But the soul of the child began to grow in the withered heart of the old man as he regarded his older mother, and as it grew it forced the tears to his eyes, and the words to his lips.

"Mother!" he said, and her eyelids rose at once. He stooped to kiss her, with the tears rolling down his face. The light of heaven broke and

flashed from her aged countenance. She lifted her weak hands, took his head, and held it to her bosom.

"Eh! the bonnie gray heid[head]!" she said, and burst into a passion of weeping. She had kept some tears for the last. Now she would spend all that her griefs had left her. But there came a pause in her sobs, though not in her weeping, and then she spoke.

"I kent[known, knew] it a' the time, O Lord. I kent it a' the time. He's come hame[home]. My Anerew, my Anerew! I'm as happy 's a bairn. O Lord! O Lord!"

And she burst again into sobs, and entered paradise in radiant weeping.

Her hands sank away from his head, and when her son gazed in her face he saw that she was dead. She had never looked at Robert.

The two men turned towards each other. Robert put out his arms. His father laid his head on his bosom, and went on weeping. Robert held him to his heart.

When shall a man dare to say that God has done all he can?

Chapter 19 - The Whole Story

The men laid their mother's body with those of the generations that had gone before her, beneath the long grass in their country churchyard near Rothieden—a dreary place, one accustomed to trim cemeteries and sentimental wreaths would call it—to Falconer's mind so friendly to the forsaken dust, because it lapt it in sweet oblivion.

They returned to the dreary house, and after a simple meal such as both had used to partake of in their boyhood, they sat by the fire, Andrew in his mother's chair, Robert in the same chair in which he had learned his Sallust and written his versions. Andrew sat for a while gazing into the fire, and Robert sat watching his face, where in the last few months a little feeble fatherhood had begun to dawn.

"It was there, father, that grannie used to sit, every day, sometimes looking in the fire for hours, thinking about you, I know," Robert said at length.

Andrew stirred uneasily in his chair.

"How do you know that?" he asked.

"If there was one thing I could be sure of, it was when grannie was thinking about you, father. Who wouldn't have known it, father, when her lips were pressed together, as if she had some dreadful pain to bear, and her eyes were looking away through the fire—so far away! and I would speak to her three times before she would answer? She lived only to think about God and you, father. God and you came very close together in her mind. Since ever I can remember, almost, the thought of you was just the one thing in this house."

Then Robert began at the beginning of his memory, and told his father all that he could remember. When he came to speak about his solitary musings in the garret, he said—and long before he reached this part, he had relapsed into his mother tongue:

"Come and luik[look] at the place, father. I want to see 't again, mysel'."

He rose. His father yielded and followed him. Robert got a candle in the kitchen, and the two big men climbed the little narrow stair and stood in the little sky of the house, where their heads almost touched the ceiling.

"I sat upo' the flure[floor] there,' said Robert, "an' thoucht and thoucht what I wad[would] du[do] to get ye, father, and what I wad du wi' ye whan I had gotten ye. I wad greit[cry, weep] whiles[sometimes, at times], 'cause ither[other] laddies had a father an' I had nane. An' there's whaur I fand[found] mamma's box wi' the letter in 't and her ain[own] picter; grannie gae[gave] me that ane[one] o' you. An' there's whaur I used to kneel doon an' pray to God. An' he's heard my prayers, and grannie's prayers, and here ye are wi' me at last. Instead o' thinkin' aboot ye, I hae yer ain sel'. Come, father, I want to say a word o' thanks to God, for hearin' my prayer."

He took the old man's hand, led him to the bedside, and kneeled with him there.

My reader can hardly avoid thinking it was a poor sad triumph that Robert had after all. How the dreams of the boy had dwindled in settling down into the reality! He had his father, it was true, but what a father! And how little he had him!

But this was not the end; and Robert always believed that the end must be the greater in proportion to the distance it was removed, to give time for its true fulfilment. And when he prayed aloud beside his father, I doubt not that his thanksgiving and his hope were equal.

The prayer over, he took his father's hand and led him down again to the little parlour, and they took their seats again by the fire; and Robert began again and went on with his story, not omitting the parts belonging to Mary St. John and Eric Ericson.

When he came to tell how he had encountered him in the deserted factory:

"Luik[look] here, father, here's the mark o' the cut," he said, parting the thick hair on the top of his head.

His father hid his face in his hands.

"It wasna muckle[much] o' a blow that ye gied[gave] me, father," he went on, "but I fell against the grate, and that was what did it. And I never tellt onybody, nae[no, not] even Miss St. John, wha plaistered it up, hoo[how] I had gotten 't. And I didna mean to say onything aboot it; but I wantit to tell ye a queer dream, sic[such] a queer dream it garred[caused, compelled] me dream the same nicht."

As he told the dream, his father suddenly grew attentive, and before he had finished, looked almost scared; but he said nothing. When he came to relate his grandmother's behaviour after having discovered that the papers relating to the factory were gone, he hid his face in his hands once more. He told him how grannie had mourned and wept over him, from the time when he heard her praying aloud as he crept through her room at night to their last talk together after Dr. Anderson's death. He set forth, as he could, in the simplest language, the agony of her soul over her lost son. He told him then about Ericson, and Dr. Anderson, and how good they had been to him, and at last of Dr. Anderson's request that he would do something for him in India.

"Will ye gang[go] wi' me, father?" he asked.

“I’ll never leave ye again, Robert, my boy,” he answered. “I have been a bad man, and a bad father, and now I gie[give] mysel’ up to you to mak the best o’ me ye can. I daurna[dare not] leave ye, Robert.”

“Pray to God to tak care o’ ye, father. He’ll do a’thing[everything, anything] for ye, gin[if] ye’ll only lat him.”

“I will, Robert.”

“I was mysel’ dreidfu’ miserable for a while,” Robert resumed, “for I cudna see or hear God at a’; but God heard me, and loot[let] me ken that he was there an’ that a’ was richt. It was jist like whan[when] a bairnie[little child] waukens[wakes] up an’ cries oot, thinkin’ it ’s its lane[lone, alone], an’ through the mirk[darkness, gloom] comes the word o’ the mither o’ ’t, sayin’, ‘I’m here, cratur: dinna greit[cry, weep].’ And I cam to believe ’at he wad[would] mak you a good man at last. O father, it’s been my dream waukin’ an’ sleepin’ to hae you back to me an’ grannie, an’ mamma, an’ the Father o’ ’s a’, an’ Jesus Christ that’s done a’thing for ’s. An’ noo ye maun[must, have to] pray to God, father. Ye *will* pray to God to haud[hold, keep] a grip o’ ye—willna ye, father?”

“I will, I will, Robert. But I’ve been an awfu’ sinner. I believe I was the death o’ yer mother, laddie.”

Some closet of memory was opened; a spring of old tenderness gushed up in his heart; at some window of the past the face of his dead wife looked out: the old man broke into a great cry, and sobbed and wept bitterly. Robert said no more, but wept with him.

Henceforward the father clung to his son like a child. The heart of Falconer turned to his Father in heaven with speechless thanksgiving. The ideal of his dreams was beginning to dawn, and his life was new-born.

For a few days Robert took Andrew about to see those of his old friends who were left, and the kindness with which they all received him, moved Andrew's heart not a little. Every one who saw him seemed to feel that he or she had a share in the redeeming duty of the son. Robert was in their eyes like a heavenly messenger, whom they were bound to aid; for here was the possessed of demons clothed and in his right mind. Therefore they overwhelmed both father and son with kindness. Especially at John Lammie's was he received with a perfection of hospitality; as if that had been the father's house to which he had returned from his prodigal wanderings.

The good old farmer begged that they would stay with him for a few days.

"I hae sae mony[many] wee things to luik[look] efter[after] at Rothieden, afore we gang," said Robert.

"Weel, lea'[leave] yer father here. We s' tak guid care o' 'im, I promise ye."

"There's only ae difficulty. I believe ye are my father's frien', Lammie, as ye hae been mine, and God bless ye; sae I'll jist tell you the trowth[truth, indeed], what for I canna lea' him. I'm no sure eneuch yet that he could withstan' temptation. It's the drink ye ken. It's months sin'[since] he's tasted it; but—ye ken weel eneuch—the temptation's awfu'. Sin' ever I got him back, I haena tasted ae mou'fu' o' onything that cud be ca'd[called] strong drink mysel', an' as lang 's he lives, not ae drap[drop] shall cross my lips—no to save my life."

"Robert," said Lammie, giving him his hand with solemnity, "I sweir by God that he shanna[shall not] see, smell, taste, nor touch drink in this hoose. There's but twa boatles[bottles] o' whusky, i' the shape o' drink, i' the hoose; an' gin[if] ye say 'at he sall[shall] bide, I'll gang and mak them an' the midden[dunghill] weel acquant."

Andrew was pleased at the proposal. Robert too was pleased that his father should be free of him for a while. It was arranged for three days. Half-an-hour after, Robert came upon Lammie emptying the two bottles of whisky into the dunghill in the farmyard.

He returned with glad heart to Rothieden. It did not take him long to arrange his grandmother's little affairs. He had already made up his mind about her house and furniture. He rang the bell one morning for Betty.

"Hae[Have] ye ony[any] siller[silver, money] laid up, Betty?"

"Ay. I hae feifteen[fifteen] poun'[pound (sterling)] i' the savin's[savings] bank."

"An' what do ye think o' doin'?"

"I'll get a bit roomy[little room], an' tak in washin".

"Weel, I'll tell ye what I wad like ye to do. Ye ken Mistress Elshender?"

"Fine that. An' a verra[very] dacent body she is."

"Weel, gin[if] ye like, ye can haud this hoose, an' a' 'at's in't, jist as it is, till the day o' yer deith. And ye'll aye keep it in order, an' the ga'le-room[gable-room] ready for me at ony[any] time I may happen to come in upo' ye in want o' a nicht's quarters. But I wad[would] like ye, gin[if] ye hae nae objections, to tak Mistress Elshender to bide wi' ye. She's turnin' some frail noo[now], and I'm unner great obligation to her Sandy, ye ken."

"Ay, weel that. He learnt ye to fiddle, Robert—I hoombly beg your pardon, sir, Mister Robert."

"Nae offence, Betty, I assure ye. Ye hae been aye gude to me, and I thank ye hertily."

Betty could not stand this. Her apron went up to her eyes.

"Eh, sir," she sobbed, "ye was aye a gude lad."

"Excep' whan[when] I spak o' Muckledrum, Betty."

She laughed and sobbed together.

“Weel, ye’ll tak Mistress Elshender in, winna[will not] ye?”

“I’ll do that, sir. And I’ll try to do my best wi’ her.”

“She can help ye, ye ken, wi’ yer washin’, an’ sic[such] like.”

“She’s a hard-workin’ wuman[woman], sir. She wad[would] do that weel.”

“And whan ye’re in ony want o’ siller[silver, money], jist write to me. An’ gin[if] onything suld[should] happen to me, ye ken, write to Mr. Gordon, a frien’ o’ mine. There’s his address in Lonnon.”

“Eh, sir, but ye are kin’[kind]. God bless ye for a’.”

She could bear no more, and left the room crying.

Everything settled at Rothieden, he returned to Bodyfauld. The most welcome greeting he had ever received in his life, lay in the shine of his father’s eyes when he entered the room where he sat with Miss Lammie. The next day they left for London.

Chapter 20 - The Vanishing

They came to see me the very evening of their arrival. As to Andrew's progress there could be no longer any doubt. All that was necessary for conviction on the point was to have seen him before and to see him now. The very grasp of his hand was changed. But not yet would Robert leave him alone.

It will naturally occur to my reader that his goodness was not much yet. It was not. It may have been greater than we could be sure of, though. But if any one object that such a conversion, even if it were perfected, was poor, inasmuch as the man's free will was intromitted with, I answer: "The development of the free will was the one object. Hitherto it was not free." I ask the man who says so: "Where would your free will have been if at some period of your life you could have had everything you wanted?" If he says it is nobler in a man to do with less help, I answer, "Andrew was not noble: was he therefore to be forsaken? The prodigal was not left without the help of the swine and their husks, at once to keep him alive and disgust him with the life. Is the less help a man has from God the better?" According to you, the grandest thing of all would be for a man sunk in the absolute abysses of sensuality all at once to resolve to be pure as the empyrean, and be so, without help from God or man. But is the thing possible? As well might a hyena say: I will be a man, and become one. That would be to create. Andrew must be kept from the evil long enough to let him at least see the good, before he was let alone. But when would we be let alone? For a man to be fit to be let alone, is for a man not to need God, but to be able to live without him. Our hearts cry out, "To have God is to live. We want God. Without him no life of ours is worth living. We are not then even human, for that is

but the lower form of the divine. We are immortal, eternal: fill us, O Father, with thyself. Then only all is well." More: I heartily believe, though I cannot understand the boundaries of will and inspiration, that what God will do for us at last is infinitely beyond any greatness we could gain, even if we could will ourselves from the lowest we could be, into the highest we can imagine. It is essential divine life we want; and there is grand truth, however incomplete or perverted, in the aspiration of the Brahmin. He is wrong, but he wants something right. If the man had the power in his pollution to will himself into the right without God, the fact that he was in that pollution with such power, must damn him there for ever. And if God must help ere a man can be saved, can the help of man go too far towards the same end? Let God solve the mystery—for he made it. One thing is sure: We are his, and he will do his part, which is no part but the all in all. If man could do what in his wildest self-worship he can imagine, the grand result would be that he would be his own God, which is the Hell of Hells.

For some time I had to give Falconer what aid I could in being with his father while he arranged matters in prospect of their voyage to India. Sometimes he took him with him when he went amongst his people, as he called the poor he visited. Sometimes, when he wanted to go alone, I had to take him to Miss St. John, who would play and sing as I had never heard any one play or sing before. Andrew on such occasions carried his flute with him, and the result of the two was something exquisite. How Miss St. John did lay herself out to please the old man! And pleased he was. I think her kindness did more than anything else to make him feel like a gentleman again. And in his condition that was much.

At length Falconer would sometimes leave him with Miss St. John, till he or I should go for him: he knew she could keep him safe. He knew

that she *would* keep him if necessary.

One evening when I went to see Falconer, I found him alone. It was one of these occasions.

"I am very glad you have come, Gordon," he said. "I was wanting to see you. I have got things nearly ready now. Next month, or at latest, the one after, we shall sail; and I have some business with you which had better be arranged at once. No one knows what is going to happen. The man who believes the least in chance knows as little as the man who believes in it the most. My will is in the hands of Dobson. I have left you everything."

I was dumb.

"Have you any objection?" he said, a little anxiously.

"Am I able to fulfil the conditions?" I faltered.

"I have burdened you with no conditions," he returned. "I don't believe in conditions. I know your heart and mind now. I trust you perfectly."

"I am unworthy of it."

"That is for me to judge."

"Will you have no trustees?"

"Not one."

"What do you want me to do with your property?"

"You know well enough. Keep it going the right way."

"I will always think what you would like."

"No; do not. Think what is right; and where there is no right or wrong plain in itself, then think what is best. You may see good reason to change some of my plans. You may be wrong; but you must do what you see right—not what I see or might see right."

“But there is no need to talk so seriously about it,” I said. “You will manage it yourself for many years yet. Make me your steward, if you like, during your absence: I will not object to that.”

“You do not object to the other, I hope?”

“No.”

“Then so let it be. The other, of course. I have, being a lawyer myself, taken good care not to trust myself only with the arranging of these matters. I think you will find them all right.”

“But supposing you should not return—you have compelled me to make the supposition—”

“Of course. Go on.”

“What am I to do with the money in the prospect of following you?”

“Ah! that is the one point on which I want a word, although I do not think it is necessary. I want to entail the property.”

“How?”

“By word of mouth,” he answered, laughing. “You must look out for a right man, as I have done, get him to know your ways and ideas, and if you find him *worthy*—that is a grand wide word—our Lord gave it to his disciples—leave it all to him in the same way I have left it to you, trusting to the spirit of truth that is in him, the spirit of God. You can copy my will—as far as it will apply, for you may have, one way or another, lost the half of it by that time. But, by word of mouth, you must make the same condition with him as I have made with you—that is, with regard to his leaving it, and the conditions on which he leaves it, adding the words, “that it may descend thus *in perpetuum*.” And he must do the same.”

He broke into a quiet laugh. I knew well enough what he meant. But he added:

“That means, of course, for as long as there is any.”

“Are you sure you are doing right, Falconer?” I said.

“Quite. It is better to endow one man, who will work as the Father works, than a hundred charities. But it is time I went to fetch my father. Will you go with me?”

This was all that passed between us on the subject, save that, on our way, he told me to move to his rooms, and occupy them until he returned.

“My papers,” he added, “I commit to your discretion.”

On our way back from Queen Square, he joked and talked merrily. Andrew joined in. Robert showed himself delighted with every attempt at gaiety or wit that Andrew made. When we reached the house, something that had occurred on the way made him turn to Martin Chuzzlewit, and he read Mrs. Gamp’s best to our great enjoyment.

I went down with the two to Southampton, to see them on board the steamer. I staid with them there until she sailed. It was a lovely morning in the end of April, when at last I bade them farewell on the quarter-deck. My heart was full. I took his hand and kissed it. He put his arms round me, and laid his cheek to mine. I was strong to bear the parting.

The great iron steamer went down in the middle of the Atlantic, and I have not yet seen my friend again.

Chapter 21 - In Expectation

I had left my lodging and gone to occupy Falconer's till his return. There, on a side-table among other papers, I found the following verses. The manuscript was much scored and interlined, but more than decipherable, for he always wrote plainly. I copied them out fair, and here they are for the reader that loves him.

Twilight is near, and the day grows old;
  The spiders of care are weaving their net;
All night 'twill be blowing and rainy and cold;
  I cower at his door from the wind and wet.

He sent me out the world to see,
  Drest for the road in a garment new;
It is clotted with clay, and worn beggarly—
  The porter will hardly let me through!

I bring in my hand a few dusty ears—
  Once I thought them a tribute meet!
I bring in my heart a few unshed tears:
  Which is my harvest—the pain or the wheat?

A broken man, at the door of his hall
  I listen, and hear it go merry within;
The sounds are of birthday-festival!
  Hark to the trumpet! the violin!

I know the bench where the shadowed folk
  Sit 'neath the music-loft— *there* none upbraids!
They will make me room who bear the same yoke,
  Dear publicans, sinners, and foolish maids!

An ear has been hearing my heart forlorn!
  A step comes soft through the dancing-din!

Oh Love eternal! oh woman-born!
  Son of my Father to take me in!

One moment, low at our Father's feet
  Loving I lie in a self-lost trance;
Then walk away to the sinners' seat,
  With them, at midnight, to rise and dance!

The End

Glossary of Broad Scots Words

Note from John Bechard, creator of this Electronic text:

The following is a list of Scottish words which are found in George MacDonald's "Robert Falconer." I have compiled this list myself and worked out the definitions from context with the help of Margaret West, from Leven in Fife, Scotland, and also by referring to a word list found in a collection of poems by Robert Burns, "Chamber's Scots Dialect Dictionary from the 17th century to the Present" c. 1911 and "Scots-English English-Scots Dictionary" Lomond Books c. 1998. I have tried to be as thorough as possible given the limited resources and welcome any feedback on this list which may be wrong (my e-mail address is JaBBechard@aol.com). This was never meant to be a comprehensive list of the National Scottish Language, but rather an aid to understanding some of the conversations and references in this text in the Broad Scots. I do apologise for any mistakes or omissions. I aimed for my list to be very comprehensive, and it often repeats the same word in a plural or diminutive form. As well, it includes words that are quite obvious to native English speakers, only spelled in such a way to demonstrate the regional pronunciation.

This list is a compressed form that consists of three columns for 'word', 'definition', and 'additional notes'. It is set up with a comma between each item and a hard return at the end of each definition. This means that this section could easily be cut and pasted into its own text file and imported into a database or spreadsheet as a comma separated variable file (.csv file). Failing that, you could do a search and replace for

commas in this section (I have not used any commas in my words, definitions or notes) and replace the commas with spaces or tabs.

Word - Definition - Notes

a’ - all; every - also have
a’ gait - everywhere
a’ thing - everything; anything
abeelity - ability
abettin’ - abetting
a’body - everyone; everybody
aboon - above; up; over
aboord - aboard
aboot - about
aboot it an’ aboot it - all about
abune - above; up; over
accep’s - accepts
accoont - account
accoonts - accounts
accordin’ - according
acquant - acquainted
a’-creatin’ - all-creating
ae - one
aff - off; away; past; beyond
aff-gang - outlet
afflickit - afflicted
affoord - afford
affront - affront; disgrace; shame
affrontet - affronted; disgraced - also ashamed; shamed
afit - afoot; on foot
afore - before; in front of
aforehan’ - beforehand
aften - often
aftener - more often
agen - against
aheid - ahead

ahin’ - behind; after; at the back of
ahint - behind; after; at the back of
aiblins - perhaps; possibly
aidin’ - aiding
ailin’ - ailing; sick
ain - own - also one
airin’ - airing
airm - arm
airm-cheir - armchair
airms - arms - also coat of arms; crest
airmy - army
airth - earth
aise - ashes
ait - eat
aither - either
aiths - oaths
aitin’ - eating
aits - oats
alane - alone
alang - along
Algerine - Algerian
alloo - allow
allooed - allowed
Almichty - Almighty; God
amaist - almost
amang - among; in; together with
amen’s - amends
amo’ - among
amuntit - amounted
an’ - and
ance - once
ane - one - also a single person or thing
aneath - beneath; under
anent - opposite to; in front of - also concerning
Anerew - Andrew
anes - ones

angert - angered; angry - also grieved
anither - another
answerin' - answering
answert - answered
a'ready - already
aricht - aright
aside - beside - also aside
aspirin' - aspiring
astarn - astern
'at - that
ate - hate - also eat
a'thegither - all together
a'thing - everything; anything
'at's - that is; that has
attreebuted - attributed
atweel - indeed; truely; of course
atween - between
aucht - eight; eighth - also ought; own; possess
aul' - old
auld - old
aulder - older
aumrie - cupboard; pantry; store-closet
aumry - cupboard; pantry; store-closet
a'-uphaudin' - all-upholding; all-supporting
ava - at all; of all - exclamation of banter; ridicule
awa - away; distant - also off; go away
awa' - away; distant - also off; go away
awaur - aware
Awbrahawm - Abraham
aweel - ah well; well then; well
awfu' - awful
awpron - apron
ay - yes; indeed - exclamation of surprise; wonder
aye - yes; indeed
ayont - beyond; after

bade - did bide
badena - did not bide
bagonet - bayonet
bailey - civic dignitary; magistrate
bairn - child
bairnie - little child - diminutive
bairns - children
baith - both
bakehoose - bakery
baneless - insipid; without pith
banes - bones
barfut - barefoot
barrin' - barring
barrowfu' - wheelbarrow full
baubee - halfpenny
baubees - halfpennies
bauchles - old pair of shoes - also shoes down at the heel
baukie - bat
beggit - begged
beginnin' - beginning
begud - began
behaud - withhold; wait; delay - also behold
behavin' - behaving
bein' - being
beir - bear
beirer - bearer
beirs - bears
bejan - first year's student - at a Scottish university
belangs - belongs
believin' - believing
ben' leather - thick leather for soling boots/shoes
bena - be not; is not
bend-leather - thick leather for soling boots/shoes
benn - in; inside; into; within; inwards - also inner room
benn the hoose - in/into the parlour - best room of the house
beowty - beauty

beuks - books
beyon’ - beyond
bide - endure; bear; remain; live - also desire; wish
bides - endures; bears; remains; lives - also stays for
biggit - built
bilin’ - boiling - also the whole quantity
bin’ - bind
binna - be not
birse - bristle; hair; plume of hair
bit - but; bit - also small; little (diminutive)
bitch - - term of contempt usually applied to a man
bitin’ - biting
bittie - little bit - diminutive
bittock - a little bit; a short distance
blaeberries - blueberries
blastit - blasted
blate - over-modest; bashful; shy
blaud - spoil; injure; soil
blaudit - spoiled; injured; soiled
blaw - blow
blecks - nonplusses; perplexes; beats
blessin’ - blessing
blether - talk nonsense; babble; boast
bletherin’ - talking nonsense; babbling; boasting
blethers - talks nonsense; babbles; boasts - nonsense; foolish talk
blin’ - blind
blink - take a hasty glance; ogle - also shine; gleam; twinkle; glimmer
blinner - blinder
blude - blood
bluidy - bloody
boasom - bosom
boatles - bottles
boddom - bottom
body - person; fellow - also body
boglet - bamboozled; terrified
bonnet - man’s cap

bonnetfu’ - bonnetful; capful
bonnets - man’s caps
bonnie - good; beautiful; pretty; handsome
bonniest - best; most beautiful; prettiest - also considerable
bonny - good; beautiful; pretty; handsome
boodie - ghost; hobgoblin
booin’ - bowing
bools - marbles
boon’ - bound
boord - board (i.e. room and board)
bothie - cottage in common for farm-servants
boucht - bought
bourach - heap; cluster; mound
bowat - stable-lantern
bowie - small barrel or cask
boxie - little box - diminutive
brae - hill; hillside; high ground by a river
braid - broad; having a strong accent
brak - break
brakfast - breakfast
brat - child - term of contempt
braw - beautiful; good; fine - also lovely (girl); handsome (boy)
brawly - admirably; very; very much; well
breedth - breadth
breeks - breeches; trousers
breid - bread
breist - breast
breists - breasts
breith - breath
breme-bush - broom-bush - also simpleton
brewin’ - brewing
brig - bridge
brither - brother
brithers - brothers; fellows
brithren - brethren; brothers
brocht - brought

broo - brow; eyebrow
broucht - brought
browst - brewage; booze - also the consequences of one's own acts
bruik - broke
brunt - burned
bude - would prefer to; behoved - also must; had to
budena - must not; could not; might not
buff - nonsense
buik - book - also Bible
buiks - books
bund - bound
burd alane - quite alone - also the only surviving child of a family
burn - water; stream; brook
burnin' - burning
burnside - along the side of a stream
buss - bush; shrub; thicket
butes - boots
butt - main room in a croft; outside - includes kitchen and storage
butt the hoose - into the house; into the kitchen
by ordinar - out of the ordinary; supernatural - also unusual
by ordinar' - out of the ordinary; supernatural - also unusual
by-ordinar - out of the ordinary; supernatural - also unusual
byous - exceedingly; extraordinary; very

ca - drive; impel; hammer
ca' - call; name
ca'd - called
cadger - carrier; pedlar
ca'in' - calling
cairds - cards
cairriage - carriage
cairriet - carried
cairry - carry
cairryin' - carrying
calfie - little calf - diminutive
callant - stripling; lad - term of affection

cam - came
cam’ - came
camna - did not come
camstairie - unmanageable; wild; obstinate
camstairy - unmanageable; wild; obstinate
camstary - unmanageable; wild; obstinate
can’le - candle
canna - cannot - also cotton-grass
canny - cautious; prudent; shrewd; artful
cap - wooden cup or bowl
capt’n - captain
carena - do not care
carldoddies - stalks of rib-grass - also term of endearment
carritchis - catechism
ca’s - calls
cast up - taunt; reproach
catchin’ - catching
cattle - lice; fleas - used contemptuously of persons
cauld - cold
caure - calves
’cause - because
caw - drive; impel; hammer
cawed - driven; impeled; hammered
cawin’ - driving; impeling; hammering
ceevil - civil
’cep’ - except; but
chackit - checkered
chairge - charge
chap - knock; hammer; strike; rap
chappit - knocked; hammered; struck; rapped
chaps - knocks; hammers; strikes; raps
chaumer - chamber; room; bedroom
cheep - chirp; creak; hint; word
cheerman - chairman
chessel - tub for pressing cheese
chice - choice

chiel' - child; young person; fellow - term of fondness or intimacy
chield - child; young person; fellow - term of fondness or intimacy
chimla-lug - fireside
chits - sweetbreads
chop - shop; store
circumspec' - circumspect
claes - clothes; dress
claikin' - clucking (like a hen) - also talk much in a trivial way
claith - cloth
clams - vice or pincers - used by saddlers and shoemakers
clap - press down; pat; fondle
clashes - blows; slaps; messes - also gossip; tittle-tattle
clash-pyet - tell-tale; scandal-monger
clean - altogether; entirely - also comely; shapely; empty; clean
cleant - cleaned
clear-e'ed - clear-eyed
cleed - clothe; shelter
cleedin' - clothing; sheltering
cleuks - claws; hands; paws
clo'en - cloven
clomb - climbed
clood - cloud
cloods - clouds
cloody - cloudy
close - narrow alley; blind alley - also enclosed land
closin' - closing
clype - tell tales; gossip
coaties - children's coats; petticoats
coaton - cotton
coats - petticoats
coch - coach
coches - coaches
coff - buy
colliginer - college student - also college boy
Come yer wa's butt. - Come on in.
comin' - coming

comman'ment - commandment
compleen - complain
con thanks - return thanks
considerin' - considering
contradickit - contradicted
contrairy - contrary
contred - contradicted; thwarted; crossed
convence - convince
conversin' - conversing
convertit - converted
coorse - coarse - also course
coort - court
corbie - crow; raven
cornel - colonel
correck - correct
cottar - farm tenant; cottager
cottars - farm tenants; cottagers
cottar-wark - stipulated work done by the cottager
couldna - could not
coupit - tilted; tumbled; drank off
couples - rafters
crackin' - cracking
cracklin' - crackling
crap o' the wa' - natural shelf between wall and roof
crappit - topped; cropped; lopped
crappit heids - stuffed head of cod or haddock
crater - creature
cratur - creature
craturs - creatures
cried - called; summoned
crookit - crooked
croon - crown
croudin' - cooing; croaking; groaning
Cry Moany - Cremona - make of violin
cryin' - calling; summoning
cryin' doon - decrying; depreciating

cud - could
cudna - could not
culd - could
cumber - encumbrance; inconvenience
cunnin' - cunning
curst - cursed
cuttin' - cutting
cutty pipe - short tobacco-pipe
cwytes - petticoats

dacent - decent
dame - young unmarried woman; damsel - also farmer's wife
damnin' - damning; condemning
dancin' - dancing
dang - knock; bang; drive - also damn
darnin' - darning
dauchter - daughter
daunerin' - strolling; sauntering; ambling
daur - dare; challenge
daured - dared; challenged
daurna - dare not; do not dare
daursay - dare say
dauty - darling; pet - term of endearment
dawtie - darling; pet - term of endearment
daylicht - daylight
debosh - excessive indulgence; debauch - also extravagance; waste
deboshed - debauched; worthless
deceitfu' - deceitful
deceivin' - deceiving
dee - do - also die
deed - died - also deed; indeed
'deed - indeed
dee'd - died
deein' - doing - also dying
deevil - devil
deevil-ma'-care - devil-may-care; utterly careless - also no matter

deevilry - devilry
deevils - devils
deid - dead
deif - deaf
deil - devil - also not
de'il - devil - also not
De'il a bit! - Not at all! Not a bit!
deith - death
deleeberately - deliberately
dementit - demented; mad; crazy
denner - dinner
desertit - deserted
desperate - exceedingly; beyond measure - also irreclaimable; very bad
didna - did not
differ - difference; dissent - also differ
dingin' - overcoming; wearying; vexing - also raining/snowing heavily
dinna - do not
direckly - directly; immediately
dirt - worthless persons or things - term of contempt
dishcloot - cloth for washing dishes
disna - does not
disoun - disown
distinckly - distinctly
div - do
divots - thin flat pieces of sod
dochter - daughter
doesna - does not
doin' - doing
doin's - doings
doited - foolish; stupefied; crazy
dominie - minister; schoolmaster - slightly contemptuous
dooble - double; duplicate - also double dealing; devious
dooble-sole - double-sole
doobt - suspect; know; doubt - have an unpleasant conviction
doobtin' - suspecting; knowing - also doubting
doobtless - doubtless

doobts - suspects; knows - also doubts
dooce - gentle; sensible; sober; prudent
dooms - extremely; exceedingly; very
doon - down
doonricht - downright
door-cheek - door-post; threshold; doorway
door-stane - flagstone at the threshold of a door
dother - daughter
dottled - crazy; in dotage
douce - gentle; sensible; sober; prudent
dowie - sad; lonely; depressing; dismal - also ailing
draigon - dragon; also boy's paper kite - reference to Revelation 12-13
draigons - dragons - also boys' paper kites
dram - glass of whisky
drap - drop; small quantity of
drap i' the hoose - presence of someone unknown
drappit - dropped
drappy - little drop; a little (liquor) - diminutive
drauchts - plans; schemes; policies - also lineaments of the face
drave - drove
drawin' - drawing
dreadfu' - dreadful
dreamin' - dreaming
drear - dreary; dreariness; tedium
dreidfu' - dreadful; dreadfully
drift - snow driven by the wind
driftin' - drifting - snow driven by the wind
drinkin' - drinking
drivin' - driving
droont - drowned
drucken - drunken; tipsy
drum-heid - drum head
drunken - drank; drunk
du - do
duin' - doing
dumfoundered - perplexed; stunned; amazed

dune - done
dunna - do not
duv - do
duvna - do not
dwalls - dwells
d'ye - do you
dyke - wall of stone or turf

eaves-drapper - eavesdropper
Ebberdeen - Aberdeen
ee - eye
een - eyes
e'en - even; just; simply; equal - also eyes; evening
efter - after; afterwards
efterhin - after; afterwards
efternune - afternoon
eident - industrious; diligent; steady
elbuck - elbow
eleckit - elected - chosen by God for salvation (Calvinism)
ellwand - ell-wand; ruler; yardstick - 1 ell = 37 inches or 94 cm
en' - end
endit - ended
eneuch - enough
Englan' - England
enjoyin' - enjoying
eppiteet - appetite
er - ere; before
er' - ere; before
Erse - Irish; Gaelic
etairnity - eternity
ewie - young ewe
exackly - exactly
excep' - except
expairience - experience
expeckin' - expecting
expecs - expects

eyther - either

fa' - fall; befall
fac' - fact; truth; reality
fac's - facts; truths; realities
factor - manager of a landed property - lets farms; collects rents
fact'ry - factory
faddom - fathom
fa'en - fallen
failin' - failing
faimilies - families
faimily - family
fain - eager; anxious; fond - also fondly; gladly
fa'in' - falling
fairmy - little farm - diminutive
Faith! - Indeed!; Truly! - exclamation
fallow - fellow; chap
fan' - found - also felt
fand - found
farrer - farther
fash - trouble; inconvenience; vex
faun't - found
faured - favoured; featured
faut - fault; blame
fau'ts - faults
feared - afraid; frightened; scared
fearfu' - fearful; easily frightened
fearsome - terrifying; fearful; awful
feart - afraid; frightened; scared
feelin' - feeling
fegs! - truly!; really!; goodness! - mild oath; exclamation of surprise
feifteen - fifteen
fell - very; potent; keen; harsh; sharp - intensifies; also turf
feow - few
ferlie - wonder; novelty; curiosity
fess - fetch; bring

fest - fast
festen - fasten; bind
fiddlin' - fiddling
fin' - find - also feel
fir-can'le - a torch; 'firwood' used as a candle
fishin' - fishing
fit - foot; base - also fit; capable; able
flax - flax; wick
flech - flea
fleys - terrifies; frightens
fleyt - terrified; frightened
flingin' - kicking; throwing
flittin' - shifting; removing; departing
flooers - flowers
flure - floor
flurin' - flooring
forby - as well; as well as; besides - also over and above
forbye - as well; as well as; besides - also over and above
foresicht - foresight
foret - forward
forgather - assemble; encounter - also meet for a special purpose
forgathert - assembled; encountered - also met for a special purpose
forgettin' - forgetting
forgie - forgive
forgien - forgiven
fortnicht - fortnight; two weeks
fou - full; well-fed
fouchten - fought
fower-hoors - four o'clock tea
fowk - folk
frae - from
freely - quite; very; thoroughly
freits - superstitions; charms - also superstitious fancies
fremt - stranger - also strange; foreign
fren' - friend
fricht - frighten; scare away - also fright

frichtit - frightened; scared away
frichtsome - frightful
frien' - friend
frien's - friends
frien'ship - friendship
fu' - full; very; much
fule - fool
fummles - fumbles
fun' - found
fun-buss - whin-bush
fund - found
furbye - as well; as well as; besides - also over and above
fushionless - pithless; tasteless; feeble
fut - foot

gae - gave
gaed - went
gaein' - going
gae's - gave us; gave his
gaird - guard; watch
gait - way; fashion - also route; street
gaither - gather
ga'le - gable
gane - gone
gang - go; goes; depart; walk
gang yer wa's - go on
gangs - goes; walks
gar - cause; make; compel
garred - made; caused; compelled
garrin' - making; causing; compelling
gars - makes; causes; compels
gart - made; caused; compelled
gar't - make it; cause it; compel it
gate - way; route - also method; fashion; habit
gatherin' - gathering
gaun - going

’gen - by; in time for; whether
German Ocean - - old reference to the English Channel & North Sea
gether - gather
gettin’ - getting
gey - fairly; considerably - also considerable
gi’ - give
gie - give
gie a lift - give a helping hand
gied - gave
giein’ - giving
gien - if; as if; then; whether - also given
gi’en - given
giena - do not give
gies - gives
gie’s - gives; give us; give his
gill - tipple; drink
gin - if; as if; then; whether
gird - hoop for a barrel or tub
girn - grimace; snarl; twist the features
glaid - glad
glaidly - gladly
glaiss - glass
gleds - kites; buzzards
gleg - quick; lively; smart; quick-witted
Glendronach - particular brand of whisky
glimmerin’ - glimmering
gloamin’ - twilight; dusk
gloggie - insipid; artificial; unnatural
glowered - stared; gazed; scowled
goin’ - going
goon - gown
goul - howl; yell; whine
gowd - gold
gowk - cuckoo; fool; blockhead
gran’ - grand; capital; first-rate
grandmither - grandmother

gran'father - grandfather
gran'mither - grandmother
grat - cried; wept
gravestane - gravestone; tombstone; headstone
greet - cry; weep
greetin' - crying; weeping
greit - cry; weep
greitin' - crying; weeping
greits - cries; weeps
grew - greyhound
grip - grasp; understand - also hold
grips - grasps; understands - seizures; colic
growin' - growing
grun' - ground
grup - grip; grasp
grups - grips; grasp
grutten - cried; wept
gude - good - also God
gude-bye - goodbye
gude-hertit - good-hearted
gudeness - goodness
guid - good - also God
guide - treat; handle; look after; save; keep
Guidsake! - For God's sake!

ha' - have - also hall; house
haddie - haddock
hadna - had not
hae - have; has - also here
ha'e - have - also here
haein' - having
haena - have not
hae't - have it
haill - whole
hairm - harm
hairps - harps

hairst - harvest
hairst-play - school holidays during harvest
Haith! - Faith! - exclamation of surprise
haithen - heathen
haiven - heaven
halesome - wholesome; pure
half-dizzen - half-dozen
half-stervit - half-starved
hame - home
han’ - hand
han’fu’ - handful
hangin’ - hanging
hangt - hanged
hang’t - hanged
han’le - handle
han’led - handled; treated
han’let - handled
han’s - hands
hantle - much; large quantity; far
hard - heard - also hard
hash - mess; muddle
hasna - does not have
haud - hold; keep
hauden - held; kept
haudin’ - holding; keeping
hauld - hold
haveless - careless (therefore helpless) - also wasteful; incompetent
haven - heaven
haverin’ - talking incoherently; babbling
havers - nonsense; foolish talk; babble
hay-sow - long oblong stack of hay - shaped like a sow
he that will to Cupar maun to Cupar - a wilful man must have his way
heap - very much - also heap
heardna - did not hear
hearin’ - hearing
hearken - hearken; hear; listen

hearkened - hearkened; heard; listened
hearkenin' - hearkening; listening
hearkent - hearkened; heard; listened
Hecklebirnie - Hell
hecklet - cross-questioned; examined
hed - had - also hid
heepocreet - hypocrite
heicht - height
heid - head; heading
heids - heads; headings
helpin' - helping
helpit - helped
her lane - on her own
hersel' - herself
hert - heart
hertily - heartily
herts - hearts
het - hot; burning
hev - have
Hielan' - Highland
Hielan'man - Highland man
hillo - - a call to attract attention
him lane - on his own
himsel' - himself
hinder - hinder; hind; latter
hine - away; afar; to a distance
hing - hang
hingin' - hanging
hings - hangs
hinnerance - hinderance
hinney - honey
hintit - hinted
hips - borders of a district
hiz - us - emphatic
hizzies - hussies; silly girls
hoo - how

hooever - however
hooly - slowly; cautiously; gently - also ‘take your time’
hoomble - humble
hoombly - humbly
hoor - hour
hoo’s - how is
hoose - house
hooses - houses
hoot - pshaw - exclamation of doubt or contempt
Hoot awa! - tuts!; nonsense! - also exclamation of sympathy
hoot toot - tut! - exclamation of annoyance
hoots - pshaw - exclamation of doubt or contempt
horse-huves - horse hooves
hose - stocking
hostit - coughed
houp - hope
houpe - hope
houps - hopes
humblet - humbled
hunger - hunger; starve
hungert - starved
hunner - hundred
huntin’ - hunting
hurdies - buttocks
hurry an’ a scurry - uproar; tumult
hurtit - hurt
huves - hooves
hynd - straight; by the nearest road

i’ - in; into
I doobt - I know; I suspect
I wat - I know; I assure (you)
ilk - every; each - also common; ordinary
ilka - every; each - also common; ordinary
ilkabody - everybody; everyone
ill - bad; evil; hard; harsh; badly - also misfortune; harm

’ill - will
ill-contrived - tricky; mischievous - also badly behaved; ill-tempered
ill-doin’ - badly behaved - also leading an evil life
ill-fashioned - vulgar in habits; ill-mannered - also quarrelsome
ill-faured - unbecoming; ill-mannered; clumsy - also unpleasant
ill-mainnert - ill-mannered
ill-tongued - foul-tongued; abusive
ill-used - used wrongly
ill-willy - ill-tempered; spiteful; grudging - also reluctant
’im - him
impidence - impudence
imputin’ - imputing
inheritin’ - inheriting
in’t - in it
interesstin’ - interesting
interferin’ - interfering
interruppit - interrupted
intil - into; in; within
ir - are
Ishmeleets - Ishmaelites
isna - is not; is no
is’t - is it
ither - other; another
’ither - other; another
itsel’ - itself
iver - ever

jabberin’ - chattering; idle talking
jaloosed - suspected; guessed; imagined
jaud - lass; girl; worthless woman - old worn-out horse
jaw - billow; splash; surge; wave
jawin’ - talking; chattering
Jeames - James
Jeck - Jack
jeedgment - judgement
Jeroozlem - Jerusalem

jined - joined
jines - joins
jist - just
judgin' - judging
jumps - tallies; coincides
justifee - justify
justifeein' - justifying
jyler - jailer

kailyard - kitchen garden; small cottage garden
keek - look; peep; spy
keekin' - looking; peeping; prying
keepit - kept
kelpie - water-sprite; river-horse
ken - know; be acquainted with; recognise
kenna - do not know
kennin' - knowing
kens - knows
kent - known; knew
kep - keep; catch - also intercept; encounter
kickin' - kicking
kickit - kicked
kin' - kind; nature; sort; agreeable - also somewhat; in some degree
kin'ness - kindness
kirk - church
kirks - churches
kirkyaird - churchyard
kirstened - christened
kirstenin' - christening
kissin' - kissing
kist - chest; coffer; box; chest of drawers
kists - chests; coffers; boxes; luggage
kitchie - kitchen
kittlins - kittens
kneipit - knocked

lad - boy - term of commendation or reverence
laddie - boy - term of affection
laddies - boys - term of affection
lads - boys - term of commendation or reverence
laicher - lower
laird - landed proprietor; squire; lord
lameter - cripple - also lame
lammie - little lamb - term of endearment
lan' - land; country; ground
lane - lone; alone; lonely; solitary
lang - long; big; large; many - also slow; tedious
langed - longed
langer - longer
lang-leggit - long legged
lang's - long as
lang-tailed - tedious
lan'less - landless
lap - leaped
lapstane - stone on which a shoemaker - hammers his leather
lass - girl; young woman - term of address
lasses - girls; young women
lassie - girl - term of endearment
lat - let; allow
lat's - let's; let us; let his
latten - let; allowed
lattin' - letting; allowing
lauch - laugh
lauchin' - laughing
lauchter - laughter
lave - rest; remainder; others - also leave
laverock - lark (type of bird)
Lawlands - Lowlands
lea - leave
lea' - leave
leadin' - leading
leal - loyal; faithful; sincere; true

learnin’ - learning - also teaching
learnt - learned - also taught
leavin’ - leaving
leddy - lady - also boy; lad; laddy
lee - pasture; fallow ground - also shelter from wind or rain; lie
leear - lier
leebrary - library
leed - lied; told lies
leein’ - lying; telling lies
lees - lies
leevin’ - living; living being
leiser - leisure
len’ - lend; give; grant - also loan
len’th - length
leuch - laughed
leuk - look; watch; appearance
leys - grasslands
licht - light
lichtlie - make light of; disparage
lickin’ - thrashing; punishment
lien - lain
lift - load; boost; lift; helping hand - also sky; heavens
liket - liked
likit - liked
likliheid - likelyhood
likly - likely
limmer - rascal; rogue - also loose woman; prostitute
lingel - shoemaker’s thread
links - stretch of sandy grass-covered ground - near the seashore
lint-bells - flowers of the flax
lippen - trust; depend on - also look after
list - enlist as a soldier
livin’ - living
’ll - will
lockit - locked
longin’ - longing

Lonnon - London
loon - rascal; rogue; ragamuffin - also boy; lad
loot - let; allowed; permitted
Losh! - corrupt form of 'Lord' - exclamation of surprise or wonder
losin' - losing
loup - leap; jump; spring
loup-coonter lads - shopkeepers; salesmen
loupin' - leaping; jumping; springing
loupin'-on-stane - horse-block
lowse - loose; free - also dishonest; immoral
luckie-daddie - grandfather - also fondly regarded forefather
luckie-daiddie - grandfather - also fondly regarded forefather
luckie-minnie - grandmother
lucky - old woman
lucky-daiddy - grandfather - also fondly regarded forefather
lug - ear; fin (fish); handle - also shallow wooden dish
lugs - ears
luik - look
luikin' - looking
luikit - looked
luiks - looks
luve - love
lyin' - lying
lythe - shelter

'm - him
ma - my
magistrand - student about to become M.A. - at Aberdeen University
maijesty - majesty
mainner - manner
mainners - manners
mair - more; greater
mairch - march
mairry - marry
maist - most; almost
'maist - almost

maist han’ - almost
maister - master; mister
maistly - mostly; most of all
maitter - matter
maitters - matters
mak - make; do
mak’ - make; do
makin’ - making; doing
maks - makes; does
mak’s - makes; does
man-body - full grown man
Markis - Marquis
maukin - hare - also a reference to a poem by Burns
maun - must; have to
maunna - must not; may not
mayna - may not
meanin’ - meaning
meddlin’ - meddling
meenit - minute
meenits - minutes
meenute - minute
meesery - misery
mell - mix; be intimate; meddle
mem - Ma’am; Miss; Madam
men’ - mend
men’in’ - mending; healing
men’t - mended
merchan’s - merchants; shopkeepers
mercifu’ - merciful; favourable
mere - mare - also mere
merried - married
merry - marry - also merry
micht - might
michtna - might not
michty - mighty; God
midden - dunghill; manure pile

middlin’ - tolerable; mediocre; fairly well
mids - midst; middle
mids’ - midst; middle
min’ - mind; recollection - also recollect; remember
min’ upo’ - remember
mind - mind; recollection - also recollect; remember
ministert - ministered
minit - minute
mint - insinuate; hint; feign - also aim at; attempt
mintin’ - insinuating; hinting; feigning - also aiming at; attempting
mintit - insinuated; hinted; feigned - also aimed at; attempted
mirk - darkness; gloom; night
mischeef - mischief; injury; harm
misdoobt - doubt; disbelieve; suspect
missionar’ - missionary
mistak - mistake
mither - mother
mithers - mothers
mizzer - measure
moedesty - modesty
mony - many
moo’ - mouth
moose - mouse
mornin’ - morning
morn’s - tomorrow
mou’ - mouth
moufu’ - mouthful
mou’fu’ - mouthful
mould - mould; loose earth; top soil
muckle - huge; enormous; big; great; much
muckler - bigger; greater
mull - snuff-box
mune - moon
munelicht - moonlight
murnin’ - mourning
mutch - woman’s cap with protruding frill - worn under the bonnet

mutchkin - liquid measure - equal to an English pint
my lane - on my own
mysel’ - myself

na - not; by no means
nae - no; none; not
naebody - nobody; no one
naething - nothing
nane - none
nanetheless - nonetheless
nater - nature
nat’ral - natural
natur’ - nature
naything - nothing
nearhan’ - nearly; almost; near by
near-han’ - nearly; almost; near by
nears - kidneys
nebs - tips; points; nibs; beaks
neebor - neighbour
neebors - neighbours
neebour - neighbour
needfu’ - needful; necessary; needy
needna - do not need; need not
ne’er-do-weel - an incorrigible; troublemaker
neist - next; nearest
nesty - nasty
neuk - nook; recess; interior angle - also corner
news - talk; gossip
nicht - night; evening
niffer - exchange; barter
no - not
no’ - not
noething - nothing
noo - now
noo’ - now
noo a-days - now; in these days

nor - than; although; if - also nor
nor's - than is
notwithstandin' - notwithstanding
nuik - corner

o' - of; on
objeck - object
obleeged - obliged
och - - exclamation of sorrow or regret
och hone - alas
Od - disguised form of 'God' - minced oath
odds - consequence; change
o'er - over; upon; too
ohn - without; un- - uses past participle not present progressive
Ohone! - Alas!
on' - and - possibly a mispelling (should be an')
onlike - unlike
onsays - unsays
ony - any
onybody - anybody; anyone
onything - anything
ook - week
ooks - weeks
oor - our
'oor - hour
oors - ours
oorsel's - ourselves
oot - out
ootcast - outcast
oots - outs
ootside - outside
opingon - opinion
opingons - opinions
opposit - opposite
or - before; ere; until; by - also or
ordinar - ordinary; usual; natural - also custom; habit

ordinar' - ordinary; usual; natural - also custom; habit
orra - odd job (man); exceptional; over all - also idle
o't - of it
oucht - anything; all - also ought
ouchtna - ought not
oursel's - ourselves
ow - oh - exclamation of surprise
ower - over; upon; too
owerta'en - overtaken
oye - grandchild; grandson; nephew

pailace - palace
paintit - painted
pairt - part
pandies - strokes on the palm with a cane
papistry - Romanism; Popery
Paradees - Paradise
parritch - oatmeal porridge
partic'lar - particular
pat - put; made
peacefu' - peaceful
pecks - blows; strikes
pernickety - precise; particular; fastidious - also difficult to please
perris - parish
piana - piano
picter - picture; sight; spectacle
pictur' - picture
piece - slice of bread; lunch
pint - point
pipit - piped; played the (bag)pipes
pirn - reel; bobbin - on which thread is wound
pit - put; make
pitawta - potato
pits - puts; makes
pitten - put; made
plack - the smallest coin - worth 1/3 of a penny

plaguit - plagued; troubled
plaid - plaid used as a blanket
plaistered - plastered
plash-mill - fulling-mill
playacks - playthings; toys
play-actin’ - acting
playin’ - playing
playt - played
pliskie - trick; prank; practical joke
plisky - trick; prank
ploy - amusement; sport; escapade
ploys - amusements; sports; escapades
poassible - possible
poddock - frog
pooch - pocket; pouch
pooer - power
pooerfu’ - powerful
poored - poured
poothers - powders
pop’ - pope
porkmanty - portmanteau
positeeve - positive
pouch - pouch; pocket
poun’ - pound (sterling)
prayin’ - praying
preachin’ - preaching
pree - taste; try; prove; experience
prent - print
prentice-han’ - novice
press - wall-cupboard with shelves
preten’ - pretend
preten’t - pretended
prood - proud
pruv - prove
pruved - proved
pu’ - pull

public - public house; pub
public-hoose - public house
pu'd - pulled
puddin's - intestines
puir - poor
pun' - pound (sterling)
putten - put

quaiet - quiet
quaiet sough - quiet tongue
quaieter - quieter
quaietly - quietly
quaietness - quietness
quean - queen; young girl; hussy
queston - question - also sum
questons - questions - also sums
quest'ons - questions
quibblin' - quibbling

rade - rode
rael - real
railly - really
raither - rather
rale - real; true; very
rampaugin' - rampaging
randy - rough; wild; riotous - also coarse-tongued; abusive
rase - rose
rash - needle used in weaving
readin' - reading
reamy - creamy
rebukit - rebuked
receipt - recipe
reckonin' - reckoning
reconceelin' - reconciling
reconcilet - reconciled
reekit - rigged out; well-dressed

regairdit - regarded
reg'ment - regiment
reid - red
reik - smoke; vapour
rejeckit - rejected
remainin' - remaining
remeid - remedy; cure; redress
repentin' - repenting
resentin' - resenting
respec' - respect
respecks - respects; considers worthy
richt - right; correct - also mend
richteous - righteous
richteousness - righteousness
richtly - certainly; positively
rig - ridge; space between furrows - also long narrow hill
rin - run
rinnin' - running
rins - runs
risin' - rising
rist - rest
rivin' - renting; tearing; tuging; wrenching
rizzon - reason
rizzonin' - reasoning
rizzons - reasons
roarin' - roaring
rockit - rocked
ro'd - road; course; way
Rom' - Rome
roof-tree - beam forming the angle of a roof
roomy - little room - diminutive
roon - around; round
roon' - around; round
roset - resin; cobbler's wax
roset-ends - shoemaker's waxed thread-ends
rottan - rat

rouch - rough
rowdie - hag; beldame
ruck - bulk; mass; majority
ruggin' - pulling forcibly; tugging; tearing
ruggin' and rivin' - draging forcibly - also contending for possession
runklet - wrinkled; creased; crumpled

's - us; his; as; is - also has
s' - shall
sae - so; as
saft - muddy; soft; silly; foolish
saiddlet - saddled
sair - sore; sorely; sad; hard; very; greatly - also serve; satisfy
sair heid - headache
sair-vroucht - hard-worked
saitisfee - satisfy
saitisfeed - satisfied
saitisfeet - satisfied
salamander - large poker with a flat heated end - for lighting fires
sall - shall
sang - song
sangs - songs
sanna - shall not
Sanny - Sandy - also Scotsman
sark - shirt
sarks - shirts
sattle - settle
saven - wise; knowledgeable - also seven
savin' - saving - also except
savin's - savings
Sawtan - Satan
sax - six
saxpence - sixpence
sayin' - saying
scar - cliff; precipice
scart - scratch; strike a match; scrape

schuil - school
schuilin' - schooling; education
schuilmaister - schoolmaster
schule - school
schule-time - time for school
scoonrel - scoundrel
scoon'rel - scoundrel
Scotlan' - Scotland
scraich - shriek; scream; bird's shrill cry
scrattit - scratched; dug
screed - recite rapidly; talk tediously; reel off - also scraping sound
Scripter - Scripture
sculduddery - fornication; grossness; obscenity
scunner - disgust; disgusting; revolting
scunnert - disgusted; loathed
scurry - scour; got about from place to place - also wander aimlessly
seck - sack
seein' - seeing
seekin' - seeking
se'enteen - seventeen
sel' - self
self-forgettin' - self-forgetting
sellt - sold
semies - second year's university students - at Aberdeen University
sen' - send
sendin' - sending
sen'in' - sending
servan' - servant
servan's - servants
sessions-buik - church record of its proceedings
set - set out; start off; become - also inclined; disposed
Setterday - Saturday
shacken - shaken
shackle-bane - wrist; wrist-bone
Shackspear - Shakespeare
shak'-doon - shakedown; crude makeshift bed

shanna - shall not
sharpset - keen; sharp-witted
sharp-set - keen; sharp-witted
shaw - show; reveal - also grove
shawn - shown
shaws - shows
shearin' - shearing (sheep)
shillin' - shilling
shillin's - shillings
shinin' - shining
shochlin - waddling; in-kneed
shochlin' - waddling; in-kneed
shoothers - shoulders
shortcomin's - shortcomings
shortent - shortened
shouldna - should not
shuit - suit
shune - shoes
shutin' - shooting
sib - relation; akin; closely related
sic - such; so; similar
siccan - such a; such an
sicht - sight
sichtit - sighted
sicker - secure; safe; firm; sure
sic-like - suchlike; likewise - like such a person or thing
side - district; region - also the side of
sidin' - siding
siller - silver; money; wealth
simmer - Summer
sin - since; ago; since then - also sin; sun
sin' - since; ago; since then
sinfu' - sinful
singin' - singing
sittin' - sitting
skelf - shelf - also splinter

skelpin' - digging; ploughing - also beating; striking
skirl - scream; sing shrilly
slack - slow
slauchtert - slaughtered
sleepin' - sleeping
sleepit - slept
sleicht o' han' - sleight of hand
sliddery - slippery; smooth - also sly; deceitful
slinkin' - slinking
slip - let slip; convey by stealth
slippin' - slipping
slips - tricks
sma' - small; little; slight; narrow; young
smacks - single-masted sailing boats - not necessarily a Scottish word
smeddum - spirit; mettle; liveliness
smilin' - smiling
smokin' - smoking; smouldering
smokin' flax - smouldering wick - reference to Matthew 12:20
smorin' - smothering; suffocating
snappin' - snapping
snaw - snow
sneck - door-latch; catch (gate) - also latch
snod - smooth; neat; trim; tidy; snug
sod - sad
sodger - soldier
sodgers - soldiers
sojer - soldier
some - somewhat; rather; quite; very - also some
somehoo - somehow
sookit - sucked
soon' - sound
soonds - sounds
sornin' - taking food or lodging; sponging - taking by force of threat
sortit - sorted
soucht - sought
sough - sigh; sound of wind; deep breath

soun’ - sound
soun’s - sounds
soutar - shoemaker; cobbler
sowl - soul
sowls - souls
spak - spoke
spak’ - spoke
spark - speck; spot; blemish; atom
spaud - spade
speakin’ - speaking
speerit - spirit
speik - speak
speikin’ - speaking
speir - ask about; enquire; question
speired - asked about; enquired; questioned
speirin’ - asking about; enquiring; questioning
speirs - asks about; enquires; questions
speirt - asked about; enquired; questioned
spen’ - spend
spence - storeroom; larder
speyk - speak
speykin - speaking
speykin’ - speaking
spier - ask about; enquire; question
spring - quick lively tune
spult - spilt
spunes - spoons
Squaur - square
stack - stuck
stair - stairs; staircase
stamack - stomach
stamacks - stomachs
stampin’ - stamping
stan’ - stand; stop
stane - stone; measure of weight - 1 stone = 14 pounds
stanes - stones

stan'in' - standing
stan's - stands
starnie - very small quantity
startit - started
steek - shut; close; clench - also stitch (as in clothing)
steekit - shut; closed; clenched
stept - stepped
sterve - starve
stew - dust; vapour; smoke - also stench; stink
stickin' - sticking; goring
stingin' - stinging
stinkin' - stinking
stockin'-fit - feet clothed in stockings - i.e. without shoes
stook - arranging the sheaves in a stook
stoun' - ache; throb
stown - stolen
Straddle Vawrious - Stradivarius - make of violin
strae-deith - death in bed; natural death - not a violent death
straik - streak; stroke; blow; caress
straiks - streaks; strokes; blows; caresses
strang - strong
strathspey - Highland dance - like a reel but slower
straucht - straighten; straight
straught - straight
stravaguin' - saunter; stroll; go about aimlessly
stren'th - strength
stucken - stuck
stud - stood
stule - stool
styte - nonsense
subjec' - subject
subjeck - subject
subjecks - subjects
substrackin' - subtracting
sudna - should not
sufferin' - suffering

suffert - suffered
suld - should
suldna - should not
sumph - soft blunt fellow; simpleton; fool
sune - soon; early
sune's - soon as
sung - singed
sunk - drivel; loiter - also be in a low dejected state
sup - drink
supped - drank
supposin' - supposing
swack - elastic; limber; supple
swarf - swoon; faint
sweer - swear
sweir - swear
sweirer - swearer
sweirin' - swearing
sweirs - swears
sworn - swore
syde - wide and long; hanging low down
syne - ago; since; then; at that time - also in (good) time

't - it
tae - toe; also tea - also the one; to
taed - toad
ta'en - taken; seized
taes - toes
taings - tongs; prongs
tak - take; seize
tak' - take; seize
tak tent - look out; pay attention; watch
takin' - taking
taks - takes; seizes
talkin' - talking
tane - the one - also taken
tap - top; tip; head

tastin’ - tasting
taucht - taught
tauld - told
tawtie - potato
taxed - found fault with; scolded
tay - tea; supper
tay-time - tea time; supper
teachin’ - teaching
teep - type
telled - told
tellin’ - telling
tellt - told
tell’t - told
telt - told
tent - attention; care; heed; notice
thae - those; these
thairm - fiddle-string - also intestine; gut; belly
than - then - also than
thankfu’ - thankful
thankit - thanked
thanksgivin’ - thanksgiving
that’ll - that will
the day - today
the morn - tomorrow
the nicht - tonight
the noo - just now; now
the piece - apiece
thegither - together
themsels - themselves
themsel’s - themselves
thereaboots - thereabouts
thimmel - thimble
thinkin’ - thinking
thinksna - does not think
this mony a day - for some time
tho’ - though

thocht - thought
thochtna - did not think
thochts - thoughts
thoo - thou; you (God)
thoomacks - violin-pegs
thoucht - thought
thouchts - thoughts
thrapple - windpipe; throat
thrivin' - thriving
throu - through
throu' - through
throuw - through
throw - through
thrum - particle; tangle; mess
ticht - tight
til - to; till; until; about; at; before
till - to; till; until; about; at; before
timmer - timber; wood
tint - lost; got lost
'tis - it is
tither - the other
tod - fox
toom - empty; unload
toomin' - emptying; unloading
toon - town; village
toon-piper - town piper
toot - tut! - exclamation of annoyance
Toots! - Tuts!; Tush!
towie - string
trailin' - dragging forcibly; hauling along
traivel - travel
traivellin' - travelling
tramp - trudge - also tramp
transe - passage within a house - also alley; narrow space
tribble - trouble
trimlin' - trembling

troo - trust; believe
troosers - trousers
troth - truth; indeed - also used as an exclamation
trowth - truth; indeed - also used as an exclamation
tryin' - trying
'ts - its
tu - too; also
tuik - took
tum'ler - tumbler; glass (of whisky)
turnin' - turning
turnt - turned
twa - two; a few
twa three - several
twal - twelve
twalmonth - twelvemonth; year
'twas - it was
twise - twice
tyke - dog - also rough clownish fellow
tyne - lose; get lost; miss

'ull - will
umquhile - former; of old; late
unbecomin' - unbecoming
unco - unknown; odd; strange; uncouth - also very great
unco' - unknown; odd; strange; uncouth - also very great
understan' - understand
unner - under
unnerstan - understand
unnerstan' - understand
unpleasin' - unpleasing; unpleasant
unsoucht - unsought
unweel - unwell
up the stair - upstairs - also to heaven
uphaud - uphold; maintain; support
uphaudin' - upholding; maintaining; supporting
upo' - upon; on to; at

upsettin’ - forward; ambitious; stuck-up; proud

vailue - value
vainishin’ - vanishing
vainities - vanities
verra - very; true; real
vex - trouble; vexation
vraith - apparition
vrang - wrong
vratch - wretch
vrote - wrote
vroucht - wrought; worked

wa’ - wall - also way; away
wad - would
wadna - would not
wailin’ - wailing
waitin’ - waiting
wakin’ - waking
wall - well; spring of water
wallopin’ - dancing; galloping - also beating; thrashing; knocking
wame - belly; stomach; womb; hollow
wamlin’ - rolling; undulating
wan - reached; gained; got
wan’erer - wanderer
wantin’ - wanting; lacking; without; in want of
wantit - wanted
war - were
wark - work; labour - also show of affection
warl’ - world; worldly goods - also a large number
warld - world
warldly - worldly
warna - were not
warran’ - warrant; guarantee
warst - worst
wa’s - walls - also ways

washin’ - washing
wasna - was not
was’t - was it
wastit - wasted
wat - wet - see also ‘I wat.’
watchin’ - watching
watter - water
wauken - awake; wake
waukens - wakes
waukin’ - waking
waukit - woke
waukmill - fulling mill
wauk-mill - fulling-mill
waur - worse - also spend money
waure - ware
weddin’ - wedding
wee - small; little; bit - also short time; while
weel - well; fine
weel-behaved - well-behaved
weelfaur - welfare
weel’s - well as
weet - wet; dew; rain
weicht - weight
weir - wear - also hedge; fence; enclosure
weirs - wears
weyver - weaver; knitter - also knitter of stockings; spider
wha - who
wha’ - who
whaever - whoever
whan - when
wharever - wherever
wha’s - who is - also whose
whase - whose
What for no? - Why not?
What for? - Why?
whaur - where

whaur'll - where will
whaur's - where is; where has
wheen - little; few; number; quantity
whiles - sometimes; at times; now and then
whilie - short time
whilk - which
whumle - whelm; overwhelm; upset
whusky - whisky
whustle - whistle
whustled - whistled
wi' - with
wice - wise
wife - woman; landlady - also wife
wight - fellow
willin'ly - willingly
willna - will not
win - reach; gain; get; go; come
win' - wind - also reach; gain; get; go; come
winkit - winked
winna - will not
winnin' - reaching; gaining; getting
winnock - window
winsome - large; comely; merry
wi'oot - without
wirrycow - scarecrow
wis - was - also wish
wiss - wish
wissed - wished
wit - intelligence; information - also sense; wisdom
wite - blame; reproach; fault
withoot - without
withstan' - withstand
wob - web; woven material
wolums - volumes
wonner - wonder; marvel
wonnerfu' - wonderful; great; large

wonnerin' - wondering
wonnert - wondered
wordy - little word; little saying or proverb - diminutive
workin' - working
worryin' - worrying
wouldna - would not
wow - woe - exclamation of wonder or grief or satisfaction
wrang - wrong; injured
writin' - writing
wud - wood; forest - adj.-enraged; angry; mad; also would
wuddyfous - gallows' birds; scamps - also small ill-tempered persons
wull - will; wish; desire - also astray; stray; wild
wuman - woman
wumman - woman
wuss - wish
wynd - narrow lane or street; alley
wynds - narrow lanes or streets; alleys
wyte - blame; reproach; fault

yaird - yard; garden; farmyard - also yard (36 inches)
yairds - yards; gardens - also yards (1 yard = 36 inches)
ye - you; yourself
year - years - also year
ye'll - you will
Yellow-beak - first year's student - at Aberdeen University
yer - your
yer lane - on your own
ye're - you are
yersel - yourself
yer'sel - yourself
yersel' - yourself
yersels - yourselves
ye've - you have
yird - earth
yon - that; those; that there; these
yonner - yonder; over there; in that place

yon’s - that is; that (thing) there is
yoong - young
yowth - youth